

A Gunsmith's Notebook on Port Arthur

Published in the National Interest

Copyright © Stewart K. Beattie
Brunskill Rd., Wagga Wagga NSW

Author of *The Odd Good Year*,
self-published 1999
& printed by South Wood Press
76-92 Chapel St. Marrickville NSW

- All rights reserved -
6th edition, May 2006

**Revised, updated & with the
latest evidence included**

While those who are betrayed do feel the treason sharply,
yet the traitor stands in a worse case of woe...
For like the fertile seed which lays dormant, awaiting rain, to
trigger its energy and shoot forth, forcing ever upwards to the light of
day, Truth also triggers the energy of virtuous endeavour
that *inevitably* exposes the stratagem of the malefactor to all...

CONTENTS

Chapter

1. To Everything a Season
2. THE "PRIMARY FIREARMS" & Ammunition
3. Colt AR-15, A History
4. Trojans Bearing Gifts
5. The .223Rem Calibre, a History
6. FMJ (Ball) Projectiles
7. Background of the AR-15, AR10 & Daewoo
8. Conclusions Re: Norinco .223 FMJ Ammunition
9. Projectile Construction
10. The Faulty Cartridge Theory
11. The FN FAL Self-loading Rifle – A History
12. .308W FMJ (Ball) Ammunition
13. The FN FAL: Smashed in Rage, But Placed With Care
14. Building the Crown's Case

Part III – On the Road to Seascap

15. Special Guests to Tea
16. Constables Decoyed
17. Missing in Action
18. The Thin Blue Line
19. Highway Ambush
20. Shiny Toys for Big Boys
21. He's out!
22. Bangs & "Coughs"
23. Seascap Siege – Where Fire was the Criminal's "Eraser"
24. Exploding Ammunition: Trivia Evidence?
25. Blow-ups: The Two Witnesses
26. Unhelpful Casualties in the "War of Terror"
27. The 'Video Overboard Affair'
28. Did Joe Vials ever play fullback for Jerusalem?
29. Update - Ten Years On: A "Gun Control" Glitch
 - Summary

Preface

From the mid 1980's Noel Hicks, the National Party candidate for the Federal seat of Riverina, had expressed to me his grave misgivings as to the volume of legislation, which produced unwarranted controls upon ordinary citizens. He exhibited a willingness to listen to the advice and concerns from aggrieved constituents when elected on 2 March, 1996. From early 1997 I began formally expressing my concerns to Noel Hicks of a number of anomalies that were coming to light regarding the Port Arthur massacre. Upon reflection the Hon. Noel Hicks MHR Member for Riverina never officially took any of the concerns I raised to the Federal Parliament; none whatsoever. After a series of letters, a meeting, and 18 months had past Mr Hicks was elected onto the "ASIO committee" and after just two years as our Member, Noel Hicks took the unusual step of taking early retirement.

The National Party's Kay Hull won the seat in the Federal election of March 1998. It was in late May or early June, I met with a friend as witness to reiterate a letter expressing my growing concerns in relation to the massacre at Port Arthur. Initially Mrs Hull's reaction was encouraging, even exhibiting an interest and concern. However, when I formally requested she take the matter to The House, in an instant the Member did a back-flip; she mailed to me a veracious rebuke.

Mrs Hull, MHR refused point blank to fulfil her obligation to *represent* "my will" in the Parliament, instead choosing to deliberately and arbitrarily disenfranchise me, and her choice of words was unmistakably offensive. She told me emphatically not to attend her electoral office, or to write or phone her on the matter. At time of writing to my knowledge Mrs Hull's position has not changed. Eight years on I remain disenfranchised.

This situation was *the catalyst*, which motivated me to begin to examine the whole of the Port Arthur massacre. In that same year, information on the massacre I posted to Joe Vialls was dismissed out of hand. That fermented in me a passion to search out, assemble and publish everything I could on the massacre that occurred at Port Arthur on 28 April 1996.

Until recent times, when ever I uttered the words "Port Arthur massacre" it was my personal experience for all in earshot to go quiet and leave the conversation. Normally bold media editors either ignored your approach; some scoffed, others spat out rebuke.

In my experience most politicians remain true to their hidden masters. Howard is no exception. Only a tyrant would deny the individual their inalienable RIGHT to self-defence. Rich men make the wars politicians declare; poor men fight, spill their blood and give their lives for nothing more than medals hung on ribbons.

Perhaps the journalists' demeanour results from the issuance of a "D" notice to the media against people such as me, or indeed the whole of the Port Arthur massacre story. († see special end note)

In 2002 Federal Attorney General, the Hon. Darryl Williams' introduced to the House seven Bills of draconian amendments along with the horrid "Security Amendment (Terrorism) Bill 2002", concurrently with their *coalition of the willing* partners. While taxpayer-funded fridge-magnets instructed people to "be alert and not alarmed," in true Orwellian fashion and concurrently, the Ministry promised to 'fight terror(ists)'; more than a few people became fearful - and with good reason - while the majority began hating minority communities as a past time.

As their 'new order' agenda rolled out - gradually - it has materialised into a bizarre madness: control by way of fear and trauma. Now theoretical possible "incidents" are selected, about which scenarios are woven of theoretical possible causes; the theoretical culprit with a theoretical grudge or cause is then summarily arrested and jailed?

Those wielding the power in America, Britain and Australia at least, have as a solution to the theories embarked upon actual solutions of clone-like pre-emptive security to theoretical and therefore nonexistent "threats" to our nations by penalising, and destroying their people's entire heritage in justice and law, previously their birthright for centuries. In Australia, the now infamous summit of the unconstitutional 'heads of government' meeting (each of the states being sovereign), held on 27 September 2005, saw the state Ministers join in a barefaced conspiracy to defile The Constitution by agreeing to deprive the people of their basic rights and ancient protections under the law that have guarded against free men and women ever being arbitrarily arrested and incarcerated without legal counsel or trial by their peers! Until now, these rights I speak of used to set us apart from despotic republics that currently *the coalition of the willing* are seeking to destroy!

It is entirely possible for these draconian laws to see many ordinary patriotic Australians branded as dissidents at least, or "terrorists" at worst! The definition of the term "patriot" has been turned on its head by the establishment; black is now white and the lie made holy.

The illusory "opposition" with Kim Beazley reinstated as "leader" in an extraordinary move has demonstrated a willingness not only to 'support the Bill' but to **outdo** anything Ruddock or Howard drafted; flinging people into jail is one thing, but Kim expressed a willingness to give the coalition's sinister "storm troopers" power to lock-down entire suburbs so as to search any and everyone they wish to and *still fling them into gaol!*

But what of the protests from journalists: Well they screamed blue murder for a time then just as the legislation reached the Senate they lost voice. Another story caught their attention - a scandal here, notoriety or violence there; the bread and butter of media barons since time immemorial. But, in 1995 when an out-of-office treasurer blossomed into Liberal Party leadership, through television-friendly lenses restraining his box-thorn-hedge eyebrows and with a wraparound smile concealing his Menzies' agenda, reptilian-eyes were fixed upon the Commonwealth's top job.

Fifty-seven days before the massacre at Port Arthur and on 2 March 1996, John Howard lead a coalition group of Liberals and a diminishing National Party to a coalition win in the Federal election. Along with another of his best kept secrets - the GST tax *for all* - was his hatred for all guns, and private citizens who wished to keep them; he successfully conceal this hatred even from some of his coalition Ministers until the opportunity presented itself.



Howard's
1996 agenda

Despite his own rhetoric to the contrary, John Howard did have an agenda and his duplicity was exposed all in good time, when the dogs of war (on terror) were unleashed on humanity at Port Arthur on 28 April that year.

I'm confident in stating Howard's agenda had been pent-up and cleverly concealed for his entire political life, or even longer: **hatred is not a spontaneous emotion!** After winning a battle the victor can afford to be candid. For after the state minister's had surrendered to Howard's threats on May 10, 1996, he began disclosing his true emotions: *"We will find any means we can to further restrict [firearms]. Because I hate guns. I don't think people should have guns. Unless they are police, in the military or security industry. Ordinary citizens should not have weapons."*¹

When interviewed for the Howard Ministry's 10th anniversary of election to the treasury benches on March 2, 1996 and in reference to the national trauma he terms "grief", inflicted by the terrorist attack at Port Arthur - 57 days after the general election - he was to state:

"I would call that very definitely an extraordinary outpouring of amazement and grief in this country and I knew out of that there was an opportunity to grab the moment and think about a fundamental change to gun laws in this country," he told the Nine Network.

Mr Howard said he did not want Australia to adopt the American stance on guns.

"I did not want Australia to go down the American path," he said.

"There are some things about America I admire and there are some things I don't.

"And one of the things I don't admire about America is their ... slavish love of guns. They're evil." The butchering of Iraqi women and children with very big guns, apparently is okay though as a partner in the 'coalition of the willing', predictably a subject not raised by him or the media in this widely reported anniversary press-fest.²

During the 1995-6 pre-election campaign the contentious GST tax was raised. This broad-based tax had earlier been a most unpopular Coalition policy objective, while he was shadow treasurer under John Hewson. Asked in 1995, whether he'd ever adopt the GST again as policy, Howard replied: *"Never ever. It's dead."* Draft legislation to impose a GST tax was commenced immediately the coalition took the treasury benches in 1996 and soon Howard could reveal his most cosseted agenda exposing his consuming hatred of guns and their private owners - but first the inanimate gun had to be thoroughly demonised. And all of this from a politician when speaking in support of his colleagues, including the Liberal's subservient and diminishing National Party partners, is reputed to have stated: 'We want to assert the very principle that truth is absolute, truth is supreme, truth is never disposable in national political life'...



Brian Leak's comment on Howard &

*described as draconian. The justification advanced for their introduction has been meagre. It is impossible for the Australian community to know whether the laws are necessary or proportionate.*³

But regarding his 'war on terror' and in an eleventh hour bid to express their outrage just as had welled-up among many in the nation to his war of terror, the normally conservative Law Council of Australia objected "particularly to the introduction of control orders and preventative detention orders," contained in the December 2005 proposed amendments to "ant-terrorism" laws and on behalf of all its constituent members their president wrote directly to the Member for Benalong, John Winston Howard, MHR stating:

"The legislation offends our traditional rights and freedoms. The laws have properly been

Even some cartoonists dared to [lampoon](#) our treacherous "masters" and I salute them for their pluck.

I awoke on the morning of my 64th birthday - ironically that 'day of infamy', Pearl Harbour day 2005 - to learn these obnoxious draconian law amendments had passed through the Upper House with no more than token amendments; the ALP opposition supported the Bill along with lone and now reviled Qld. NP senator, Barnaby Joyce.

Applied domestically, Howard's principles of justice are at least quite deplorable! It's a sad and disturbing state of affairs, which also threatens those who investigate covert terrorist attacks - even against Australians like the Port Arthur massacre. Would Federal Authorities dare suggest that in researching and writing this story I possess "knowledge" or have in my possession what the legislated amendments term "something" that the new thought police can link to acts they define as "terrorism"? Even Habeas Corpus — our right for more than three centuries — has been suspended, replaced by the UN's Babylonian "rule of law"! I'm concerned for those who live a delusion of "democracy", for in truth we live under a tyranny in government, one and the same as that which two centuries ago Thomas Jefferson warned all free men was "inevitable," and to be on guard against and the very purpose for *retaining at all cost* the right to keep and bear arms...

But remember it was an apparent psychic Roland Browne, in 1996 the co-chair of the National Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC), who with astonishing accuracy predicted the Port Arthur Massacre when he stated, "**We are going to see a mass shooting in Tasmania...unless we get national gun control laws.**" -(Ray Martin, *ACA*, March 1996). What "thing" did Roland possess about which ordinary Australians were ignorant?

Perhaps the explanation is simpler. Maybe Roland Browne by his then position in the Federal Justice Dept and close association with Tasmania's Legal Aid Commission, (its chairman then being no other than Colonel D.J. Gunson SC., Martin Bryant's second lawyer), was just well connected to an impeccable source. Does this explain how Browne was already there in the media room at Police Headquarters in Hobart, when ABC journalists arrived on the afternoon of the massacre? Is it also not just too convenient, that in 1996 the National Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC), had as its patron in Perth Western Australia, none other than the then Federal Attorney General, Daryl Williams? His successor in this high office, Phillip Ruddock, now carries on to oversee the passage of further amendments to their abhorrent "war on terror" legislation to see it pass through the Parliament and enforced as "law".

However, one must realise that collectively good people must speak out publicly so as to ensure evil does not prosper over the individual. With that very reason in mind, my work is published in the national interest and in the interest of every freedom loving Australian who dares to question these tyrant's arrogance, threats, and unconstitutional actions against our people that are in truth acts of sedition, treachery and treason; under the Crimes Act 1914 such actions are prescribed severe punishment. Would Parliament dare allow the people to express their will by referendum on such important matters? In the true vein of a legal mindset, why would Howard risk asking a question on anything, other than for that which he foreknows their answer? Remember there 'never ever will be a GST'? The people would have to conduct their own referendum and realistically that is not about to happen.

It is my hope and prayer that by exposing the Port Arthur tragedy, an unrelenting disquiet and outrage across the nation will spotlight every horrid individual as they scurry for their bolt holes to enjoy their superannuation, the amassed rewards of their misdeeds. Of course I should include among this number, those of the 'international brigade' who've planned and plotted similar exercises, I can demonstrate were replicated across the globe. These people should never be allowed to forget the legacy they have foisted upon our nation: that product of trauma, the illness PTSD, an insidious, silent illness which is manifest to varying degrees among almost all surviving victims of the massacre.

It is my hope that the sheer magnitude of that disquiet does force change - for the good. In the long run, if nothing is ventured, if you the public are only partially committed to such a worthy cause, then for generations to come, the destruction of the people's rights, their freedoms and their wellbeing will be assured; our children's children will hate us for this inheritance. To succeed in ANY venture, it is the resolute, steadfast, commitment to a project

that quality of tenacity that will carry the day, and win out for us all, so lets us all partake in this project of exposing what actually happened that April day at Port Arthur.

If there are some people out there who remain unconvinced that Port Arthur was a psychological exercise, a massive conspiracy - not a '*conspiracy theory*'- then consider this admission made in a letter to Mr Ron Owen of Queensland's Firearm Owners Association, dated 17 November 1995 - five months before the massacre - from out of the Queensland Police Service's Commissioner's Office:

"At its meeting on 10 November, 1995, the Australasian Police Ministers' Council (APMC) discussed a proposal to move forwards national uniformity in firearms legislation."

Of course for what it's worth, 'national uniformity in firearms legislation' spoken of above, we know was already agreed to by all state police ministers except Queensland, way back in November of 1987!⁴

Or consider this release at - www.gun.law.gov.au/Guns/releases/releases.htm ; under the nation's Coat of Arms, and entitled "The Australian Firearms Buyback," it heralds Federal Government support for an "International firearms study," to be undertaken by the former AIC's* statistical analyst, Mr John Walker and contains surely one of the most obnoxious faux pax I've seen to date. We shouldn't be surprised if by now the Web posting has gone, for it reads:

"We will also be closely involved in the subsequent development of proposals for reform [to gun control laws], which is expected to commence in May 1996." - my emphasis. (*Australian Investment Commission)

Two witness documents surely should suffice as irrefutable proof of a conspiracy of global proportions being put in place by the real architects and partners of "gun control," the Commonwealth Government's Ministers and their bureaucrats, firstly drawn-up under the Keating ALP Ministers, and then delivered by the Howard Lib/Nat Ministers. Keating's colleagues were informing dealers that the already drafted, *uniform gun laws* that everyone thinks resulted from Port Arthur were being "moved forward" before the fact in November 1995. In the latter example, under Howard's hand, although posted after the event on 10 January 1997, its author has inadvertently and obviously used earlier documents promoting the UN's program timetable that like Roland Browne was predicting a significant event occurring in "May 1996," that would fulfil their expectations that in Australia, "gun control" laws would at that time, "commence". Bureaucrats appear to work for any master, but reality demonstrates that they definitely promote and even create machinery that fulfils an ideology that crosses all present political boundaries! Surely you do not require further convincing evidence...

Those in authority are our servants. Is it pushing the limits too far to point out that *our servants* have a *duty of impartial care* and service to all of the Commonwealth's people, to uphold our right to commission at the earliest possible time an open and impartial Coronial inquiry into all that enshrouds the Port Arthur massacre? That is the least which is owed the victims, survivors and their relatives who lost loved ones or suffered hurt and injury from that horrid thespian exercise.

The majority of survivors only were ever able to extract entirely inadequate compensation for their hurt from the Tasmanian Government as is explained in Chapter 26.

John Howard, in a now familiar manner of a suburban solicitor that he is, at the time refused to admit any Federal liability that would require them to make monetary assistance to the survivors available in any form.

One survivor whom I have gotten to know, who lost his fresh, young, bride to the gunman's bullets, received a pitiful settlement for his awful loss of less than \$80,000 and that measly sum only after years of legal wrangling! So our collectively benevolent politicians expect this man to eke out the rest of life at the rate of around \$2,000 p.a.? But there is at least one exception to this rule: the Melbourne-based law firm of Slater and Gordon successfully sued the employment agency and Commonwealth employer of an unnamed female survivor and secured an undisclosed six-figure settlement; more on that mysterious case later. ⁵

So I also ask you to contemplate the circumstances that now surround all who survived that outrageous terrorist act on 28 April 1996; the Historic Site staff, visitors and service personnel and even the falsely convicted accused, all of whom suffer continuing hurt, trauma, and anxiety and who have been abandoned and ignored by "the system" – and pray for them. All Australians deserve to know what really occurred there on the Tasman Peninsula that autumn day in 1996, and you can play your part to ensure that it does happen. Remember the power of one. It really comes down to YOU ... for my fellow Australians to obtain the justice they deserve it comes down to you expressing your outrage. You must speak out and tell all who cross your path that it's intolerable that their fellow countrymen are abandoned to suffer such injustice.

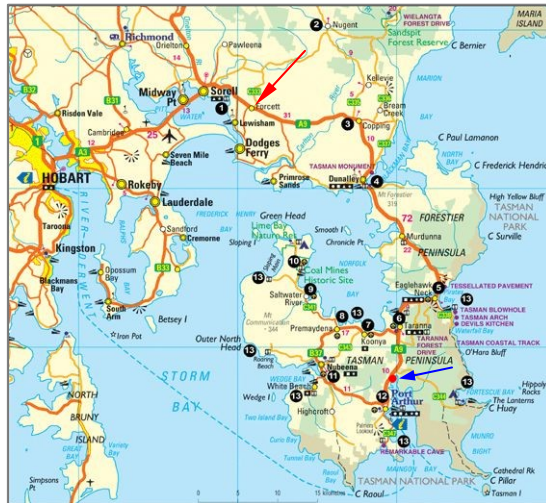
Stewart K. Beattie.

Special Notice:

You will observe the majority by far of photographs within the narrative of this work carry no acknowledgment to the photographer. There is a twofold reason for me doing so. Primarily the reader should be made aware, that by far the majority of photographs featuring Martin Bryant in almost every Australian publication ... be they newspapers, magazines and or periodicals - many now digitally altered by the same people - came from original photographs stolen, as Martin Bryant tells Mr Avery on the 3 Oct. 1996, when '*someone got into the house and took some photographs that I had on my kitchen table ... some coloured photos of myself*'. Mr Avery simply chooses to deliberately dismiss the allegation, already confirmed to this author by a former Tasmanian and journalist there at the time of the break-in. The second reason is that I believe it is in the public interest that all the photographs be published - *the author*.

Continue over - for a Map of the operational area of the massacre at Port Arthur...

Hobart to Port Arthur on the Tasman Peninsula



For enlarged map, click [here](#)

LEGEND: Sorell, 25km from Hobart, where he bought a bottle of tomato sauce. At **Forcett**, just 7km further east on the Arthur Hwy, Martin bought a coffee and drank it at the same time the Prosecution claimed Martin Bryant murdered by gunshot inside Seascapes, Mr David Martin and his wife Sally Martin. Oh, & Mrs Martin was not shot, and was still alive & being pursued about the yard of Seascapes by a dark haired male at about 1700 hrs.

3. Copping, near by Martin inherited a farm formerly owned by Miss Harvey. His father died here under bizarre circumstances about 13 August 1993. North of Copping on 20 October 1992, when Martin was 25-year-of-age Helen Harvey was killed in a head-on car crash. Bryant suffered a quite serious neck injury. He inherited her entire estate, later confiscated by the Crown, and sold to *mystery* buyers...
4. Dunalley, where the swing bridge over the canal was never used as a road block.
5. Eaglehawk Neck; Martin Bryant was witnessed driving south in his distinctive yellow Volvo here at 11.30am.
6. Taranna; Martin bought petrol for the Volvo from Chris Hammond. Police set-up a forward command post here and a road block just before 1500 hrs.
10. The Coal Mines: Two Constables, Hyland (Nubeena) & Whittle (Dunalley), were there when shooting broke out.
11. The two constables returned and broke their journey at Nubeena. Hyland goes to Fox & Hounds via Premaydena & Taranna, while Whittle goes direct to Port Arthur & the Tollbooth.
12. Port Arthur: SEASCAPE is indicated by a **BLUE** indicator **3.4 km** north of Port Arthur.

† "D" NOTICES

A "D" Notice is a communication issued to the media by the Defence, Press and Broadcasting Committee. It outlines subjects which bear upon defence or national security, and requests editors to refrain from publishing certain information about those subjects.

In other words this pre-war-time control is a legislated "censorship" of published news that has never been repealed by governments; they always seek to extend their powers but once having these powers enacted, governments NEVER repeal their legislation. Though successive governments would have you believe free speech is preserved in what they claim to be a "free and democratic society."

The origin of the insidious "D" notice was England in 1912, and since 1952 here in Australia they have been issued by the Defence, Press and Broadcasting Committee comprised of 16 representatives of the print and broadcasting media along with 4 Defence personal of the government. Although they rely upon a voluntary arrangement, it becomes very obvious the taboos associated the print and electronic media informing the public of the grave accusations that have been raised from time to time regarding the Port Arthur massacre the situation remains undeniably VERY tightly controlled, and VERY censored.

This situation is mirrored when one examines the shooting murders at Monash University, and Xiang's treatment by the media during and after his sentencing hearing. Mrs Wendy Scurr has learned from a well placed and reliable source, she definitely had a "D" notice placed on her name - with regard to Port Arthur massacre.⁶

Current Map of the Port Arthur Historic Site - 2005

End Notes.

¹ Interview, 17 April 2002, 2GB (Sydney radio); Philip Clark program.

² n.a. "Howard on Howard", *The Age*, March 1, 2006 - 12:40 pm.

³ John North, President Law Council of Australia, letter to Prime Minister, 3nov05

⁴ David Armstrong, "Private gun ban in tough new law", *The Daily Telegraph*, 11dec87, pp.1-2



To Everything a Season

Chapter 1

The incessant rain of the past few weeks relented; brilliant sunshine drenched the Tasman Peninsula that autumn Sunday, 28 April 1996. A tour guide remarked spontaneously to a visitor, "*You'd better get a photo of the sun today; we haven't seen it for weeks.*"

For the locals, it was in truth the first bright sunshine for very many weeks. The balmy autumn sunshine even seemed to calm the waters of Carnarvon Bay as it lapped the convict sea wall, while crystal-clear ground water rushed to join with the salt in Mason's Cove from out of the soggy, lush green lawns, with their carpet of spent golden leaves from the deciduous trees as they farewelled summer; a patch of the old country from the convict days of long ago. Outside, the waters of the Great Southern Ocean and Tasman Sea were in harmony, quite calm for that autumn day.



Whether or not you have visited Tasmania, Australia's unique island State, there is an imperative, essential for your consideration. Made aware of its influence one can believe then understand much better why - Port Arthur was the site for such evil that to the casual visitor burst upon this tranquil scene on the 28 April in 1996 and to why this was *the appointed season*. After all, did not the shooting massacre achieve that desired outcome espoused by Robert James Lee Hawke, our former Prime Minister in his address to the Fabians Society twelve years earlier when he spoke of a "*need to change the whole mind and mood of the nation*"? ¹

But the imperative I speak of above is an enduring *spiritual legacy*, forced upon Port Arthur 147 years earlier, which was re-imposed there that day in 1996...

The Spiritual Influence

Jeremy Bentham was the founder of Utilitarianism: "A moral theory according to which an action is right if and only if it conforms to the principle of utility," (i.e. "usefulness").

Bentham was said to have been born in the appropriately named Spitalfield area in London, on 15 February, 1748, the son of a Tory family of lawyers: his father and grandfather both being attorneys at law. His early family life was coloured by a mix of pious superstition (on his mother's side) and "enlightenment rationalism" from his father.



Jeremy Bentham

I'm unable to find any reference to Bentham or his family being confessing Christians, yet equally I cannot confirm the family as being atheists, and or even from among other ethnic families who resided thereabouts in London.

Jeremy was recognized as a "child prodigy" when as a toddler he was reputedly discovered sitting at his father's desk reading a multi-volume history of England. Various authors claim he studied Latin from the age of three. Bentham lived during a time in history of immense social, political, and economic change in what we know as the Industrial Revolution. The massive social shifts even increased in the wake of initial, vast changes, which saw America's War of Independence (the revolution), the rise of the middle class, and later the disastrous insurrection in France, its most infamous action, the storming of the Bastille, even celebrated annually today by ignorant people who actually believe themselves students of history.

These events were reflected in this philosopher's theories, writings, especially regarding the existing institutions, and importantly in his practice as head of British secret service at the time of the French Revolution.

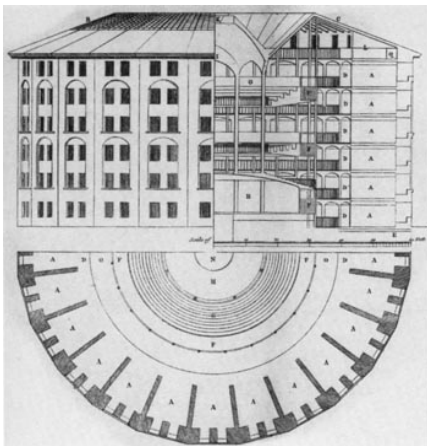
In 1760, he entered Queen's College, Oxford where he took his Bachelor's degree in 1763 and his Master's in 1766 (at age 16yrs). As a lawyer he was called to the bar in 1769 (at age 21yrs). It was during this period that Bentham wrote of paederasty's normality in the decadent Grecian culture: "Some few appear to have had no appetite for boys, as is the case for instance with Ovid, who takes express notice of it and gives a reason for it."

Jeremy Bentham is undoubtedly in this new order with its promoted depravities, best known to at least a few, for his essay - *In Defence of Paederasty* (1785). Remarkably, although written 220 years ago, his essay is now published today under the title, "Offences Against One's Self".

While at Oxford, in 1776 Bentham wrote a commentary, in which he stridently attacked the legal writings of that great English jurist Sir William Blackstone and other likeminded men including Locke. He also repudiated many of the concepts underlying their political philosophies, such as *natural right*, *state of nature*, and 'social contract.'

In England and so the Commonwealth countries, these are the wellsprings that go to confirm the foundations of our common law. It appears he was in favour of destroying the very same immutable rights and freedoms that are today rapidly being stripped away from Australians in the name of security by the socialist regime, which masquerades as conservative.

While others have written Bentham held a 'philosophical divergence from traditional English law,' I firmly believe he even held our traditional law and our Christian heritage, its very core, in absolute contempt.



Bentham's Panopticon prison

'[Panopticon](#)' — a model prison where all prisoners would be observable by (unseen) guards at all times — a project which he had hoped would interest the Czarina Catherine the Great, but she rejected it.

When Bentham was 44-years-of-age in 1792, his father died, which effectively left this active polemicist, political theorist, and so-called philosopher, financially independent. Bentham then set himself up as a full time writer in Westminster, where until the late 1700s, he lived *quietly*, producing between ten and twenty sheets of manuscript a day, a regime he adhered to until in his eighties. In 1785, he briefly joined his brother Samuel in Russia, where he continued writing with even a heightened intensity, and it was while associated with his brother there, he plagiarised a plan drawn-up by Samuel for a factory layout.

This factory layout he stole from his brother became the basis of his plans for a prison layout - and all in the name of Utilitarianism. He called his stolen plan the

Returning to England in 1788 and at great expense he pursued his 'Panopticon' project for the next 20 years. Government plans in 1811 to construct his prison were stymied when the King refused to authorize the purchase of the land and the project was finally shelved. But two years later Bentham was awarded the huge sum (for those days) of £23,000 Sterling in compensation for his monetary loss due the cancellation.



Eastern State Penitentiary

But with government ever conscious of savings in ongoing expenditure of such areas as prisons, they viewed his 'Panopticon' idea with favour. Eventually Pentonville Prison in London, Armagh Gaol in Northern Ireland and [Eastern State Penitentiary](#) in Philadelphia, America were all to example the hallmarks of Bentham's 'Panopticon' plan; the latter holding Al Capone.

Bentham was during the time of the French revolution reputed to be head of England's covert intelligence arm; he saw to the organisation of the canaille of society on the Continent to make their way onto the streets of Paris to murder moderate targets so as to ensure as he stated, 'this revolution never be allowed to attain such a noble status among the citizens as the moderates achieved in the earlier American adventure'. Perhaps the approval of those at the helm of his success in steering the French Revolution to such a bloody conclusion can be measured by the fact that in 1792, Bentham received honorary French citizenship.

His 'Panopticon' is a type of prison building having a concept intrinsic in its design to allow an observer to **observe** (*opticon*) **all** (*pan*) **prisoners**, without the prisoners being able to tell if they were being observed, thereby conveying in his own words a "sentiment of an invisible omniscience". The 'observed' in effect unwittingly became the observers; the mere perception of power (of being under surveillance) rendered its necessity unnecessary.²

The mindset behind Port Arthur's [Separate Prison](#) is sometimes credited to William Crawford and Joshua Jebb, but in reality, it was based upon Bentham's 1791 'Panopticon' plans and was established there by the Royal Engineers. "The rigid observance of the Benthamite principles of complete and constant surveillance meant that all visible routes were constantly watched and guarded."³



The Separate Prison -
Port Arthur

Within Port Arthur's Separate Prison, prisoners were in solitary confinement; prisoners were called by number, never by name; total silence was maintained at all times; leather head masks were worn in the exercise yards so no eye contact was possible with anyone - even with their fellow convicts. When attending



The Prison Chapel
Port Arthur

[chapel](#) each prisoner was separated and contained by individual boxes; these are all straight from the total planned regime put forward in Jeremy Bentham's 1791 proposal. The gaolers or 'watchers' as Bentham called them, as part of his code, while on duty in Port Arthur's 'Separate Prison' never wore boots as part of their uniform; they wore slippers for silent movement, and all communication was by hand signals - to enforce a total silence. It literally sent men mad. Little wonder an [asylum](#) was established next-door. So this is the sinister, spiritual influence that was

resurrected by the mass-murder at Port Arthur that balmy, sunny, autumn day in April of 1996. It is no coincidence that the same evil influence chose 28-29 April as the days of slaughter there. For as April draws to a close the occultist season of blood-sacrifice is heightened, culminating on 30 April with what they call "Walpurgis" or Blood Blacksabbath. But Port Arthur's lunchtime sunny Sunday setting belied the scene that was moments away.



The Asylum
Port Arthur

So it was that the picturesque park-like scene beside Mason Cove was shattered by a loud and recurring "banging" or "thudding" emanating from the Broad Arrow Café, as lunch-hour waned. But it was the accompanying unmistakeable odour of burnt nitrocellulose powder, which alerted two

Vietnam veterans John Godfrey and his friend Peter Stainforth, that the thudding was in fact gunfire! The gunshots had been in progress for no more than a minute or so, before the first "000" emergency call was made to Police HQ in Hobart.



On the job:

Wendy Scurr 1996

In spite of many official claims to the contrary, this initial "000" call alerting Police to the shootings in the Broad Arrow Cafe, was made by Historic Site information officer and tour guide, Mrs. Wendy [Scurr](#) on her own initiative. The call was logged by Constable Barber in Police HQ Hobart at 1332 hrs. Upon reflection that night, Wendy Scurr had convinced herself that the police's inexplicable 6 hour delay in arriving at the Scene and horrendous delay in securing of the site must have been down to some failure on her part to convince police during this call of the gravity of the situation requiring their immediate response.

Compelled by the realisation of this inordinate delay for police respond in numbers, Wendy and her husband Graeme went to Nubeena Police station next day and there Const Paul Hyland showed them both Wendy's logged call on the station's VDU logged at 1332hrs. Her employers also confirmed the time, as did then Assist Comm. Luppoo Prins, in the EMA Report at page 27.

So began the deliberate and ghoulish shooting massacre, which fulfilled the, *"...need to change the whole mind and mood of the nation."* Did this massacre not fulfil the thrust in those serious words issued by Robert James Lee Hawke, our former Prime Minister in his address to the Fabians Society twelve years earlier in Melbourne on 18 May 1984?

In spite of the facts above, senior police maintained the 000 call, which initiated their first response, *"...was received at the Police switchboard at 1335,"* or 3 minutes after Mrs Scurr's call. This 000 call was in fact made by an interesting Peninsula character, Ian [Kingston](#). Ian was at the time unit manager of the Tasman SES and only recently engaged by PAHSMA in June of 1995 in a casual capacity as Security Officer on the Historic Site (see Chap 16 for further details).



Ian Kingston: Historic Site's security officer for 8 months in 1996

In his first signed statement Ian Kingston's imagination ran wild: he makes quite outrageous claims of how his first reaction to the gunshots saw him run to the front door of the Broad Arrow and enter the café, and when he saw the gunman about "eight metres" away he "immediately reversed out..." This claim was even promoted as fact at every opportunity by media and police in their recently escaped Police Training Video! The claim is simply nonsense. In his statement Kingston claims that after he withdrew, he made considerable efforts to move visitors standing about the Information Centre to move away from the shooting.

He then states he went (no running is mentioned), to the other extremity of the Historic Site, and all achieved in just 3 minutes, for Ian Kingston made 1335hrs call from the Parsonage, about 425m from the Broad Arrow Café - as the crow flies. So this deed in itself was an athletic feat of considerable proportions: but how could he have moved all these tourists away so quickly? You see Kingston's feat becomes a farce, when one reads the statements made by John Godfrey and Peter Stainforth. As John Godfrey later stated, a crowd he estimated at 50-75 visitor had been standing about the Information Centre when the shooting began. He went on to state that he and his good mate Peter shepherded these people across some 360m of difficult, boggy terrain "covered with grass up to their knees" to the safety of the church ruins, finding the task very testing, as Mr Godfrey has reaffirmed to me recently. He went on to reaffirm the visitors exhibited poor mobility, many past middle age and into their senior years.

Interestingly, when Ashley Law entered the parsonage, where it was intended they should leave the visitors, he discovered Kingston sheltering there, allegedly under a table. This was at the time John Godfrey and Peter Stainforth were standing on Church Rd, watching the gunman at the boot of the yellow Volvo that he subsequently abandoned near the Tollbooth. It was at this stage Ashley Law accompanied by Ian Kingston rejoined John and Peter on Church Road, with Kingston instructing Ashley to straightaway *'go to the Tollbooth and check on Aileen Kingston'* who was working there. John Godfrey and his friend had earlier concluded that the gunman would return, and so he suggested to Ashley Law that he (Godfrey) should accompany him on that assignment. It was from the Parsonage Kingston made his "000" call; perhaps he was just catching his breath there?

At the time, Maria Kingston - Ian's wife - held the position on Site as a "Visitor Supervisor". Ian Kingston made no less than 4 sworn statements to police: 28/4/96, 19/6/96, 24/6/96 with his final statement made at 2.15pm on 7 October 1996, although the claims made in his EMA paper are even more revealing and outrageous. Considering all of his statements sequentially, I would opinion the claims are remarkable. His performance during the staff press conference in Hobart on Monday 29th was nothing less than amazing. Peter Burke, Paul Cooper and Wendy Scurr all gave brief accounts of the incident as it affected them. But Kingston made some quite astonishing claims even while seated there among 3 dumfounded colleagues, especially evidenced by Paul Cooper's expression. As Kingston rambled on, a red-faced PAHSMA executive Michael Langley made a delayed but abrupt appearance and upon his entry immediately, he closed-down the press conference.

For reasons better known to Kingston, he changed his recollection of the incident with every updated statement to police; a case of evolving recall? In spite of his blatant unreliability as a witness, Ian Kingston was the establishment's man - even the only PAHSMA employee to attend the Abbotsford venue for the EMA seminar where he delivered a paper on the involvement of Volunteers in the incident. This paper soon attracted stern rebukes through a lawyer from a number of aggrieved Historic Site staff. You see staff were officially forbidden to attend this seminar. Ian Kingston's wife Maria also numbered among the chosen few and she attended the hush-hush media event, when John Howard, Kim Beazley and Cheryl Kernot made their flying visit to the Broad Arrow Café on Wednesday 31 April, 1996. On this visit, the VIPs laid flowers on the steps of the soon to be "destroyed" Broad Arrow Café.

But after the acrid smell of rifle power had drifted from the Broad Arrow, so began an ever so short interim of quiet. In the wider scene national politics John Howard MHR, the parliamentary leader of the Liberal Party who with his National coalition had recently been elected to the treasury benches of the Federal Parliament was to swoop. Capitalising upon the national outrage and trauma, the time had come for Howard to reveal his latent revulsion for an armed society: the laws had been drafted and shown to the Queensland Police earlier. The Attorney General, Darryl Williams, at the time patron of Perth's chapter of the National Coalition for Gun Control soon oversaw the disarming of the Australian people.

I have often contemplated: what if a fit young Tasmanian hunter had been in a position to intervene as the gunman left the café, and had taken-out the gunman with a single shot from his sporting rifle? But it didn't happen, as the law-abiding firearm owners were in the habit of respecting firearm prohibitions in National Parks, such as Port Arthur was.

A Nation Traumatised

Both Howard and Williams burst forth, blaming the gun for this psychopolitical massacre. But very early on and for a very practical reason Tasmania Police identified the massacre as a terrorist attack, and for good reason. You see Tasmanian statutes forbade state police tapping telephone lines. Only 'acts of terrorism' overrule the statute. **The law prevented a police negotiator to establish a telephone-intercept, so as to negotiate with "Jamie" inside Seascope, unless it was seen as a terrorist act.** So terrorism was introduced to our southern

island state, and this alone heralded an urgent need to bring forward the scheduled Australasian Police Ministers' Council meeting, to 10 May.

But, the "uniform gun laws" as I have mentioned had already been drafted and were being implemented in Queensland in November of 1995! I should point out that this key Police Ministers' meeting was not only for Ministers for Police and their Commissioners in Australia, but also their counterparts from New Zealand. The APMC was overseen by a busy, eager, bureaucrat, Daryl [Smeaton](#); an intelligence officer who'd formerly been advisor to Attorney General Duncan Kerr, ALP Tasmania, in the former Keating Labor Government. Smeaton coincidentally hailed from Tasmania and had for a time served as Senior Private Secretary for Senator Tate (also of the Tasmania ALP), himself later rewarded incidentally, while the latter is now titled, *Rev. Prof. Michael Tate A.O.*



Daryl Smeaton

Six years after completing his important task and in 2002, Mr Smeaton was appointed C.E.O. of the Alcohol Education & Rehabilitation Foundation Ltd. Still later, he moved yet again to an appointment as C.E.O. of the Real Estate Institute of Australia, and quickly proceeded to issue all sorts of "expert" advice on investment in property and predictions on the industry's future prospects. At least as early as March 2005, Daryl Smeaton was reported as Chair of the Catholic Education Commission in the ACT.

In March 1996 on the TV show *A Current Affair* and after the videoed firepower demonstration of an SKK carbine - coincidentally of course, the type of firearm - the self-loading type - targeted by the NCGC, for prohibition and confiscation - Roland Browne stated, *"these types of weapons will never be banned until there is a shooting massacre in Tasmania."* Here he was reinforcing an earlier almost "carbon copy" statement published in the pages of *The Mercury*.

Elsewhere in this narrative the reader can consider other actions and statements of this fleet-footed "gun control" foot soldier. Also, after reading the account of the 3 gunshots in the bushes beside Clougha on the Site at 6.30 pm of that Sunday evening, you may like to recall the following account.

Some "few weeks prior to April 28 1996," no less than 4 of PAHSMA's staff witnessed "3 or 4" gunshots fired within the confines of the Historic Site at night. Site staffs were engaged in conducting one of the regular Ghost Tours there. Steven Howard, a man very familiar with centre-fire rifles, had his group of visitors at the corner of Tarleton and Champs Sts, when the entire group heard the gunshots. The shots generated such concern that he radioed Andrew Simmons who called police.

Mandy Hatten, another information officer and guide had her group outside the Model Prison when these shots were discharged, which she recounted as being "quite close", and of such concern to her, that she immediately moved her group of visitors inside to the safety of the stone walls...

[Ashley Law](#) had his group of visitors inside the Prison at the time, and was said to have described the gunshots as "close" and "of concern to him". When Const Paul Hyland received a message from Andrew Simmons' regarding these shots, he was en-route to Nubeena from Hobart, and so it was a considerable time before he arrived in his white police station wagon and the perpetrator was by then long gone. Was it a coincidence, an omen or a trial-run to test visitor/staff and police reactions?



Ashley Law, Information Officer PAHSMA

So perhaps the NCGC was not so perceptive or even psychic as we all may have thought. Yet again, is it possible they were quite well connected to the ghostly apparitions frequently reported as “real” by the many visitors who participated in the popular Ghost Tours at Port Arthur and were adept in discharging firearms? Or, did the NCGC have at that time a resident disciple at Port Arthur? You see, I don’t hold that “ghosts” are able to discharge centre fire rifles - just yet.

An interesting development after the massacre involved all staff who were instructed via a memo to cease referring to these popular excursions as “ghost tours”. The memo suggested that sensitive to the recent events perhaps “evening tours” was a more acceptable term for the aftermath. Ordinary staff members were even encouraged not to discuss the massacre and so deliberately avoided those colleagues not accepting of the official line.

But returning to April 28, 1996: on the Tasman Peninsula from 1332 hrs, the mayhem that ensued for 19 hours and 10 minutes instituted a knock-on effect that saw instantly the reinvigorated attack by the “gun control” network, against the basic right of the people to be armed for self defence, across Australia, New Zealand, Canada, the United Kingdom, and to a lesser effect, the United States of America. In fact, the assault involved all of the English speaking peoples of the globe. It even saw on 26 April 2002, the people of Germany, at Erfurt under a direct attack by this “gun control network” of shootings. Their global set-up pushing “gun control” played out their roll so very well.

But here at Port Arthur, nineteen and a quarter hours after the first shot was fired in the Broad Arrow Café, and at 0840 hrs on Monday 29, April, with him tearing at his burning **black clothing**, an eventually naked and badly burnt Martin Bryant, was arrested by Constable Paul Hawkins, an SOG Policeman, near the south eastern corner of the guesthouse called Seascapes and evacuated to the Royal Hobart Hospital by ambulance, guarded in that journey by either an SOG in [Auscam](#) uniform or was it a member of the military?



Dressed in an Aus-cam uniform this (military?) escort alights from Ambulance which transported Martin Bryant to the Royal Hobart Hospital

While the siege there was ended, the trial by media of Martin Bryant had already advanced to their judgement of “guilty”. For on 1 May the headline screamed out, “THIS IS THE MAN”.

It was an angry mob beating on a defenceless, intellectually handicapped adolescent, fuelled by the an hourly fill of choice, prime-time propaganda TV sound-bites, and tabloid sensationalism by these professionals who dare to call it “News” — 24x7 — until even the angry majority were sickened to the stomach and began turning a deaf ear.

By Martin Bryant’s sentencing, people were *conditioned* by the grand architecture of this “stressful event” to accept the “gun control” networks’ antithesis presented to the politicians. Port Arthur was the horrid thesis; only their synthesis remained undone, soon to be imposed upon a compliant people *after* the 10 May 1996, when Australasian Police Ministers met.

In spite of numerous concerted efforts to have a coronial inquest into the matter, all requests were flatly denied. My files hold an unsuccessful joint application submitted by six individuals.

But as you consider the following narrative, you will no doubt come to realise that at Port Arthur, the photographs, investigations, examinations, diagrams, the ‘*statements of fact*’ presented to the Court by the DPP and his assistant at the sentencing hearing, and many media reports besides, clearly do not stand up to scrutiny. The facts I present here reveal a chilling picture of deception and misrepresentation; the lie was protected energetically at Port Arthur, even before the first shot rang out on April 28, 1996.

Recently a video came to light, entitled a *Tasmania Police training video* - with a rider declaring, "*For Police Eyes Only*". When the presence of video in the public domain was exposed by the media, actions by police in four Australian states alone proclaim the video as genuine. The tape's director was the Tasmania Police Commissioner's Media Liaison Officer at the time of the incident. The video tape exposes the Tasmania Police hierarchy's conceited, proud demeanour, from beginning to end, with the vision and narrative exposing - even if unintentionally - the deceptions and probable acts of criminality that I and other authors have for so long either exposed or suspected. Remember, today's police recruits (in 2004) could well have been as young as 10-year-olds in April of 1996. But would these young people believe without question such blatant fraud? The prospects are disturbing.

Port Arthur task force investigator Robert Bond, states police obtained some 1060 sworn statements from "over a thousand" witnesses. Under FOI legislation and from the office of the DPP we have only been able to obtain 171 statements; in August of 1996 Supt Jack Johnston was claiming there were "over 747 witnesses ... collated ... with 1,500 exhibits, 1,200 photographs, 28 video tapes and 20 plans/maps." ⁴

Such are the discrepancies in this case, a problem common to such controversies I fear. While the documents we obtained bear the watermark of the DPP's office, I should point out the documents are not photocopies of a DPP original computer/word-processor produced document and not the hand written, signed statement. Remember police statements were taken from witnesses who almost surely were suffering badly the effects of trauma only ever amplified by the four hundred plus "disaster vultures", who descended upon the survivors over those post incident weeks.

In my opinion some are incomplete, for only those we have obtained directly from the witnesses themselves, bear the witness's signature. Some even evidence hand-written comments and correction included. It also should be noted, that upon reflection by the signatories in two cases at least, they claimed the text differed to a considerable extent from their original signed, hand-written statements, taken by police.

Hence in dealing primarily with the firearms *allegedly salvaged* by police from various locations I will use not only material from sworn witness statements and Court documents, but also much other material besides. The firearms we shall deal with presently were salvaged from no less than six (6) locations:

1. Martin Bryant's Clare Street, New Town residence,
2. The ashes at the periphery of the burnt-out ruins of the Seascope cottage,
3. The porch roof gutter of the adjacent out-building under renovations at Seascope, and
4. Inside that same out-building, as well as
5. Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo sedan registered number CG-2835, abandoned by the gunman near the Port Arthur Tollbooth.

However, there were various other firearms police deliberately chose not to detail such as the single firearm recovered from the grass outside Seascope Cottage, as well as the reported "arsenal" of 43 firearms recovered from the burnt-out ruins of the cottage. These had been allegedly placed one at every upstairs window inside Seascope, during the siege and were destroyed in the cottage fire. We shall examine closely those firearms that the Damien Bugg QC the Director of Public Prosecution (DPP) alleged were the primary firearms deployed by Martin Bryant as the weapons, which caused the deaths and injuries, at seven crime scenes and we shall look closely into the time frames, especially with regard to the Tollbooth-Seascope segment. I will show that the DPP failed to produce one shred of evidence linking any of these

* "The Trauma Trade," *The Bulletin*, (a RHH staff counsellor) 27/01/2004

firearms with any one of the 34* people shot to death and the 21 injured in the massacre. Strangely the DPP even failed to prove any of these firearms were ever discharged at six of the seven crime scenes.

While the two primary firearms we examine were recovered from the environs of the Seascapes Cottage guesthouse, the DPP is less than convincing in its case presented before the Court that these two firearms were ever used at The Broad Arrow Café let alone later at any of the other six crime scenes. Remember that the DPP's "evidence" was never tested under oath and cross examination. But before we demolish the DPP's case, and expose the fiction, and misinformation, which shrouds the primary firearms, we shall deal with the other firearms entwined within the police investigation and the eventual DPP "evidence" as well.

We will also examine in detail the ammunition alleged to have been used by a lone gunman in his ghoulish killing spree, and as to the likelihood of this ammunition leading directly and indirectly to the alleged destruction during a fit of rage of the two primary firearms. The information presented here has been presented in such a way that should the reader be entirely unfamiliar with firearms and the ammunition they consume, he or she can become proficient enough to consider, evaluate and discard the fiction and misinformation, and make informed conclusions as to what did occur during and after the shooting massacre at Port Arthur.

After having considered this study, I ask you then to contemplate why it was that Police, the DPP, lawyers, politicians, bureaucrats and the media chose to deliberately blur the reality, the facts - so unashamedly - that was the massacre.

In this work are assembled many vital facts that through careful and sometimes frustrating investigations have come to light. Facts often sidelined by the establishment, and at least one "author" for what becomes in the long run, obvious reasons. So now, let us examine and consider carefully and impartially, all of the points I raise. I shall demonstrate for your consideration that:



Martin Bryant 1996

- Twenty-eight-year-old [Martin](#) Bryant, adjudged by Professor Paul Mullen in the Court Document to be, "...of limited intellectual ability, [with] his measured IQ lying in the borderline intellectually disabled range," was intellectually incapable of accomplishing most of the tasks he is alleged to have plotted, planned and wilfully carried out. Nevertheless he was pronounced "guilty" and incarcerated, for the term of his natural life.

Regarding the primary firearms:

- While the forensic firearm examiner claimed the FN FAL 7.62 rifle was deliberately destroyed, and the Colt to have been blown-up accidentally by 'faulty' factory ammunition, I will demonstrate how the Colt was deliberately destroyed using a prepared demolition round,
- how Martin Bryant was not present at the Seascapes cottage when David Martin was shot to death and
- that besides Martin Bryant and the 3 hostages, another person or persons were present inside the Seascapes cottage discharging a firearm, while Bryant was engaged in earnest conversation with a police negotiator, and

* 35 persons died in the massacre, but an autopsy revealed Mrs Noelene ("Sally") Martin suffered 5 lacerations over the back of the head and an associated depressed skull fracture, indicating blunt force trauma of considerable force to the back of the head.

- Martin Bryant was not responsible for the deaths and or injuries to people inside the Broad Arrow Café on that Sunday afternoon of the 28th April, 1996, as he was not present.
- Throughout, you may consider the almost endless list of critical anomalies that authorities have chosen by their silence to conceal from the public. As a result of the authorities' complicit, and dare I say treacherous actions regarding the whole of this massacre, it has contributed directly to the victims, survivors, their relatives and loved ones (and not forgetting every Australian ignorant or otherwise), who have been touched by the effects, left as *de facto* victims. They have never received an iota of recompense. When tyranny envelops ministries of the Crown and the very Governments, the people mourn, for in so doing the people have been deigned justice, suffered lose of property and their inalienable, indubitable rights; all of the people deserve nothing less than to know the truth and see Justice done.

If Martin Bryant did not shoot, kill and injure these people at Port Arthur that day, then think on it: the gunman or gunmen and their co-conspirators, are all still at large, rewarded, unimpeded, and that to you the reader, as it is to me, should indeed be a disturbing prospect.

I'm confident in suggesting you will have to AT LEAST reassess any preconceived notion you may harbour of Martin Bryant's guilt in that which occurred from inside the Broad Arrow Café to inside Seascope Cottage itself. I cannot promise that for you this will prove an easy task; I can promise you though this work is my endeavour to present my findings of the incident, impartially. The authorities of Tasmania and indeed every State of the Commonwealth and certain members of the Federal Ministry never afforded intellectually impaired Martin Bryant a trial by his peers as guaranteed in ancient charters and divers covenants - as a result all Australians are the losers here. In consideration of this work, it is my hope that you gain a measure of reward, in knowledge and facts exposed within the text.

Endnotes

¹ Robert James Lee Hawke, (PM) address to Fabians Society, Melbourne 18.05.84

² Kim Zetter, "Surveillance works both ways". 14apr05 at, <http://www.wired.com/news/privacy/>

³ Description of Port Arthur, at <http://www.deh.gov.au/>, and other various articles.
The Age, Melbourne newspaper, 15nov98.

⁴ J. Johnston, Supt Police, letter to witnesses, 14aug1996.

The "Primary Firearms" & Ammunition

Chapter 2

Mr. Damien Bugg Q.C. with assistant Mr Nick Perks, prosecuted the Crown's case. Although (fortunately for Mr Bugg) the statements establishing "facts" read before Justice Cox^{*} were never tested under oath. The witness statements were likewise never tested under oath. Most witness statements, gathered by Police are understandably vague: few among the witnesses were experienced in firearms of any type. But from earliest reports, and continuing right into the Court Document the primary firearm identified was the Colt AR15 rifle. But as this wasn't the firearm recovered from the ashes of Seascope, which Police and DPP appointed as the primary weapon, any identification by witnesses as to the firearm they saw used being different, were simply ignored by the authorities.

Though from reliable witness identification, I can positively identify it was a rifle used by the gunman inside the Broad Arrow Café as follows:



- a. **Left: Colt AR15 a1 223Rem rifle.** This is identical to the variant used by the gunman for some of his shooting inside the Board Arrow Café. Though Sgt

Gerard Dutton was compelled to identify the variant below right, the one recovered damaged in the ashes at Seascope Cottage, as the "rifle". A reliable witness, whom I shall not name at this time, drew a quick sketch and described in detail the rifle used inside the Broad Arrow Café. Initially I believed he'd drawn the above rifle, but in fact upon more questioning and study of his recollection of when he was shot in relation to the other victims in the dinning room; I firmly believe this witness was shot with the AR-10 rifle.¹

- b. **At right: The damaged Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine** S/No. SP128807 recovered by police at Seascope cottage ruins, referred to by Mr Dutton as a "rifle". This Colt was never used by the gunman; it was simply Martin Bryant's & a "throw-down".



The operation 'Stand-in': it was only a "Throw-Down"

Along with the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, one of two other primary firearms identified in the court documents was:

- c. **Left: a "G" series FN FAL** identical to

^{*} All those helpful servants of this psychopolitical exercise received their rewards for services rendered. At time of the massacre Sir William Cox, a Col. in the Army Reserve, was Tasmania's Chief Justice. But at age 68 years & on 15.12.2004, he was sworn in as Tasmania's 26th Governor after former UN weapons inspector Richard Butler was forced to resign amid raging controversy on 9 August 2004.

the rifle in the gutter at Seascope, S/No. G3434; a self-loading rifle, in .308Win calibre. ²

In two photographs published in the December 1998 issue of the *APJ* at page 218, the firearm itemised above at "a." is identified as a Colt AR15 "rifle". That description is embedded throughout the Court Documents as well and only ever served to confuse everyone.

So to point No.1:

After considering carefully witness statements and later conversations with witnesses, it is now my firm conclusion that the firearm primarily used inside the Café, was a Colt AR15 a1 [rifle](#) of around 1967 manufacture as seen at right.



There are so many errors regarding technical firearm related terms and conclusions embedded in many documents associated with this case I find it hard to excuse it as less than intentional, on the part of so-called professionals, but as I have stated elsewhere, these errors certainly enhanced the confusion.



LH view Colt AR15 a1 SP-1 Carbine
with genuine Colt scope and mounts,
no magazine shown

But the firearm shown and described by police, as a "Colt AR15" is a variant of the "rifle" model, being even rare for Australia at that time, and in fact should have been described as a Colt AR15 a1 SP-1 [Carbine](#). This variant is distinct from yet another variant designated "Colt [Commando](#)" both of which come standard with a 30 round pressed metal (PM) slightly

bent detachable magazine. Only the Law Enforcement version of the AR15 carbines come standard with a 10 shot pressed steel magazine. Compared with the Carbine variant, the Commando has a noticeably longer hand guard, while its barrel is in fact shorter by just 2" than the SP-1 Carbine at 14".



Colt "Commando" M16 a2
.223Rem

Point No.2:

The DPP and Tasmanian Police Ballistics Section's forensic firearm examiner Sergeant Gerard Dutton does not correctly identify the Colt firearm he is referring to in the Court Documents or indeed in the *APJ* article or the Police Training Video.

Is it any wonder, the media never did get this firearm's description right either. But they may very well never have been told the truth at the outset, and so continued in ignorance to use the Colt AR15 "rifle" tag adding to the confusion. Joe Vials on the other hand, got the firearms RIGHT, first time he published: this article was published in *The Strategy* May 1998. But the first photographic evidence available to the public authored by Sgt Gerard Dutton, appeared in the December 1998 *APJ* and corresponding forensic information, published in the International Wound Ballistic Review Vol.3, Number 4 of 1998. Joe could not have considered a single witness statement as he never did have any. So his information must have come from an inside "official" source! This conclusion alone I believe, is a damning indictment of the real agenda of Vials as a prolific writer and confirms his boast of having influential "friends" in the 'intelligence community' families - as to what nationality these "friends" were I can but speculate.

In the latter *IWBR* article I refer to of 14 pages, Sgt Gerard Dutton (and by association his three co-authors) firstly claims the Colt to be a "rifle" then an "AR-15 SP1". This confusion is a consistent factor throughout the entire case or *The Crown v Martin Bryant*. When lies are told, legions of fibbers are required to support these lies. ³

The first policeman delivered to the Broad Arrow Café by a colleague referred to in some reports as Det Const Peter [Hesman](#) (yet in other documents as simply a Constable), provides us with a significantly different view of the primary firearm deployed by the gunman in the Café. When we consider his interview as published in the April 29, 1997 issue of *The Bulletin* and carrying the title "Casualties of War", in part it reads:

"It became Hesman's crime scene: the first cop there and the only senior officer present for most of the afternoon. Paramedics led him around the dead, dying and wounded in the car park. Then Hesman walked the 50 metres and climbed the steps to the Broad Arrow Cafe."

Continuing...

"When Hesman first entered the cafe, he recalls: "I went around and did a count and there were 20 bodies. I was surprised, but I wasn't shocked." He began securing the crime scene, ordering friends and relatives of the dead from the building. Then it was copybook detection. He noted the shells and empty magazines on the cafe floor were two different calibres, from two military weapons. Hesman feared there were terrorists. He examined the victims, killed by shots to the head, and his suspicions grew." End quote, my emphasis.

So here we are clearly told several vital pieces of evidence. Evidence incidentally that has been preserved on that hot piece of property, the *Police Training Video*. Why was this evidence apparently ignored by the white-haired-boy of Tasmania Forensic Firearm Examination, the Courts and Prosecution alike? For evident on this video tape and clearly visible are "shells" of differing calibres and when combined with Hesman's "empty magazines" - also plural - there on the floor inside the Broad Arrow Café, understandably the scene was suggestive to this trained policeman a presence of "terrorists" - also in the plural and a suspicion by Hesman's that was 'growing'. So what of the official line on the primary weapon?

Well the Colt AR15 SP1 Carbine variant I now believe was not the primary firearm. My research and investigations lead me to conclude the primary firearm was a Colt AR15 SP1 RIFLE. The rifle variant has a noticeably longer forearm hand guard and the barrel is longer also than that of the Carbine. Also the flash suppressor is of a smaller muzzle O.D., and is longer than that of the Carbine.



Colt action ID

Point No.3:

Importantly, not a single witness describes the butt-stock of the firearm used in the Café as being that of a Carbine with its distinctive collapsible, tubular section.

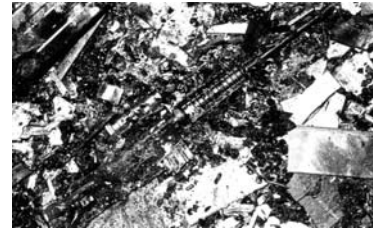
Significantly, the butt-stock of the "rifle" variant is of a non-adjustable dark coloured polymer plastic material. It gives an impression of the firearm being of more bulk than the Carbine variant. All models [display](#) the Manufacturer's emblem, identification, model and serial number, stamped into the metal on the lower left side of the magazine housing.



Peter Hesman

Sergeant Gerard Dutton has been described by Commissioner Richard McCreddie as "the best ballistics expert in the nation".[†] What a pity Dutton chose not to show a photograph of the left side of the action of the Carbine recovered from the margins of the ruins at Seascap for if he had there would have been no confusion whatsoever - but of course this disclosure may well have not served the prosecution's case in the long run.

The Colt AR15 SP-1 when recovered had a, "3x20 Colt telescopic sight ... fitted along with a black nylon sling..." (see *APJ* @ p.222). The sling I can identify as a non-genuine #2676 nylon "Ultra Sling", by Uncle Mike's, originally having an overall length of 48". For this very flammable sling to have partially survived the conflagration that was Seascap, I'm firmly of the opinion the firearm must have been placed there by someone *after* the intensity of the fire had waned, as the photograph [suggests](#).



The controller's "throw-down"
Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine

Of importance here too, is the fact that the Colt AR15 SP-1 at the time of its recovery among the ashes at the periphery of the Seascap cottage, had in battery a 20 shot capacity straight magazine, not the model's standard issue 30 shot capacity *bent* magazine, claimed by the prosecution to have been used at the Café. At least two witnesses counted the shots, and from the number new the first magazine had to be of a 30 round capacity. There was a magazine change recorded as occurring while the shootings were in progress inside the Café. As I noted in the earlier photograph at the time at least a most reliable witness observed the gunman carefully and for a considerable time, he has drawn a notebook sketch indicating a straight 20 shot pressed-steel magazine in battery when he sighted the rifle held by the gunman.

Considering the Crown's case would have us accept that intellectually impaired Martin Bryant shot and killed 20 people and wounded 13 others within the confines of what was in reality a relatively small, congested, café and souvenir shop, crowded with an estimated 60 visitors (plus staff), then for a professionally trained lone gunman, this segment of the shooting was for him a dangerous time; he could well have been overcome if charged by numbers of people at once.

Therefore, "In the middle of this risky environment, why would the shooter have downgraded his firepower by installing a magazine of a lesser capacity?" Such a conundrum is deserving of more consideration, as 'the nation's best ballistic expert' fails to tell us of the capacity of the replacement magazine, it surely must have been another magazine of 30 round capacity. We're informed of one Colt .223Rem 30 shot capacity magazine recovered from the boot of the Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo, the gunman abandoned at the Tollbooth. So could this not mean there is one 30 shot Colt .223Rem magazine which remains unaccounted for.

Sergeant Gerard Dutton requested assistance from the Colt Company of the USA to determine the reasons for the AR15's horrific damage, and it is interesting to note Colt's expert Mr. Taylor alludes to the above Colt AR15 as being a "carbine" just in passing, but gives no indication of accurately identifying the model. ⁴

The following additional firearms were introduced as evidence in the Court Documents as well as being dealt with in the *APJ* article by Sergeant Dutton. It would seem to make a more complete report if we detail them also as follows: -

[†] na. *The Mercury* 3jun04, p.9 In June 2004 the then Attorney-General, Judy Jackson (ALP) was reported as stating that, Justice William Cox, at the time of Bryant's sentencing hearing a Lieutenant-Colonel in the Army Reserve, "is due to retire from the bench in 2006."



1) Left: The [Daewoo](#) 12-gauge self-loading shotgun. ⁵



Type 56, SKK self-loading carbine (Chinese manufacture)

2) The SKK 7.62x39 [Norinco](#) self-loading carbine, discharged in Seascope. ⁶

3) Among "various other firearms" mentioned was an Australian Automatic Arms, AAA-SAR (.223Rem), allegedly found by Tasmania Police on the [hallway](#) floor at Bryant's Claire Street home on the 3rd May 1996 when they raided the premises for a second time. ⁷



Part of the arms-cache police claim was concealed in the piano



Originally produced as a US-military officer's long-arm, the diminutive 30-M1 self-loading carbine proved an ineffective military calibre.

Also specifically mentioned among these 'other firearms' was yet another (coincidentally of course), self-loading carbine of military origine: [30-M1](#) carbine, at right.

Also, regarding these "various other firearms" the ballistic expert and forensic firearms examiner Gerard Dutton and the DPP are deliberately vague on specifics when describing these firearms so described, including the AAA-SAR. This firearm was photographed by police (see above) on their second raid of Martin Bryant's Clare St premises conducted on Saturday 3 May 1996 – six days after the first raid.

Remember, lead by Inspector Ross Paine, Police forced an entry to the Clare Street premises on the evening of the 28th April accompanied by psychiatrist Dr Ian Sale (and some journalists) but police failed to retrieve anything of substance other than some labels from ammunition boxes. This was the first of two subsequent raids on 29 April a 3 May. How possibly could this *entourage* have not tripped over all this evidence lying in the hallway of Bryant's Clare Street premises the first time? But even 'in house' police are coy about these "other firearms" for the PTV tape evidences just a single frame to confirm the .223Rem AAA-CAR carbine, next to a camouflage zippered gun-bag was there. The PTV also shows us the claimed 'thousands of rounds' of ammunition, pictured there by police on the later *official* raid. Or if police moved the evidence to the hallway for photographic reasons, would they dare to seriously suggest this "cache" was found by them concealed within the piano in the Clare St premises? It was during this first forced entry, coloured photos of Martin Bryant were stolen and published by the media across the nation from May 3 onward.

As other police photographs demonstrate, the innards of the Clare Street [piano](#) was rather too "cramped" for space, what with all the mechanism for making music contained therein. I'm unconvinced Martin Bryant ever concealed any of the thousands of rounds, various ammunition belts (with their few rounds) and cleaning rods etc, inside the piano. It becomes obvious that, like the overlooked amendment of Bundeena schedule to the Isle of the Dead that day, someone had also overlooked planting supportive evidence in the Clare St premises before the 28th so it would be found on the first raid. For police to discover or trip over this cache first on the second raid is a story just all too transparent, too convenient and quite unconvincing.



The claimed repository of the arms-cache at Bryant's Clare St home

A former journalist of *The Mercury* now residing on the mainland confirmed to this author that police accompanied by psychiatrist Ian Sale, "forced an entry into Martin Bryant's Clare Street home," without a warrant, late on the evening of 28th April. I have no reason to doubt this witness' word, and the allegation destroys Damien Bugg QC's elaborate story used in the Court to establish Martin Bryant's departure time earlier that Sunday morning; namely that the police led by Insp Ross Paine supposedly discovered a burglar alarm, set at 9.45 a.m. My informant told me no such alarm was "set", for if it had been, the forced entry by police would have triggered the alarm and it would have awoken the neighbourhood! During the forced entry, police turned a blind eye to journalists, who stole photographs of Martin that later were digitally altered and published on Tuesday the 30th April in the *Australian* bearing the now infamous, contemptuous headline, "FACE OF A KILLER".



*The Australian:
Tuesday 30 April.
But the front page
of the *The Mercury*
was worse!*

It reminds me of the tale of the arsenal of weaponry stored inside Seascope, which was perpetuated right down to the wire and alleged to have been owned by the Martins. Even Justice Cox was entrapped in this deception when he stated:

"Throughout the night he continued to discharge a number of weapons, his own arsenal augmented by weapons belonging to the Martins..." ⁸



The plastic inner liner of the cardboard carton containing 439 rounds of .308W (7.72-NATO) ammunition. Dutton and Mr Perks allege was recovered from the Volvo abandoned at the Tollbooth - not Clare St. It was only ever displayed at Police HQ.

Neither the Court, nor Police ever bothered to establish the owner of this arsenal of firearms nor indeed who was responsible for their presence there either. The Courts exhibits in Tasmania and indeed universally in Australia, an abiding fondness to prosecute anyone and everyone who breaches the various firearms acts, but they never did charge Martin Bryant, or Mr Glenn Martin, the son of Sally and David Martin of Seascope on Long Bay, with any breach of law regarding these illegally held firearms at either property, a subject also avoided by NCGC. The police also never bothered to establish the supplier of the alleged, "*one thousand four hundred and ninety one .308 calibre and two hundred and forty-six .223 calibre live rounds of ammunition ... seized from Bryant's home.*" ⁹

I can but speculate that had the supplier been named, it could well have proved very embarrassing to Tasmania Police, rather than the accused and it took police 3 raids to recover it!

Interestingly, police are alleged to have informed the media that Glenn Martin owned the reported "*arsenal of 43 guns stored in his parents' pretty cottage...*", a claim that he was understandably "appalled by" and quick to refute. In the same report he adamantly states that there is no truth in reports that the guns used in the massacre may have belonged to him or were stored in his parents' home. Remarkably, the media report remains the sole record of the number of firearms actually recovered from Seascope! Police failed to establish that Martin Bryant purchased these firearms. In fact, remember Martin had been subject to a tight monetary control by the publicly-listed company, the Public Trustee. **You cannot purchase 43 firearms with peanuts!** Any way, how on earth would Martin Bryant have transported 47 guns to Seascope that weekend, along with the 2,500 rounds of ammunition Prof Simon Chapman obligingly tells us he somehow knew the gunman had at his disposal inside Seascope before the ruins were even inspected by police!

You see, Chapman made this candid admission on Channel Nine's "Today Show" broadcast live across the nation - including Tasmania where the gunman supposedly had power to watch TV if

he so desired - at 7.57am on Monday 29 April, 27 minutes before Martin was burnt out of Seascope! Is Prof Simon Chapman psychic also?



The pressed steel
removable SKK
30-shot mag

But consider, if the firearms average weight was say around 6lbs (2.7kg) that means Martin Bryant would have had to transported in excess of 258lbs or 317kg of firearms in his Volvo to Seascope, and what about the ammunition? For example a case of 880rnds x 308W, weighs 56 lbs, while .223Rem by contrast a little lighter. Remember, an unnamed informant reportedly told Police Media Liaison Officer **Geoff Easton** there was, quote: "shit-loads of ammo mate" ... allegedly stored inside Seascope. So was Geoff Easton's informant with this first-hand knowledge of what was allegedly kept inside Seascope? Did police ever bother to follow up the witness or the claims? No?

But really, can you imagine the distinctive yellow Volvo with a surfboard on its roof-rack loaded above the windowsill-line of the passenger compartments front and back, with firearms, and thousands of rounds of ammunition aboard and with containers of petrol in the cabin making four stops along the way and this "arsenal" escaping the astonished gaze of at least some one? ¹⁰

But the Crown alleges the FN FAL and the Colt AR15 Carbine were the only firearms used by the gunman at the following crime scenes:

1. Broad Arrow Café: Colt AR15. †
2. Bus/car park Broad Arrow Café: Colt AR15, and lastly the FN FAL. †
3. Jetty Road: Colt AR15.
4. Toll Booth: FN FAL. †
5. Port Arthur Service Station: FN FAL. †
6. Arthur Highway, at Seascope entrance: FN FAL. †

At the 7th crime scene — the Seascope Cottage — various unspecified firearms allegedly were discharged. Oddly we are not informed as to the calibre and/or type of most of these "various firearms" and I'm caused to ask; "*The court denied those details, why?*" We are told only that they were "placed at least one firearm in each room". Neither police or the DPP are inclined to give us detailed information here, though Mr. Perks does mention in particular an "SKK semi-automatic rifle" and Gerard Dutton mentions among this arsenal of weaponry, a "12-gauge self-loading shotgun, a 30M1 Carbine," and a "7.62x39mm Norinco self-loading rifle." ¹¹



SKK Carbine of Chinese manufacture

An SKK carbine (not a rifle) is mentioned in various documents as being used at Seascope; it is an interesting firearm having a 30 shot detachable AK-47-type pressed steel box magazine. The model is variant of the SKS Type 56 Carbine and of Chinese manufacture. The SKK being a variant of the original Samozaryadnyi Karabin Sisyemi Simonova or Russian SKS, and as you can see the middle "K" in both acronym titles stands for "Karabin" or "Carbine" in the Russian. The earlier SKS has a hinged, staggered double row 10 shot clip-rechargeable magazine, while the later SKK differs primarily from the early system



Russian SKS Carbine

† In each case were the FN FAL self loading rifle was said to be used by the DPP, it was in fact an AR-10 never recovered by police; both firearms used by the gunman departed with him from Seascope.



Type 56 SKS: rechargeable clip-fed 20 round integral magazine

Originally designed by Sergi Gavrilovich Simonov and trialled in 1943, the carbine was chambered in the then newly developed 7.62x39 cartridge and was first deployed on the front in Byelorussia in 1944. The SKS Type 56 Carbine is of Chinese manufacture with the "56" designating the model was first made by China in 1956. It is of a self-loading gas operated system incorporating a bolt of one-piece, tipping, rear-cocking design. At 40" overall length, the SKS Type 56 Carbine is fitted with a 20.34" chrome-lined barrel having a 1:9.45" RH twist, and weighs in at 8½lbs unloaded. Both SKS and SKK Type 56 firearms work at chamber pressures of 45,000psi, and the Norinco 7.62x39 cartridge is loaded with a projectile weighing 122 grains, producing a modest velocity of 2,410 fps at the muzzle, at considerably lower chamber pressure and lower external velocity to those of the .223Rem round from the AR15 SP-1, an important detail to keep in mind when we consider Chapter 15, entitled "Bangs and COUGHS".

As I have already stated, the DPP is quite adamant that the FN FAL and the Colt AR15 alone were used in the shooting murders and the woundings. But the 30cal firearm used at all crime scenes except Jetty Rd (where the AR15 SP-1 223Rem was used) and Seascope was an AR-10 7.62NATO rifle. But we must be very aware also of the 7.62x39 calibre firearm that was deliberately aimed and fired at the Police vehicle parked on the highway outside Seascope. What is also not made clear by the DPP is who fired those shots. It is my finding, that no proof exists in the DPP's case of who the shooter was, or even if it ever was "Jamie" a.k.a. Martin Bryant and I will explain the veracity of this in detail in a later chapter.

So the Prosecution's case rests upon the primary two weapons allegedly used in the commission of murders and attempted murders in the 7 crime scenes on the Tasman Peninsula, on the 28th of April 1996. The DPP's case is weak and was never proven beyond doubt.

The Crown introduced the Colt AR15 .223Rem into evidence in the Court Doc. at pp. 59/9 & 100/1-8, and the FN FAL .308W at pp. 59/10 & 140/25-27, as being the two prime weapons used to cause the murders and injuries that weekend. I will show the deception of this claim as we progress. However, significant is the early mention by Mr. Bugg Q.C. of the Daewoo 12-gauge self-loading shotgun with its detachable magazine (see Court Doc., at p. 59/12), but again the prosecution fails to provide any details of the shotgun: no serial number, no movement history and no proof of ownership. Martin did acknowledge ownership of just three firearms: an AR-10 rifle (in for repair at Terry Hill's gunshop), a Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine (almost surely purchased at the Hobart Gun Show on 20 April) and the Daewoo shotgun. But the DPP's omissions I suspect are purposefully and consistently repeated, like for example in the case of the two sets of S&W handcuffs that legally never existed. The reason for investigating police consistently omitting such information will become apparent as we progress in our study.



A Type 56 SKS Carbine -Chinese manufacture

Now, with regard to the two sets of S&W handcuffs, reputed to have been used in a most unusual way to manacle the hostage Glen Pears, I can find no statement in the Court Document which relates directly to any photograph of these two sets of

Smith & Wesson handcuffs in place on the body, or indeed after having been removed from the remains. Why? Were they ever in fact recovered from the ruins of Seascope?

Police conducted a most inappropriate interrogation of Martin Bryant in his isolation cell at Risdon Prison, handcuffed and wearing leg-irons. But he was also hobbled by the fact that even his legal Counsel at the time, David Gunson sanctioned the police to conduct the interview even without him present! With dodgy recording equipment Insps R. Paine, J. Warren, Det Sgt L. Jones and Det Const S. Bolt are recorded as the inquisitors there on 4 July

1996. Insp Paine raises the question of handcuffs for the first and last time with prisoner Martin Bryant when he asks:

- Q. Ohh. When, the hostage, did you, did he just get in or did you handcuff him or anything like that?
- A. Umm, handcuffed him or anything, no. Ahh, what was that?
- Q. Well do you own any handcuffs?
- A. No, never, never owned handcuffs in my life.
- Q. Ohh right. ¹²



Wade Frankum

Of this pair of handcuffs the DPP never entered into evidence the two pairs of S&W handcuffs nor did they enter into evidence any photographs either!

Another curious consideration is the fact that Mr. Perks claims (see Court Doc. p.157/1-5), that near the tollbooth, the shooter transferred, "a number of items from the Volvo to the BMW," which included, the none-existent "two sets of Smith and Wesson handcuffs". For Mr. Perks to make such a claim as "fact" he must indeed be psychic: there is no statement from a witness, Martin Bryant stated clearly he never owned handcuffs. No evidence existed to prove the two sets of cuffs were ever in the Volvo sedan that day. While Smith & Wesson manufactured various models such as nickel or black finish in models such as #SW-100, #SW-300 or the earlier 1970's #9XX series Smith & Wesson cuffs, but please forget about the handcuffs as THEY NEVER DID EXIST! If empirical evidence is not formally entered in evidence then that evidence for the purpose of the case DOSE NOT EXIST. Another smoke and mirrors trick!

You remember the gunman left certain objects in the sports bag on a dining table inside the Broad Arrow Café including a "Bowie" type knife. I've already detailed the handcuffs allegedly involved.

Here I need also to point out a quite unique fact; in Sydney and on August 17 1991, 33-year-old [Wade Frankum](#) went to the Strathfield Plaza, where he killed 6 people and wounded another 17. Interestingly during the inquest the Coroner Mr Weller mentioned Wade Frankum was at the time taking the controversial prescribed drug PROZAC. After exiting into the Plaza's car-park, Frankum reportedly "hijacked" a car - NSW Reg MTX-536 - driven by an off-duty female Detective of the NSW Police. Commander Wicks of NSW Police Service was reported as claiming Frankum said to this driver, words to the effect, "I'm sorry", left the car, put the muzzle of the SKK under his chin and shot himself. Handcuffs were also recovered by police at the scene. So Like Port Arthur, the massacre at Strathfield had these elements present also:

1. the primary weapon was a self-loading military style firearm, already primary target of "anti-gun" advocates,
2. hijacking of a vehicle,
3. a knife as a weapon, with the knife being used first and importantly,
4. handcuffs involved as evidential material.



Volvo abandoned on the pedestrian crossing at the Tollbooth: note "evidential item" circled (possibly a -308W casing).

Handcuffs have never been deployed by the perpetrator in any shooting massacre anywhere in the world to my knowledge, other than in Australia's shooting massacres at Strathfield and Port Arthur. Please just consider carefully the significance of this unique *modus operandi* alone: to any investigator worth his salt, such unique *occurrences* common in two crimes using the same type of weapons perpetrated by two independent killers and allegedly planned by them independently but occurring in a "common country" in a reasonably close time frame (say, under five years), points to an irrefutable common link. So, what is the common "link" in these two shooting massacres? Of critical importance is the fact that in legal terms in the case of The Queen v Martin Bryant, the two sets of handcuffs **never existed!** This fact is expanded upon in Chapter 23. But having in essence stated handcuffs were not used at Seascope only means that the real gunman and for that matter Martin

Bryant didn't use or possess handcuffs; it certainly doesn't absolve the controller or those who ran the covert operation from the link they themselves have established in the allegations regarding the presence of handcuffs, to links with the Strathfield massacre.

In the Frankum case, like Port Arthur, movement histories of firearms and handcuffs could have been proven through the trade's invoicing records at least; no such investigation was undertaken in either case. When such fundamental police investigations are ignored in one case, it could be excused as an oversight. However, when it happens twice, one could be forgiven for suspecting these oversights were deliberate. It is not unreasonable therefore to conclude and I believe cannot be refuted by the gun-control networks, that here is demonstrated clearly the fact that extensive record keeping and registration by licensed dealers, of individual firearms, handcuffs and the like, at the various points from manufacturer to end user and on, is an abject failure. Now we move to a firearm officially labelled as almost irrelevant, although it fitted exactly the "gun control" crowd's targeted type of firearm.

The Daewoo self-loading 12ga Shotgun

During the 4 July interview and when holding up a firearm to Bryant, Insp Paine says, *"This is a Daewoo 12 gauge shotgun,"* which provoked the accused to respond: "...yeah I bought that one off umm, Hill...etc."¹³ So here, Martin Bryant admits to owning a [Daewoo shotgun](#) for which he goes on to tell us he paid around \$3,000. Although yet again police never confirmed who supplied Martin Bryant with the Daewoo.



Sgt Gerard Dutton holds the Daewoo shotgun



The Daewoo 12g shotgun with 10 shot mag removed



Daewoo shotgun displayed in the Volvo boot: Note the .223Rem spent case, not documented by Sgt Dutton.

We are told Police recovered the Daewoo shotgun from the boot of the yellow Volvo sedan, registration CG-2835 abandoned by the gunman near the Port Arthur Tollbooth, where he hijacked the gold BMW. On the Tasmania Police video and in the imprecise segment covering the Volvo, there we can see [the Daewoo](#) just inside the open boot in a most unnatural pose, with a magazine in battery and carry strap fitted. Obviously someone had shifted the shotgun - surely it must have been police. To suggest evidence has been tampered with is a most serious allegation, and is not an allegation I make indifferently. We shall revisit another such allegation though shortly.

Now Gerard Dutton holding up the [Daewoo shotgun](#) tells us the magazine is capable of holding 10 cartridges, but according to the Court Documents when the gun was recovered, the magazine contained just 9 cartridges. However, of importance here, is the fact Dutton fails to inform us whether or not the Daewoo was forensically examined to prove whether or not the firearm had recently been discharged.

Secondly Dutton chooses not to provide any details at all of the ammunition loaded in the magazine as to the make, type of shell, or shot size. Remember, with regard to the Café segment, the time constraint and maximum 29 shot theory and 'lone gunman' scenario was central to the Crown's case. I believe these factors weighed more heavily upon the whole of the police investigation than many can imagine.¹⁴

At page 91 of the EMA report we are told that after Coroner Ian Matterson at Taranna received the "all clear" at 1930 hrs (7.30 p.m.) he proceeded to Port Arthur via the alternate route through Koonya to begin his duties of examining the crime scenes, commencing at around 2005 hrs (8.05 p.m.) in bus park beside the Broad Arrow Café. After examining 3 crime scenes he reached the Volvo, where he explains, *"Inside the open boot of the Volvo could be seen firearms and a small white gun shooting target that appeared to have been used. Within*

the passenger compartment were several petrol containers." I emphasise the fact that here Coroner has used the plural, "firearms"; but keep in mind Mr Matterson's indeterminate details as to the number of petrol containers and their position in the vehicle. ¹⁵

Sgt Gerard Dutton states, *"Later examination of the Volvo revealed bullet damage, hundreds of spare cartridges, spare magazines and another container of petrol."* Here Dutton alone informs us of a possible reason for the gunman abandoning the Volvo at the Tollbooth; nowhere is this fact mentioned by the coroner nor can I find it detailed in the Court Documents; a press photograph is the only confirmation I can find of the Volvo suffering "bullet [damage](#)". But Sgt Dutton's statements are ambiguous as to type of magazines, details of ammunition and location of evidential items and the situation continues with him stating, *"Also in the Volvo's boot was a 12-gauge Daewoo self-loading shotgun fitted with a ten-round box magazine. The shotgun was not fired during the Port Arthur incident..."*: but had it recently been discharged?



The bullet damaged left, rear passenger window & quarter pane of the abandoned Volvo.

Mr Perks tells us that the gunman *"left behind in the Volvo ... items ... including the 12-gauge Daewoo semi-automatic shotgun ... fitted with a magazine containing nine cartridges."* He further states that also left in the Volvo were, *"...two magazines for the .308 FN rifle, one empty and one containing seventeen live rounds..."* If this was so, why were the two 30 cal magazines never entered into evidence, even photographic evidence? Were the two "308 FN Rifle" magazines in fact not metric pattern, and so they would be embarrassingly incompatible with the "throw-down" FN FAL rifle? ¹⁶

Here several other dilemmas are exposed, which immediately beg the question: *"What firearm/s (other than the Daewoo shotgun) did Mr Matterson see in the boot of the Volvo, which caused him to use the plural form - 'firearms'?"*

To consider fully the implications surrounding the Daewoo shotgun, we must also consider very carefully witness statements and the following report. A delivery driver for a welding firm in Vancouver, Washington in the USA, 54-year-old Dennis Olsen was a visitor to the historic site that day with his 49-year-old wife Mary. No sworn statement from Olsen is among those obtained by FOI legislation from out of the DPP office. However, from an American source this media account came to light for your consideration. That Sunday afternoon, Olsen and his wife were reported as standing in the queue at the servery in the Broad Arrow Café to buy sandwiches, when the gunman took a rifle from his large bag and opened fire on the people inside the Café.

'I thought something like a pressure cooker had exploded,' Olson reportedly said. 'It took a little while for everyone to realize that what was going [on] was death.'

'He shot at the head, one time deliberately at each victim. He wasn't spraying the room with bullets; he was picking out individuals and shooting them,' Olson is reported to have stated.

Dennis Olsen explained that his wife Mary lay flat on her stomach, but not Dennis: *'I couldn't just lay down. I felt I had to get up to survive,'* and so when he looked over the barrier, he heard a shot, ducked, and realized he was bleeding all over his face. Abandoning his wife to providence as she lay on the floor feigning death, Dennis fled through the back door and up the [steep rock face](#) behind the café and into the bush just beyond.



Steep rock-face behind the Broad Arrow Café

In the Wound Ballistic Review, Olsen is designated "P13" and his wounds are listed as:

- 1 day in hospital. Lacerations to right side of head, left eye and left chest from secondary fragments.

However, at p.34 in the EMA papers we find the following:

- "Treating ambulance personnel were quite convinced for some time that Bryant had used a **shotgun in the broad Arrow Café** due to the significant number of 'peppering' they noted." - My emphasis.

This reference is directed towards patient "P13" Dennis Olsen.

This requires a short explanation. Remember, in reference to administering first aid to those survivors who suffered gunshot wounds whilst inside the Broad Arrow Café, there are a number of eyewitnesses, all of whom were either serving or former experienced ambulance officers whose observations and conclusions must be considered. The second point I would make is that as professionals they had over considerable time on the job witnessed first hand, call-outs involving both gunshot wounds and shotgun wounds - there is a difference.



Revisited: Wendy Scurr stands where the inoperative fire escape door once stood

In 2002, I interviewed Mrs Wendy [Scurr](#), the Information officer and PAHSMA's First Aid Officer. Mrs Scurr was a founding chairman of the Peninsula community's Volunteer Ambulance Service, and served as a Volunteer Ambulance officer, being highly trained as a St John Ambulance First Aid officer; Wendy triaged the victims in the Café that day and administered First Aid.

With gunshots ringing-out from the Tollbooth and Port Arthur as a backdrop, it was none other than Wendy who examined Dennis Olsen's wounds as they crouched in the bush near a fence line above and beyond the cliff to the rear of the Broad Arrow Café. Without hesitation Mrs Scurr described Olsen's wounds to me, by stating: -

"Mr Olsen identified himself, and when I asked him to show me the rest of his wounds, he opened his shirt and pulled his singlet aside. His numerous wounds were not irregular or jagged - all were small, round, raised and dark, with minimal bleeding. They didn't appear to be wounds made by bullets, or bullet fragments. In my opinion, I was looking at wounds consistent with those made by shotgun pellets. I'd say the shot size was about the same as farmers use..."

The section of the EMA report mentioned above was compiled by Mr Andrew O'Brien, AFC on the Tasman Peninsula, and in less than convincing terms, he concludes by stating, Olsen's wounds, *"... later turned out to be [caused by] bony fragments from other victims."* Considering Olsen's line of departure and the his injury being sustained when he pope duo from behind the servery, I believe the secondary wounding by bone fragments cannot be sustained. Please note that the authorities were fettered in their determination of what occurred inside the Broad Arrow Café by 3 constraints:

1. The DPP's case of a lone gunman - the accused Martin Bryant using a .223 calibre firearm only.
2. The gift-shop door with its defective fire-escape latch that contributed directly to the death of 2 staff and 5 visitors - 7 persons in all - by denying them their only escape route *away from* the gunman's bullets, while ever he remained in the Café, and
3. The DPP's ridiculous and nonsensical and unsustainable synopsis of the 29 shots in 90 seconds time limit the gunman remained in the Café.

Were these some of the overriding influences that also caused Sgt Dutton to offer the vague report regarding evidential material recovered from the Volvo's boot like the inconclusive Daewoo particulars?

Now while dealing with the Port Arthur Tollbooth crime scene, let us consider several other important anomalies here - even shown to us by police. Mr Matterson tells us that as the coronial team walked through the crime scenes and came up Jetty Road from the Broad Arrow Café, just 50-60 meters inside the entrance to the Historic Site Tollbooth, they *"...came across the body of an adult clutching one small child with the body of another young child nearby behind the trunk of a tree."* Mr Matterson is referring here to the deceased Mrs Annette Mikac allegedly 'clutching' the body of her youngest daughter Madeline, while the body of her eldest child Alanna was lying some distance away behind a tree trunk.

The Police training video clearly shows the body of Mrs Mikac a quite significant distance away from that of her youngest child Madeline. So is Matterson's recollections defective, or did someone tamper with the position of the body or bodies before the crime scene photographer had videoed the scene?

On Jetty Road, the gunman changed from the AR-10 .308W, back to the .223Rem calibre firearm. Mr Bugg names four of six witnesses to these 3 shootings as John and Caroline Boskovic, and Peter and Pauline Grenfell. But curiously he opens his synopsis of this segment by using the statement of a witness he chooses to refer to only as "Mr. Dutton". Now actually the DPP is referring here to the witness, James David Dutton and by defacto, his wife Joanne Helen Dutton, whose statements I have on file.

Mr Bugg QC explains to the court that as Mr. Dutton moves away from the threatening scene he, "looked over his shoulder," seeing Mrs. Mikac shot in the head once, and she falls to the ground. This act causes Dutton to take his wife's hand and flee further from the scene during which time he says he heard a further two gunshots; i.e. three gunshots in all. The number of shots discharged on Jetty Road as claimed by James Dutton and put forward by Mr Bugg cannot be sustained after further examination. So why did Bugg use the Dutton statement? For then in the next breath to contradict Dutton's recollections, stating that five shots were discharged here? Mr Bugg's reasons I shall explain shortly.

James Dutton continues to explain that from the sanctuary of a tree further into the bush, *"I looked up and could see the lady and the dress of the older girl and the younger girl lying on the ground."* His words are suggestive of him being at a lower elevation than the Jetty Road. In fact the topography at the scene and witness statements dictate that Dutton was at a higher elevation than the roadway, and therefore above the crime scene.

Although James and Joanne Dutton provided considerable material in their sworn statements before and after they entered the Historic Site, substantial parts of their statements and the words they use, upon careful examination simply cannot be sustained as credible.

Both of the Dutton's statements are imprecise. For example, James Dutton states that earlier, the couple in their hired vehicle were making a U-turn past the Historic Site entrance on the road to Nubeena, when he saw *"...a yellow Volvo with the surfboard on top with one male driver. I noticed it because of the surfboards [plural] and the weather as well as a surfer driving a surfboard."* A rather curious recollection you surely must agree.

I believe the DPP used James Dutton's statement early in his recount of the Jetty Road events, in an attempt to legitimise the Dutton's account sighting Martin Bryant driving his distinctive yellow Volvo sedan with a surfboard on the roof rack earlier that day near Port Arthur. My investigation leads me to conclude their statements are imprecise.

The DPP's synopsis of Martin Bryant's movements throughout the entire day is weak, speculative, and inaccurate. If subjected to cross examination I'm firmly of the opinion the prosecution's case could easily have been destroyed. It can be said it was nothing more than a smoke and mirrors performance and so Mr Bugg used the Duttons' statement in an attempt to

bolster the Crown's weak case and conjecture up a belief that Bryant entered the Historic Site, shortly after 1300hrs that Sunday and at the same time corroborate the approximate times provided by Roger Larnar. For after Martin's brief visit to Roger Larnar's property on Palmer's Lookout Road, the Dutton's would have us believe Martin Bryant 'drove past the Dutton's heading towards Port Arthur "entrance"'. The key word here is "entrance" and it is a misleading influence upon the reader. But as the Duttons were the only witnesses who saw Martin Bryant driving the Volvo south between Palmer's Lookout Rd turnoff and the Historic Site entrance, the DPP, clutching at straws, tried to legitimise the worth of James and Joanne Dutton as witnesses and so used their statement in his court statement. But the Duttons' account is destroyed by another quite thorough witness, in Jai Nichols.

It is a very enlightening fact; the straightforward statement from Jai Nichols was never used by Prosecutor Mr Bugg QC, in stating his case against the accused.

Jai Nichols was 'dropped off' at the Port Arthur Store by his "pop ... at about 12 midday," that Sunday, intending that he "hitch hike a ride to Hobart ..." While walking north up the Arthur Highway towards the Fox and Hounds "for two or three minutes," an oncoming Yellow Volvo with a surfboard on top went passed travelling south, towards Nubeena.

After purchasing a soft drink from the [Fox and Hounds](#), Nichols continued walking and obviously when about adjacent to the gate way south of the entrance to Seascope (the next-door neighbours property), the same Yellow Volvo driven by a male with "sort of bleachy blonde hair" overtook him travelling north, and as it passed he saw the vehicle's brake-lights come on as the car slowed and turned into the Seascope Cottage driveway.



The Fox & Hounds

Martin Bryant was at the wheel both times, and now he was arriving at Seascope Cottage for the first time that Sunday; a considerable period of time after 12 midday, and if not Martin Bryant, then who? This means that Martin Bryant did not turn into the Historic Site's tollbooth after visiting Roger Larnar's as the Dutton's statement infers. Like a number of other visitors on the peninsula that weekend, were the Duttons simply acting-out a role? Another author on the subject has also chosen to ignore entirely the statement by Nicholls, and so his work is badly flawed in regard to this segment I believe.



Today: just a "shell" of the dining room remains of the Broad Arrow Café

Mr Bugg used smoke and mirrors to warp the times so as to accommodate his synopsis of the timeline of Marin Bryant's

ETA at Seascope, and we shall examine that in detail in a later chapter.

Before we continue with the story we should return to the Café for a moment. There is much controversy about what items the blonde-headed gunman carried to and from the Broad Arrow Café that Sunday, understandable when one considers all of the facts.

After the gunman left the [Café](#), Vietnam Veteran eyewitness John Godfrey stated that he saw the blonde headed gunman *"...at the rear of his vehicle, he put a black bag into the boot he appeared to be calm relaxed and in no hurry."* The exactness of these details is confirmed visually by the Balasko video. So how did the shooter turn what was described by a



The Broad Arrow, west end: the old car park was hereabouts, looking N.E.

number of eyewitnesses as a *"a blue Sports bag"* into a black sports bag? He simply used the oldest conjuring trick in the book; there was one bag inside of another bag. But it may turn out a little different than even you the reader may be [thinking](#).



Discarded: Prince "inner-bag", solo drink can, lunch wrapper & the missing video camera with the gunman's DNA a plenty!

The predominantly blue "Prince" Sports Bag was thought my most of the witnesses to be *THE bag*, the only bag. I myself first wrote that the blue and white "Prince" sport bag was the outer bag: I was wrong. Many of those who were adamant that he entered with this same 'blue' or 'blue and white' sports bag may very well have entered or re-entered the café *after* the shooting had ceased, and seeing the a predominantly blue bag sitting quietly on one of the dinning tables they were left with what they believed to be irrefutable fact, though this bag was left there to be conveniently found by police. So how could they be wrong?

Well after considering this question for a considerable time, finally the penny has tumbled. First and foremost Petra Willmot in her statement says that, she accompanied her boyfriend shopping, in Fitzgeralds she "thinks," and that "Martin bought a bag, an orange and blue/green sports bag," which she never saw again. But in anyone's language, Martin's purchase in Petra's estimation wasn't "blue and white," unless Petra was/is colour-blind.

A significant number of witnesses mention a blonde haired male entering the café with a 'sports bag' or a 'duffle bag' and of these witnesses a few make particular mention that it appeared "heavy". However, many of the witnesses describe the sports bag in various colours, but most lean towards the 'blue and white bag' discarded by the gunman on a table inside the café. Ian Kingston, while an unreliable witness on so many details, is adamant in his first statement when he says, *"I stopped a vehicle, a yellow Volvo sedan with surfboards on top of it.... He had a black bag on the back seat. It was an overnight type of bag..."* When the driver parked contrary to Kingston's instructions down by the water's edge, he continued observing the driver when he '...saw the male get out of the car,... he pulled out his black bag, closed the door and he started walking towards the Broad Arrow Restaurant'.¹⁷

The proprietor of the Sorell supermarket - where Martin purchased a bottle of tomato sauce - recollected the bag Martin carried to the peninsula that morning was a "large" sports type "bag". The recovered bag with its items of evidence, a piece of rope, a jumper and a knife, was itemized as "exhibit P2" photograph #52, but the table number upon which the bag was resting when recovered by police remains vague, although the position of the table is obvious there on the PTV tape footage.



Gunman: Captured by James Balasko, on a home video, the gunman carries a black duffle bag on his left side to the Volvo - keeping his dominant right hand free; Martin was left handed.

But ask yourself; why would anyone committing a serious crime leave his bag loaded with evidence behind, while taking yet another bag with him to his vehicle to escape? It stands out as quite illogical, **unless the offender was intent on successfully deceiving some one with a stack of misleading evidential material.** But what is misleading about these items?

In fact either deliberately or by inept investigation, police and so the court were denied the truth yet again. You see witness Rebecca McKenna stated that *"He [the gunman] was not wearing gloves ... he placed his video camera and bag on the floor and began to eat his lunch. I noticed that he had a can of Solo and a plastic Schweppes cup on the table."*¹⁸

But realistically, how could police be so incompetent? Don't forget, James [Balasko](#) captured the gunman placing his black duffle type bag into the boot of Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo. This is corroborated by two witnesses



Balsko Tape: several frames after than above "crop", a full frame of gunman at the Volvo boot in the Café bus-park.

Now we know that he most definitely departed the café carrying a large black bag which he put into the boot of the yellow Volvo. It becomes quite clear the gunman was intent of creating a deception with the bag and left behind a different bag than he arrived and departed with, to maximise the people's confusion. So I now understand that the black "duffle-type" bag had to be the outer bag, and it must have been longer than the 74 cm bag left behind, and the longer black duffle-type bag had to be long enough to accommodate the 986mm [AR15 rifle](#) and the 1015mm AR-10 rifle, both used inside the café. This most reliable witness that has confirmed the weapon was an AR15 SP-1 rifle, is unwavering in his recollection and subsequent



Colt AR15 1967 model rifle



AR-10 7.62NATO self loading rifle: Also supplied in olive drab stock & forearm hand-guard.

examination of police photographs of the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine - recovered from the periphery of the Seascope ashes - was most definitely not the weapon he saw used by the gunman there in the Broad Arrow Café.

Some witnesses no doubt entered the café after the shooting ceased, and saw the blue and white bag in the table; hence their statements. Still others - counselled among many other witness - ensured that the dominant natured witnesses instilled by peer-pressure the image of the blue and white "Prince" sports bag as being *the only one*. No wonder some of the witnesses were quite confused by this deception. The shooter left the large blue Prince Sports Bag - "Exhibit P2" with its contents of rope, knife and jumper - but strangely or not so strangely, **missing from prosecution exhibits was the large, black video camera.** It was never marked as an exhibit.

Newspaper reports of 4-5 May, announce that the *"leading Hobart criminal barrister,"* Lt Col David Gunson has been *"briefed for the defence of Bryant..."*

In the very next paragraph, one report continues by stating Mr Gunson reportedly raised as his very first issue of disquiet concerning, *"...conflicting reports from eyewitnesses about whether the Port Arthur gunman had a video camera at the site. No camera has been recovered,"* the report stated. It seems already, just 7 days after the shootings, some police at least were doing a panic with this critical evidence simply having disappeared from the property room! As I mentioned the video Camera is not listed as a Court exhibit. ¹⁹

The Tasmania Police training video (PTV), contained considerable footage (that was provided to the Prime TV and *The Weekend Australian* incidentally), and on the table towards the North-Eastern corner of the dining room, along with other items of interest there sits the blue and white *substitute* sports bag. Commissioner Maroney of the NSW Police Service didn't even answer my correspondence dated 7/09/04 with regard to the "video overboard affair" in which I detailed 13 serious charges of police misconduct. While his Assistant Director of NSW Police Service's Forensic Service Group, Acting Insp, Commander Carlene York simply "declined" to investigate the matter further citing 3 unsatisfactory reasons for her decision. If that wasn't a direct enough cover-up, I received a second letter from David Chie "customer service manager"

for the ombudsman! Both extraordinary responses when you consider I wrote to neither bureaucrats! I must say that this is really no surprise though to this author.

In the PTV clip, with the substitute blue Prince sports bag, is easily recognized just a metre away from the gunman's first victim, William Ng. As the cameraman pans from left to right, beside and to the west of the bag can be clearly seen the brown tray the gunman carried his lunch on, firstly to the tables on the outdoor balcony as witnessed by Mick Sargent, and Melbourne visitors Michael Beekman and Rebecca McKenna. After eating his lunch he took the outer heavy duffle type sports bag, along with the large video camera, and juggles the tray with his lunch remnants on it, back into the dining area to the table, the details of which Mr Bugg QC, for reasons only known to himself, chooses not to identify by number. There he removes the Colt M15-Rifle and commences his killing. Before he leaves the dining room, he takes the blue and white "Prince" bag "Exhibit P2" with its contents within, out of the black bag, and as they say the rest is history.

But in the PTV video, on the brown coloured food-tray and in-frame, clearly can be seen a plate with a crumpled cordial cup, and importantly beside those items sits an opened, yellow-labelled aluminium can of "Solo" soft drink. As the camera continues to pan right, there comes into frame a large, black, Video camera, with its integral, external, microphone quite visible. No less than 4 eye witnesses mention the blonde-headed gunman carrying this 'large video camera' over his shoulder into the Café. Even Mr Bugg QC mentions Martin Bryant's video camera on a number of occasions in the Court Documents. How could the Prosecution be so blatantly deceptive and expect us all not to notice this deception?

So what occurred between the crime scene investigators, forensic police and the police property room officers? For the large black video camera seems to have rematerialized - in the mind of Det Insp Paine at least - when on 4 July 1996 he interrogates Martin Bryant (incidentally, without David Gunson present), and suggests to Martin Bryant that he'd left the camera not on the table, but '*inside the Prince sports bag* where it was recovered by police'. Here Bryant continues to deny ever having been to the Historic Site that day. So what really did become of Martin Bryant's video camera and what does all this mean?

When Sergeant Gerard Dutton addressed a gathering of some 329 delegates from 20 countries as a guest of the Association of Firearm and Tool Mark Examiners in America, a medical doctor asked him, 'was there any empirical evidence recovered from inside the Broad Arrow Café, which linked Martin Bryant to the murders'; in America he answered, "No." Though would he provide a corroborative answer on Australian soil? Well at Brisbane's Nathan Campus of Griffith University and on the evening of the 21 November 2002, a meeting sponsored by the Australian and New Zealand Forensic Science Society Inc., was held. This same organization sponsored a well attended meeting in Hobart in June 2000 that again awarded Mr Dutton considerable public distinction. But in Brisbane, and when question time was declared, Mr Ian McNiven from the Sunshine Coast, through the MC asked Gerard Dutton the first question, which was basically the same as the American doctor had posed. For his trouble McNiven was threatened with arrest, removed from the meeting, and Gerard Dutton chose to leave the question unanswered, and question time ceased forthwith! A scheduled video tape of the meeting, promised to be available later, like the camera, has conveniently ... gone missing.²⁰

It is now my firm belief, Tasmania Police and their counterparts from New South Wales forensic crime scene examiners collected no empirical evidence from inside the Broad Arrow Café, linking Martin Bryant to the shooting murders of 20 persons there.

The video footage of the Tasmania Police "training video" - for police eyes only - part of which was captured inside the Broad Arrow Café with a ceiling fan in motion, shows all cadavers except two still where they fell. But it also exposes a great fraud perpetrated by the authorities, Channel Nine Television, and person or persons unknown.

This tape also confirms the existence of empirical evidence sitting quietly there on a café table the likes of which would excite even the most hardened investigator and so why was this evidence, never mentioned in the Court Documents? Surrounded by chaos, there beside the gunman's blue Prince sports bag sits the brown tray on which stands the open, yellow, aluminium "Solo" drink can, lunch wrapper and plate that had been handled by the Port Arthur gunman! It would surely have retained finger, thumb, and palm prints, DNA from saliva, sweat, possibly even hair samples, and as a bonus beside the tray sits the large, black, video camera the gunman carried over his shoulder. But to me it becomes very clear why this piece of evidence at least went missing. I believe the gunman was trained in weapons handling, but he made a huge forensic blunder. Let me explain.

Unaware of the significance of what Michael Robert Sargent witnessed it is now your turn to grasp the importance of his account, when he stated; *"The big blue bag was in this male person's right hand, and the video camera which was not in a case, was in his left hand."* You see the gunman should not have been removed the video camera from its grey carry-bag, for then forensic evidence would have been preserved, uncontaminated on the camera! However when the gunman removed it from its carry-bag, the empirical evidence on the camera would certainly have been contaminated with prints and DNA of the gunman.

Unhelpful evidence in any criminal case has a repeated habit of simply disappearing from the property room or even at the crime scene itself. In the Café, if all such experiential evidence pointed conclusively in a direction other than toward Martin Bryant, I would defy any of those involved in the investigation and prosecution of Martin Bryant to deny that all such exhibits had to fade quickly from everyone's memory and especially the Court system. This item will be revisited later and when I deal with the burning of the BMW, you may just recognise a familiar pattern emerging here!

Now to the fraud exposed here. You see, *The 9 Network's* flagship, the daily evening show ACA, with special reporter and experienced anchorman Ray Martin at the helm, aired a documentary entitled, *Port Arthur the Inside Story*. In a segment of that documentary Ray Martin explains the gunman *"...left the café at one thirty-six. He'd been inside less than two minutes, yet he'd killed twenty people..."* and at the same time the camera seemingly zooms towards *the blue Prince sports bag* perched on a Broad Arrow Café dinning table overhanging its edge. But all of this video clip is a deceit and a fraud.

If I could show you a clip from the Tasmania Police PTV and you could see the true condition the Broad Arrow Café exhibited, you will realise immediately the 9 Network's special-effects-people have been a party to a fraud here at least. Now *The 9 Network* had to be complicit with this fraud, or are they even more skilled in the supernatural than NCGC spokesperson Browne is in Tasmania? Did they foreknow the Port Arthur massacre would happen and that the gunman had a fetish for blue Prince sports bags?

Is it believable, that denied entry to the Café, they settled for a mock-up, and yes, using digital editing, they "pasted" a photo of a blue sports bag onto a photograph of a dining room table photo shoot in the café? But I cannot explain when, how, or who had the great foresight to take the original pristine photograph of a pristine Broad Arrow Café dining room BEFORE the FACT.

A dining room, with not a thing out of place, save this one table; even with a video camera (the same one?), sitting on a chair fortuitously pulled-out from the table in the RH foreground of frame? But, in place of the witnessed "Solo" soft drink cordial can, are *several* stainless steel milkshake containers, and various other sundry items, none of which are mentioned by eye-witness statements. Of course, *The 9 Network's* producer would have been entirely unaware of what exactly the gunman had on his tray, as he didn't have the advantage of reading the witness statements at that early time. I challenge Ray Martin and any of the directors of *The 9*

Network, to explain to the public satisfactorily, just exactly how this segment of their "Inside Story" to this horrid massacre was assembled. It puts a whole new meaning on the title, "Inside Story" doesn't it. I can assure the reader, their explanation would be most interesting! But, don't hold your breath!

Let us progress up the Jetty Road. And I should state clearly here, that while the authorities, politicians, media and the NCGC, exploited the emotional and traumatic impact of this segment of the awful massacre to its entirety, that is farthest from my intention here. However, these details must necessarily be retold here for a very important reason, which shortly will become evident to the reader.

From the Court Documents and the *Wound Ballistic Review*, we are informed that when the gunman brought the Volvo to a halt beside Anette Mikac, Mr Bugg QC stated he "...placed his left hand on Mrs. Mikac's shoulder and people were close enough to hear him tell her to get down on her knees on three occasions, whereupon the gunman shot and killed her with one shot to the head." We are told that "almost immediately," the gunman discharged two shots at the youngest child Madeline, the first from intermediate distance causing a non-fatal wound entering from the rear of her right shoulder exiting to the front of the same shoulder. The second shot was a distant shot which struck the child in the chest area, "travelling from back to front [and] slightly downwards, damaging the spine, before exiting the lower back." Neither of these bullets left recoverable fragments we are told.

Mr Bugg QC continues to inform us the gunman then fired two more shots which missed their intended target, the elder sister Alannah, who by this time had sheltered behind a tree some 5.5 metres to the eastern side of carriageway. Mr Bugg QC further informs us that the gunman, ***"...then moved to the tree and shot her at near contact point with the muzzle almost pressed against the right side of the child's neck."*** This tells six shots from the AR15 SP-1 .223Rem rifle in total were fired at this third 4th crime scene. ¹⁹

The DPP goes to some lengths to detail the nature of evidence to demonstrate to the Court that the 'powder marking' and a 'patterned abraded injury' suffered by the second child were consistent with ***"the flash suppressor on the barrel of the gun having been pressed against the child's neck, prior to the firing of the gun."*** If this is so, and I have no reason to doubt Mr Bugg QC in this instance, then the Police Training Video exposes a very grave inconsistency with this version of events.

The statement by witness James Dutton, informs us he heard just 3 gunshots discharged here on Jetty Road. Yet a few lines away Mr Bugg clearly states that in all 6 fired .223Rem cartridge cases were recovered by police at this scene; ***"...five near the car on the roadside, and one near the body of the child Alannah behind a tree."*** Eight photographs (18-26) were exposed and entered as prosecution exhibits of this segment. - my emphasis. ²¹

If the disparity in the claimed number of shots discharged here is not concerning enough, then consider the following: In the Tasmania Police Video, which must have been captured no later than 1105 hrs on Monday, 29 April (before the bodies were removed, in preparation for the busload of media people toured this crime scene) and in the frames covering the Jetty Road segment, it clearly shows a body the narrator identifies as a "young woman" - Annette Mikac - prone on her right hand side, with the body's torso lying parallel to the alignment of the carriageway, her feet just off the sealed carriageway's surface. Mr Bugg tells us that the body of Mrs Mikac's youngest daughter Madeline "lay nearby", and from the video we can see the child lying on her back, with her left arm outstretched at right angles to her torso, and her right hand over her chest touching her left shoulder. Importantly, fallen leaves and grass are under the body, with no bitumen or gravel ballast beside the sealed carriageway visible in-frame.

The next clip shows the body of her elder sister Alannah in frame, her body lying prone on her right side, with both arms forward of the body, extended upwards towards her head. The first frame of the next clip is a close-up of an area under the right arm, with an unidentified person's index and second finger of a white surgically-gloved right hand in the top, centre of the frame. The index finger is indicating what I can positively identify as a .223Rem spent case. As the video continues to role a similarly gloved left hand lowers the deceased's right arm back to the position shown in the previous clip, to rest on top of the spent shell case.



Spent .223Rem casing
under victims arm on
Jetty Rd

From the pages of *The Mercury*, who at the time interviewed Assistant Commissioner Luppo Prins, we learn that the first ambulance arrived at the Port Arthur Tollbooth at around 1346 hours (1.46 p.m.), although mistakenly the report claims the ambulance originated from Dunalley; it came from Nubeena.

The first ambulance was crewed by two volunteer officers, Gary Alexander and Kaye Fox. This Nubeena ambulance crew could have been on the scene much earlier, but quite rightly, they adhered to the 'disaster plan protocols', and waited for an 'all clear' message from Peter Morgan in their communications room at Ambulance HQ in Hobart relaying from the incident scene. This protocol was in place to ensure the safety of their officers when entering a dangerous incident site, as dead or injured or ambos cannot assist anyone. Two other crews were meanwhile proceeding; one ambulance from Taranna, and the other from Dunalley.

Immediately upon receipt of Mrs Scurr's second phone call to Peter Morgan, the Nubeena crew proceeded to the Historic Site. Upon reaching the Tollbooth crime scene on their way down Jetty Road to the Broad Arrow Café, the two ambulance officers broke their journey to check for vital signs and then covered the bodies of, *"seven victims including the family of Walter Mikac."* So it surely is fair to assume that all seven bodies remained covered and protected until the Coroner and forensic police examined, and filmed the crime scene. If this is so, then Mr Matterson's report above, the prosecutions case and the Police video of this segment present dissimilar accounts. I would suggest you may find it not such an easy task, to resolve these considerable anomalies. ²²

For example, Mr Matterson states the mother was "clutching" her 3-year-old daughter Madeline, while Mr Bugg QC presenting the Crown's case, does not sustain that position. The Police Training Video provides yet a third version of the positions of the bodies. The PTV tape show the bodies of the mother and her 3-year-old daughter Madeline separated by approximately two metres. What has occurred here? Were the bodies moved and if so by whom?

What about the spent .223 Rem shell case, pointed out by the surgically-gloved hand in the official PTV tape, lying there under the right arm of the elder daughter's body? What I can state clearly here in relation to this particular spent shell casing is this: the spent shell could not have come from the AR15 rifle (or for that matter an AR15 SP-1 Carbine) which the gunman employed in these 3 murders. As the scenarios presented by the prosecution and reports by the Coroner tell me this spent case could not have come to rest there under the victim's arm other than by post discharge human intervention.

As I mention elsewhere in the narrative, these Colt AR15/M16 variants have an ejection pattern that makes it impossible for a spent case to have landed there behind the tree under the deceased's body, either at the time the single fatal round was fired at contact, or indeed when any of the other alleged 5 rounds were discharged there on Jetty Road during that incident.

I'm forced to conclude that a person or persons unknown deliberately placed this fired case under the deceased's right arm. Consider: "How did police know to lift the arm to point out the fired case being there if they had no knowledge of it being there in the first instance?" The

presence of the spent case there under the deceased's arm and the fact that Mr Bugg QC only refers to the spent case as, "*one near the body*," only highlights the deceit of this evidence. If police tampered with this evidence, then how much other evidence received similar treatment at the multiple crime scenes involved? I'm also stirred to note, that unlike bodies at the other outdoor crime scenes, none of the positions of the bodies and or vehicles at the Jetty Road crime scene, the Tollbooth crime scene or the Port Arthur General Store driveway were marked out. Only the spent shell cases seemed to have been encircled with yellow marker.

End Notes

¹ Dutton G., Sgt, "The Port Arthur Shooting Incident," *Australian Police Journal (APJ)*, p.221 - hereafter simply referenced as the *APJ*.

² *ibid*, p.219

³ Dutton G. "Wound Ballistic Review", *Journal Of The International Wound Ballistics Assoc. of the USA*, p.39

⁴ Dutton, G. Sgt., "The Port Arthur Shooting Incident," *APJ*, Dec.1998, p.224

⁵ Bugg QC, Court Doc, p.141

⁶ *ibid*.

⁷ Perks, N., *ibid*, p.189/21-25

⁸ Justice Cox, Passing Sentence, *ibid*, p.3 Heather Kennedy, "Last Contact with Martins 'years ago'," *Sunday Herald Sun*, 4may96; Chapman, S. Prof for NCGC, "Today Show" 7.56am 29apr96 – interview Liz Hay

⁹ The Court Transcript Document, p.190

¹⁰ Heather Kennedy, "Last Contact with Martins 'years ago'," *Sunday Herald Sun*, 4may96; Chapman, S. Prof for NCGC, "Today Show" 7.56am 29apr96 – interview Liz Hay Dutton, G. Sgt, *APJ* at p.215; Perks, N., Court Doc p.176/18-19

¹¹ Dutton, G. Sgt, *APJ* at p.215; Perks, N., Court Doc p.176/18-19 PROI, Court Doc, p.73

¹² PROI, Court Doc, p.73

¹³ *ibid*, pp. 196-7 Police

¹⁴ training video

¹⁵ Ian R. Matterson LL.B., Magistrate at Hobart - Chief Coroner's Delegate, Southern Tasmania - Coroner for Port Arthur, *Coroner's Responsibilities at Port Arthur*, EMA Report, p.90

¹⁶ Ian R. Matterson LL.B. Coroner Port Arthur "Coroner's Responsibilities at Port Arthur", p.90; Sergeant Gerard Dutton, "The Port Arthur Shooting Incident," *APJ*, dec98, p.209.

¹⁷ Ian Gregory Kingston, signed statement, dated: 10.08 pm., 28apr96

¹⁸ Rebecca McKenna, witness statement to police, comm.10.35pm., 28apr96

¹⁹ Le Grand, "Top detective to head taskforce investigation," *The Australian*, 4may96

²⁰ Rae Walsh, "Ballistics expert hits an international mark," *The Mercury*, undated; Ellen Winnett, "Crime under the microscope," *The Saturday Mercury*, 17jun00, pp35-36

²¹ Bugg QC, Court Doc. pp.146; Vol 3, No 4 *WBR*, p.37

²² Ian Munro & Garry Tippet, *The Sun-Herald*, 20apr97, p46

Colt AR15, a History

Chapter 3

The Colt AR15 rifle story begins in 1948, when the US Army's Operations Research Office conducted an examination of small arms effectiveness, concluding that a 22 calibre, select-fire rifle delivering a high velocity bullet was "most desirable". Armalite, a small division of Fairchild Aircraft Corp who at that time operated out of Costa Mesa, California was as a result of this early determination requested by the US Army to develop a 22 calibre rifle, which fulfilled those specifications.



The Armalite AR10 7.62 NATO rifle manufactured by Holland made by Artillerie-Inrichtinge. The rifle used at Port Arthur was identical but sported a 'drab-olive' stock & forearm hand guard.

military trial. While almost identical in overall appearance to that of the AR-15, importantly the Armalite AR-10 was only ever chambered in 7.62NATO and only ever produced as a rifle. In 1957, Fairchild licensed Artillerie-Inrichtingen of Holland to manufacture the AR10, the source of subsequent variants of this model sold to military and non-military end users. But due to many shortcomings in reliability and accuracy, Fairchild began to hurt financially, and they sold all rights for the M16 to Colt's Firearms Manufacturing Company and so the Colt name eventually supplanted Armalite.

So began an association between Armalite, Sierra Bullets and Remington, and the "223Remington" rifle cartridge was the end result. Head of Armalite's team of engineers was the respected ballisticsian Gene Stoner. By 1958 the first deliveries of rifles designated the AR-15 were made to the Army for test and evaluation. The first prototype select fire model produced, and designated the AR-16 basically a copy of Stoner's AR-10. But eventually the M16 was released for



Colt's M16 model 1965 - no fwd assist

Stoner left Armalite in 1960, joining Colt, and in 1962 the US DoD purchased 1000 rifles for field trials in Vietnam. These trials drew criticism from many levels, as the casualty numbers climbed directly because of jamming in that Colt trial. In fact even by the time it was adopted by the US military in 1967 and first designated the 'XM16E1 5.56mm' by Army Ordnance but eventually known as "US Rifle 5.56mm, M16A1" - the rifle was looked upon with a growing mountain of pessimism among serving military, if they themselves survived its shortcomings. But in all fairness the problems should have been foreseen...

Promoted by Colt as a "low maintenance" firearm, nothing could be further from the truth. But in typical bureaucratic nonsensical logic the US Military issued these rifles *without cleaning kits*, and lacking instructions to the troops as to how to maintain their M16 - I kid you not!

The ignorant thought '*no cleaning kits translates to no need to clean the rifle*'. This oversight was bad enough, but the list of woes was substantial: no chrome in the barrel, bolt or chamber, and "dud" aluminium 20 round magazines.



Colt M16A2 Rifle - spent case over rifleman's right shoulder

Even the propellant powder had been changed from the clean burning IMR Dupont, to standard ball; a disaster. Standard ball powder contained calcium carbonate which caused unacceptable fouling in the barrel and gas tube; the latter became so congested it eventually blocked altogether and actions simply quit cycling - not the ideal outcome in the heat of battle. Other problems included raised operating pressures, which produced higher velocity and increased wear and tear. But by the 1970's these deficiencies were resolved, and barrels, chamber and bolts were chromed, and the 20 round aluminium magazine was replaced with a 30 round, bent, pressed-steel magazine. New 'cleaner

burning' ammunition was also developed with a heavier 62-grain projectile designated the "M855 ball projectile". Initially the M16 had a 1:12 twist barrel, to suit M193 ammunition, but the new SS109 ammunition required a faster rate of twist of 1:7, and now along with the later M16A3 and [A4 rifle](#) with their heavier barrels, and optional flat top "Picatinny accessory rail" atop the [action](#), both are standard issue in the US Military today.

The military versions differ to the commercially available AR15 SP-1 variant only by having a *change device* inbuilt in the safety selection lever that permits selection of three modes of fire: *self loading*, *full auto* and a *two-round burst*, while the SP-1 is simply a self-loading firearm.



Colt M4-A1 Carbine with pick-a-tinny rail

After adoption, even its ardent critics, were soon convinced by results achieved in early training program that the M16 rifle with its unconventional material/radical design combination still produced surprising results. A quote from the USAF armourer as to this new generation rifle's "shooter compatibility" is of significance here. He commented that "*In a three week period, almost half [of that current intake of the USAF] trainees made Expert with the M16.*" Asked 'what replacement parts were most needed,' the armourer replied, "I don't know. We haven't broken anything yet".¹



The US M14 7.262NATO Rifle

Remember the US military had previously been training with the [M14 rifle](#) in the calibre of .308Win (7.62 NATO). M14's tip the scales at 8 lbs. 15 oz. As a consequence it could be argued a shooter would quickly attain "expert" status, in transition from a 9lb. rifle to a 5lb. 13oz rifle in a calibre delivering considerably milder recoil, much attributable to the Stoner recoil-damping system integral in the Colt M16. Into this equation the 223Rem also launches a projectile

almost 2/3rds lighter. Conversely it would take an exceptionally well trained *expert marksman* in making the reverse change, and not display an initial downturn in accuracy, such as was the case at Port Arthur, when the gunman changed from .223" Rem up to .308W. This new aspect in a rifle, lighter by a third, reduced recoil and lighter ammunition, also fitted the new agenda: females in the military forces, and even into combat roles.

Unlike most other gas operated systems among the various military type firearms of the period, Gene Stoner's design termed a "direct impingement" type gas system was then unique. In the Colt M16/AR16 and AR10, gas is bled-off the barrel through a port in the base of the foresight,

and delivered by a small tube on top of the barrel, through the forehand guard past the receiver and *delivered directly* under pressure *into the bolt carrier*, which by its very name, carries the bolt rearward, to extract, eject the spent case, and then is propelled forward by the action spring housed in the butt-stock to deliver the next unfired round from magazine into the chamber and return the bolt to battery. The bolt head with its multi locking lugs rotates to unlock, and then upon reaching battery again a cam rotates it in the opposite direction into the locking lug recesses locking the bolthead closed.

The AR15 SP1 (Sporter I) Carbine specifications:

- Finish: Black anodised receiver; black oxide barrel.
- Calibre: ·223 Rem (5.56mm).
- Weight: 5lb 13 oz. (2.6kg).
- Overall length: 34" (86.3cm) stock extended, and approximately 29" (73.8cm" with stock retracted).
- Capacity: Standard, 30 shot detachable pressed steel box magazine.
- Effective range less than 300 yards (less than 275m.)
- Barrel Length: 16" (40.6cm).
- Bore diameter: groove, ·2245"; lands, ·220".
- Rifling: 6 groove; RH, 1:12" twist, (AR15A2, 1:7" twist).
- Muzzle Velocity: approximately 2,850 fps.
- Police alleged that the AR15 was used in the Broad Arrow Café and the blue and white "Prince" sports bag, 75cm long, facilitated its concealment.

We should definitely consider the specifications and dimensions of the rifle that I now firmly believe was actually used by the gunman in the Broad Arrow Café: the M16A1 or Colt [AR15 SP-1 Rifle](#).

M16A1/Ar15 SP-1 specifications:

- Ammunition M193 (·223Rem)
- Overall length 27.8" (986mm)
- Barrel length 20" (508mm)
- Weight loaded (30 rd mag) 7lbs 15oz (3.6kg)
- Muzzle Velocity 3,098fps (945m/s)
- Max Effective range 500yds (approx460m)



Colt M16/AR15 SP-1 (with forward assist) rifle

You may have noted from the specifications above, the large black duffle-type bag would most definitely have been required to conceal the gunman's rifle of an overall length of 27.8" or 986mm. This rifle variant of the Colt would not have fitted into the blue and white Prince sports-bag left inside the dining room of the Broad Arrow Cafe - a conundrum constant with the ongoing deceptions.

Many modification of these variants are possible but I truly believe it would only add to the confusion if I was to detail them here, save to say shortened barrels require specific compensators, similar to the Tim LaFrance-type-device which effectively "fools" the rifle into cycling as if fitted with a standard length barrel, preventing certain malfunction. In the Stoner direct impingement type gas system, the position and diameter of the bleed-off gas port in relation to the muzzle and the breach is critically matched to ammunition/powder combinations to ensure faultless cyclic function. In original issued state, the AR15/M16 rifle (circa 1965) was issued with a straight 20 round capacity, pressed aluminium magazine, and the upper receiver group had one obvious feature missing; there was no forward assist plunger protruding from the upper receiver group's RH rear.

This forward assist plunger is visible in the later M16A1 of 1967, which also had dispensed with the early 3-pronged flash hider and adopted the typical "bird-cage" type. By 1967, the slightly bent 30 pressed steel magazine had replaced the failure-prone 20 shot aluminium magazine, and in the 1980's plastic magazines of 30 rounds capacity also came on the scene. But importantly, many were supplied with a straight, 20-shot capacity, pressed steel type magazine, as drawn by a witness.

Near Table 14 in Broad Arrow Café a very credible eyewitnesses lay on the floor wounded for much of the shooting in there, observing closely the gunman. He has recalled in detail the gunman's countenance, his hair, skin, eyes and importantly for this segment, the firearm the blonde-wigged gunman fired while in his line of vision. As time went by, the witness searched in the periodical magazines he came across for an illustration that matched the firearm he's seen the gunman use in the Café.



The eyewitness' sketch of the rifle the gunman used in the Café

Before he located that photograph he drew a [sketch](#) of the rifle for me. Later when he produced a photograph recovered from a periodical, both sketch and photograph confirmed my appraisal: he had identified the firearm by 3 distinctly unique features, which enables me now to state with confidence that the primary firearm used by the shooter inside the Broad Arrow Café was a



Colt M16/AR15 SP1 Rifle with Fwd Assist

Colt M16A1 or [AR15 SP-1 Rifle](#) and it was not a Colt AR-15 SP-1 Carbine identified as a "rifle" by the forensic firearms examiner Sgt Gerard Dutton and recovered by police in a damaged condition where it had been placed with care at the periphery of the Seascope cottage - so it wouldn't be too badly

burnt.

End Notes

1. Sources – various, including *The M14 Rifle...Hail and Farewell* by John Lachuk, *Gun Digest*, 1965 @ pp.53-59, pub. Follett Publishing Co. Chicago.

Trojans Bearing Gifts

Chapter 4

It is important in this chapter for me to take you back to 1984 when, through my life-time interest in firearms and hunting I was personally confronted by the foot soldiers of "gun control" and their misinformation counterparts. The experience left more than just a bad taste in my mouth. I should ask that you be patient as I attempt to demonstrate, the civil disarmament network or global "gun control" network which is driving the gun massacre phenomenon rather than being just linked to it. They can be likened to the Trojans who fooled the Greeks, but with a twist; these "Trojans" bear gifts in the form of a "Safe(er and open) Society". They are always "Johnny-on-the-spot" people, there with the rent-a-crowd and under the journalists' feet ever so close to the mess at every multiple gun shooting, but NEVER getting blood on the hands (except at Port Arthur^{††}). Yes those of the "gun control" brigade and their misinformation network colleagues, distort information circulated in the public arena by polluting it. In describing their personality the adjectives "dangerous" and "obsessive", spring to mind, although over the years I now realise a better description is perhaps zealots to their cause; even if they are predictable zealots. They and their "buddies" even construct the news.

They are obsessive in imposing their adopted philosophy upon the ordinary people of the world, no matter what.

In their wake, already we can see examples of the disarmed society's vulnerability to the will of the 'political army' and its master who, being superior to our common law, rule by any principle of their choosing.

I'm not overstating their role as "gun control" people when I identify them collectively as 'fanatical global terrorists'. They're not 'bombers' as the term seems to have implied since 9/11. No these are *canny* terrorists, but terrorist none the less. In this country, the gun-grabbers have almost succeeded. For decent Australians to dismiss as irrelevant the "gun control" zealots' degree of success to date, and its impact upon the generations to come, would be to their lifelong shame I believe.

In Australia their perverse cause is succeeding; little wonder when the figure of US\$30m keeps cropping up during repeated public presentations as to the cost of staging the massacre at Port Arthur.

While civil disarmament of the United States of America is their ultimate goal, Australia, New Zealand, Canada, the UK and Germany were all seen as important strategic "back doors" to their overall campaign.

In recent times the "gun control" network has really stepped out, cleverly making a covenant with two global organisations perhaps to widen their support-base, or project an appearance of respectability, but more probably to quicken the pace of disarming ordinary people. They need to accelerate the real agenda toward a "new order," in their case via the deception of George Soros and his Open Society concept a society that is anything but "Open"! Unfortunately, its

^{††} At Port Arthur & directly because someone overlooked the change to 'winter schedule' of the *Bundeena*, their people did get blood on the hands: 3 shot dead in the Café; 1 slight wounds; 1 received a huge settlement; 1 suicided.

not "new" there is no "order" and the society he envisages, is "open" only in so far as the despots who rule and who will have full sway!

"Three non-governmental organisations -- Oxfam International, Amnesty International and International Action Network against Small Arms (IANSA) -- Thursday launched the 2006 Arms Control campaign in Bamako, Mali." ¹

Oxfam, a humanitarian aid organisation with branches in 12 countries including Australia and New Zealand, was founded in the UK in 1942, while Amnesty International (AI) has been a "blip" on my radar of concern for a considerable time. Their actions speak louder than words. They fight tooth and nail to save some miserable drug-trafficker's life, while ignoring our denial of trial by jury, and the hijacking of our ancient rights like Habeas Corpus! So these three organisations are in truth aids to the "gun control" urban terrorists!

But then the conditioned "gun control" disciple when called upon emits civility so as to gain the intended victim's trust. They appear to be "on your side", a desirable characteristic in turn promoted by a cooperative - or more correctly a 'controlled' - media, that in reality, acts as a support network of conduits to endorse the perp's credibility and simultaneously promote themselves as champions of truth and free speech.

The "gun control" activists cleverly *beguile* the unwary especially professionals in health, and the humanities, gathering them as followers and supporters who quickly become almost *true-believers* if you will. Anyone who dares to challenge face to face the "gun control" networks' philosophy will usually attract a swift rebuke via the media at a time and place of their choosing and without your opportunity to reply. Most find it too onerous to oppose for very long their barrage. The process, ages old and it often divests all who oppose their agenda of their precious resources. This experience usually neutralises the "wounded" party.

Many outrageous claims made by "gun control" advocates are all too often published by the media as fact, a bias, which in today's political climate is beyond challenge: if you cannot hire the hall, you don't get to speak. When ever the "gun control" network is challenged publicly, you simply receive the standard hallmark of their ilk; the silent treatment.

A good many of their 'wounded' victims become so confused and disillusioned, they give up in disgust to "get a life". Hopefully I can demonstrate some of how this network operates so you may be able to recognise these terrorists who deploy and work unhindered under the blessing of a disturbing number of administrations globally.

Below I've listed for your consideration just a few of the players and associates in the whole misinformation league and the niche within which they operate:

- **Public Debate:** please refer to *Deceit & Terrorism*, by Andrew MacGregor, and his chapter, "I Think It's Fair to Warn You," which explains the complexity of the Internet Chat Room, and so it does not require me to expand upon it here. Though consider this; the name on the posted thread is really no indication of the author's true identity, but at the end of the day, the text alone exposes a great deal as towards identity by the persona the posting reveals. I have a hunch this operation was run by a chappie called "Joe" - just a hunch mind.



Ray Platt

- **The Strategy Newspaper:** edited by [Ray Platt](#), this is an 'alternate' newspaper which was reported to have once enjoyed a circulation of 30,000 units and still in September of 2005, the publication promoted the works of "Joe" Vialls (even when deceased?) and several of "Joe" Vialls' long-term supporters.

Robert [Balgarnie](#) until recent times was slated as proof-reader for *The Strategy*. Since the "Inverell Forum" was launched in 1988, Robert has been their recording technician and lynchpin of this voluntary-run event. Held annually in the Northern NSW city of Inverell, *The Forum* assembles many nationally acclaimed speakers voicing a diverse mix of views and from its inception the event has been sponsored by *The Strategy*.



[Inverell recorder](#)

- **Jonathan Pember Graham:** Graham was b.c1950 Perth WA and educated in St Pauls College & Sydney University. Formerly employed by publishing house Macmillan in the UK and 3M. Author of *Dictatorship of Controlled Media* and various political articles; had a regular column, "Phoenix Rising", at page 6 of *The Strategy* newspaper commencing in March 1996; former delegate to the NSW Liberal Party's State Council; former office bearer with their Double Bay Branch (app.1975-1981); Former Vice-President Australian Civil Liberties Union, associate of Mr. David Thompson, a former director of the Australian League of Rights; was Vice President of the Conservative Speakers Club (Sydney). By the Strategy he promoted the work of "Joe" over and above factual writers.

- **Ray Martin:** 'Special Reporter', Graduated Sydney University, BA and History dist. He began as cadet journalist with ABC in August 1965 and from 1969 was their North American Correspondent until 1976. In 1979 [Ray](#) joined George Negus at *60 Minutes* (Negus was at the time of the infamous raid on ASIO offices in Melbourne, private secretary to the "high level KGB operative" and then Attorney General of Australia, the late Lionel Murphy). Ray was anchorman of *A Current Affair* (ACA) from 1994-1998 with a break, returned and was again the program's anchorman for the early evening show promoted as "*the most watched current affairs television program in Australia*"; he departed permanently Nine's ACA show in late 2005.



[Nine's 1996 ACA anchor
Ray Martin](#)

- **Leonard William Clampett:** - Len was b.1944, and claims to have, "*served with the Regular [Australian] Army in Borneo, and for 12 months in South Vietnam.*" However his Service number, 214772 reveals his total service record was from 24.10.67 to 1.6.68 with 17 Construction Squadron (or a total of 7 months and 8 days). Also he claims to be a Taxation expert; Constitutional law research consultant; Banking expert, Economist; lecturer/author of 2 books, one being *Hand Over our Loot* 1990 (written while residing in Tasmania); Freelance journalist; Airline Transport (?) Pilot (Rtd). For some years Clampett resided in Cavite, the Philippines and was the self appointed "director" of "The International Martin Bryant Innocent Project" or TIMBIP at freedom@digitelone.com. Listed as a co-applicant in *Halliday v The Commonwealth of Australia*, in the failed GST Federal Court of Aust. action (14.07.2000). [Clampett](#) returned to Australia with his Filipino wife in August 2003 to reside in the Inverell district. At time of writing, he has shifted.
- **GGCN, The Global Gun Control Network and the birth of IANSA:** The shadowy GGCN and its entire network of 'buddies' are in reality a unique portion of the misinformation or propaganda program that is unquestionably an inseparable 'sibling' of the gun massacre phenomena; they create (globally) the community alarm of impending mayhem, then capitalize on the event's resultant trauma among the population to ensure "party politics" legitimise and implement people control through disarmament.



[Len Clampett](#)

The uncanny accuracy of their predictions and instantaneous response by a cooperative media to the events is anything but coincidental. GGCN gives their address as PO Box 11495 London N3 2FE and they are linked directly to the co-ordinated programs for "gun control" globally. So geographically speaking, their title is quite accurate. Their Internet site makes for quite revealing reading at <http://www.gun-control-network.org/GCN02.htm>. They claim to have been founded in July of 1996, by "*lawyers, academics and the parents of victims killed in Dunblane and Hungerford*." They go on to inform us, "*in February 1997 GCN hosted the first ever meeting of gun control campaigners from around the world*." GCN eventually evolved into the Soros sponsored 'non government organisation' (or NGO) disarmament movement - the International Action Network on Small Arms - or IANSA.

GCN also intimated that their 1997 *global gathering* facilitated, "*close and continuing co-operation*," globally among fellow agents of this horrid conspiracy, so as to ensure a "*common purpose of tightening gun controls worldwide*," is achieved. I contend they are being too modest.

So this document confirms GGCN people conspired with people in sovereign nations around the world to disarm the citizens of their private firearms.

This is corroborated in one of their organs, *Disarmament Times*, which confirms the new director of IANSA as none other than the globe-trotting "gun control" advocate, Rebecca Peters. (Vol XXV, No2 and at page 2 of February 2002)

So what of all the hundreds of innocent men, women and children who suffered injury or death in the psychopolitical 'gun massacres' of Australia and New Zealand, Scotland, America and Germany? All were unwitting sacrifices for *global "gun control"*!

This conspiracy crosses the divides of nation boundaries, party politics, governments and/or administrations. IANSA boasts a membership of between 400-500 NGOs from between 70-100 countries and the Australian NGO is none other than the AUSTRALIAN INSTITUTE OF CRIMINOLOGY (AIC). I kid you not:

The AIC is a member of IANSA and the AIC was conceived by a Labor Ministry and birthed from out of the federal attorney general's office.

Since 1984, Australians have been scrambling to supply the rope with which these treacherous people will use to hang us all!

In Australia, the first disarmament group (est. c.1983) demanding civilian disarmament called "gun control", was Gun Control Australia (GCA), with John Bruce Crook still their aging president in Victoria, however GCA was overtaken by the National Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC). ²

But it must be clearly understood the "gun control" advocates are inseparable partners with the academics of psychiatry who were central to the incarceration 'for the whole of his life' of an innocent Martin Bryant. The public face of the first "gun control" advocate in the modern era in this country was Prof. Richard Harding then of Perth. Inspector Colin Greenwood of Scotland Yard (London) while visiting Perth in Western Australia and after listening to the Harding rant against firearm owners and guns concluded that '*(In Australia) You don't have a gun problem; you have a media problem*'.



Ms Lee Rhiannon

Son of Richard Harding, Andrew, in recent times along with ex-patriot American, Randy Marshall have both appeared from time to time as spokesmen for GCA. Then came the Sydney based group that soon overtook the GCA in prominence: the National Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC). Founded in 1988, with the convener and founding "Chair" being the later Greens MLC in the NSW Parliament, [Ms Lee Rhiannon](#). This urgent "need"



Rebecca Peters

for such an organisation stemmed from the huge defeat of Premier Barry Unsworth (ALP) in the 1988 State election, in what he'd labelled a "gun control referendum". In that general election, Nick Greiner won government for the Liberal Party. Soon after and right on cue came the Strathfield massacre. This saw Rebecca [Peters](#) rise to prominence as chair of the NSW chapter of NCGC. But there is also the New Zealand connection which is an inseparable tentacle of the "gun control" octopus. ³



Turkey Conspiracy: 2nd from R; Philip Alpers. R. front; Rebecca Peters.

Philip [Alpers](#) used to call New Zealand home. But with the Port Arthur mission into the next phase of gun "buy-back" initiated by our Federal Ministry, two principles of "gun control" in Australasia, Philip Alpers and Rebecca Peters departed the Pacific for America's East Coast and New York, where they shortly both received honorary doctorates by way of tax-free

institutes funded in 2002 by the Jewish philanthropist and Open Society founder, George Soros.

Hungarian born, [Soros](#) in 1947 and 17 years-of-age migrated to England where he attended and finally graduated from the London School of Economics. In 1956 he took off again, this time to America, where he set up an international investment fund which by its very structure saw him rapidly accumulate a fortune.



Philip Alpers

In 1979, Soros founded in New York, the Open Society Fund and subsequently by 1984 had exported this tax-exempt society to Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union. Soros is directly and heavily engaged in global "gun control".



George Soros at Bilderberg; June 2000

Based in New York and residing in Baltimore, the now *honorary* "Dr Peters" first was involved in the organisation of the not so successful "million Mom march," and shortly was appointed director of the International Action Network on Small Arms - IANSA. A Soros sponsored proprietary company, IANSA shelters under the umbrella of its limited liabilities status while it retains the rights of an individual as is accorded companies under the crazy corporate laws of America. On 18 - 19 January 2002, before Peters was appointment as IANSA's CEO, the ex-patriot New Zealander [Philip A. Alpers](#) and [Dr Peters](#) were there among 22 speakers assembled in Istanbul, Turkey for a Soros sponsored Open Society Institute meeting, the **International Individual Disarmament Symposium**. Notice they deliberately use the noun "Individual"; they intend for the individual citizen to be disarmed. We shall look closer at Philip Alpers directly.



Adele Kirsten



Dr Akan, PTSD specialist

Then the Istanbul gathering exposed another person of interest: from South Africa, one [Adele Kirsten](#), and you may consider her credentials a little closer in Chapter 14, Building the Crown's Case.

Peters and Alpers were obviously accorded VIP status at this Open Institute sponsored Convention in Turkey. Top of the list of speakers was "specialist" [Dr. Ayhan Akcan](#). Between 1993 to 1998 specialist [Dr. Akan](#) worked at "*Bakırköy Mental and Neurological Disorders Hospital*, [focusing on] "*Chronic Schizophrenic Patients*"..., particularly depression, anxiety disorders, mourning, post-trauma stress disorders and personality." - My emphasis. ⁴



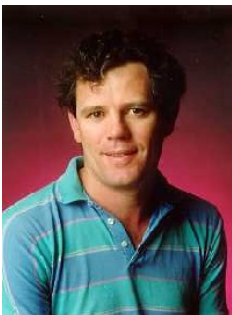
**Monash shooter
Huan Yun Xiang a
Chinese national;
had 5 handguns but
used just 1 to kill 2
& wound 5**

But in Australia, the departure of Alpers and Peters, created vacancies which had to be filled quickly so as the "gun control" network could continue their mission; predictably handguns were the next target for prohibition and confiscation "control" and so more martyrs were required for sacrifice on the global "gun control" altar. On 21 October 2002 and right on cue, a Chinese national, Huan Yun [Xiang](#) with a bag concealing various handguns obliged, shooting 2 dead and wounding a further 5, all shot in a lecture room of the Clayton campus of Melbourne's Monash University. The event was indeed '*right on cue*', as it preceded by just four days, the meeting in Canberra of all State premiers on 24 October 2002, where John Howard - who hated all types of firearms - was to play an important political role. In a twist for Xiang, the prominent Melbourne psychiatrist who authored the assessment report for the Court on Martin Bryant, [Paul E. Mullen](#), who is Professor of Forensic Psychiatry at



**Paul E Mullen,
Professor Forensic
Psychiatry at Monash
University, Melbourne.**

Monash University, and Clinical Director, Victorian Institute of Forensic Mental Health, played out a pivotal role in the trial of Xiang. When sentenced by Justice Teague, it could be said to an 'in-house-affair' I



Brett Inder

believe: For there's justification for expressing grave concern at the outcome. You see Justice Bernard Teague was the presiding judge, while Mullen was again the reporting psychiatrist; both are on the board of the Victoria's Forensic Mental Health (Forensicare), new \$25M plus facility, the Thomas Embling Hospital at Fairfield, Melbourne. But Justice Bernard Teague is that Institute's Leave Panel president no less! Anybody desirous of visiting Mr Xiang and ask him about the Monash shootings or that he should ever be able to be granted leave may well be stymied it would seem. Bad luck, he's been 'moth-balled' by the "gun control" network! Of course another prominent self confessed "gun control" advocate was also exposed in the failed Monash massacre, in Associate Professor, [Brett Inder](#).

But in the wake of Port Arthur, Roland Browne took over as NCGC's national chairperson, while in Sydney a glassblower, [Moshe Pleshet](#), was promoted on live television with a stunned Tracey Grimshaw, as chairman of Gun Control Australia, NSW as he expelled copious amounts of 'hot air' on the subject. Rebecca Peter's departure from Sydney required a Sydney "face" of NCGC and so Samantha Lee filled her shoes as "chair" in NSW.



Rev Tim Costello

The [Rev Tim Costello](#), brother to John Howard's long suffering understudy and federal treasurer Peter Costello, in recent times has also exposed himself as a real champion of the global "gun control" network as a part time spokesman for NCGC in Melbourne.



**NCGC Sydney:
Moshe Pleshet**

The Sporting Shooters Association of Australia (SSAA): Special Projects Director for the entire duration of the gun “buyback” was Gary Fleetwood of South Australia. I will provide further background on Mr Fleetwood shortly.

- The Tasmania [DPP](#): Martin Bryant's sentencing hearing was originally slated for 30 October 1996. But let us put certain hearings and political manoeuvres into chronological order:

- 1st. **30 September 1996:** Martin Bryant appeared for Remand. David Gunson was then his legal counsel and in a clear strong voice he said, 'Not Guilty' as each charge was read out by the associate to Chief Justice William Cox. Bryant had defied his legal counsel's advice to 'plead guilty' and his resistance threw some in Tasmania's Ministry and their bureaucrat yes-men into turmoil. A great deal was at stake for more than a few of the movers and shakers – and on the mainland as well.
- 2nd. **1 October 1996:** Legislation was introduced into the Tasmania Parliament setting among the legal profession an unpopular precedence in law; the confiscation of Martin Bryant's entire estate estimated at \$A1.5m, with which if borrowed against, he could have financed the best legal defense possible against the 72 charges. On that same day, David Gunson stood aside; in all psychopolitical court actions the '*wild cannon*' is dangerous without a firm master.
- 3rd. **2 October:** Mr. John [Avery](#) replaces Gunson and begins the first of his "fifteen or sixteen visits" to Risdon Prison among psychiatric sessions until Martin changes his plea to "Guilty".
- 4th. **19 October 1996:** But it was the explosive front headline of *The Mercury* published that day which read: "*Law chiefs' Pay rockets*," that grabbed the attention of many citizens. This front page article explained that Mr Bugg's salary, formerly set at \$107,638 p.a., had just 'rocketed' by a staggering **57 percent** and when all the 'perks' were added, it took his salary in 1996 to around \$221,836. Understandably, the already scheduled sentencing hearing for Martin Bryant was at this point said to be 'held-over'. Could this be seen as "underpinning" for nervousness? Had the "ferryman" been paid? Later Mr Bugg was appointed as the first federal Director of Public Prosecutions (DPP). (see p.17 of "Template for Terrorism" by this author).
- 5th. **30 October:** A pre-trial hearing was unexpectedly announced for 7 November and when Avery was asked under what circumstances Martin had changed his plea and Mr. Avery stated he was "gratified".
- 6th. **19-20 November:** the sentencing hearing was held for Martin Bryant.
- 7th. **3 December 1996:** The "funds" realised by the disposal of Martin Bryant's assets were applied for by the DPP and
- 8th. **5 December 1996:** the matter went before the court, heard by Justice Zeeman. Strange as it may seem, the previously "sacked" Mr. David [Gunson](#) was for no apparent reason now reinstated as Martin Bryant's counsel! And not surprisingly, he did not oppose the DPP's demand.



Left: Damian Bugg QC, takes media questions at the end of the farcical Sentencing Hearing



John Avery



David Gunson

- **Joe Vialls:** When considered seriously, "Joe" has a résumé, which reads akin to that "Walter Mitty" character. Have you ever seen a photograph of "Joe"?

As you read on, and after considering Chapter 28, I'm confident you will be compelled to have concluded I'm not being facetious in using such a term to describe "Joe" Vialls. In a blatant attempt to reinforce his credibility, his résumé of self promotion has since he came upon the scene, introduced to the majority of my fellow countrymen by *The Strategy* and his writings of Port Arthur massacre in May of 1997: as an '*independent investigator with 30 years direct experience of international military and oilfield operations*'.

The effectiveness of propaganda promoted by "Joe" on the massacre at Port Arthur (or for that matter a considerable number of other controversial events), should not be underestimated. Much about the man and the persona his words displayed soon provoked me to examine "Joe" [Vialls](#) much closer.

By early January of 2005 I had begun to compile the manuscript for Chapter 28 of this work, so as to enable you the opportunity to consider my findings. By March this work was in its first review, though I was "stuck" for a title.



**"Joe": possibly
Otho Jewell
Vialls: but who
knows?**

I circulated excerpts of the essay of 36 pages first under a different title as early as 5 May, 2005. The narrative was edited and with new information added it was filed on 16 May, 2005 bearing the title, "*Joe Vialls," Mind Games, Oilrigs & "Otto"*."

Then a further re-write was carried out with the re-write now entitled, "Did Joe Vialls ever paly fullback for Jerusalem?" which is a 2.8 MB file with in excess of 16,300 words; this revision was put to bed on May 17.

On that same day I forwarded the file as a zipped attachment for publication to a number of websites, fulfilling e-mailed promises I'd made to them as early as May 5 2005 of a forthcoming article exposing Joe Vialls as a fraud. My files confirm continued but unsuccessful efforts to see the article published for a further six weeks through to June 19, to sites including (Jeff) Rense.com, Educate-Yourself at editor@educate-yourself.org, Raylean at raylean@charter.net (RumorMill Reading) and much later Joe's most recent adopted site, Truthseekers.com.uk.

The article was not posted by a single site, a reaction in itself that to me reveals much of their agenda! After all, several of these sites numbered among the 40 or so sites that posted my earlier article in October 2002, "The Doctor behind the Port Arthur Massacre - now living in Merrylands".

But in late May, and on behalf of Andrew MacGregor, I forwarded to two of the above Web Sites, a short article in the form of a critique of a recent Joe Vialls article:

"Danger: Mind Controllers At Work!" - copyrighted by Joe, 15 May and posted at: http://www.vialls.com/subliminalsuggestion/mind_controllers.html

Andrew MacGregor's critique demonstrates a considerable number of serious (even if amateurish) deceptions promoted by Joe as fact. I believe it could be said Andrew's critique exposed a jaded disinformation agent and yet I've not seen Andrew's controversial article posted either, although it now can be found at the Shooters News site.

Acting upon advice, I edited my article heavily and so the edited version appears as Chapter 28 of this publication, running to 24 pages (2.16MB). This version entitled, "*Did Joe Vialls Ever Play Fullback for Jerusalem?*", was finally completed on July 11, 2005 and bearing that title it was circulated on that same day *widely* both here in Australia, in America and Canada both

I also confirmed a [cremation](#) was conducted at the Pinaroo Valley Memorial Park of a deceased person: *"Otho Jewell Vialls aged 62 yrs"* formerly of the suburb of Carine with the ashes "taken by the Administrator from Park". You will note for some unknown reason the certificate does not state the cremation took place. My source who was in close contact with the Administrator, said they were told by a family member, "Joe was cremated on Monday 10/05/2005," the day after his death. But in a city with a population such as Perth, it is not unusual for the cremation was expedited with a degree of haste.

So Rixon Stewart among other doubters should take note that no one by the name of "Joe Vialls" was cremated in the district of Perth, Australia, in July of 2005 though records claim a deceased person said to be Otho Jewell Vialls is recorded as having been cremated - not on the date Mike Macauley posted, July 18 - but a day earlier, the 17th July 2005.

Continuing the whole distortion that has become "Joe" of the west, as the Crematorium's Administrator is on record as having removed the ashes and so conveniently for some I would suggest, no religious denomination is therefore on the public record. If "Joe" turned up as a follower of the Talmud it would most certainly have been inconvenient I would contend, especially in light of several further controversial snippets I shall explain shortly. Even so the reported "death" of "Joe" triggered a crop of remarkable, but predictable tributes from the network of individuals in Australia, America and the U.K. identified in my writings.

No fewer than six [death notices](#) appeared in the columns of *The West Australian*, all of which carried on the myth of "Joe". From the pages of his principal hard-copy sponsor *The Strategy* and the August 2005 issue carried various items: at page 9, appeared the page-length double column tribute and another from the editor Ray Platt and wife Evelyn. However, all of the glowing tributes were to "Joe" - there was not a mention of Otho Jewell Vialls.



His obituaries revealed a further controversy: early claims suggested Joe "passed away suddenly and unexpectedly...after a period of illness." But then another family friend claimed knowledge of "kidney failure" as the root cause of Joe's sudden death, while a third suggested a "heart attack" as the cause of death. But, if you consider kidney failure, it's most unlikely someone suffering from 'kidney failure' would die "suddenly and unexpectedly" - especially in a city such as Perth with adequate, competent, medical care at hand and accessible to British nationals on a 'service pension'.

One of my sources told me that Otho's wife Marilyn, was in the UK at the time, attending to matters concerning her sister's unexpected death, when she was summoned home to Perth, arriving just in time to attend her husband's cremation. But the role of confusion's little helpers becomes even more remarkable at every move in this whole affair. For in the above edition of *The Strategy*, a curious advertisement at page 4 informed readers the book, *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur*, was still available for \$10 a copy, and that quote: "*donations to the ongoing investigation are also welcome.*"

So what does Ray Platt tell us here? Since 1997 we know the amazing "Joe" was able during a crack in time and before the dust had settled on many a global event, to gather far *too much* information, compile, write and publish his unsourced by catchy styled synopses within hours of events, employing a journalistic technique that satisfied the imprudent reader. He was the epitome of a "Johnny-on-the-spot" journalist. So it appears it is *the propagandists' strategy*, in spite of "Joe's" brush with the crematoria, that Platt should continue to promote "Joe", collect "*donations to the ongoing investigation [into the Port Arthur massacre]*", but how is this "ongoing investigation" to be conducted - from a stone jar on someone's mantel piece?

Some may accuse me of insensitivity in making this suggestion - but like many others, I'm outraged by "Joe" and his duplicity and criminality: don't forget he was a fraud at the very least. I remain unconvinced as to his reputed demise, and I should ask the critics: "*Is it not equally as insensitive - no, perhaps ghoulish is a truer adjective - that The Strategy should have the audacity to suggest some "ongoing" investigation on the part of a deceased person?*" Or is it more accurate to suggest it as nothing more than them extending "Joe's" earlier, lengthy campaign, of begging for alms?

Yet another conundrum was attached to the demise of "Joe": posted as if in some sort of a salute to Joe Vialls, at:- www.parapolitics.info/phorum/read.php?f=4&l=911&t=911 was an emblem with the file name [saxe-weimer009](#). A search of the Web produced even further



Mystery emblem on Internet posting for "Joe's" death notice

conundrums, and I share just a portion with you because of space. My search revealed that founded in 1809, Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach was a grand duchy in Thuringia, also known in more recent times as the Grand duchy of Saxony, with its capitol Weimer, the lot coming to an end in 1918. If the reader can throw any light as to the reasons as to why the emblem was included in the posting of the subject's death announcement I would be very grateful.

In considering the revelations exposed in Chapter 28, as you read on, you may understand my concerns and outrage are well justified. The next issue of *The Strategy* in September, I believe confirms, in the journalistic sense at least, the role played by "Joe" to that readership has been filled by none other than a co-conspirator and unswerving supporter - even if temporarily - Tony Pitt and as that TV commercial goes; *"But there's more!"*

Consider Tony Pitt's rather ambiguous statement at page 13 of September issue of *The Strategy*, when he states, *"I have the testimony of at least one senator admitting they were threatened,* [with regard to the Port Arthur massacre]. "

So why not share the name/s of all the threatened senator/s with the readers Tony? But understand that high school grammar taught such a statement is nonsensical; at the bottom of the scale there is "one senator", with the term "at least" superfluous. This statement is imbedded in his article encouraging readers to buy up big, Joe's blue book (i.e. Otho Jewell's), *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur*, a badly flawed narrative from cover to cover.

In the same issue, I also checked-out the credits at page 2 and under the heading of "STAFF": I was amazed with what met my eyes: **"Joe Vialls (deceased)"**. If the editor had omitted the bracketed **"(deceased)"**, this inclusion could be forgiven as a 'typo' or oversight. But obviously the editor wants you to believe "Joe" like the phoenix bird, has truly risen from the ashes, and writes on; but from where? I wonder what alias he writes under this time around.

Bizarre as it may seem, there is yet further twists to this segment of our story and I wager they are not the last. For in the article I forwarded to America was embedded the only known published photograph (March 1990) in existence bearing the caption 'Joe Vialls'. The photo was published in the March 31, 1990 article in *The West Australian* newspaper.



Otho Jewell, "Joe" without the beard or Ari Ben Menashe?

You see, back in January of 2005 in conversations with Wendy Scurr and Andrew MacGregor I had expressed a suspicion that "Joe" Vialls may well be one and the same person as Ari Ben [Menashe](#) who authored the 1992 book *Profits of War*.

In late 2003 when re-reading *Profits of War*, I discovered that the experience was akin to reading the text through an overlaid transparency of a Joe Vialls copyrighted article! The style, sentence composition, expressions and author's arrogant demeanour, were unerringly paralleled by Joe's writings. I needed a photograph of both persons, captured at the same point in time and captioned "Joe" and "Ari".

Even Ari's name caused me to suspect he also used a pseudonym: as the "Ben Menashe" part of this name is not a 'family name' as such, but rather that of a tribe, residing as they have done for many generations on the sub-continent; a tribe incidentally that have for all those years claimed Jewish ancestry.

Published in 1992 by Allen & Unwin, *Profits of War* first came my way in 1993 and I found in the narrative at pp.119-120 accounts alleging a \$US6m bribe paid by Israel as well as further alleged reprehensible and corrupt acts occurred in Australia in February 1987, naming prominent players such as the then Premier for Western Australia - Brian Bourke - and the Western Australian Labor Party.

So in 1993, I formally approached the Member for Riverina at the time Noel Hicks (NP), to raise these matters on the floor of the House of Representatives. Soon Mr. Hicks advised me that the matters were in his words "a dead duck." Shortly Noel Hicks was appointed to the ASIO committee.

With the above information and interest in Ari firmly in my mind, in January 2005 I travelled to Sydney to research the person many Australians new as "Joe" Vialls and establish his background. However due in my opinion to a lack of a compelling photographic evidence archived on the subject at hand, I chose at that time not to publish my suspicions in the article I released for publication in May 2005.

Interestingly, the cover of the Australian print of *Profits of War* tells us the author was born in Tehran in 1951 to an Iraqi-Jewish family, and further that he immigrated in 1966 to Israel, where from 1977 to 1989 Ari worked within "Israeli intelligence" and learned to speak six languages. But importantly, **no photograph of Ari was ever published in the Australian print-run.** At Chapter 28, sourced documents show Joe "returned" to Perth (WA) in 1988, while Ari claims he came to Sydney in 1990; so "Joe" and "Ari" inform us the window of their activities here is close, but not identical.

However, in 2002, the Australian SBS-TV program "Dateline" ran a story called "Killing Mugabe". Captured on video by Mark Davis and his camera, the story covered the alleged planned assassination of Mugabe, prime minister of Zimbabwe. A repeat was later put to air to celebrate '40 years of Dateline'. In the repeat, a voice-over claimed that with regard to the story, *Killing Mugabe*, "...no Dateline story has generated such controversy as this one."

Many independent news reports from out of Africa at the time repeatedly claimed Ari Ben Menashe had over a long time gained "*a reputation as a notorious fantasist*" (Perhaps Mark Davis should take a second shot at the story?).

From SBS-TV's - Mark Davis 2002 presentation, I was able to extract a frame of the mystery man [Ari](#) Ben-Menashe. At various times it has been claimed Ari Ben-Menashe resided in Canada and was chairman of a Canadian firm, Dickens & Madson. Another article claimed he managed a 'commodities brokerage' Albury Grain Sales of Montreal, neither claim of which I have been able to confirm at time of writing.

After completing my research in late February of 2005, I made a firm decision as to the extent of claims I would make in writing in my article on "Joe" Vialls, and so as not to compromise my credibility I decided to go no further than what was contained in the documentation I had extracted from archived official records and the public record, which proved to my satisfaction he was actually, Otho Jewell Vialls; as to my suspicions of his being also known as Ari Ben-Menashe, at the time I published nothing.

I must say, that never in my wildest dreams did I ever consider for a moment such a controversial story would encroach into my domain in connection with the Port Arthur massacre subject.



2002: Ari Ben Menashe in Zimbabwe from SBS-TV's *Date Line* "Killing Mugabe" by Mark Davis

I thought perhaps some interested individual might read my article, see the first internet published photograph of "Joe" Vialls, and may just make the same connection as I had. In fact the WA photograph of "Joe" did trigger exactly this result; it brought to light a circa 1990 photo of Ari that filled in the gap. You can now decide for yourself who's who!

In the book "Profits of War", Ari Ben-Menashe tells us after flying into Sydney on his Israeli passport, he took a "sumptuous apartment in the city's exclusive Darling Point" and there proceeded to write his book. Now if Ari intended to loose himself into the Australian landscape under an assumed name, Western Australia's Perth seems like an excellent choice, pretty remote from the world. But a photo of Ari in the Australian print run of the book would undoubtedly have then proven unwise; West Australians can and do read.

However the [American print](#) of *Profits of War* which also went on sale in 1992 sported an entirely different cover layout, front and back; as well it sports a lovely circa 1990's photograph captioned Ari Ben Menashe: when compared either Joe has a double or Ari Ben-Menashe is one and the same as the person we in Australia know as "Joe" Vialls.



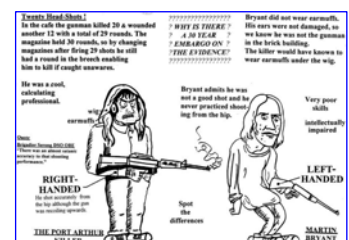
US print of
Profits of War:
the back page

This photographic evidence was posted on the Web by an American writer using the pseudonym Mark Twain. When he read my article and spotted the 1990 photograph captioned "Joe Vialls" (around August 25, 2005), he then published an article in which he suggested our "Joe" is one and the same person captioned in the 1992 American print run of *Profits of War* as Ari Ben Menashe! (Refer to http://judicialinc.biz/Vialls_Ben_Menashe.htm . Could the cat be now out of the bag?

Here I must regress for a moment to remind you of a racial discrimination/hatred affair that now comes into focus. I call it the *viall-toon affair* and it attached itself to the massacre at Port Arthur. The central target and subject of the court action was a former Tasmanian teacher Mrs Olga Scully of Launceston. The legal action was instigated by Jeremy Jones of the Executive Council of Australian Jewry and first brought on for distributing 'ant-Semitic material' back in August 1996.

Some time after this action was begun around eighteen or twenty satirical cartoon-like A4 handbills were mailed to me from Tasmania, with a note attached identifying the sender. While I firmly believe in the principle and basic individual right of free speech and at the time I thought their content was unworthy of promotion as the subject matter central to the 'cartoons' while unmistakeable, all but one conveyed no relevance to the subject of Port Arthur. Just one of the handbills stood out as promoting an entirely different focus; a comparison of 'the gunman' and a 'silly' Martin Bryant in relation to especially, the Broad Arrow segment of the massacre at Port Arthur.

The thrust central to the [Port Arthur handbill](#) is easily recognisable among writers on the subject as almost the exclusive domain of Joe Vialls; the erroneous '29 shots' in '90 seconds' summary of the Broad Arrow Café segment of the massacre. In fact a considerable number of claims promoted in this handbill while tantalisingly close to the truth, are when combined with the lies, typical of Joe's misinformation - a point I suspect, many of his reader/supporters have failed to grasp.



"Joe" Vialls' misleading
'comparison' cartoon

But returning to Olga Scully: Mrs Scully's problems with the courts were far from over, as in December of 1998 the Human Rights and Equal Opportunities Commission (HREOC) brought a second action against her. The hearing exposed Mrs Scully as failing to desist from distributing, letterboxing and distributing alleged "malicious" material (included the 20 or so 'offensive' cartoon-like handbills) around Launceston as well as the weekend market. During the course of that hearing, [Mrs Scully](#) not only refused to apologise to her accusers, but she simply walked out of the Commission hearing.

The aggrieved party didn't give up though. Their campaign only escalated, which saw Mrs Scully return to court on 29 April 2002 in Hobart, which later culminated in a further hearing in June 2002, before the Federal Court of Australia, which sat concurrently in Launceston and Sydney to hear the case of *Jeremy Jones v Olga Scully*.



[Mrs Olga Scully](#)

Now the reason comes to light as to why I have introduced the reader to the *viall-toon affair*. For when the source of the A4 satirical cartoons - the alleged "offensive material" - is identified, the affair's relevance to this whole story is spotlighted. Obviously the source of the material was never exposed during Mrs. Scully's hearing, a person I might add who is well known in Launceston and Hobart for her involvement in attempts to publicly expose the controversy surrounding the massacre at Port Arthur.

You see in spite of being already warned by this author of the true purpose of Joe Vialls' disinformation agenda, for the past seven or eight years Olga Scully has promoted "Joe" enthusiastically and sold a significant number of his books, *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur*. Recently I learned Olga Scully stated quite candidly to both my colleagues that none other than "Joe" Vialls himself was the source of supply of those A4 "cartoons" - as well as the misleading Port Arthur A4 document.

The purpose of the *viall-toon affair* is brought into sharper focus, when we consider an article posted at <http://www.vialls.com/archives/archivespage.html> written by Joe Vialls entitled, *Jewish B'nai B'rith moves in on Port Arthur "Conspiracy"*; in essence it was his reply to what I would term a 'powder-puff' criticism of 4 lines only and his name mentioned once in a February 2001 report by the AIJAC (Australia/Israel & Jewish affairs Council): "Report on Antisemitism in Australia".

Even Mrs. Scully is referred to in this report under the same sub-heading "5.9 *The Strategy*", as the "holocaust denier Olga Scully, [and her] "20 Brilliant Cartoons".

The extent of the AIJAC report's claim, regarding Joe Vialls, is contained in the following short passage, where it alleges *"An article by Joe Vialls attacked "the powerful Jewish lobby in Washington who "effectively control the US Media", as part of a claim that Israel attacked the USS Cole in Yemen,"* was posted on the Web by him. Please understand; this is the entirety of the report's criticism of Vialls.

In his reply article Vialls begins, quote:

"In a puzzling move, the Jewish organization B'nai B'rith has moved in on the Port Arthur Conspiracy (sic), deliberately though subtly attempting to undermine the author's [Joe Vialls] investigation into the tragedy which took place in Tasmania during April 1996. ..."

Continuing Vialls writes, "As B'nai B'rith knows very well, this is ... a blatant attempt to throw the author's diligent work into the "extreme right wing" and "anti-semitic" buckets that B'nai B'rith helped to invent in the first place. ..."

"Asking exactly why a Jewish pressure group like B'nai B'rith should get involved at this late stage, is as puzzling as asking why the Tasmanian Government paid for a prominent Port Arthur survivor to receive three weeks continual hypnosis from a Jewish psychiatrist in Melbourne."

Why is Joe puzzled by this survivors' pay-out? After all, the Tasmania Government was an employer and so was obliged to pay for mental health care of its employees injured in the course of their work whilst under their employ; surely simply enough to understand isn't it? But Vialls continues:

"Most probably there is no connection at all, but nowadays that survivor is playing an increasingly important role in subtly deflecting attention away from the serious investigation, into more muddled and speculative areas, where growing public discontent might be more easily contained."

I'm sure you would have to agree, 'drawing a long-bow' seems an inadequate description of Joe Vialls' feeble proof of B'nai B'rith moving in on the conspiracy of the massacre at Port Arthur for starters.

But when it comes to that "prominent Port Arthur survivor" this is a malicious attack upon a Mrs. Wendy Scurr. You see for those who've not followed "Joe" and his writings on the Net, since at least 1998, he has at various times, indirectly and directly, launched vindictive and libelous attacks upon just three people who are still writing, publishing and addressing public meetings on the massacre at Port Arthur: Andrew MacGregor, Mrs. Wendy Scurr and Stewart Beattie. You see - just to set the records straight - it was "Joe" who refused point blank to debate the subject via a live hook-up at the Inverell Forum with Andrew MacGregor.

I may add that in the AIJAC report there is a page and a half of criticism of much that is published by *The Strategy*, and most of their correspondents, delivering special attention to Jonathon Graham for instance. But of our disinformation agent Joe Vialls, their serious, repeated critic, and source of the alleged 'hate material' including the "20 Brilliant Cartoons" supplied to Mrs. Scully, attracts just a four-lines rebuff?

Posted at <http://www.vialls.com/archives/archivespage.html> you may read Vialls' entire article for yourself. But clearly the above quotes show it as a rather pathetic attempt by "Joe" to link the unnamed "prominent Port Arthur survivor" - Mrs Wendy Scurr who along with other survivors received professional curative treatment for PTSD by a much respected Melbourne psychiatrist, who happens to be Jewish. Joe Vialls' malicious snipe is a less than a veiled attempt to establish 'guilt by association' of Mrs Scurr, MacGregor and Beattie - with the B'nai B'rith, a Jewish organisation with a cosseted agenda - what ever that may be; a prime example of 'the pot calling the kettle black', I should think!

Now back to Ari and "Joe": In the American print, of "Profits of War" ironically Ari is promoted as an "Iranian Jew born in 1944", while the Australian version claims him to be born in Tehran in 1951. The 1944 birth date is consistent with my estimates of "Joe" I may add - and it adds yet again to the overall deception! Nevertheless, it should be understood like "Ari", "Joe" conveyed in less that subtle terms and in numerous articles, a roiling hatred of Zionists and when it benefited his standpoint, the Israeli State and Jews in general. "Joe" via his numerous Internet and print-published articles has also boasted a firsthand knowledge of Israeli 'black-ops' and intelligence techniques employed by the Israelis - also the domain of Ari.

My sources also have identified "Joe" as having a close liaison with at least one Perth-based former SAS NCO. This former SAS sergeant had in 1969 and 1971 completed two tours of duty in Vietnam and their rapport was such as to see him attend "Joe's" cremation at Pinaroo Valley.

In summary of these revelations I make the following points:

- ❖ Olga Scully distributed 20 amateurish, allegedly offensive handbills, articles video's and the like around Launceston and a street-market there which saw her pursued relentlessly for in excess of 6 years by Jewish organisations, from a commission, right on up through the court system to the Federal Court of Australia - the highest court in the land.
- ❖ On the other hand "Joe" Vialls supplied Olga with some of the material that was deemed by the courts as "racial discrimination" manifesting "racial hatred" and authored a *considerable number* of copyrighted articles published by *The Strategy* and many more published extensively on the Internet in which he repeatedly attacks Zionists, the Israeli State and Jews in general and not once has "Joe" ever attracted from anyone among Jewish organisations more than a powder-puff reproach; he even blamed the same people for carrying out the terrorist attack that was the Port Arthur massacre!
- ❖ It is glaringly obvious to this author "Joe" is of a protected species - the perfect double agent to peddle disinformation or propaganda.

So it would be to the reader's advantage to consider all the findings and conclusions detailed in the Chapter 28, and meet for yourself, "Joe", Otho or who ever he is - the person who conned all of us, some a little longer than others.

- **The Media:** mainstream print, radio and television media in Australia and abroad have since day one of Port Arthur, avoided like the plague anyone who has willingly presented evidence contrary to the government line. The majority of Australians are blithely unaware that the public are denied the truth on a host of matters because **our media is controlled and censored**. Propaganda delivered to the family rooms of homes across the world via the media is nothing more or less than a tool of control some may call a "war".

If you visit http://www.naa.gov.au/Publications/fact_sheets/FS49.html you may be shocked to read there exists - live and well - a news censoring committee; the "D" notice system. This system enforces what only can be described as political censoring, overseen by the Defence, Press and Broadcasting Committee, which effectively can gag any media report they so desire. Introduced to Australia in 1952, and meeting under the chairmanship of successive government ministers for defence, this committee has since its formation wielded its power to gag the media on any matter it deems necessary to "protect defence-related information."

A colleague was told around 1998 by a highly placed source, a "D" Notice had been placed on her name. In consideration of the forging parameters it would seem the Federal Ministry decided that statements made contrary to their accepted line, regarding the Port Arthur massacre, were classified as "defence-related information". Repeatedly, my findings when conveyed through interviews to various print media have been vigorously suppressed. Channel Nine followed Mrs. Scurr and Andrew MacGregor's public addresses about Tasmania and to Sydney - but not a centimetre of their considerable video coverage has ever been put to air. Nine even approached me near the end of that tour suggesting I travel to Sydney and be interviewed on the subject; I declined. If Nine was sincere, they would have come to my home and conducted the interview. They've never made a further approach.

In court transcript document the DPP promotes a synopsis which is contained as central to all writings by "Joe" Vialls; his 'hard scientific evidence'. His synopsis is no more than a thinly veiled deception.

If these statements made before the court had been tested by Martin Bryant's defence lawyer John Avery, many of them would easily have been proven false, and the case against Martin

Bryant would have collapsed. In fact, I would go so far as to suggest, that had Mr Bugg QC not foreknown that no challenges whatsoever would be initiated by Avery, the prosecutor would never have dared to make such a weak case.

As the narrative progresses, the synopsis of events promoted by both Mr Bugg and "Joe" Vialls are easily destroyed. Joe went to quite elaborate lengths to promote this flawed summary of events at the Broad Arrow Café that, if used in any court action in an attempt to prove Martin Bryant's innocence, would have seen the court action fail. Many of his theories are easily proven false. For example, some of Vialls false claimed:—

1. The shooter "...killed 20...civilians in less that thirty seconds...," with 29 shots inside the Broad Arrow Cafe,
2. The period of time the shooter remained in the Broad Arrow Café after the first shot was fired was "less than thirty seconds."
3. the ratio of the number of persons killed to those injured, the "kill to injury ratio" (KTIR), paramount in the Vialls synopsis to prove Martin Bryant's innocence, is badly flawed,
4. The hoax "running man video" claimed by him to show *"a 'medic' with Bryant's head 'grafted' on his torso,"* and
5. The missing cruiser, are all no more or less than humbug.

It is not difficult to dismantle the misinformation in these examples, but, *once the rooster has crowed, it's hard to quiet the chook-run.* Although my thanks goes to Mr. Damien Bugg QC for dismantling the Crown's own case, and Joe Vialls' synopsis in just one sentence when he stated:-

In the Café the shooter, *"...fired twenty-nine shots, very few of them missed a target, and most of them struck targets when fired at either point blank or close range."* (Ref. p.117 Court Doc.) Joe Vialls claims, ad nauseam a total of 29 shots were fired in the Broad Arrow Café. So do all of the media reports and Joe Vialls' kill to injury ratio (KTIR) theory is heavily dependant on that figure.

So let's do some simple math.

Twenty (20) persons were killed in the Café including Jason Winter, Kevin Sharp, Mervin Howard and Elizabeth Howard who were **all shot twice** - 4 extra shots. That makes **24** shots, to which we must add the shot that injured the **13 others** (not 12 as Joe Vialls claims, ref *The Strategy* June 1997), including Mick Sargent shot once, Graeme Collyer shot once, Caroline Loughton shot once and Rob Elliott, shot twice, a further 5 shots:—

	20
	4
	5
Total	<u>29</u>

I now ask Damien Bugg QC and "Joe" Vialls (deceased) to answer these points:

a.) *"Where did the shots come from that wounded the other 9 victims? And,*

b.) *Please explain what caused the bullet damage to the,*

i) *The glass shelf on the eastern wall,*

ii) *The eastern wall,*

iii) *The [window](#) on the western wall, and,*

iv) *The freezer/Coke machine?"* to which we could suggest adding,

v) *The shot/s indicated by spent [.308W](#) case/s in the dining area.*

To add further grave doubts to the misinformation regime's claims, I should point out that the Wound Ballistic Review (WBR) tells us very clearly that **24 shots** from a .223Rem calibre killed **20 persons** in the Broad Arrow Café and **17 shots** of the same calibre **injured** a further **13 persons**. The simple maths process of addition demonstrates **officially, 41 shots in total** were discharged in the Broad Arrow, not 29!

To heighten the error promoted as fact by "Joe" Vialls and Mr Bugg QC even further, a total of 41 shots has still not included the above 4 instances of bullet damage I mention, so that makes for a **probable total of 45 shots as a minimum!**

The following simple facts destroy the fictitious claims of the Bugg/Vialls synopsis:

- the ridiculously low and numerically unsustainable '29 shots total', and
- an equally ridiculously short time frame of 90 seconds duration of the lone gunman shooting inside the Broad Arrow Café.

If we consider the signed statement by witness Ashley Law and his accurate time-line of events while he was inside the Information Centre, and leading up to when shooting commenced inside the Cafe, then the above synopsis of Mr Bugg QC and Joe Vialls is utterly destroyed:

- *"I was on the phone at approx... 1.23pm to 1.26 pm I had finished my phone call. During and after the phone call there were constant banging noises. ... Between 1.23 pm & 1.26 pm & hearing the banging sounds, I went outside the Information Office into the car park. The noises were... becoming irritating and I remarked to someone maybe Anne HILLMAN "Who's banging that bloody iron. ""*

So what has Ashley Law told us here? Clearly just as Mrs Scurr has consistently stated; the shooting commenced **some minutes before her 000 call logged-in at 1.32pm**. In fact, we can now say with some certainty, **the gunman commenced shooting moments after 1323hrs (1.23 pm)**, which strengthens considerably the probable duration of the shooting inside the cafe to have been between 5 to 8 minutes, and definitely **not** the ridiculously short duration of 90 seconds.

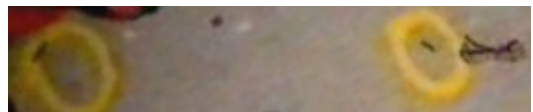
Now the forgoing conclusion as to the number of shots discharged inside the Broad Arrow Café is arrived at by using the DPP's proposition as to the one firearm - the .223 Remington calibre AR15 SP-1 Rifle. Let us consider a second scenario of what I believe is what actually occurred in the Café.

We know from the Wilkinson Video tape that the



Bullet damage: the window on west wall of the Broad Arrow Café.

first 17 shots were fired in 15 seconds. When the shooting began, seated at a table on the balcony were Michael Beekman and his companion Rebecca McKenna. Beekman "looked towards the restaurant. All I could see was flashing shadows and that sort of thing. As soon as the noise started Rebecca got up looked at me and said, "Come on", and Rebecca 'jumped over the balcony'. It took about six "bangs" before Michael was convinced it was gunfire, when a bullet broke the window one or two metres behind him, producing simultaneously a 'wooshing noise', that propelled him into action and leaving his jacket, Rebecca's purse, keys and a camera, he departed the balcony fast and both ran for their lives.



Left: .308W case & right a .223Rem casing

After these 17 shots had been fired, there was a lull in the shooting as is discernable when listening to the overlap of another video tape - possibly the Turner tape - at which time the gunman changed to the AR-10 7.62 NATO (.308W) rifle; this is when Graeme Collyer was shot. We know that at the point Robert Elliott was shot, the gunman certainly did not have the large black bag over his shoulder - it must have been then on the table.

When the gunman returned to the table on which the bags rested - the Prince bag inside the bulky, black bag - again as Mary Lee Olsen of New York State tells us, "the shots stopped for a while." A male lying next to her husband at that point said, "He's gone," whereupon Dennis her husband moved quickly to the cover of the Coke machine, causing the gunman to withdraw the Daewoo 12 gauge shotgun with which he shot Dennis Olsen who'd showed himself momentarily in that area, and although 'peppered' he flees at speed by way of the back door of the kitchen area. That escape convinces the gunman to again take up a rifle, this time he resumes with the initial weapon, the Colt AR15 rifle and when emptied, he drops the Colt 30 shot magazine beside the gift shop counter, an action heard and noted by witness, Major Sandra Vanderpeer and corroborated by Peter Crosswell. This was the gunman's second visit to the Gift Shop area of the Café.

The gunman then returns the table at the southwest of the dining room, removes the predominantly blue Prince Sports Bag from out of the bulky, black duffle-bag, leaving it with all of the evidence supposedly linking Martin Bryant to the scene there on the table, walks to the Café entrance, pauses, and then leaves to walk to the Volvo. So now let's count up the shots available to the gunman in the café with this scenario:

- .223Rem, first 17 shots in 15 seconds from a 30 shot mag: $30-17=12+1$ left
- .308W, 5 shots (4 in 10 sec; more recoil = slower), 20 shot mag: $20-5=14+1$ left.
- 12ga Daewoo shot gun - shot Olsen 10 shot mag: $10-1=8+1$ left.
- .223Rem last segment (12 remaining mag discarded) reloads new 30 shot mag.

This last scenario presented for your consideration demonstrates that the gunman had at least 80 rounds of rifle fire at his disposal that we are aware of, plus 10 rounds of 12 gauge shot gun pelleted ammunition. The DPP's 29 shots hypothesis looks decidedly weak.

There were two witnesses who have told of quantities of live ammunition and spent cases and magazines from **two military calibres** seen there on the floor of the Café dining room and a police photograph above corroborates two calibres at least were there at the crimes scene:

1. The holidaying Victoria Police Snr Const Dennis Gabbedy, who tended to Graeme Collyer's critical wounds and aided by an off duty RHH nurse, they kept him alive inside the Broad Arrow Café until paramedics stabilised him for transport to hospital. Dennis Gabbedy on his own initiative checked out exactly what that ammunition was strewn around the floor near where Collyer lay; it was .308W (7.62NATO) FMJ ammunition.
2. Also directly because of the two types of ammunition and magazines, Tasmania Police officer Peter Hessman, thought he was dealing with 'a terrorist attack' when he first entered the Broad Arrow Café. ⁵

Now to the last of those shots as presented by "Joe" Vialls and his Port Arthur summary; Joe locks himself into his inflexible and unnecessary KTIR hypothesis, supposedly to prove Martin Bryant's innocence, continually promoting the 29 shots for 20 dead and 12 wounded victims (there were **13 wounded**, not 12 as Vialls has repeatedly written), that occurred *inside* the Broad Arrow Café in 90 seconds.

"Joe" Vialls ignored 12 additional shots and between 3½-6½ extra minutes duration to deliver those additional shots inside the Broad Arrow Café, facts supplied from reliable documents and supported by credible eye witness statements; "Joe" Vialls was forced to cease collecting his data at the entrance door so as his KTI ratio appeared sensational and his scenario is repeated *ad nauseum* by writers even to this day; it is unsustainable also.

"Joe's" deceit is compounded by ignoring witness statements (he didn't perused the witness statements as he never accessed more than a very tiny sample), so as to prove his KTIR theory: he excluded many gunshots from his calculations, the minimum of 83 shots fired (for 35 killed, and 21 wounded) and also ignored the reported 150 to 250 shots fired from the Seascope environs. ² If "Joe" Vialls had extended his theory to include all the killings, woundings and shots fired, up until Martin Bryant was arrested on the Monday morning, then like all smoke and mirror concoctions, "Joe" Vialls' hypothesis would simply evaporate.

Also, why does Vialls support a very substantial portion of Mr Bugg's case? After all in truth he has always promoted the bulk of the establishment line. Both Vialls and Damien Bugg QC, importantly, exhibit an ignorance of a critical competence the shooter exhibited throughout his entire operation: it was not the gunman's devilish "accuracy" that stands out as the majority were in truth shot execution style from very close quarters. No it was the fact that the gunman demonstrated an extremely *highly tuned discipline* that saw him select, and deliberately NOT shoot potentially easy targets.

You may legitimately ask, "Why would this be so?" The answer is also a fundamental almost ignored by many authors writing about the subject, for it requires you to understand the principal goals behind the terrorist attack at Port Arthur.

The primary purpose for the massacre exercise was to affect maximum trauma on the greatest number of visitors, staff, police, SES volunteers, residents of the Peninsula, Tasmanians and a whole nation as well. Trauma was primary, so as *survivors* would join the crescendo emanating from out of the "Gun Control" Network's NCGC that would trigger vocal support and timidity across the nation so as to legitimise the Howard lead Federal Government's pre-emptive legislative moves and heighten their willingness to *coerce* state jurisdictions, in which was vested the power over firearm laws and so intimidate a host of the law-abiding citizens into surrendering their arms and along with those arms all of the people's inalienable rights.

Importantly these trauma tactics worked, and they worked yet again when so called "anti-terror" precedential legislation was forced through the parliaments of this country by subservient Ministries, which effectively annihilated almost all of the remaining inherited, inalienable, age-old, basic rights of the people.

That is the reason why good police constables were held back from entering Port Arthur for 6 hours and before their arrival allowed for a further 3 shots to be discharged on site. These were no coincidental discharges by some 'hunter' but the deliberate act of someone in league with the whole sordid exercise, and done, so as to maximize the trauma of every man, woman and child entrapped there in the darkened cottages behind locked doors and drawn blinds.

This is yet another example of the demented mindset of those involved - or would anyone dare to suggest Martin Bryant organised this shooter as well?! Similarly, this is why two responsible Police Constables were held back and ordered by a superior officer; "this has to happen". As a consequence Seascope Siege continued on over the hours of darkness so as to enhance this horrid trauma among the Peninsula's entire population.

The mindset I speak of also clarifies why Const Garry Whittle, there in the '*front line*' and with heightened adrenalin pumping, was confined to a drain, constrained, and passive, for 19 uncertain hours. Remember also this is the Constable, who in the small hours of Monday morning Dr Sale saw leaning against a wall at Taranna temporary FPCP. Finally after he'd been extracted from the drain, he had returned to his home in Dunalley and tumbled into bed, only to be roused from his (disturbed?) sleep by his superiors; "Come back," was the order. "You must be debriefed". So he was forced to return to Taranna for debriefing? Even Dr Sale was reported to have reacted later by stating, "That goes against all common sense." Do you wonder what the long term effect the sum of these actions has had upon this Constable?

One should understand a cosseted natural bodily function for survival exists, which triggers a surge in production of the powerful hormone adrenalin in the body when one is confronted by a "threat" situation. The primary direct effect of sustaining *trauma*, and thus denying the body's natural reaction to a threat - i.e. *fight or flight* - causes this now constrained adrenalin to attack certain vital organs and thus it can be said, sustained trauma causes primary physical damage to the victim's system with a secondary radiating effect into their mental health area.

While the general community is in the main ignorant of this medical effect, I can assure you the subject had been studied *in depth* by the professionals in psychiatry, psychology and the public health fields for many years prior to 1996. Such gross, extended *trauma* as was experienced by many at Port Arthur that day, causes the debilitating psychological condition called Post Traumatic Stress Disorder or PTSD, such as is suffered by war veterans for many of their civilian years. It may well be with the victim in varying degrees for their entire life...

In his published work and at least two articles in *The Strategy*, Joe Vialls states with a trifling qualification, inside the Broad Arrow Café, "...the crime scene was almost spookily clean." I know of no other person, witness or professional, who would agree with Vialls' cavalier description, not even Sergeant Gerard Dutton. Volunteer ambulance officer Garry Alexander was officiating at a children's race for the local sailing club when his pager summoned him to attend Port Arthur that day. In the Sunday Tasman of 5 May 1996, the Vietnam War veteran was reported as stating with regard to the Broad Arrow Café: "Blood was an inch thick in there ... we had to keep stepping over it"; on the scale of cleanliness - hardly approaching spookily clean, I would think.

It was suggested by "Joe" as recently as July of 2001, that at Port Arthur, *"the weapon of choice was a cut-down version of the Colt AR15...known as a CAR15."* That particular article goes on to mention the term of "cut-down," "sawn off," "sawn-off," "home made," and "chopped down" some 18 times throughout; reinforcing no doubt. When I searched out the source of his information, I came upon a quite remarkable (and convenient) Web-site: www.isayret.com

This URL was posted on 1 February, 2001, and consisted of one article of 9 pages. Small changes were made and photographs added at various times but importantly the last two updates were posted on May 15 and July 21, 2001.

Vialls' article entitled, "Colt Sawn Off CAR15" was published by *The Strategy* and copyrighted by the author on July 9, 2001. When this date is considered, the above dates are most revealing! For the caption on the bottom photograph at page 8 of the "isayret" article is dated "July 2001".

Joe Vialls copyrighted his article on July 9, so it really he was quite fortuitous that the URL web-site containing the necessary material to reinforce his article was posted just 25 days before "C" day for Joe, and in time for him to have his Google Search engine spit out what he so readily terms "hard scientific evidence". This article legitimised him pointing his accusing finger at the Israeli Special Forces, but as I have already mentioned, "Joe" was fortunately immune from any back-lash!

All this intrigue to support his theory that a firearm, back-yard modified, was used at Port Arthur and he made a false claim also concerning his claimed "decoy" firearm that was recovered from the ashes of Seascope. His claims are very clever diversions; ten percent lies, eighty percent truth - or am I being too generous? The old Brer Rabbit ploy of "please don't throw me in the briar patch, please don't..."

Undoubtedly the reader is aware that just because a Web-site home page appears to be legitimate, with up-to-date snappy colour pictures and snazzy lay-outs, its great layout appeal

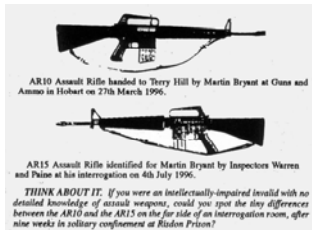


Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine



1967 model Colt M16/AR15 rifle

does not legitimise it or guarantee the message is true. Also in this instance, modern computer technology should almost eliminate spelling errors. There was no excuse for the atrocious grammar as against simple typos. For example; from the first line and at the fourth word in this article the author spells Intifada - "Intipda", what ever that means. Would it not be reasonable to suggest, that comrades tasked to post such material surely would know how to spell this (to all Israeli people surely, a) common term? Even weapon's terminology in the article evidences many mistakes. You may like to access the Web-site and see for yourself at: www.isayeret.com and look for file://A:Israeli Defence Forces/CAR15.htm



The Strategy May 1998:
Illustration & caption of the
Port Arthur firearms in the
"Joe" Vialls article.

Yes, from the very first line of the article I copied, there is evidence of a ruse, and I'm certain Colt has always been willing and able to supply on special orders of barrel lengths to suit the legal military end-user's requirements, so why all this rot about shortening barrels.

To suggest that Israel Defence Force company armourers issued with "general issue" *mil-spec* tools for repair and service of their Colt M16A1, M16A2 (rifles and carbines), M4 and Commando arms, by *sawing-off* barrels is quite ludicrous.

Altered in such a crude back-yard fashion as is suggested, this finicky firearm would certainly malfunction. I can assure readers while the amateur bank hold-up criminal may "saw-off" his 12-gauge-double shotgun, but military armourers would find the end product of such amateurish gun smithing a disaster that would surely get their colleagues killed and them in deep excrement! Vialls' also suggests the Colt AR15 was an 'original issue' to the IDF. That is quite wrong; that model is the civilian sporting derivation! From, as all the weapons exemplified in the source Internet article I mention were of pre-M4 manufacture and not civilian AR15 models either.



The sports bag, drink can,
food wrappers and black
video camera partially
hidden at right of blue
sports bag

In one of Vialls' later published articles I refer to above, he introduces us to his new description of the Colt AR15 Carbine, the one recovered badly damaged at Seascope, as his "standard 'decoy' Colt Commando". That claim is simply misinformation yet again.

The recovered firearm was certainly not a Colt AR15 Commando, but this slight of hand is employed just turn-up the level of confusion! He further claimed in the same article that the stock of this Commando decoy — "folded". Sorry "Joe," but all of these derivations of the Colt long arms incorporate a stock which telescopes; they do not fold. If that isn't enough, the same article further distorts and confuses the reader, when he suggested that because the "Prince" sports bag was, "74cm-long", and the overall length of the Colt Commando retracted is 78cm, the Colt AR15 recovered damaged at Seascope would not fit into the "Prince" sports bag. But the Prince Sports bag was never used to conceal the weapon used in the Café. That task was effected by the very large, black bag.

Without labouring on the point, I would remind readers that "Joe" Vialls in a quite remarkable turn was not only in possession of exactly the primary firearms used in the Café but he published same in an in the May 1998 issue of *The Strategy* newspaper! Both MacGregor and I have only recently been able to find corroborative evidence to prove the Colt AR15 SP-1 (1967 model) rifle and the AR-10 ·308W rifle were both used in the Broad Arrow Café. They both

fitted into the large black bag carried by the gunman, but neither would have fitted the blue Prince Sports bag. But I must ask the question, "From where at that time did "Joe" get his information?" He beat the official photographs published by seven months! There is but one source he could have obtained that information at that stage; it must have come from an informant involved in the massacre.

The official story had the Colt [AR15 SP-1 Carbine](#) as one of the 3 firearms Martin Bryant admitted to owning. But as time went by Joe was forced to change his story to continue and add to the confusion; he then lead his readership away towards 'sawn-off' and "commando" variants. But as the two primary rifles used inside the Café were never owned by Martin Bryant, like the S&W handcuffs and the 20-shot 30 calibre magazines (and even Martin's video camera) they had to disappear.

We all can make mistakes as I have done, for in my published book bearing the same title as this work I was wrong about the actual firearms used: I need to say in published article appearing in the May edition of *The Strategy* authored by "Joe" Vialls and only in reference to the firearms used in the massacre Joe Vialls was almost correct, only the model of the Colt .223Rem was too early.

Now to the video special broadcast on Channel 9's *ACA* and with Ray Martin the anchor shows a large, predominantly [blue sports bag](#), perched precariously, even spilling over the edge of a table, in a abnormally pristine dining room of the Broad Arrow Café; the bentwood chairs all neatly positioned under the spotless, tables, not a crumb evident; please compare the *ACA* blue and white sports bag video clip at left, with the [frame](#) at R., from the police training video. On the bentwood chair and below the bag rests the gunman's large video camera and on the same table can be seen other items including a metal milk-shake container and meal left-overs.



Bogus Props:

Nine's *ACA* Broad Arrow dining room mock-up for Ray's dumb-downed Australian viewers

Nine's *ACA* team would have you believe the "lone gunman" was also the "lone diner"!

Not a spec of rubbish lies on the floor, no blood spatter, no blood-soaked carpet. Forgive my sarcasm, but I'm caused to recall Vialls' earlier statement, '*the crime scene was almost spookily clean!*'

The *ACA* video clip is obviously a mock-up, a sham and a fraud, a not so "current affair" I would argue. When you consider what you have been conned with here, the video is proof positive that the mock-up was done before the massacre had ever occurred, or is the scene a series of 'mock-ups'? A digitally altered photograph with the 'blue bag' layered over the background; a 'moon-landing-type-fraud? The [dining room](#) was in truth at this stage an absolute shambles!

Now even if *ACA* or some other party could provide evidence to suggest that the bag was superimposed over a still picture just for the - dare I call it a "documentary" - then this raises further awkward questions, so perhaps you should consider this:

The media was never allowed into the Broad Arrow Café to video. When one studies closely the entire footage shown as the *ACA* documentary of the "Port Arthur the Inside Story", that is in fact what you are getting; the inside story. Video footage, which exposed much more than the Conspirators could have ever imagine. Please let me explain.



A Shambles: the dining room of the Broad Arrow Café from the entrance.

Geoff Easton was the Manager Public Affairs for Tasmania Police. He was at home with his wife in Hobart that Sunday afternoon, when at about 1400 hrs the phone rang. Easton continues:

"Peter Hazelwood (my SAC PAV counterpart in the Premiers Media Office as it so happens) was on the line as government media liaison officer for the weekend, saying *"I've just been speaking to a few journos"*, he said, *"And they've said that there was some shootings at Pt Arthur, can you find out what that's all about?"*"

SAC PAV belongs to the secretive intelligence and national security "family," and both these people are 'family members' as it were, and we mere mortals usually only read about them in stuffy reports from the upper echelons of establishment who drop their names in Senate Inquiries and the like; ASIO would fit their label.³

So within minutes, it was agreed between these operatives, that Hazelwood should make the hour and a quarter drive to Taranna to "feed the chooks", as the late Joe Bjelke Peterson used to put it, though whether this action was aimed to serve Premier Tony Rundle or National security, Geoff Easton fails to say. Though Supt and PFCP Commander Barry Bennet tells us that he spoke to 10 or 12 media people who'd already arrived at Taranna Devils Park by 4.00 pm and Peter Hazelwood arrived just as he was finishing that briefing. By Monday morning, no less than 6 media officers were on duty in Tasmania to "feed the chooks" of the world media that massed for the event!

Before Barry Bennet handed over command to Supt Bob Fielding at the Taranna PFCP, there were approximately 200 media people held back and milling about at Taranna, and their numbers were still building. Now the point of recounting this part of the story is required because we have been continually assured, no media whatsoever were allowed to travel any further down the Tasman Peninsula, than the police road block at Taranna. One exception to this lock-out occurred that we are told about. Seems a determined journalist defied the police exclusion and became lost in the dark countryside, forcing police to send out a 'rescue' party no less.⁴

But the claimed 'media shut-out' was nothing more than a charade: Channel Nine must have had arranged exclusivity! Somehow their film and sound crew was strategically placed on the eastern shore of Long Bay, directly opposite the Seascope Cottage in time to capture on video the arrest by SOG officers of Martin Bryant after he staggered from the SOG's inferno, stumbling to the ground in an attempt to tear off his burning black tea-shirt.

Then there's the question of who forward-ordered the 2 buses in Hobart on the Sunday evening so as to be at Taranna - 1¼ hours from Hobart - early Monday April 29? These buses were used to transport the locked-out media on the already planned tour of Seascope (yet to be burnt down, by SOG police), Port Arthur, the Tollbooth and Historic Site. Remember, unless the exercise was being stage-managed to a sort of "script", all crime scenes yet had to have the cadavers removed by that *"highly prized possession,"* Ray Charlton's 22-body mortuary ambulance.

Even CNN had their man on the spot later putting a 'sound bite' on tape among the media scrum on the Arthur Highway outside Seascope - *for the folks back home States-side*. This media tour was conducted by Supt "Jack" Johnston, for the then Dept Com Richard McCreadie, who was by 0845 hrs already at the Taranna PFCP on Monday 29th. In fact, it is Easton himself who tells us of his fortuitous shared chopper ride to Taranna, with the rising star of Tasmania Police and soon-to-be its commissioner, Richard McCreadie. But what of those anticipated arrangements for these buses? How did police public affairs manager Easton, Peter Hazelwood or even senior Police have foreknowledge as to when and or how the siege would conclude? Well we can surely take Supt Bob Fielding at his word when he states:

“...I’m satisfied that we made the right decision in fact waiting and forcing him to come to us as opposed to vice versa.”

His words are tantamount to confirming police set fire to Seascope cottage which corroborates information we had already obtained from other very disturbed police officers. In that statement a senior policeman is admitting that ‘we...forced him to come to us...’ This was in spite of the possibility of hostages being still alive inside, Seascope. But even this state of affairs does not explain busses being tasked in Hobart in time for the media tour!



Or, with controller “Mick” inside, right until the cottage went up, is it not reasonable to suggest police knew quite well the hostages were long deceased. Had the controller already confirmed just Jamie - the fall-guy “perp” - remained alive (even perhaps sedated) to die in the conflagration so as his remains would later conveniently surrender forensic evidence of smoke in his lungs evidencing the cause of death a “demented suicide”. Then no accused would have been available for charges and trial. How convenient for the conspirators.

Just one police officer is on the record as having fired pyrotechnics during the siege at Seascope - Sgt Fogarty.⁵

On the first segment of the Police Training video, like the second more graphic production, and as the credits roll over, it reads:

- Producer, Geoff Easton - public affairs,
- Production Editors; Mark Franklin, and Josh Wedd.

As I viewed Channel Nine’s documentary recently, “Port Arthur - the Inside Story,” I came to realise the footage is to a considerable extent, that which Sac Pav officer, come Media liaison officer, Mr Geoff Easton has put his name to in this Police Training Video as Production Editor: so was Easton the go-between or the man on the spot who authorised the mystery film crew to be all set-up on the eastern shoreline of Long Bay, opposite Seascope cottage, in plenty of time to capture the final curtain of the siege, that important clip which was included in the Police Training video, referred to as that “*right decision*”, which ensured Seascope cottage was turned into a funeral pyre that “*forced him to come to us*”?

So isn’t it entirely probable police and their federal intelligence counterparts encouraged by a good ‘pinch’ of bravado, produced the *police training video* using supplementary footage shot by Channel Nine so as to screen and brag of their exploits during official get-togethers and the training of raw police recruits?

Tasmania Police certainly videoed inside the Café, and witnesses such as Mrs Wendy Scurr have corroborated the authenticity of that video - sadly to her own distress; I can attest to the absolute chaos inside there. I do not have to explain the extent of the disarray, suffice to say it absolutely involved every surface, wall to wall and from floor to ceiling. Then I ask you to *in your mind’s-eye* - view a clip from the video, “for police eyes only” and consider these points.

As the video camera pans right, the predominantly blue “Prince” [sports bag](#) can clearly be seen in lower right of frame, resting on the table adjacent to a timber external door, and very near where victim William Ng was seated when the shooting commenced. We cannot see any chair pulled out from this table, although the side closest to the cameraman is out of frame. As the camera pans right over the bag, we can clearly see a laminated wooden serving tray on the table nearest this external door, which has various items of interest on it; an opened aluminium can of soft drink, lunch wrappings etc. As the camera continues panning right, a large, black, video camera comes into frame on the table next to the bag with its externally mounted microphone

evident. No camera bag is visible and unlike the falsity of the ACA video, the video camera is on the table, not the chair.

Then we come to other published works. In 2001 a paperback was published on the same subject, included an illustration of what the author terms a "*relatively rare...C-AR15 the same as Mr. Drysdale's, [and the one] recovered from Seascope.*" In fact the illustration is easily identified as a Colt AR15-9mm. Unlike the deliberate premeditated misinformation emanating from the network of propagandists, in this instance I believe the error only demonstrates a lack of knowledge of firearms on the part of the author. For I believe Noel McDonald's published work deserves much credit for the copious detailed pieces of evidence he brings to light raising many anomalies and points of grave concern about the whole Port Arthur ruse.

This next item of misinformation promoted as part of Joe's hard scientific evidence is a further subterfuge on his part - echoed by his unswerving supporter Tony Pitt. Right from his 'breaking news' article published by *The Strategy* newspaper in its May 1997 issue, "Joe" Vialls suggested the video (released just before the sentencing hearing of Martin Bryant) later known as the 'Balasko video' was a "fake" and he further claimed this video footage was not captured on the 28 April 1996, as *'the light was different on the tape to that day at Port Arthur'*.

The distinct inference one gets from reading Vialls' articles published by *The Strategy* and from the text of his book is that "Joe" had viewed James Balasko's original video and declared it a fake. That is a misleading inference, and his findings are false.

But Joe blurs his claims further - more confusion - by accusing the media of having tampered with the video. On that subject, and an interesting aside, it should come as no surprise that my two colleagues were almost conned by "Eddy" (of the all-seeing-eye variety); an American tourist, who made numerous trips to Tasmania, where he'd established a relationship with a Launceston woman. After meeting "Eddy" and several days of travelling about Tasmania in November of 2003, he assured me I would receive quote: "A genuine first copy of James Balasko's video," of the Port Arthur massacre; **I'm still waiting**, and like a number of other promises Eddie made, not a thing has materialised. Why should we be surprised? I've lost count of the number of these people, I label as 'spooks', who at various times have sidled-up to one or all three of us during the last seven years; in my experience though, none excelled in their course on "subtlety" save perhaps for "Eddy".

From the ACA documentary tape, "Joe" even lost a 'large white boat', a motor vessel, anchored in Mason Cove on the afternoon of the 28th. But when all the video evidence is checked, the 'large white boat' is definitely there on the Balasko tape, anchored on the cove. As "Joe" has never ever visited the area, he simply didn't know where to look in the video footage, or is Joe suggesting all of the private videos were fake? Certainly ACA did present other bogus video footage, but in this instance the "faking" is all in the mind of "Joe", and only promoted so as his confusing, erroneous synopsis can lead his supporters further away from the truth. I believe the amateur video footage in its original uncut state was authentic, but as soon as an irresponsible even deceitful media - with a not so hidden agenda - took charge of the footage, their editing and dubbing in itself paints a whole different story.

With anchorman Ray Martin at the helm, the ACA inside story demonstrates clearly a determination to go further than just to *muddy the waters*. For when one examines all of the ACA's tapes put to air, the ruse becomes quite obvious.

In Andrew MacGregor's work he has assembled this tape into various "files" and if you examine and observe the clips for yourself, you will undoubtedly be able to discover the deception for yourself. In the video clip file [running](#) you will note the following:

1. The file called "running", is a clip captured earlier during the incident to that of the *running man clip*, file named **blankets** in Andrew's work.
2. You will also note there are **two parts to the "running" clip**;
 - a. this part is captured by an amateur video cameraman other than James Balasko and is not a part of the Balasko tape. This clip was shot from the south eastern end of the Penitentiary Ruins looking almost due north: we can clearly see the rear of the buses parked against the curb running parallel to the sea-wall.
 - b. The second part of this clip was captured close to and from a position in front of the buses, panning from right to left, looking almost due east. Obviously this clip was captured long after the shooter had departed this area, and he certainly was not shooting people around the buses.

Now, here the ruse begins to emerge from out of the *fog* of misinformation. The Balasko tape entitled in Andrew MacGregor's *Deceit and Terrorism* as "blankets," was also captured some considerable time after the gunman had departed the Broad Arrow Café, bus/car parking and tollbooth areas.



**The Gift-Shop Door
(at R.) with the
defective external
fire escape latch**

As this clip was being captured, PAHSMA staff and visitors were busy administering first aid of the wounded survivors. At the beginning of the Balasko clip ("blankets"), an image of a man running past a camper-van with a bundle over his right arm of blankets is seen, a voice over has been dubbed in which by inference from a very distinctive Australian, female voice in the background suggests, "That's a shotgun," instead of blankets (with a very audible "click" of the dubbing break). At the end of these frames of the clip to reinforce this obvious ruse, the same female voice suggests, "see that man running there."

If this is not bad enough, then in the former clip on this tape a male voice firmly suggests in response to a different and loud gunshot (not any blankets over the arm of a running man I would suggest), "That's a shotgun". As if responding to that claim and I would suggest almost surely the same female voice is heard responding **in the second clip**, "yes, that's a shotgun," and then, "See that man running..."

The blatant subterfuge promoted by the dubbed voices-over here is that these are consecutively captured clips from one camera, when they are clearly not, and they are not even part of the Balasko video.

In fact the statement provided by James Balasko sitting alongside his fiancé Cynthia Zahorcak during a television interview, destroys any inference made by ACA, Ray Martin or Joe Vialls for that matter, that this running man was the shooter. For James Balasko states clearly of the shooter and several times:

"He walked right by me, not far away from me. Just walked out of there as casual as can be." You see, the shooter only ran at one stage - inside the café dining room; but outside he never did run at any time - he just walked casually.

By September of 1998, "Joe" Vialls' hypothesis of the fake Balasko video was expanded considerably. For he was now circulating glossy colour reproductions of 8 frames of the Balasko tape along with a supportive text at \$15 a copy, claiming, under magnification, each frame of the video could be seen to have been tampered with, by electronically superimposing a "still" of Martin Bryant's head on another torso. Incidentally and as no surprise, "Eddie" the American visitor to Tasmania in 2002 (with all his broken promises) also went to great lengths to convince Andrew, Wendy and myself that this particular footage had been tampered with.

Once one is "locked-in" to promoting a falsehood, it surely did become evident as is demonstrated by Damien Bugg QC, the untruth demands a legion of witnesses or support — in the form of more and more lies.

"Joe" Vialls almost goes into a state of ecstasy while he enthusiastically explains to his readership, his trademark of *irrefutable hard scientific evidence* adding up to not one iota. On this point, I would remind readers again, "Joe" Vialls is at one with the flawed, and official Damien Bugg QC's version of the Shooting in the Broad Arrow Café concerning the number of shots fired and time the shooter spent in there which I have proven to be false. Also "Joe" avoids entirely the subject of "THAT DOOR"; the eight persons who died unnecessarily after attempting to escape via the defective external Gift Shop door. Why?

The ACA dubbing, and editing and tampering presented to an unsuspecting public is really quite reprehensible, and when linked to the fake footage of the blue 'Prince sports bag' and Martin's video camera sitting in a pristine Broad Arrow Café their duplicity is outrageous. For as I reiterate, captured in the other amateur clip is featured the same distinctive Australian female's voice which blurts out after a male responds firstly to a gunshot with, "That's a shotgun" she mimics "That's a shotgun" and still later in the clip, "See that man running there"; now isn't this quite remarkable? The same woman making the same comments about the same incident but captured by two different amateur cameramen, but in this "running" clip, there is NO image of a '*man running there*' captured on that particular clip on that tape! A Case of, now you see but now you don't!

However, the misinformation is further enhanced by none other than *mine host*, Ray Martin who states earlier on the tape, that the only person who managed to capture the shooter on video, was American tourist, James Balasko. To the duped public this *running man* is also purported to be Martin Bryant, the shooter. It is clear from the clip the person running was not wearing a $\frac{3}{4}$ length coat as the shooter did. His trousers and shoes were dark, while the shooter wore white sneakers, and importantly and in particular in this segment, when moving out from Broad Arrow Café towards the buses, the shooter **never did run**.

Seven of the staff on duty that day on the Historic Site, who have viewed this video clip many times, are all in agreement that the person on the clip is a colleague Mark Kirby. Mark asked Mrs Scurr, 'what can I do to help Wendy?' He and Steven Howard were both instructed to, 'find some blankets and distribute them among the survivors,' which he and Steven did, and then Mark Kirby came out of the Café to take the remaining blankets down quickly to the survivors in the area of the buses who were in shock.

In June 2000 issue of *The Strategy*, "Joe" Vialls states in relation to the "exploding" (his term) Colt AR-15, "*most explosions of this kind neatly amputate a finger or two, and shred the skin on the rest of the hand.*" As I have stated elsewhere in this text, only very superficial flesh wounds are usual resulting from such blow-ups, when a person discharges it in a normal manner. But in his usual manner, "Joe" supplied no corroborative sources for his claim, and he surely wasn't speaking from any personal experience; I'm forced to conclude this is just more of his misinformation.

In June of 1997 issue of *The Strategy* "Joe" Vialls writes, "*the records show 32 people were shot in the Broad Arrow Café...20 dead and 12 injured.*" If these are the figures he used to construct his kill to injury ratio from, then they also are flawed. As I pointed out earlier, there were 33 persons shot in the Broad Arrow Café; 20 died, and 13 were injured. And these are just a small sample of a whole host of "fibs" from this source.

The text content of e-mails emanating from <freedom@digitelone.com> for a time informed readers that one Len Clampett was acting as "director" of "The International Martin Bryant Innocent Project" or TIMBIP. It is a simple fact that this gentleman like Vialls is an enthusiastic

self-proclaimed multi-talented type person who in my opinion operates within the extensive misinformation network and was associated loosely with Vialls. Clampett exhibits arrogant contempt for copyright laws and authors' expressed wishes; a trait of the "Vialls" character. Even writers with contrasting demeanours compile material which was e-mailed out from the same site over his name. On the TIMBIP site, posted around 13 December 2001, was the work of Andrew MacGregor alongside the erroneous material of "Joe" Vialls - and for what purpose?

Guilt by association is the hallmark of these pricks and thorns; without a writers credibility intact, what hope for a later inquiry?^{ss} Even when Clampett was asked to, "please remove" all of Andrew's work he not only refused, but then engages in a verbal tirade of false charges. When asked by an American published author, "Who are you?" all of a sudden, Len's campaign went quiet. When e-mailed by Andrew MacGregor, he refused to co-operate point blank - from a very far off "bolt-hole". Since returning to Australia Clampett has been remarkably silent.

Interestingly after returning, he was taken in by a farmer in the Inverell district, until quite recently a copy reader for *The Strategy*. At least since 2004, this benefactor was listed in the newspaper's directory-column under the heading of "Staff" along with Joe Vialls a "Contributing Reporter".

In reviewing "Joe" Vialls' work on this subject, a stark fact emerges; he concentrates primarily on events about the Broad Arrow Café. To a lesser degree he covers actually what occurred inside the café. Indeed he never dealt in any detail with events in the bus/car park, Jetty Road, Tollbooth and General Store crime scenes. But then there is the Seascape segment. Here Vialls deals at length with just one of six vehicles that were shot-up by the gunman on the Arthur Highway before he enters Seascape; the 4x4 Holden Frontera, driven by Linda White, with her passenger, Michael Wanders.



Senator Ron
Boswell, NP

By mid 1997 "Joe" Vialls was promoting his own revelation of what he ultimately termed the "Beirut triple" used to "dead block" (both his expressions) the Holden [Frontera](#), which the couple abandoned about 200m south of the Seascape entrance adjacent to a gateway marked #6729, which is the property adjoining Seascape's southern boundary.⁶

But at the entrance gate to Seascape Cottage, "Joe" Vialls stomps on the journalistic brakes! He has avoided Seascape Cottage siege like the plague was in residence, but why? Well I believe it is because the Seascape cottage segment exhibits a tenuous hold on the key to unlocking the entire subterfuge that was Port Arthur and which would concurrently destroy the key points promoted by the disinformation regime.



Linda White's Holden
Frontera 4x4
abandoned near
Seascape

The reader must surely realise by now that for any propaganda to be circulated successfully to a targeted individual, it must be delivered by an efficient conduit. Be it by word of mouth, print media, television, radio, Internet or published works; the conduit must reach the targeted people for the project to be successful. To this end, as I have demonstrated above this rather interesting subject has shown to be either exceedingly resourceful, lucky, or part of a well organised network or all three.

But I would emphasise, that after reading Joe's substantial work it is my opinion, that influenced by the subject matter, timed releases, the thrust of his narrative and word/term

^{ss} I would ask the reader to keep in mind this modus operandi of the propaganda network, when it come to the so-call media's "10th anniversary" of the psychopolitical massacre & especially Carol Altmann's Allen & Unwin publication, *After Port Arthur*

usage, and his associated delivery agencies, that the "Joe" - Otho Jewell Vialls or Vallis phenomenon did not come about by some spontaneous reaction to events because of some pent-up journalistic frustrations spilling over from a pensioner with too much time on his hands. But rather, it is my view in their entirety the articles are the produce of a quite major global misinformation project.

In the case of determining the "target" people likely to challenge authority regarding the Port Arthur massacre, one must look to that section of the community that has demonstrated an ongoing concern, and who seek information on the subject. Is it coincidental that these people in my experience just happen to also be vocally opposed and concerned as to the direction this country is rushing headlong towards?

Their open concern is in my experience directed toward leap-frogging socially-engineered change now openly promoted as the New Order. So the targeted people are in the main very concerned, thinking, patriotic Australians, many of whom have suffered derogatory "labels" such as "red-necks", "extreme right wingers", "racists" etc, usually served up firstly by politicians such as Senator Ron [Boswell](#) of Queensland's National Party under parliamentary privilege. Should we then be surprised that an alternate media or conduit had either to be chosen from existing operations or new ones established? Which ever is the case, I can only detail the fruits of *possible vehicles*, and you judge their "fruits" for yourself.

In the case of *The Strategy*, to those without access to a personal computer and/or the Internet, it is without doubt almost (but not quite), the exclusive print-conduit of the massacre at Port Arthur. First published in Victoria's provincial city of Bendigo around 1991, and just after the inaugural Inverell Forum was held. The newspaper's editor is Ray Platt, a retired contractor and farmer. When the team of contributing journalists at the newspaper are taken into account there seems to be somewhat of a paradox here. The editorial thrust evidenced by subject matter attempts to convince the readership that the newspaper is at least 'Christian based'. From inception it claimed to promote, *"everything truly Australian and in the nations best interest [and] the truth irrespective of its source."* The newspaper's editorial has always included an appropriate reading from the Scriptures to support its editorial opinion. A significant number of 'churches' purporting to be Christian have advertised regularly over its life and "Parson's Corner" has been a regular featured column. But there are significant inconsistencies evident.

Ray Platt was formerly an adherent of Ascension Life Centre identity church in Bendigo, while in his own material, Jonathan Graham proclaims himself as an evolutionist of the Darwinian school of thought, and therefore anti-Christian. Interestingly, 'the parson' (not the correspondent of the column "Parson's Corner") Neville Andrews who claims himself as a pastor of the rather obscure '**Independent Pentecostal Church**', in the mid 1990's gave as his referee the name of Ray Platt, editor of *The Strategy*. I believe it significant, that until the demise of "Joe" Vialls as a contributor, Ray Platt was his sole print media newspaper support for his changing synopsis and misinformation regarding Port Arthur, supported in the newspaper by Jonathan the 'fabled self-destructed bird arising from its own ashes,' — Phoenix Rising — the syndicated column of Jonathan Graham, that up until recently always appeared on page 6 of that publication. Graham seems to have ceased his column at time of writing though. It wasn't until after Tony Pitt had motored across the continent and visited Vialls that he began openly promoting the work of "Joe" in print and on Internet postings.

I believe it can be said with all seriousness, that with regard to whatever you like to label it — intelligence community propaganda or department of misinformation — *The Strategy* stands tall among other "alternative" newspapers as their Port Arthur conduit. I do not make the claim lightly. So let us look at a few more of the facts that have convinced this author that the newspaper is not all that it would first appear to be. With regard to Port Arthur, while "Joe" Vialls was in my estimation the misinformation brigade's "main man" — in print media as well as

the Web — *The Strategy* was his almost exclusive print billboard. Other smaller publications in Queensland have and do continue, for reasons best known to their editors, to pick-up on Joe's work from time to time.

Commencing in the May 1997 issue of *The Strategy*, by "Joe" Vialls' changing versions of the massacre at Port Arthur has enjoyed support to the tune of in excess of 15,800²Cm of copy, by 2002. And that is unswerving support I would contend.

This figure I might add, does not take into account the copious advertisements inserted by Vialls commencing in July 1998, promoting his "fresh forensic photos" and "specially sponsored print run" of *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur*, and all inserted in spite of "Joe" appealing to Ray for assistance for even basic office equipment and was then accepting public donations — even from this author.

Interestingly, while I'm aware that articles were submitted to *The Strategy's* editor by various authors on the massacre at Port Arthur, as has been the case with his other unswerving supporter and publisher, **not one alternate view has ever been published.** Not surprising when one considers perhaps as few as 2 or 3 *letters to the editor* have ever been published on the subject of the massacre at Port Arthur in the entire life of the newspaper! How possibly can Ray Platt explain that situation? You see save for a one-off, small two-column article, published at page 6 of *The Strategy's* August 98 edition (the author of which was not even accorded a by-line), not a single alternate conclusion or finding has ever been published by this newspaper.

Robert Baggart told this author *The Strategy* had ceased sponsorship of the Inverell Forum in 2000, though I note there lingers a clouded support from the 'old guard' which ensures a situation reverse: the newspaper is supported strongly by The Forum attendees. One is prompted then to ask; "Had the newspaper's goal been attained by 2000?" One surely must realise that hundreds of independent thinking citizens the length and breadth of this country, concerned as to the crisis the nation seems headed, once assembled annually at Inverell; do you think for a moment such gatherings would ever have gone unnoticed or unobserved by the national intelligence family? If the national and international changes that have occurred were all "unplanned", then I guess my suggestion would be wide of the mark. But as I have shown in this work, planning is central to everything to do with the global "gun control" massacres and their resultant [disarmament](#) of citizens in the same countries as the massacres.

To cover the *Global Gun Control Network* (based in the U.K.), and their Australian cells, the National Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC) and Gun Control Australia (GCA), would take much more space than is available here: it's a topic that would stand alone. But it requires our close attention through the post Port Arthur stage I believe.



A brief profile of the more prominent "foot soldiers" should suffice here. The "gun control" workers first appeared in Melbourne around 1984-5, firmly backing the gun control push by the socialist John Cain Jnr. John Bruce Crook came first with his comrade Laurie Levy whose practice was to invade the duck-swamps of Victoria. On Saturday 30 January 1988 though it was Laurie Levy - not Crook - who mounted a miserable disruption to the estimated 30,000 firearm owners who rallied and marched through

Melbourne's CBD, against the proposed "gun control" legislation of Premier Cain and Minister for Emergency Services, Steve Crabb. As an aside, the arrogant Liberal, Jeff Kennett was "booed and jeered when he told the rally his party supported tougher gun laws...."

The Levy/Crook leftist "cell" operated from out of Ross House, a building in Flinders Lane, Melbourne. Crook used the name "Gun Control Australia" or GCA. In the 1990's Crook was joined firstly by Andrew Harding, the son of Professor Richard Harding of Western Australia (one of the founding fathers of "gun control" here). He was the Melbourne "gun control" spokesman in NCGC's Port Arthur promoted hysteria. Around this same time Harding was joined by the ex-patriot American and again "spokesperson" Randy Marshall. Still later and first appearing after the abortive Monash "massacre", they were joined by the social advocate Rev. Tim Costello, brother to the long suffering treasurer Peter who for a decade has coveted Howard's position.



George Soros:
International "gun
control" bank-roller

Crook's GCA soon had a (senior) partner though, when in New South Wales [Rebecca Peters](#) burst upon the stage as spokesperson of the Coalition for Gun Control (NCGC) founded in 1988 by the Greens Lee Rhiannon. Of American parents in a family of six children, Rebecca Peters grew-up in Costa Rica, where her scholastic journey was guided from the outset in 1977 by itinerant "young hippies" who ran the "alternative school". It was during this period that Peters became "obsessed with changing the world". Her father worked for the American Government in Costa Rica and during her later rise to prominence in Australia, "half jokingly," Peters suggests her dad "probably worked for the CIA," a not so unlikely suggestion I would opine.⁶

In 1981 Rebecca Peters arrived in Australia, "with a man she met travelling". Three years later Peters dropped out of her engineering course at Macquarie University, leaving only one other female in the course, and went to the ABC. Here she worked as a researcher and reporter under Andrew Olle, a long time friend of Ray Martin, before returning to studies to complete her law degree.



Rebecca Peters: warning
Australians of the dangers of
the powerful "gun lobby".

For her degree she is reputed to have written a paper on gun-related deaths, which slotted her into the "gun control" cause and the arrival of NCGC in Australia. She straightaway became Chair for NCGC, and took to the task with fervour as the shooting massacres rolled out right on cue in the Eastern States of Australia.

First came Milperra (Sydney), the "Bikie" massacre of 1984, just in time to legitimise Neville Wran's attention to draft legislative that if passed and enacted would impose gun registration and prohibitions on people of NSW. Then in August 1987, Julian Knight staged an indiscriminate shoot-up in Melbourne; the Hoddle Street massacre. Four months later and in December 1987 Frank Vitkovic entered the Australia Post building in Queen St shooting staff as the cowered behind their counter while two Ministers of the Crown Jim Kennan and Race Matthews came down from their offices to the 12th floor typing pool to be spectators in the government offices opposite. Then in August 1991, Wade Frankum carried out the Strathfield massacre in Sydney and after Port Arthur - to confiscate hand guns - the Monash shootings came tagging along.

NCGC's chiefs realised after Unsworth's swift and decisive defeat by electors in his NSW attempt to ban guns politically, that they had to change their thesis. Guns suddenly became a "health issue," and the anti-gunners were partially funded via a medical source. Peters alternated the role of spokesman with Associate Professor in Public Health and Community Medicine at the University of Sydney, Simon Chapman, who authored the book entitled *Over Our Dead Bodies*. Another little helper from NSW was Stephen Leader, president of the Public Health Association, and after Port Arthur, Samantha Lee slipped into Peter's shoes as NCGC spokeswoman in Sydney. (Please note another mention of Sydney University below.)

The ashes of Seascope cottage had barely cooled, and with mission accomplished, Rebecca Peters departed for America where she enrolled with the John Hopkins University Gun Policy

Center in Baltimore. Soon Peters found reward when she joined one of the tax-exempt foundations established by "philanthropists" George [Soros](#). His Open Society Institute shadows gun massacres on an International scale. In '97 alone, the US Violence Policy Center received US\$1.2 million. Similarly, the Joyce Foundation has since 1993 made a reported US\$13.2 million available in grants to 55 non-profit fronts of the global "gun control" network. Joyce works closely with Handgun Control Inc, founded and "chaired" by Sarah Brady in the USA. Founded in 1974, as the **National Coalition to Ban Handguns** it was later renamed **Handgun Control, Inc.** from around 1980. After Peters' arrival in America, she was soon linked with this cell and the organizers of the poorly turned-out "Million Moms March"; the MMM organisation collapsed financially as well as in terms of recruitment, shortly after they held their first rally.

Have you considered the registration number of Martin's yellow Volvo he drove that Sunday? For even his registration plate seemed to tell a story of preparation and planning long before the event, but did "silly" Martin plan this?

Martin's [Yellow Volvo](#) was left abandoned by the gunman at the toll-booth when he left the Historic Site. There you can see his registration number: CG-2835 (TASMANIA - HOLIDAY ISLE). **CG-2835** = **C**ontrol of **G**uns or **C**oalition for **G**un-control the goal of State and Federal Parliamentary Ministries as well as the GGCN's affiliate NCGC) and their promised mass shooting that was predicted to occur in Tasmania - Holiday Isle, on **28** April, and were **35** people would be sacrificed on the alter of global control of gun; an irony, or an addition to the seemingly immeasurable *coincidences* surrounding the exercise? Or is it a physical affirmation of the *massacre* architects by a higher authority?

New Zealander, Phillip [Alpers](#) infers an expertise as a researcher with an academic background, which he definitely has not. He formerly was once a DJ at the local radio station for Gisborne, a town on the North Island's Northeast coast beside Poverty Bay, which serves a district population of some 45,500 people. Gisborne is credited with still having "the highest total crime rate (offences per ten thousand head of population) of the regions and the highest rate for violent offences, and drugs & anti-social offences," in New Zealand. - (source, http://www.labourmarket.co.nz/regionalprofile_gb.htm)

Alpers' profile is little more than interesting vagaries. He was formerly a "television correspondent" and host of a "national consumer affairs programme"; New Zealand's little "Ray" of current consumer affairs sunshine? But in the latest version of his profile the humble 'DJ' experience is omitted, perhaps to preserve an 'academic' tone?



Various profiles proclaim him a real academic achiever: a "consultant on international gun policy" for global officialdom. Translated, this simply means he peddles disarmament of private citizens globally; UN lackeys call it "gun control". The honorary status of his doctorate is rarely mentioned, just promoting himself as a 'senior fellow' at Harvard University's Injury Control Research Center. But after much searching, I can find no evidence of Mr Alpers ever having sat any scholastic accreditation examination.

It would appear, earlier than 1993 this former DJ/TV correspondent displayed ambitions to be recognised as an international academic writer and researcher on firearm issues. Speaking while on his New Delhi sojourn on 30 January 1998, he announced, *"Some will tell you that the more guns you have, the safer you are.... I don't need somebody with a PhD to tell me..."*, a proclamation that brings his 'Harvard senior fellowship' into a truer focus, don't you think? At this same UN regional workshop on civilian



**Philip Alpers
among 'Soros
Faithfuls' in
Turkey**

disarmament, Alpers thanked two NGO's*** for enabling him to address the UN Commission on Crime Prevention & Criminal Justice and confirms he'd previously addressed similar UN workshops on firearm issues in Slovenia and Brazil.

It was early in his introduction he claims himself a licensed firearm owner and sporting shooter; hypocrisy undoubtedly never crossing his honorary academic mind I would opinion. Although the work I have perused suggests his conclusions are of a dubious standard and mathematically suspect.

Alpers' agenda was conspicuous by his role in the important Australasian Police Minister's Council's seminar in New Zealand that sealed the forced acceptance of gun confiscatory laws on Australia and New Zealand.

Phillip Alpers proudly puts his hand up as the co-producer of the 'official video' documentary of the not-so-successful Million Mom March. This organisation foundered through lack of support as well as financially.

While a little of his boasting cannot be avoided I was compelled to reads on: Alpers is editor of a daily Internet bulletin, Gun Policy News. This cell of the "gun control" network, monitors media news items involving guns, and disseminates the information gathered daily to their global network. But a disturbing fact emerged when one logs on to the Gun Policy site at: <http://www.gunpolicy.org/about.php> .

For if the reader has recently suffered an inconvenience due to the dwindling public dollars, lack of trained doctors and nurses in our nation's hospitals called a 'health system' then please take note: Alpers' bulletin, the "gunpolicy.org, is hosted (read funded) by the [School of Public Health](#), the University of Sydney"! Their logo above even displayed beside their statement.

Back in 1997, a most reliable source from Sydney told me that officials in the Shooters Party (of NSW) - established by John Tingle - showed him documents, which proved a link between a Sydney university, health department moneys and funding for the NCGC. With the above revelation made public, I believe it can now be said there is a considerable degree of permanency in Australian taxpayers funding this obnoxious disarmament movement of private citizens called "gun control" globally, as the above Internet bragging confirms - nine years on! We are paying for the 'rope' with which these traitors will 'hang' us...

It becomes quite obvious that Mr Alpers enjoys mingling among psychiatric academia; perhaps to blend in and be noticed by the "gun control" network. He has even secured his name to be there among authors on various research papers like for example, "Mass Homicide: the Civil massacre". Published in the Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law, Vol. 28 Number 12000, this paper saw him team-up with psychiatrists, Christopher H. Cantor and Prof. Paul Mullen, and even slated as a co-authors of this most revealing 9 page article.

Understandably some New Zealanders have expressed mild outrage at Philip Alpers' anti-gun tactics from time to time. Without any of the usual global wanderings, (to this author at least) Mr Alpers' formative years were not unlike a number of others prominent in the "gun control" movement. At the URL below, I found the following posted, quote:



The
University
of Sydney

["Philip Alpers, a most dubious researcher.](#)

["We are not sure what, if any, actual qualification Mr. Alpers, who has claimed at various times to be a, Researcher & Policy Analyst, Firearms Injury Prevention, \(Oct. 96\), or Gun Policy Researcher, \(Feb. 97\)" has. He refers to attending](#)

*** Philip Alpers mentions that at New Delhi he was speaking under the auspices of the Amsterdam-based International Fellowship of Reconciliation.

university, "without enrolling", where he "did drugs and university by day", and worked part time by night, (North & South Magazine, July, 1991). He appears to have then dropped out to "move on the fringes of the hippy drug world", (NZ Listener, 24 October 1987)." Alpers did a stint on a local radio as a DJ in Gisborne."

- end quote.

<http://www.ssanz.org.nz/News/Articles/20050722.html>

A common trait among these "gun control" advocates in ascension is a desire to *mingle* among academia where many supporters are 'housed'. Also a technique common to this group is the use of 'selective bias' - often in conjunction with appalling maths all adding up to misinformation. The practice confirms the adage: a lie demands a legion of support. A good example of Alpers' selective bias can be evidenced in his article entitled "Eleven Years of Mass Gun Killings In Australia and New Zealand, 1987-97". It's not the incidents mentioned as evidence, where the problem lies, but rather the events he chooses not to mention.

In their collaborative essay, *Mass Homicide: The Civil Massacre* (obviously not intended for Australian eyes), the authors openly link by common factors 7 shooting massacres:

- 1) Aug 19, 1987, Julian Knight, Hoddle Street Melbourne; 7 killed, 17 wounded.
- 2) Aug 19, 1987, Michael Ryan, Hungerford, U.K.; 16 killed, 14 wounded.
- 3) Dec 8, 1987, Frank Vitkovic, Queen St Melbourne; 8 killed, 4 wounded.
- 4) Nov 13, 1990, David Gray, Aramoana, NZ; 13 killed, 3 wounded.
- 5) Aug 17, 1991, Wade Frankum, Strathfield, Sydney; 6 killed, 8 wounded.
- 6) March 13, 1996, Thomas Hamilton, Dunblane, Scotland, 16 killed, 13 wounded.
- 7) April 28, 1996, Martin Bryant, Port Arthur Tasmania; 35 killed, 20 wounded.



Had they shown a tad more patience, our three "anti-musketeers" - Alpers, Cantor and Mullen - could have added:

**2002: A Soros day for Brazil
when Rebecca hits Rio**

- 8) April 26, 2002, Robert Steinhäuser, Erfurt, Germany; 17 killed, 2 wounded.
- 9) Oct 21, 2002, Huan Yun Xiang, Monash Uni. Melb., Australia; 2 killed, 5 wounded: **a total of 120 people killed and 86 wounded in these easily linked shooting massacres alone - mass shootings that just ceased!**

You will note without exception all of these associates have corroborated in various ways in the writing of papers and essays that are published by supposedly reputable organisations to enhance their "gun control" credibility I suspect. For example, in the above mentioned article by Cantor, Mullen and Alpers, published by the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law, and headed "Case 7", the authors use 6 paragraphs of 680 words to provide the reader with what may seem to the naïve a credible profile of Martin Bryant. But remember these authors are supposedly learned, academics, whose reputed credibility, collectively, should open any door to official documentation concerning their chosen subject matter.

However in a footnote to the source reference (13) the reader is informed this material came from a 1999 paper authored by none other than these same three authors (plus P.W. Sheean)! The next four references are to a single margin note informing readers this text came from a 'report on Martin Bryant ... from the court and ... *The Age* newspaper'. While this may sound acceptable, upon closer examination one realises the report on Martin Bryant referred to in this instance was authored by none other than one of these very same authors - Dr Paul Mullen! Why do the authors conceal this fact? Perhaps it is because the majority of the claims made in this "Psychiatric Report - In Confidence" to the court are in my opinion no more than a collection of exaggerated, misrepresentations of the facts concerning Martin Bryant, many

claims of which are dealt with by Andrew MacGregor on this CD-Rom and are easily proven to be hearsay and the use of those claims are totally unprofessional.

Shortly after the media's attention on Port Arthur began to wane, Philip Alpers along with Rebecca Peters moved up into the global "gun control" network's executive level in America. George Soros runs an immensely wealthy empire, promoting his notorious global ambitions via his brainchild, the tax-free *Open Institutes foundation*. Peters received an "honorary doctorate" in law from George's buddies at John Hopkins, after she settled in Baltimore, while Alpers received his 'senior fellowship' at Harvard University's Injury Control Research Center; as to whether these scholastic "letters" are in truth *awards* or *rewards*, I shall leave it to your judgment.



London: *Getting tough ... on "replica guns" in 2004 & gun-deaths drop dramatically... Rebecca's 'huge road-roller'.*

Peters recently described as the 'self proclaimed queen of "civil disarmament,"' soon launched IANSA's disarmament campaigns in various counties, including Brazil. In the intervening years since 1996, her IANSA Brazilian campaign has involved an orgy of public gun burnings and crushings overseen by the "queen" herself.

With the incidence of private firearm ownership determined in an earlier study (Prof Harding, 1981), and their Australasian mission to an irreversible stage of near finality, the 'Sorosised' gun grabbers took to their global task with zeal. IANSA had a newly appointed CEO in Rebecca Peters, who as guest of the mayor of Rio de Janeiro, they turned a city street into a Hollywood-like film-set for their first big production of "international Gun Destruction Day" in June of 2002. Here the army drove a bull dozer over a reported 100,000 firearms.

Each year destruction events have been replicated to offer-up firearms to the *gods of "gun control"* on the sub-continent in 2003 and in mid 2004, IANSA publications claimed firearms were burnt, like funeral pyres. These burnings and destructions were said to have been staged in 11 countries around the world including the UK. There in London, Rebecca Peters posed with a few other disciples - even one from Dunblane - of the Soros financed IANSA for a photo opportunity beside what they claim as a "huge road roller", set to run-over a few "out of control ... gun replicas"; and all of them potential killers? Unfortunately the Blair Ministry had not been helpful for Rebecca's photo opportunity, as they must have destroyed already all of Britain's privatively-owned "real ones". 'Just replicas?' - oh what the heck - and the evil global "gun control" circus rolls on...

Though this time it seems Peters' program was a 'lulu': Rebecca miscalculated when she involved the unpopular president, Luiz Inacio Lula da Silva in her mission of destruction in Brazil. The \$200m (US) referendum held on 23 October, 2005, which if carried would have seen the sale of all firearms and ammunition to the public banned, did not go according to the script; more than 67 percent of the 120 million registered voters returned a resounding "No!". The outcome has not pleased the Soros 'storm troopers'. Perhaps Brazilians had not taken their medicine; a good dose of "Port Arthur" trauma.



Kampong 2004: a funeral pyre of the tool to enforce 'individual freedom' - the firearm; a legacy of Rebecca Peters & IANSA & the people are no safer...

The Washington Post^{†††} whinged, "the defeat disheartened gun control proponents". Rubens Cesar Fernandes, the director of Viva Rio, IANSA's local "coordinator", was reported as stating, "This closes the issue now, but maybe

^{†††} *Monte Reel*, "Brazilians Reject Measure To Ban Sale of Firearms", *The Washington Post*, 24oct05.

the next generation will be able to have this discussion again. I hope the whole world will be able to deal with this again."

Australasia had been dosed with successive and escalating traumatic gun massacres: from Milperra (1984) to Monash (2002); 18 years, nine violent events with 84 dead and 57 wounded.

I must mention here the "Queen St Massacre," as it becomes obvious that at Port Arthur, the real creators attempted to step-up from this earlier slipshod event. Described at the time as a "failed law student," Frank [Vitkovic](#) was nonetheless smart enough to gain a university standard entrance pass at High School. His solitary gun was an ex-military 30-M1 carbine, which had been modified *so as to fit the sports-bag* Frank used to conceal his weapon to walk into the Australia Post building at 191 Queen Street, Melbourne, on 8 December, 1987. In other words, the 30-M1 had been modified to fit the *sports bag*. The amateurish modification caused the carbine to malfunction badly. Vitkovic vented his frustrations as to the culprit and accomplices who were 'in the joke', for getting their priorities wrong; *sport-bag-size over weapon reliability*. For when he realised he'd been hoodwinked, Vitkovic uttered that now infamous declaration:

"How do they expect me to kill people with this gun?"

Just like Aramoana, and the later Port Arthur Uniformed police were held back and ordered 'not to enter the building', in Queens St, until the SOG arrived. But that wasn't the only impediment; Melbourne's CBD streets were badly clogged by the (coincidental?) suburban train strike that affected the whole city that day.



Frank Vitkovic

Now Martin Bryant never gained university entrance standard, he even failed to complete his secondary standard. In fact, Melbourne forensic psychologist Ian Joblin - who *"prides himself on knowing more about the psychology of criminal behaviour than almost anyone in the country"* - was reported by Professor Mullen as making the assessment that Martin *"Bryant was functioning intellectually in the lowest 1 to 2 percent of the population..."* with his *"...full scale IQ of 66."*⁷

However, the DPP would have us all believe that Martin Bryant was far advanced intellectually, to that of the former law student Frank Vitkovic, so that when Martin Bryant went to the Myer store in Hobart on 15 April 1996, accompanied by his girlfriend Petra Willmott, he even took with him a "tape measure" so as to ensure the military style firearms already chosen for the Port Arthur mission would *fit into the sports bag*. Of course Bryant's desire to purchase the sports bag would have had nothing to do with his minders having learned from their earlier mistakes, now would it? While on this key purchase mission; it seems Damian Bugg QC didn't even bother to obtain a corroborative statement from Myer's sales staff though as to who allegedly sold the sports bag to Martin. Although the media were quick to focus on the bag being as a "Prince" sports bag, witness statements show their descriptions to be focused on size and colour - not to any brand name.

To the mounting list of massacres achieved above, of course I can now add the "Claytons' Monash massacre". Although for the architects, the head count of deceased was a sandwich short of a picnic. Monash could not quite be elevated to a world class massacre event. But the "gun control" foot-soldiers and an excited John Howard didn't allow such trivialities to stand in the way of *the* civilian disarmament agenda. So Howard and colleague Daryl Williams moved rapidly against handgun owners, and as Port Arthur had sufficiently traumatised the pistol shooters of the nation as well, they meekly handed over their prized sporting handguns so as to help rid us of that *public health menace* that lurked within the community - the target shooters' handguns.

Remember though it was Monash Professor, Paul Mullen, who provided the professional psychiatric opinion that was exclusively employed by Damien Bugg QC to facilitate Martin Bryant to be judged *capable of standing trial*. But importantly it was a trial Martin Bryant was surreptitiously denied, when his persuasive legal council, John Avery candidly admitted, *"It took hours of talking over 14 or 15 visits to Risdon Prison to bring Martin Bryant around to the decision to change his plea to guilty..."*⁸

It is pertinent also to mention the Australian Sporting Shooters Association (SSAA). The SSAA was established around 1966, there being various earlier state firearms owners' associations. One would imagine such an organization would have imbedded in its constitution a central maxim to second The Commonwealth's Constitution and the Bill of Rights for their membership, because the Bill of Rights of 1688 is of special interest to every Australian as it declares certain recited rights are the **"true ancient and indubitable rights and liberties of the people to be firmly and strictly holden and observed in all times to come."** (Source: Quick & Garraan, Annotated Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia p.318, Part III)

Instead, SSAA has always compromised. I believe I'm not overstating the reality by saying they have bargained away every right their members ever had, pursuing instead some imaginary "right to hunt" and conduct "sport". For SSAA, Port Arthur was a topic beyond their charter: *"Do not talk about it!"* is their pig-headed posture.

In Victoria and by late 1987, a core of well informed citizens had already told Victoria SSAA President, 47-year-old electronics teacher at Clayton Technical School, Ted Drane, of evidence they'd collected, demonstrating links between three gun massacres here, one in the UK, political figures, statements, legislative moves and the shadowy "gun control" network. Ignoring the advice and during the January 1988 Melbourne rally, Drane insisted, *"This is a local issue. It's involved in civil rights. ...Nothing to do with anybody else. It's an issue here,"* and the rest is history. (*Sunday Observer* - 31jan88.)

In September of 1997, a small glimmer of hope appeared under the banner of the SSAA in the form of an insert, "Special Edition" in their monthly magazine *Australian Shooters Journal*, entitled "Who's Driving the Gun Grab?" The Canberra based small team who assembled and produced this article made a genuine attempt to make a difference and expose those behind this gun grab. To a point they did a remarkable job at that juncture especially when the short time frame in which they had to operate is considered. And, in many instances they got the story pretty right, but shortly after the report came out, **SSAA disbanded the team. Why?** This question becomes even more relevant in light of the fact that the SSAA was absolutely "cashed-



SSAA's Special Projects Officer: Garry Fleetwood



John Howard's legacy to the nation: Bob Menzies was called "Pig iron Bob," perhaps John may be called "Pig iron John"?

up" with a very significant sum of cash, gifted them by millions of concerned people right across Australia, many of whom were even non-members. But then, Garry Fleetwood was not part of the SSAA executive in September of 1997. SSAA attempted to recruit individually the independent team members - but they smelt a rat and refused to have anything to do with Fleetwood.

By May 2001 though it was clear from documents and letters to MP's, that the SSAA were determined to not change the mode of defence of member's rights, exemplified by the previous 30 years efforts, even for their reported 125,000 members. Earlier, on February 21 2001, SSAA's Special Projects Director, Gary Fleetwood issued a Media Release stating bluntly any suggestions of, *"...a conspiracy involved in the 1996 mass shooting at Port Arthur to introduce new gun laws in Australia,"* would in Mr. Fleetwood's own words, *"draw a blank"*. He went on to assure the media that the, *"SSAA has proven itself to be a reputable organization representing the interests of those average Australians, who chose the shooting sports as their recreational pastime."* This statement is totally contrary to the

findings of the independent team who authored the September 1997 'special report' which exemplified conspiracy throughout its entire 14 pages!

It then begs the question: "Did this *Special Edition Report* prompt a need within SSAA for a Special Projects Officer"?... and if so I wonder what story the minutes would tell us when the mover spoke to the motion that when carried, legitimised the new position?

Photographs of this person in the public domain are rare. [Fleetwood](#) formerly served in South Australia Police's Star Force as a senior non-commissioned officer with their 'Special Tasks and Rescue Division Special Weapons section'. South Australia Police call the group *Star Force*, a specialist SOG-type-force which is SAC-PAV, SAS and US trained. Fleetwood has been involved in the firearms industry for over 40 years through his family's Adelaide-based business, and also saw one tour in Papua New Guinea, employed by their Government in the setting-up of PNG's Firearms Registry.

But with the "gun control" networks mission secure and private firearm ownership fast facing extinction, Garry Fleetwood has moved-on ... to Canberra. Perhaps he's in search of new challenges and/or greener pastures? He achieved nought in the special needs project of halting or even denting the "gun control" disarmament program.

In March 2001 Garry Fleetwood went to Canberra and talked with political parties about 'recent claims' by One Nation Leader Pauline Hanson at that time that there was a conspiracy involving the 1996 mass shooting at Port Arthur to introduce gun prohibitions and confiscations in Australia. The following is taken from the SSAA press release at the time:

"That claim *will draw a blank with this Association*," Mr Fleetwood was quoted as stating. *"We have for some four years tried to stay in the middle of the gun debate - claims of a conspiracy at Port Arthur have been refuted by this Association ever since they surfaced after that tragic event,"* he said. But like other comrades, when the mission was complete he (also) departed the SSAA. Some time before 2005 Fleetwood joined the Australian Crime Commission (ACC) and in a document dated 08/02/05 he is referred to as an "analyst". (<http://www.lawlink.nsw.gov.au/>)

Oh well SSAA hierarchy seems to have now accepted the fact that when the firearms are all gone, the executive may as well go bird watching. As recently SSAA NSW announced the 'clinching of a deal' on an 80,000 acre cattle station in north-west NSW near Wanaaring, with permanent waterholes, 10 km of river frontage, and thousands of acres of lignum wetlands. This whole piece of real estate adjoins "Nocholeche Nature Reserve" with its reputed 235 native bird species. So it's hardly a secret as to what the SSAA's priorities are ... but informing their membership of the truth about Port Arthur obviously does not figure in their agenda as they busy themselves in a programme which hardly fulfils any of their constitutional obligations to the membership.

Returning now to Rebecca Peters, for a moment, and in February of 1997, Peters travelled to Dunblane Scotland carrying messages from some of the survivors of Port Arthur for the parents of the 16 children killed in that 1996 mass shooting. In the *"Good Weekend"* article, Sonya Voumard writes, *"guns kill more than 600 people on average in Australia each year says Peters,"* an example of deliberate gross error by Peters, amplified by the media; lazy journalism or deliberate misinformation?

You see official Bureau of Crime Statistics show the average number of persons who were victims of homicide with a firearm in Australia between the years of 1915 and 1998 fluctuated from as low as 0.16 per 100,000 in 1950, to as high as 0.78 per 100,000 in 1984 and the situation has continued with an average over ten years to 1998, of 81 persons recorded as victims of homicide. That is 650 per cent less than the figure promoted as fact by Rebecca

Peters, through journalist (?) Sonya Voumard, and the *Sun Herald*! I need to point out this average figure also includes the horrid 1996 Port Arthur massacre figures.

But expanding on her outrageous claim the journalist writes further that, *"underlying Peter's concern is her knowledge that most gun deaths in Australia don't occur during massacres: they are young men committing suicide or the result of violent domestic disputes."* I'm caused to wonder if Peters was reminded of the case of the homosexual lover of an anti-gun lawyer from Tasmania who shot himself in the early 1990's?

The statements fed to the media by the NCGC and GCA have always been grossly inaccurate



May-Day 1996, L-R:
John Howard MHR., embraces
foundation member of NCGC
Tasmania Dr Bryan Walpole.
"Gun Haters Inc"

and misinformation wall-to-wall. In the mid `90's Roland Browne a legal aid lawyer in Hobart, Tasmania, announced himself as "spokesperson" of the NCGC there in Tasmania. In November of 1995 it was Roland Browne who predicted a massacre in Tasmania, which he repeated on Channel 9's ACA, after the Thomas [Hamilton](#) massacre in Dunblane, Scotland on March 13 1996. That fact prompts a question: "Is Roland Browne clairvoyant, or a prophet ... or is he just well informed?" After Monash, these misinformation networkers are blaming licensed hand gun owners for the unprecedented shooting rampage that persisted on the streets of Sydney to reinforce the agenda - handgun confiscations. However this crime war on the streets is perpetrated by ethnic gangs of thugs armed with Saturday night special hand guns, illegally imported from Asia, the Middle East and criminal acts of robberies, as well as the recruitment criteria of security guards that was in

the late 1980's relaxed by Government, allowing criminals to enter en-mass and remain in the security industry. The latter problem was so bad, it caused the Police Minister in NSW in 2004, to withdraw the security licences of upwards of some 300 normally handgun-toting security guards, in one fell swoop!

Some establishment churches latched-into this anti-gun misinformation movement. The Uniting Church lead the charge after the Strathfield massacre in Sydney. A not so surprising stance, when one takes into account the Marxist-Leninist politics of the church's General Secretary, the Rev. Harry Herbert who was supported in his stand by the Roman Catholic priest Fr. Brian Lucas; both stated that, "all guns should be removed from urban areas," while patronising the 'rural folk' by recognising they had an apparent "legitimate use" for guns. The Rev. Harry

Herbert also is the main man behind the establishment and operation of the notorious "shoot-up parlour" in William Street Sydney so as drug addicts can legally inject illegal hard drugs; the number one reason for rampant handgun crime on the streets of this same city of Sydney today!



**Thomas
Hamilton real
name "Watts"**

The "gun control" network tried to rally their perceived "majority" on 5 May 1996 outside of the Parliament in Hobart. Referred to as just a "large crowd", the people assembled to hear the carefully chosen words of the AMA's spokesman, [Dr Brian Walpole](#), who later exposed himself as an instrument of the nation's ASIO team, who thundered, *"...the weapons of war must never again grace Australia's streets and fields..."* Since about 1971, Walpole had been a "gun control" campaigner and was instrumental in forming with his friend Roland Browne, the Tasmania chapter of the NCGC. In even inappropriate terms, the speakers urged their disciples to "maintain the rage". When Walpole's relationship with NCGC's **Roland Browne** is exposed, I'm caused to wonder if the emergency plan activated first by the massacre, RHH's "Code Brown", is correctly spelt.

On the steps of the Parliament in Melbourne, GCA's Andrew Harding was their spokesman in front of a few banners proclaiming their emotive messages. In Sydney the NCGC rally attracted

about 2,000 people to spread out for the cameras and hear the "gun control" gospel. Shortly, NCGC recruited the widower Walter Mikac to their membership so as the media could milk the last drop of emotion from a grief-stricken husband and father at their rallies in Hobart, Melbourne and Sydney. Walter had lost his wife Nanette and their two children to the gunman's bullets on Jetty Road. Then later came the shameful failed attempt at civil action against the firearms dealer Terry Hill, launched by Neville Quinn of Bicheno - who lost his wife Janet in the Café - on the legal advice of none other than Roland Browne, NCGC's Tasmanian spokesperson. Such are the many and varied ways, and lengths to which the misinformation network's little helpers are prepared to go, to mislead and confuse the public, and to destroy our heritage. What a nice little web of deceit and treachery the "gun control" helpers weave; but what of the mainstream media's performance?

Well when Tasmanians picked up their morning newspaper on Tuesday, 30 April 1996, the "jury" was back, and the judgement almost handed down! For that is how Murdoch's newspapers saw it.

The American citizen, Rupert Murdoch then controlled over half of Australia's print media, not to mention a fifty percent holding in Ansett Air Lines. His three newspapers distributed in Tasmania, *The Australian*, *Herald Sun* and *The Mercury*, left readers in no doubt as to the



*The Mercury's
contribution to
computer
enhanced media
fraud!*

outcome they advanced, all with full-face photographs of Martin Bryant. Never mind any suggestion of contempt of Court! In the case of *The Mercury* some innovation saw it fold out from its usual tabloid format to reveal a broadsheet front page, with its full length picture of Martin Bryant, his impassive countenance there for all to see (including the eyewitnesses yet to be shown the police photo-board, a month or more away), and headlines that shouted, *"THIS IS THE MAN,"* and further proclaiming to all, *"this is the man whom Tasmanians want to face 35 murder charges. ...this is Martin Bryant 28..."* In flippant contempt for the law, the word "alleged" was notably scarce in their linked articles.

Perhaps these are the principles, and codes to which president of the Pacific Area Newspaper Publishers Association, Chris McPherson, was referring, when he made his "state-of-the-industry address" to the 700 delegates from 17 countries in Hobart on Thursday May 2, 1996, saying:

"...the coverage of the Massacre by the Mercury [is] an important example of how newspapers were able to take a wide ranging and broad view of such an event." - *The Mercury*, p.3.



The Media's Martin Bryant

These 700 *media spectators* had just been - coincidentally of course - flown into Hobart on that very weekend! Almost shades of times in antiquity and Roman emperors; after all Port Arthur had the bleeding victims, the traumatised survivors and "ruins", even if not quite the Colosseum!

In fact, published in *The Australian*, one of the three Murdoch newspapers involved in this contemptuous act, the DPP Damien Bugg QC, placed all media "on notice", that he would *"...pursue contempt action against any broadcaster or publication whose coverage of the tragedy prejudiced the trial of the alleged gunman."* But should it be surprising to learn that I'm quite unaware of any such action ever having been mounted against any media owners. I mean, contemplate Mr Bugg taking-on the

largest paper baron in the world? While the above shameful media theatre was played-out, the future Comm. for Tasmania Police must have surely suffered some mental lapse... Four days later Richard McCreadie was quoted as stating:-

*"The Press were very responsible in everything they did.
"They were able to carry their job out professionally without breaching any of the rules," he said.⁹*

If it was possible, *The Australian* pushed the boundaries of responsible journalism beyond all decency in my opinion. It took Stuart Littlemore of ABC-TV's *Media Watch* to point out that on the same day as McCreadie was singing his media praises, *The Australian* published a photograph of Martin Bryant in which the whites of his eyes had been digitally altered (or 'enhanced' as they termed it). Tampering such as this in my opinion it tantamount to fraud, a view shared it seems by many other responsible readers; in this case the tampering was suggestive that the subject was either "possessed" or "mad" or both. The demonising of Martin Bryant in the public's mind had begun in earnest, and it really never relented, for as late as 28 April, 2003 the practice was repeated in the pages of Rupert Murdoch's newspaper *The Mercury* (Davies Bros) and in the column, "[On this day](#)". The fraud was extended by the accompanying text exposing the degree of irresponsibility of the publisher: Hobart's daily claimed the photograph was captured during Martin Bryant's sentencing hearing on 19 November 1996. But a check of *The Mercury* on 19/11/96, the day of the Bryant's hearing featured an artist's [sketch](#) accurately depicting Martin Bryant wearing a light coloured (blue) linen suit, a white open necked white shirt over round-necked sweat-shirt and a very short hair cut, a fact several eye witnesses and a prison guard have attested to.^{†††} After all, the co-conspirators desired to change the appearance of the accused so as the image of the 'long blonde haired gunman' was destroyed in an instant to further confuse the positive recollections of witnesses who were in the court that day.

Though *The Mercury's* initial photographs (including other Murdoch papers) subjected to their computer tampering published on 3.5.96, soon emerged as a touchy subject. We are told that ABC journalists made two inquiries of their colleagues at *The Australian*, which triggered a quick rebuke in writing from the Editor-in-chief no less. Paul Kelly with a rather unconvincing explanation first published in Wednesday's (31may96) edition explained, *"an attempt to remove shadows from the subject's face resulted unintentionally to the complete removal of colour from the whites of his eyes. No editorial instruction to alter the photograph was given."* Someone must have been deluded if they believed this lame excuse would wash; no it just confirmed the deliberate intentions to con the readers. But then Kelly gave an interview to ABC's "AM" program frankly admitting, *"The treatment of the eyes was a mistake"*; not exactly 'unintentional shadow removal' as earlier claimed. The published explanation was repeated on air almost word for word, but when asked as to how Murdoch's papers came by the photographs in the first place, there was a very obvious, and very pregnant pause. Finally collecting his thoughts, the Editor-in-Chief, in an attempt to pass the buck, suggesting the originals had come from *The Mercury*.



19.11.96:

*The Mercury's
sketch of the real
Martin Bryant*

A journalist with the police at Bryant's Clare Street home that Sunday evening of the 28th April, told me this photograph came into the hands of *The Mercury's* journalists as a result of the illegal forced entry made by police (without warrant) in that first raid on the Clare Street property; the journalists followed the police onto the premises. So in truth these journalists were guilty of theft and were

^{†††} Handcuffed at the rear, Martin Bryant was guarded in the court by two guards, one of whom was 46-year-old Rod Quarry.



Rob Atkins speaks with the media at Taranna late on Sunday evening.

accessories to the illegal forced entry no less. I wonder how McCreadie could defend this action as - "professional"?

Early press coverage of the Port Arthur massacre was to say the least sensational, inaccurate, and I believe obscene. I would liken their head lines to indicating it was a *newspaper competition* - seeking to establish the event's magnitude: -



Monday 29.4.96, 7:15am:
In Hobart, Today's Steve Liebman interviews suited-up Rob Atkins

- The Age: *"Australia's worst-ever mass shooting"*
- The Canberra Times: *"Australia's worst ever mass murder"*
- Herald Sun: *"World's Worst gun massacre rocks a stunned nation"*

The *Herald Sun* apparently decided Australians were all "stunned" - *before* the Port Arthur massacre occurred - which then evidently - "rocked" us.

- The Courier Mail: *"believed to be the world's worst massacre by a lone gunman,"* and *"probably the worst civilian shooting massacre by a lone gunman in history."*

Although in their rush to keep up with the competition *The Courier Mail* made a not so small blunder: they published a photo captioned, *"a young Martin Bryant"*, only it wasn't! A later issue sported an apology even although among other equally obscure advertisements, which lamely admitted their photograph actually featured 'Michael Robert Bryant - of Hobart'. No doubt Robert enjoyed the notoriety; I don't think so.



L-R Frnt: Karen Atkins with Sandy Lawrence & her MD husband in the JMO Port Arthur 28.04.96

- The Examiner: *"The world's worst gun massacre"*
- The Sydney Morning Herald: *"the worst massacre by a single gunman in Australian history."*
- The West Australian: *"It was the worst mass killing in Australia's modern history."*

One editor in chief, either determined to ignore all established justice, or supporting the conspirators role in the matter wrote, *"Nothing but a bullet for Bryant: Our system of justice demands a*

trial. Why?" Well, in spite of such asinine opinion, Martin was spared the "bullet" and conniving bureaucrats, politicians, health workers and a devious justice system required no media pressure at all to ensure Martin was denied a trial by jury anyway...

In keeping with their pursuit of "ratings" using exclusive, explicit "sound-bites", the electronic media for nearly 24 hours were denied all of the visual graphics, locked-out by police. But in their early attempts to show-case a flair for *story telling*, several examples are worth repeating.

In the brisk morning air of Monday 29 April, and at [7.11am](#) Steve Liebmann of Prime TV's "Today" show did a footpath interview outside Royal Hobart Hospital with "eyewitness" Mr [Rob Atkins](#) - in itself not of any significance. Rob gave an illuminating interview to ABC TV at Taranna on Sunday evening. Then there his pregnant wife Karen, both are to this story, people of interest. While no sworn statement was produced out of the DPP's office under FOI, both Rob and wife Karen really did receive unwarranted media attention, retelling events at the Historic Site in a gospel *according Rob*, and his amateur video footage was certainly in demand as well, being put to air by various channels including ABC-TV, with its accompanying, interesting sound track commentary. Karen Atkins especially, is remembered by staff at the Historic Site, when they were summoned to assist a pregnant and distressed Mrs Atkins who'd retreated up into the attic of the Junior Medical Officer's cottage (JMO), which is accessed by a very steep, narrow, seventeenth century spiral staircase. Sandy Lawrence and her husband (a

medical doctor), were 'hunkered down' in a cottage, when a staff member burst through the door calling for a doctor to assist with Karen in the attic room. From Rob Atkins' video, the *New Idea** (11may96, p.10), published a shot of an indifferent Karen [Atkins](#) sitting quietly in a large chair and seated beside her the America Doctor and his wife who came to her aid. Rob Atkins' video and commentary also evidenced the couple as being close to the JMO's cottage, early in the shooting, which is quite at odds with his statements to the media.

The couple were first interviewed as they both sat in the front seat of a motor vehicle at Taranna, with Rob at the wheel. Subsequent frames show yet another unidentified young female in the front passenger seat, and in still later clips, a middle-aged male occupies the same front passenger seat. In these initial interviews the Atkins are heard speaking of their experiences in the first person; as if he and his wife actually heard the gunman utter their often repeated words, *"There's a lot of wasps around today. There's not many Japs here are there."*

This aspect of the Port Arthur exercise, unmistakeably introduced a "racial hatred" connotation. But, until Port Arthur in 1996, most Australians were blithely unaware of the meaning of the term "WASPs," save as referring to those of the stinging variety! In this instance, it is interesting that Martin's girlfriend Petra Willmott in her sworn statement asserted that on the evening of the 28th she'd heard that, quote, *"...the person involved had mentioned something about wasps and Japs. That is what Martin often says."* Note the word "wasps" is not capitalised here. Not surprisingly, Damien Bugg QC, phrased this information with much more emphasis in the court documents. After all these claims had to interlock with a role Martin Bryant was to play out inside Seascope as "Jamie".

Beginning around page 18 of the Police negotiator's transcript, there is some confusion introduced into the conversation when "Jamie" expresses to Sgt Terry McCarthy an indecision of whether or not he will take Sally Martin with him on the helicopter ride he has demanded of police. McCarthy asks "Jamie", *"Do you know Sally..."*? to which "Jamie" responds, *"Oh I've known her all my life. Yeah,"* then shortly he volunteers, that *"She's been bad news to me."* Which lead him to further claim, *"Oof she's a trouble maker, she's part Jewish you know."* Now, this little segment is emphasised by a little scene that unfolded on page 20 of the negotiator's transcript, where Jamie (remember McCarthy's own suggestion; 'as if acting out a role'), tells McCarthy, that when he was in Miami, America, he'd met a "Jewish couple" while filling in a day as they waited for a cruise, and as they walked along the street, the couple met "this other chap" and so they "dumped" Martin. Strange little recount, and akin to his phantasm of hijacking the BMW (seized by the gunman at the Port Arthur Tollbooth), and the kidnapping of "Rick", his wife and their twelve-month-old child, and driving down Fortescue Bay road at "160ks"! After this, McCarthy did not raise the racial subject again. Is it any wonder Terry McCarthy said it was almost as if "Jamie" was "acting out a role", and he was. Those comments "Jamie" made concerning Sally Martin, are quite at odds with the recollections of people that I have met who lived on the Peninsula and knew both families well. So ask yourself this question: "Exactly in who's interest was it, for Martin Bryant to express such opinions?" Also remember this opinion was first noticed by girlfriend Petra Willmott, on the 25th April - the previous weekend - when the pair spent the day in Richmond. The significance of Richmond being that it is where Blair Saville, the Risdon prison officer who as an agent provocateur, let slip in his conversation with Martin that Richmond was a possible target for the exercise that unfolded at Port Arthur; someone it seems in the Police hierarchy at least had heard this 'target' mentioned around the traps.

Now, it was the gunman - not Martin Bryant mind - who raised the matter of "wasps" first on the afternoon of the 28th in conversation with Gaye Lynd and her girlfriend Vicki whose overheated van had broken down near Seascope. But when the girl's motor refused to turn over, the blonde-headed man demonstrated his auto-electrics ability diagnosing a loose battery connection. Remember, Martin Bryant has never ever exhibited having a mechanical aptitude -

in fact, quite the opposite. As the motor was left idling the blonde-headed male asked, "Have you got anything to sell?" Lynd says she reached into the glove box and showed him a "small satchel" of marijuana, for which the male paid her \$50.

Remember Martin Bryant didn't use drugs and was quite particular with his health care; he didn't even smoke tobacco. Now before the male drove off, he told the girls that he was going to the Isle of the Dead to "...get rid of some Wasps," and arranged with the girls to shout him a cup of coffee in the Café on site; lucky for the girls, the meeting that did not take place.

In conversation though with the girls, the word "Wasps" understandably was thought to mean wasps of the stinging insect variety. Several eyewitnesses on the balcony of the Café also heard the term used by the gunman, and likewise assumed similarly. Only one witness there makes the racial connection, other than the Atkins. Even although the Atkins heard the term second-hand, **WASPs** was recounted in every interview the couple gave...and Rob Atkins certainly inferred that he understood the term to mean **White Anglo Saxon Protestant**. That understanding is in my opinion quite significant. For it is interesting to note that in media circles globally, it is down to one group that continues *ad nauseam* to play the "race hatred card" in news items. For instance, it was suggested in the Court Documents that Mrs "Sally" Martin was of Jewish ancestry and so that was really drawing a long bow in an attempt by the DPP to promote a racial hatred motive. But their deception when examined closely has no credibility whatsoever.

In an interview conducted after dark, and outside of the vehicle — most probably still at Taranna — Atkins told Rod Wallis of ABC-TV, that they were just "eighty metres from the kiosk when the shooting started." However please note the JMO cottage is 400 yards (437m) due west of the Café! Clearly neither Rob or his very pregnant wife Karen could possibly have run the 400 yards - up a more-than-gentle slope over soggy grassed areas, soaks and ditches, in time for Rob to deploy his video camera (no camera shake from breathing hard visible), to record gunshots coming from the vicinity of the Broad Arrow Café. Atkins claimed the couple were sitting on the café balcony, where they overhearing the gunman while eating his meal nearby ... moments before the shooting began.

Rob Atkins even states that they decided not to have lunch when they arrived, so were well away from the Café, even putting this good fortune down to "luck". It also appears to this author, that some of the sound track of the Atkins video has been lifted for dubbing onto other visual footage as put to air by some of the media! But Rob Atkins leaves the viewer in no doubt of his expertise in assessing as to what is going on, as he films near the verandah of the JMO's cottage, when he states, *"There's the gunshots ...It's live action here at Port Arthur."* His wife was so affected by these gunshots down at the Broad Arrow, that considerable concern was expressed as to her and the unborn child's wellbeing. So much so, that Rob Atkins had the busy staff at Royal Hobart Hospital check-out Karen and her baby late on the evening of the 28th. Nonetheless, leaving his pregnant wife at their accommodation, Rob *did his public duty*; he rose at the crack of dawn, put on a smart grey suit, pressed blue shirt and matching blue-spotted tie, and made his way to Prime-TV's outside broadcast near the Royal Hobart Hospital. There with Steve Liebmman...**he got the news out** - even though the content was a little awry, and Martin Bryant was yet to stumble with his cloths alight, from the inferno of the Seascape Cottage. We know Atkins rose at the squeak of day, as already he'd organised for he and his wife to fly-out of Hobart that Monday afternoon, and cut short their reported Tassie holiday.

Now to another early media example: Prime TV's Anne Fulwood's general knowledge was found wanting when having to adlib in a "live" hook-up (a quaint phrase when one considers the term) with America's NBC; not one of 7's better ideas it's fair to say. When Anne responds to her American counterpart's suggestion, that **'the people of Tasmania must surely, all be in shock,'** in the wake of the massacre, Fulwood responds, "Oh absolutely...", pointing out that of course this was especially so with Tasmania being, **"the very smallest State,"** expanding on her

geography lesson she continued, "as you are probably aware there's about seven or eight states in Australia". Gosh, Anne must surely been a diligent student of history and geography throughout her scholastic adventure! But never mind, Port Arthur's world class massacre was of a scale that certainly 'put Tasmania on the global map' in the eyes of the media and the "gun control" collective.

THE SHRINKING HUMBUG

As this whole stinking mess of the New Order unfolds in Australia, and amid a backdrop of race riots in the southern beach-side suburbs of Sydney, a campaign launch was underway from 1 December 2005, to yet again "Save Australia" - I've lost count of the dozens of campaign-launches that have been delivered by Aust Post to my mailbox over the last 21 years conveying the same theme. However, I believe this crusade confirms my earlier suggestion of Mr Pitt having at least one last fling. His appeal first came in the form of an e-mail widely circulated out of Maryborough: PaToPitt@bigpond.net.au and the e-mail was dated 3 December 2005.

Its text appealed to the reader's compassion in a quite extraordinary way, a manner I can say I have never experienced in all of my life:

"I have just weeks to live before I go. With my last breath I'm asking 15,000 of you to work together to Save Australia, please!"

The e-mail went on to inform the reader, *"Australia First, One Nation and the Great Australians have been unsuccessful. Letters and petitions have failed. Wake up calls and educational forums by Eric Butler, Jeremy Lee, Joe Bryant, Robert Balgarnie, I and others were not sufficient. The freedom newspapers haven't won the day so far."*

Although the name-dropping in his urgent "appeal" is significant, precise and in itself, revealing, it is worthy of note [Tony Pitt](#) has been at some time or other closely associated with each of the individuals and political organisations named, but in reality very many more. Though is it yet another coincidence that the name of Tony Pitt only came to prominence with regard to many of the names and or associated organs at critical times in the life of each of those same organisations, which saw either their imminent destruction and or demise into obscurity or irrelevance? But of course far be it from me to suggest we can put that down to Tony. But the e-mail appeal was only the first shot in his final campaign.



Heady Days in One Nation:
Tony Pitt

Then came the follow-up mail-out, addressed to this author personally and processed by the Maryborough Australia Post mail centre at 5 pm on 12 December 2005. It also claimed 15,000 of my fellow Australians supposedly were mailed this same pathetic plea. But it was the enclosed **post-code-sorted mailing list** of names with each mail out that has elevated Mr. Pitt's campaign to rank with the outrageous publication of the One Nation membership list illegally published in 1998, or the sale by Peter Sawyer of his mailing list back in the 1980's.

After two phone calls from angered recipients, if there was any doubt of Mr. Pitt's agenda before his mail out and if my callers are any true indication, many people will now suffer no illusion as to what is going on. Pitt was referred to as a "white ant" by some close observers during the unraveling of One Nation in Queensland (December 1999) and when his track record is examined, I don't feel the term is inaccurate. Though his above list of organisations and individuals who've failed - he says they were "unsuccessful" - is quite incomplete, I question his appraisal of them: it would depend from on which side you viewed the results I guess. Though Like "Joe" this is almost past history:

On 27 February 2006, his wife announced that Tony had passed away at 9.15am.
Vail Tony Pitt.

In the case of both "Joe" and Tony, there has been a deal of sole searching as to deleting both stories from this work. However I decided that as I had written the bulk of this work before there was any suggestion that Tony was about to pass away, it should stand unaltered for the public record. I have no animosity toward Tony Pitt, just sadness as to the effort that went into muddying the truth about Port Arthur. For the mainstream media need no assistance in that regard. Tony made his choice just as I have.

In recent years Andrew Denton established himself as a sought of a "Parkinson" type television interviewer with his sometimes weekly ABC-TV show *Enough Rope*, the vehicle. At 9.30pm on 16 August 2004, as the star spot drew to a close he went to his supposed spontaneous audience participation of their worst experience type spot, with a female introduced as Robyn Lawler to present a brief recount of her brother's experience she introduced as "...the Port Arthur massacre that happened down in Hobart, Tassie..." This *faux pas* at the outset set the standard for what was to follow and it wasn't nerves I can assure you.

One needs to know the female Andrew Denton interviewed that evening, for reasons best known to her she gave a false name. I'm unaware of her marrying to date and so at time of writing I'm sure she still goes by the name of Robyn Law, the sister of a former PASMA tour guide, Ashley Law; his movement are well documented on that day within this work.

It was Ashley Law you may remember who was on the phone inside the Information Centre and from whose logged phone call we can clearly establish the commencement of the shooting in the café at between 1324 - 1325 hrs.

After the gunman had exited the Café and paused on the front steps and discharged shots, along with other staff Ashley began to also move some of the visitors around the Information Centre towards church ruins across the grassed section that today has the Government Gardens in its top section. At this stage Ashley has seen the gunman for just a few moments of the steps of the café at about 50m.



L-R: Robyn Law (a.k.a. Robyn Lawler) & Andrew Denton on ABC-TV's *Enough Rope*

When this large splintered group of maybe 70 people were crossing this open space covered with knee-high grass on a sodden base and a flowing creek down the middle, Ashley Law states, *"I had covered three quarters of the distance... [i.e. about 318m] ... a car the same yellow Volvo with roof racks drove out of the car park heading up the Toll Booth Road. ... He didn't stop."*

This means Ashley Law was no closer to the gunman (who didn't stop the vehicle) than about 50 m for a few moments and 110m on his second and his last sighting of the offender.

Using the name of "Robyn Law" his sister made this extraordinarily false claim:

ROBYN LAWLER: *"So [Ashley Law] turned around and Bryant drove up in the car, he stopped the car, he wound the window down, he got the gun out, he aimed it directly at him, and, like, Ashley saw his life flash in front of him, and within seconds, he put the gun back in the car, he beeped the horn and he waved to him and he drove up to the toll booth."*

Then we have this ridiculous claim:

ANDREW DENTON: Why didn't they shoot him?

ROBYN LAWLER: *"Well, as it happened, three years prior to all this happening, Martin Bryant used to...live with an older lady who was in with the Tattersall*



Ashley Law, Port Arthur Information Officer

people, lot of money, etc. In a car accident on the way down to Port Arthur, Ashley, my brother, was on his way home from work from the city, and he actually stopped that night and he pulled him out of the car. And they say that he...they... The police reckon that they [sic] recognised him and that's why they [sic] didn't shoot him."

The motor accident referred in the Denton interview by Robyn Law (a.k.a. Lawler) occurred on 20 October 1992, about 2 km from Copping on the Arthur Highway.

Miss Helen Harvey, the driver of a car allegedly at the time of the collision with another vehicle was on the wrongs side of the road, and she died at the scene. Martin Bryant was the passenger in Miss Harvey's car, and he sustained serious injuries to vertebra in his neck.

All of the published reports of the day I have accessed confirm Martin Bryant was quote: "cut from the wreck by ambulance officers," a position corroborated by a former ambulance officer of the area.

This refutes the claim of Ashley Law having pulled Martin Bryant out of the car wreck at the site of the head-on collision near Copping in October 1992.

To add to this rebuttal, Ms Law claimed 'police reckoned' Martin Bryant had to have recognised her brother is balderdash: the ambulance officers who attended this accident and published reports of the day consistently state Martin Bryant was unconscious at the time he was cut from the wreckage; *unconscious* means "unaware".

In that state of mind, how on earth could Martin Bryant possibly have been able to see Ashley Law so as to be able later at Port Arthur to recall their previous meeting on the Arthur Highway near Copping - even if Bryant had been the gunman which he most definitely wasn't.

Andrew Denton has I believe damaged his credibility to a considerable extent and now has joined the ranks of those who mislead and misinform on this most serious incident. He chooses not to answer my correspondence, and so he is no better or worse than the other infamous people whose names feature in this chapter.¹⁰

In conclusion of this segment, surely it is clearly evident that to carry-off a deception on a grand scale such as was done in Tasmania in the twilight of April 1996, only requires a handful as "fronts" to carry-off the exercise. But the media promotes the whole shebang with enthusiasm! Their so superior they masquerade as professional but do no more than the bidding of the signatory of their pay-cheque. They dare not ever admit errors, gullibility, poor journalistic skill - or what ever you like to label it - so as to correct their version. Even the footage that ABC-TV News put to air on that Sunday evening as breaking news, "live" via Alison Smith and Andrew Fisher who presented a litany of misleading information. One example is worth retelling here: with their female reporter in stylish overcoat among the cars at the Taranna police roadblock, she informed viewers 'all roads within 4 km of the cottage have been closed by police', when the item cut to a shot of Seascape viewed from across the waters of Long Bay.

Had the ABC film crew beaten Nine's team by arriving there on Sunday afternoon? Well not quite. The old 'file footage' deception was employed here - not that the production was subtitled as such. But closer examination showed the outbuilding (close to the main Cottage where the FN FAL rifle was later photographed in the gutter of the porch roof), at the time this video was captured, was not then even evident.

With much planning, plotting scheming and subterfuge, willing assisted by the media and later covert agents such as the Vialls' cell, the lie is made reality isn't it ... well almost, but not quite - yet.

End Notes

- ¹ "Three groups launch arms control campaign in Bamako";
<http://www.angolapress-angop.ao/noticia-e.asp?ID=409470>
- ² Stewart Beattie, essay, "From Citizens to Serfs – the conspiracy to disarm Australia & control the people"
- ³ Lee Rhiannon, MLC, Press release, "Port Arthur handgun deal remembered", 26 April 2002
http://www.lee.greens.org.au/media/Media02/Mar-Apr/s020426_portarthurgundead.html
- ⁴ <http://www.umut.org.tr/ENG/sempozyum/katilicibiyog.htm>
- ⁵ Andrew MacGregor interview with Dennis Gabbedy; na "Causalities of War," The Bulletin, April 29 1997, pp.14-17.
- ⁶ Tasmania Police shot sequence list; Police Training Video, Easton G., Port Arthur - Media Management
- ⁷ *Sun Herald*, "Good Weekend", April 5, 1997 pp.21-25.
- ⁸ *The Mercury* (Hobart), 9sept97
- ⁹ *The Mercury*, 3may96, p.4
- ¹⁰ Andrew Denton, *Enough Rope*, ABC-TV Monday, 9.30pm, 16aug04

The .223Rem Calibre; a History

Chapter 5

The twenty-two calibre *family* of high velocity, rimless cartridges was pioneered by Remington Arms in 1950, the first being their .222 Remington (222 Rem). But the development of the cartridge the .223 Remington (223 Rem), began in 1957, when it was re-developed from a cartridge from the existing Remington stable of 22 calibres designated the "222 Rem Mag". Remington also changed the last digit to a "3" in their redeveloped calibre, so as to clearly distinguish the new round from its predecessor, as the 223 Rem case had a greater capacity by approximately 2 percent over its predecessor. Various experimental combinations were produced as early as October 1958, but the Military round to endure in .223Rem produced in September of 1963 was officially type-classified as "*Cartridge, 5.56mm Ball, M193*" and in January of 1964, Olin Corp produced the first run of 500,000 rounds to specifications that already had received special "waivers".

Cartridge	224 WINE2	Quantity Per Box	20
Bullet	Gr.	"	Lot 1
Lot No.	246491	Date	6-10-58
Velocity@	15	Ft.	3618
Pressure, Copper	48,500	P.s.i.	

AMMUNITION RESEARCH
OLIN MATHIESON CHEMICAL CORP.
WINCHESTER WESTERN DIV.
NEW HAVEN, CONN.

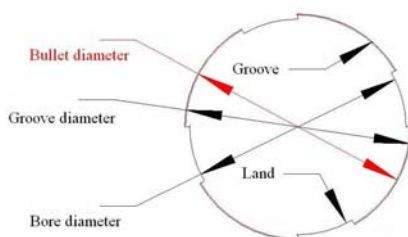


1958 experimental Winchester Western 224 (223 Rem) rounds type-classified "M193"

It was some time before this calibre was chambered into commercial sporting firearms, but like many military designated calibres, the .223Rem soon became immensely popular and widely accepted by the shooting fraternity around the world.

As the primary small arm's calibre used by Americans in Vietnam much legend was built around the calibre which to a lesser extent filtered through to their allies' special units in this drawn-out conflict. The bullets were said to "tumble" supposedly causing 'horrific body trauma wounds'. Great propaganda maybe, but in truth "the tumbling bullet" is a flawed theory.

An explanation is called for here; a rifle barrel is machined internally using various methods to produce a bore and so the "bore diameter" is measured between the "lands". The larger internal diameter of a barrel is measured between the grooves; the "groove diameter".



The machined, raised section spirals down the barrel at a given "pitch" and so it is the lands, which spins the projectile as it is propelled down the [barrel](#). The spiralling or "twist" causes the forward moving projectile to spin or rotate which directly influences the projectile's stability, impacting positively to produce improved accuracy and penetration characteristics. Although discounted by some ballisticians, it has been my personal experience that within a calibre, by the very influences I mention above, the rate of this twist has a significant influence upon bullet performance after it strikes the target as well.

From when the projectile leaves the barrel's muzzle, it does not travel for the duration of its flight with its nose continuously pointing in the direction of the flight. A right-hand twist barrel causes the bullet nose to point ever so slightly to the right of its flight path, and so the bullet begins an almost indiscernible "yaw". A left hand twist produces the same result but to the left. The rate of twist has a direct influence upon controlling this "yaw".



The
"Signature"
engraved on
projectiles
by the
barrel lands

"Twist" is expressed as a rate of one completed revolution in a given number of inches of forward travel, shown for example as 1:7, being 1 turn in 7" of twist. The Colt AR15 Carbine with its standard 16" barrel has a bore diameter of .224" and originally had a 1:12 twist, but almost surely the recovered Colt AR15 SP-1 carbine would have had a 1:9 twist barrel. Forensically speaking, this is a very interesting point, as the rifle variant I strongly believe was used by the gunman in the café would most probably have been fitted with a barrel of a different rate of twist. This fact alone would have produced a discernibly different angle or "pitch" in the signature engraved by the lands on any sizable fragment of projectile body recovered by police. Like the disappearance of Martin Bryant's video camera, could not the same convenient fate have befallen such a bullet fragment?

In the case of the 1:12 twist barrel in .223Rem, it is my qualified opinion to be borderline adequate to stabilise a 55gr bullet, but certainly would not stabilise the later 63-grain M855 ball ammunition, hence the reason for changing to a 1:9 twist in the AR15A2 and on. I must add there are some in the trade who may disagree with this statement. There are some in the trade who maintain a later 1:8 twist will stabilise even the 75-grain match .224" BTFMJ¹ bullet, but that is not the same proposition as for the lighter bullet.

When a projectile bore diameter/weight/twist-rate combination is *incorrect*, it causes inaccuracy (especially at low ambient temperatures) and the projectile "tumbles" after leaving the rifle's muzzle thus the projectile is said to be *unstable*. A rule of thumb being in many rifle calibres, the heavier the projectile weight in a given bore diameter, the faster the rifling "twist" must be to stabilise the heavier/longer projectile in flight.

When the bullet is unstable, accuracy is destroyed, velocity falls-away rapidly and both range and penetration is correspondingly reduced. As a result, a projectile can only deliver and transmit its maximum kinetic energy upon the target when stable and travelling at high velocity and fast revolutions.

In 1964, this author carried out tests with a .270/303 calibre rifle. The ammunition was loaded with 116 and 130 grain .277" projectiles seated in front of a recommended near maximum load of Noble #41 rifle powder, which produced velocities averaging 2700 fps², and 2400 fps., respectively, at 10 feet. The new barrel which had been fitted to this N^o4 SMLE Long Branch action was later found to have a 1:14 twist, and so even at ranges of under a 100 yds, tests revealed the 130 grain projectile (especially) was penetrating the targets in a classic *key-hole* attitude. That is to say the bullet passed through target with the axis of the projectile at 90 degrees to its flight path. In its unstable state, the projectiles shed so much velocity, energy and penetration, that further tests revealed failure to even flesh-wound light game animals at around 100+ yards range.

Considering the Colt AR15 A-2 rifle, and using ammunition loaded with 55 gr., projectiles, a maximum powder charge of the type used in the Norinco cartridges should produce velocities of say around 3,200 fps*, under normal ambient temperatures of less than 75 degrees Fahrenheit (or 24°C), and so should produce chamber pressures of lower than 43,500 lbs pressure (C.U.P). While a "proof load" in this calibre produces a maximum breach pressure in the region of 54,300 lbs. (C.U.P.) -



End Note

¹ BTFMJ = boat tail full metal jacket - bullet

² The term "fps" = feet per second is used throughout

FMJ "Ball" Projectiles

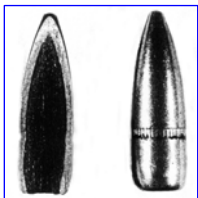
Chapter 6

We must now correct some of the "legends" & myths surrounding the early military designated M193, 5.56x45mm or .223 Remington (Rem) ammunition, and the body trauma it was reputed to have caused. So let us examine the commercially available .223Rem ammunition loaded like Norinco is with a .224" x 55-grain FMJ projectile, and the effect on the target when this projectile strikes soft body tissue.

Several factors must be considered here when comparing this high velocity, small calibre round to the so-called "full-bore" military calibres of the past and even the 7.62NATO round, for they do differ quite markedly in construction, velocity, weight, characteristics and impact results.

Human body tissue is composed of between 65-74 percent water, almost all of which is retained in small cell structures which when compressed burst. It is this major reaction to high velocity light bullets striking them, which contributes significantly to the extent of body tissue trauma in wounding. The major factors which cause body tissue wound trauma are:—

1. High velocity, in conjunction with projectile weight, range and revolutions per minute (rpm), and
2. The striking of hard bone structures contained within the soft body tissue, and most importantly,
3. Projectile construction.



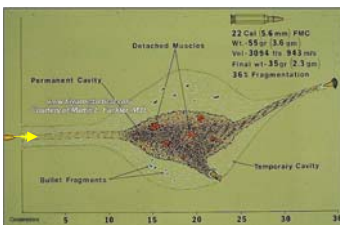
**Sectioned Norinco
.223 cal
projectile**

Specifically, the .224" 55-grain FMJ semi-boat-tail ammunition such as is loaded by Norinco (at left), PMC and Winchester Olin cartridges for example, commonly produce significantly more soft tissue wound trauma under some conditions than is produced by say the military .308W FMJ (7.62 NATO) round, over ranges of less than 100 yards.

Upon inspection of various factory ammunition, it can be said that Norinco .223"x55gr FMJ projectiles have a light gauge jacket wall, and especially when fired from a 1:7 twist barrel, the projectile's velocity to rpm ratio is increased to well above that of the heavier 7.62mm (.308") military ammunition with the 144 grain projectiles (at right). So when the .224" 55-grain FMJ projectile is driven at comparatively higher velocities of say 3,200 fps it produces significantly heightened soft tissue trauma.



**Sectioned 7.62mm
144gr bullet (Aust)**



**Wound Pattern of M193 - by
Martin Fackler MD.**

The wound pattern of the M193 ball ammunition is worthy of your consideration here but the illustration only serves to example the extent of a typical body tissue wound made by the 22cal 55gr projectile from an M193 round. You will note that detached muscle and tissue trauma is at a maximum by the time the bullet has penetrated about 200mm or 8" - roughly the overall thoracic depth of an adult torso. The Norinco .223Rem FMJ ammunition certainly would not produce more penetration than that of the M193 round and it produces quite inferior penetration and energy if compared with the current SS109 (5.56x45mm) military ammunition as used by the Australian

Defence Forces (ADF) at all but close or contact ranges. When a Norinco FMJ projectile strikes body tissue at ranges where remaining velocity remains above 3,000 fps., the light construction jacket deforms often to such an extent, it compresses back to the knurled cannelure, which is the weakest point in the jacket wall, expanding as it does so, and simply by compression, begins to disintegrate, shedding jacket fragments, as well as fragments of extruded lead alloy core material. Hence if the projectile strikes a hard surface and ricochets, this can produce so-called "shrapnel" or "fragmentation" that when are unimpeded can cause secondary type wounds of both the intended target, and other close targets, beyond.

When compared to the ADI produced 7.62NATO round, Norinco .223Rem FMJ ammunition penetration is significantly less, as the bullet deforms and disintegrates after similar penetration of soft tissue as the diagram above shows and so at between 6 to 8 inches the latter I would suggest produces in excess of the stated 36 percent fragmentation.

Although here I'm speaking from my personal experience, this position is mirrored in the *Wound Ballistic Review* report authored by Sergeant Gerard Dutton who in reference to the injured female "P6" writes, "*an X-Ray...showed...particles present which was lead squeezed from the base of the bullet,*" and in this instance the bullet was even said to be, "remarkably intact". But did these particles originate from a shot other than that which caused the primary wound? I would suggest not. But what happened in the case of Mick Sargent, when a bullet 'struck to top of his head' creasing his skull with a slight wound? Did it remain intact and so kill his companion Kate Scott? Or did the bullet just simply vanish?



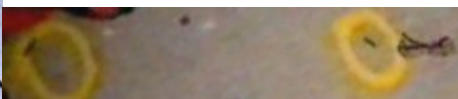
A sectioned ADI projectile:
Cal. 7.62mm x 144
grain (ball) FMJ

In spite of an obvious silence on the part of the forensic firearm examiner, the forensic team in general and the DPP in particular, there is strong evidence to suggest a .308W firearm was discharged in the Broad Arrow Café, because of:



a. The characteristics of the wound suffered by "P3", and

b. The .308W spent [cartridge](#) captured on PTV tape on the dining room floor of the Broad Arrow Café.



Comparison L-R: Identifiable by dimension ratios the smaller .223Rem casing is spent.308W case is. Photo at right, another 308W case at left compared with at right the smaller .223Rem

The unyielding emphasis by the DPP of the unsustainable 29 shots in 60

seconds time frame has undoubtedly distorted entirely the account of the shootings inside the Broad Arrow Café. My conclusion is yet again substantiated when you consider the details of the wounds of victims "P3" and "P1" as documented in the now defunct publication, *Wound Ballistic Review*, authored by 3 police officers and a doctor that reviews the wounds of the Port Arthur victims. This publication obviously for American eyes only, is quite ambiguous as it is quite selective in its presentation, excluding photographic evidence of some victims, such as "P1" and "P3", both of whom I would contend most likely suffered wounding by the .308" calibre firearm. My criticisms and conclusions regarding this review are justified I believe, when the details are compared with those contained in the official medical report authored by Dr David Smart.

In the case of "P1", the bullet actually struck the victim right of centre on his jaw bone, causing 6 lesions to the mandible, airway compromise (larynx), and the bullet nicking his carotid artery which caused a small 'intimal tear', before exiting to the right rear of his neck at the jaw-line. He also suffered paralysis down one side for a considerable When considered alongside others who sustained wounds caused by the .223 Remington, the wound sustained by "P3" stands out at distinctly different. ¹

The Wilkinson video tape presents us with an audio record of the first 17 shots discharged in the café over 10 seconds and when considered after matching it alongside another video (possibly the McLeod tape) over the ensuing 10 seconds, just 4 shots are discharged. This I would suggest is when the gunman changed from the Colt AR15 SP-1 .223Rem rifle, to the Armalite [AR10](#) 7.62 NATO rifle. Note: the gunman *did not* carry any FN FAL rifle on his shooting spree to the Historic Site and back to Seascope. It's interesting to note that as Andrew and I have discovered, the Court Documents tell us that from the yellow Volvo sedan at the Tollbooth, police recovered 3 magazines; 2 (supposedly for an FN FAL), but importantly straight 20 shot 7.72NATO mags, one empty and one holding 17 rounds. But also recovered was "One magazine for the colt AR15 rifle containing twelve live rounds." Twelve, plus 17 equals 29 shots; the number of shots the DPP insisted was the total number of shots discharged in the Café! ²



An AR-10 Mod.A2 .308W self-loading rifle of Dutch manufacture. Supplied as standard with a 20 shot, straight, pressed steel magazine & note the colour of the fibreglass butt & forend hand-guard.

However, retuning to the point in time of the *lull* in the rate of discharges post the *seventeenth round* fired: after conversations with a witness, I would contend it was in the subsequent segment, that the following five people were shot - with the AR-10, 7.72NATO rifle:

1. Mary Howard (dec.),
2. Mervyn Howard (dec.),
3. Graeme Collyer (GSW),
4. Sarah Loughton (dec.) and her mother
5. Caroline Loughton (GSW).

My point being: this little exercise demonstrates 40 percent of the number whom I believe were shot with a round from an AR-10 7.62NATO rifle survived their wounds. I believe if you compare those shot with the .223 calibre weapon, the above ratio is reversed.



Const Debbie May

[Constable](#) of the Tasmania Police who was as it were, "out of the loop".

As far as the Police Training Video evidencing the single .308" calibre spent shell casing there on the floor of the Café dinning room and nearby a .223 Rem casing, suggests to me that the souvenir collectors missed this one spent casing that later was inadvertently put on the record by a conscientious

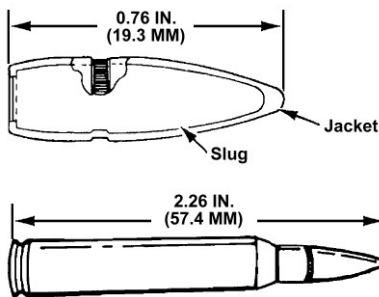
The forensic team from NSW who were tasked to examine this crime scene have I believe for rather obvious reasons deliberately ignored the existence of 308W spent shell casings there on the floor of the Café dining room. I'm reminded of the weighty evidence ignored by the DPP demonstrating Martin Bryant was drinking coffee at Forcett Shell at the time Mr Bugg QC claimed he was murdering David Martin, 61 km away at Seascope!

If you find the forgoing less than convincing, then please consider this account. Around the 12 month anniversary of the massacre, Hobart detective, Peter Hessman gave an interview that I believe substantially adds credibility to my above conclusions. When Hessman entered the Café first, he is quoted as recalling, *"I went around and did a count and there were 20 bodies. I was surprised, but I wasn't shocked."* Continuing, the article tells us he claims he began to secure the crime scene - one lone policeman among the hundreds of visitors, friends and relatives of the victims, paramedics and ambulance personnel and the like, many of whom were milling about some inside the café as much video footage confirms. The article goes on to state Hessman's continuing account: "Then it was copybook detection. He noted the shells and magazines on the café floor were of different calibres, from two military weapons. Hessman feared there were terrorists. He examined the victims, killed by shots to the head and his suspicions grew." - My emphasis ³

Summarising: Peter Hessman since the massacre had received a promotion by April of 1997 to detective constable. Secondly it is clear, that when Hessman first entered the Broad Arrow Café, there was strewn about the floor clear empirical evidence in the form of expended ammunition and magazines, forcing him to conclude firearms of different calibres and magazine types had been discharged resulting in repeated head shots among the 20 deceased persons many shot in the head and so he feared it must have been the work of terrorists; that is, more than one gunman using weapons of different calibres and magazine types. With regard to the AR-10 being one of the firearms used to kill a number of persons in the café I rest my case. But that rifle wasn't any FN FAL.

Now retuning to the 223 Remington calibre; the calibre's effective maximum range, when using SS109 ammunition and consulting figures supplied by the ADF, is clearly limited to around 300 yards. ⁴ This report shows the calibre having a mid range elevation of 5.35" required at just 328 yards at which point remaining energy has almost halved, from 1321 foot-pounds at the muzzle to just 674 foot-pounds at 328 yards. There are several other points in the report which should be noted here:

- a) The "SS109 type ammunition bears little resemblance to the M193 round that is fired from the M16A-1 [rifle]." ⁵



- b) "The M193 round was never designed as a military round. (This conclusion I must dispute, as there is ample evidence to the contrary and it was most definitely not an "off the shelf buy". - author) It was an off the shelf buy [and] was basically a small game cartridge..." ⁶

Some experimental M193 rounds had an integral penetrator and as such these rounds are quite different from Norinco .223 Rem FMJ projectile with its lead-wire core. However there was no penetrator integral in the originally type-classified [M193](#) round.

In the Port Arthur shootings, the forensic firearm examiner defined the ranges at which the victims were either shot and killed or injured as follows:-

1. Contact/close contact; where the muzzle was either touching or within an inch or so of the target.
2. Intermediate; where the muzzle was most probably at least 39½" from the target and firearms discharge residue (FDR) was not evident, and
3. Distant; where no FDR was evident and the range exceeded 1 metre.

After taking into account the above definitions, it is interesting to look at this in relation to people who were killed and others injured with the .223 Norinco FMJ ammunition, especially in the Broad Arrow Café and on Jetty Road. A total of 25 were shot and killed with the Colt AR15; of those 25 shots, 16 were defined as "Distant", 8 were defined as "Intermediate" and just 4 were defined as "Contact/close contact". My point being, the majority of killed and injured people were in reality *very close to the shooter* and so it follows that most projectiles from the .223" calibre firearm were travelling at close to maximum velocity, claimed by Sergeant Dutton to be around "3,070 fps" on average. ⁷

End Notes

¹ Sergt Gerard Dutton, Dr Tim Lyons, Sergt Shaun Roach, Sergt John Dickinson, "A Review of the Wounding Effects of the Colt AR-15 & FN FAL Rifles etc", Wound Ballistics Review Vol3, No4, pp.35-48; the EMA papers Dr David Smart, Dir Dept of Emergency Medicine, RHH, 'RHH Medical management of Port Arthur Victims, p.53.

² Court Transcript, p.160

³ na, Cover Story – "Casualties of War," *The Bulletin*, 29apr97, pp.14-18

⁴ J Grant, Capt. OIC SARP Training Team, Report: *The Right Choice* at pp.52-53.

⁵ *ibid.* p.51.

⁶ *ibid.* pp.51-52.

⁷ Sergt Gerard Dutton, *Wound Ballistic Review*, p.39

Some Background to the AR15, AR10 & Daewoo

Chapter 7

The Colt [AR15 rifle](#) one of three firearms used inside the Broad Arrow Café, buss park and on Jetty Road only, has inherent features that when first manufactured were unique, like for instance an ambidextrous cocking handle, located centrally at the top rear of the action, hence



Colt AR15 SP-A1: with forward assist

right or left handed persons find the actions cocking and cycling the firearm to chamber the first round from the magazine in a word easy. The firearm is also comfortable to carry and shoot. However, like many

firearms of radical design, with its shorter barrel, alloy replacing steel where opportunity allows and "space-age" material, the firearm has its shortcomings. The foregoing is also true when one considers the 7.72 NATO variant, the [AR10 Rifle](#) although it has integral to its design two departures from the Colt's variation.

1. The AR10's cocking device while ambidextrous, it is not located at the top-rear of the action, but is rather contained within the loop of the carry-handle/sight, atop the action.
2. The calibre 7.72 NATO (or 308W), when packaged in this Armalite cannot be classed as a pleasure to fire. Even in the rifle version it has an even increased and unpleasant muzzle blast to that of the .223Rem Colt. The Carbine variant of the Colt I believe can be said to produce an even more objectionable muzzle-blast when fired mainly due to the Carbine's short



Armalite AR10 7.62 NATO Rifle - (late model): Of Dutch manufacture, the variant used at Port Arthur sported drab green synthetic butt-stock, pistol grip and forehand guard.

16" barrel and flash suppressor I suspect.



The objectionable muzzle blast/flash generated when firing an AR15 SP-1 rifle can be appreciated here in daylight. Note the shooter is also wearing hearing protection

After just a few discharges the shooter is subjected to considerable eardrum discomfort, which requires effective mechanical protection to alleviate permanent [hearing](#) damage. The muzzle blast and its effect on the shooter is exaggerated when the weapon is discharged in confined, areas such as inside a building which requires the shooter to wear efficient hearing protection such as *Le Sonic Ear Valves* or slim-line ear-muffs so as the user can avoid in the short term ringing in ears, permanent hearing damage or complete loss of hearing.

Also, and especially with the AR10 when fired (I suspect because of the larger, heavier .308W case), the spent case which is certainly hot enough to burn the skin if handled, is ejected to the right and to the rear, at an angle of around 45 degrees to the horizontal barrel axis, and at about ear height over the ball of the shoulder. While this



F88 Steyr Aug. jointly manufactured in Australia & New Zealand and choice of the ADF

ejection pattern poses no problems to a right-handed shooter, imagine when a left-handed shooter fires the weapon. Later M4 (.223Rem) models had an optional factory fitted cartridge case deflector for left-handed shooters, which fixed under the removable carry-handle rear sight.

Both AR15s and AR10s have a habit of sometimes ejecting a very hot spent case down an open shirtfront of the left-handed shooter and when that does occur, it is at least a very disconcerting experience.

This ejection pattern of self-loading rifles adopted by the military worldwide has always posed a problem. For significant among all nations' military personnel are those of the *southpaw* variety. Hence like the subject firearms of Port Arthur, the "Bull-pup" designs such as the F88 Steyr Aug (above), and Enfield (at right) have this same inherent flaw, the changed position of the action in relation to shooter. This problem was of such a disadvantage, the engineers at Steyr produced an optional *reversed system* so as to overcome what in the Enfield is a grave inherent anomaly. Colt's AR15 variants and the pattern of their ejected cases do pose a not inconsequential problem for the southpaw.



Enfield Mod 18a2, the British Army's carbine

You surely can now understand the dilemma we face in accepting the evidence without question that the DPP put on record as "facts" in this case, with regard to a supposed left-handed Martin Bryant (see Court Document at p.216), and his use of the primary weapon at the Port Arthur Historic site. It would have taken considerable professional instruction and training to make him expert: training far in excess of the few "plinking" session at static targets that the Prosecution was able to establish the accused admitted to have undertaken. No evidence exists to suggest Martin undertook such expert training, and if he did undertake such training, then why didn't the DPP tell the court the identity of the expert who trained him and the setting where that training was carried out?

A further consideration should be made here. At pp. 196-7, of the Court Document, Paine says, *"This is a Daewoo 12 gauge shotgun"* and Bryant acknowledges, *"...yeah I bought that one off umm, Hill...etc"*, then on the next page Bryant informs Det Insp Paine in passing, that he never got around to using it because, *"...it scared me the thought of it not working and probably ricocheting out."* At first glance this statement seems of little significance and vague.

But consider: Bryant volunteers that normally he shot a firearm from his left shoulder. He's a **left-handed shooter**. Bryant also volunteered that Terry Hill had explained with regard to the AR-10 .308W, *'you're using the wrong bullets Martin, you should be using military hard tops'* (i.e. FMJ or Ball ammunition) - (Court Doc p.203). Martin Bryant had taken his AR10 to *Guns and Ammo* because it required repair, as Bryant had experienced malfunctions when he'd used the incorrect ammunition. So here is further evidenced Martin's obvious lack of mechanical aptitude and limited experience regarding the use of firearms, when Martin informs us of a malfunction when firing just, *"...twenty or thirty rounds out of the AR-10."* - (Court Doc. p.205). With regard to the Daewoo and his fear that it would *'ricocheted out'*, he is actually in effect saying that, 'just the thought of the Daewoo not working properly and probably *"ricocheting out"* like the AR-10 did, *"scared"* him.

I would suggest Martin Bryant incorrect terminology of *ricocheting out* could well have been referring to the extremely hot spent cases landing on his chest, and burning him as they

tumbled down his shirt-front on bare flesh, when he shot the AR10 ·308W Carbine, left-handed. This is despite his obvious ignorance, that shotgun shells are constructed mostly of plastic (or cardboard) cases with a small, insulated, brass base, so that the spent shell ejected after firing is **not** objectionably hot to the touch, though I must say that any shooter who has experienced a hot case entrapped between clothing and skin down a shirtfront, will never forget it as a most unpleasant experience.

While dealing with the AR15 and AR 10 firearms, there's another firearm entwined in the case against Martin Bryant, which we must cover, and so it may as well be attended here. Mention is made in various documents of a Daewoo self-loading [shotgun](#); it also is shown in the Police Training Video. The gun was recovered by Police from the boot of the yellow Volvo sedan, which the gunman abandoned near the Port Arthur Tollbooth on Jetty Road. But the Court



The Daewoo 12-Ga 10-shot self-loading shot gun

documents fail to indicate if this Daewoo was subjected to forensic examination so as to prove conclusively that it had been recently discharged or not.

But in a letter to the Garry Fleetwood of the Sporting Shooters Association of Australia Inc., Ray Groom the then Attorney-General of Tasmania, states: "*A 12 gauge [sic] Daewoo self loading shotgun with a detachable box magazine containing nine 12 gauge [sic]*

cartridges. This weapon was recovered from the boot of Bryant's abandoned Volvo Sedan that was left near the Toll Booth when he commandeered the BMW. Bryant did not use this firearm at any stage on the 28th April 1996. I should point out here that Garry Fleetwood was a former Sergt. in the South Australian Police's Star Force, and was at the time this letter was written, Assistant National Executive Director of SSAA Inc., of Kent Town South Australia, but he now has removed to Canberra, and no longer is in that organization's employ.

In the Court Document and at p.141, Mr Bugg tells us that police recovered, "*a semi-automatic Daewoo shotgun with a 15 round magazine fitted to it and ...twelve rounds in the magazine.*" Yet again this cannot be so. For Mr Bugg has just erroneously increased the Daewoo's magazine capacity by 5 rounds! If that's not bad enough, he's yet again blurred the "facts" further by claiming 3 extra shells were in the magazine he has described — two cartridges beyond the maximum capacity of a Daewoo magazine!



USAS-12 (Daewoo) shotgun with drum & clip magazines

Some background is in order here: The Daewoo shotgun also known by various other colloquial names and is more correctly designated the "[USAS-12 shotgun](#)". It was developed in South Korea by Daewoo Precision Industries during the 1980s. Some sources claim its design is based on the experimental AAS, or Atchisson Assault Shotgun, developed in 1970s in the USA by a Maxwell Atchisson. The Daewoo is based on a gas operated action, with the system located above the barrel, and has what can be loosely called a rotating locking bolt. Only the military configured version came as a selective fire weapon for suitably licensed people, but was never available in Australia; the civilian mode is a dedicated self-loading only shotgun similar to "auto shotguns" of the period. The gun was supplied with an option of either a "bent," single stack 10 shot magazine, or a 20 shot capacity drum type magazine. ¹



The Daewoo: in the Volvo's boot, near the Tollbooth.

Note: magazine in battery & spent .223Rem case (R), not mentioned by the DPP.

The Daewoo recovered from the [boot of the Volvo](#) abandoned at the Tollbooth, is shown in the PTV tape with a 10 shot magazine in battery. Although physically exhibiting more bulk, the Daewoo 12 roughly resembles the silhouette of a Colt AR15 or M16. It's overall length is 37¾", and with the 10 shot magazine fully loaded the Daewoo weighs-in at a whopping 13.6lbs and as a result for the average shooter it is quite unwieldy to manage and exhibits poor handling qualities essential in a shotgun, although it does produce a reduced recoil to that normally occurring with a 12 gauge self-loader using 2¾" x 12ga. ammunition.

But when the Daewoo came to the forensic firearm examiner, Sergeant Gerard Dutton even sings a different tune to that of the DPP. For holding-up the Daewoo for the camera, Dutton states that it was, *"found in the boot of his [Bryant's] vehicle with a loaded magazine, [that] holds ten cartridge,"* a position he maintains in the article published in the *APJ* magazine. At page 141 of the Court Transcript, Mr Perks states the Daewoo magazine contained 12 rounds when recovered, which as you can see is physically impossible.

But in a letter to the Garry Fleetwood of the SSAA Inc., Ray Groom the then Attorney-General of Tasmania, stated: *"A 12 gauge Daewoo self loading shotgun with a detachable box magazine containing nine 12 gauge cartridges. This weapon was recovered from the boot of Bryant's abandoned Volvo Sedan that was left near the Toll Booth when he commandeered the BMW. Bryant did not use this firearm at any stage on the 28th April 1996."*²

Confusion was obviously in abundance at the time among the entire Tasmanian establishment...

END NOTES

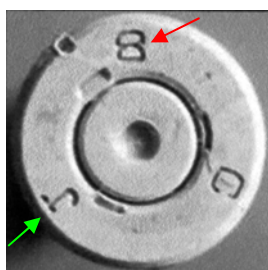
¹ Source <http://world.guns.ru/shotgun/usas>

² Tasmania Police Video, producer, Geoff Easton, Public Affairs & *APJ*, dec98, p.209.

Conclusions re: Norinco .223 FMJ Ammunition

Chapter 8

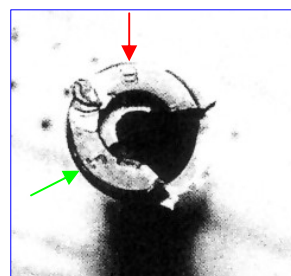
In the *APJ* article and *WBR*, Sergeant Gerard Dutton confirms the Port Arthur shooter used Norinco FMJ type ammunition in a Colt AR15 (see p.224). However, we are left to wonder, *"Was the faulty cartridge Mr Dutton determined responsible for jamming the AR15 recovered from Seascap, an original "faulty" factory round, or was it a 'Hot' hand load?"* We shall settle that dilemma once and for all presently. ¹



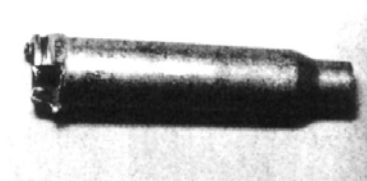
A Norinco case head stamp: identical to that of the blow-up case: "C-J-8"

At this stage I shall introduce you to the ammunition used to "blow-up" the AR15 SP-1 carbine recovered from Seascap. Sergt Gerard Dutton tells us it was from the same 'batch' of ammunition used at the Broad Arrow Café, and Jetty Road. Interestingly though I will demonstrate to you that I can say with confidence this one particular round had been deliberately tampered with. However, I cannot even say with surety if indeed any evidence existed in the ruins of Seascap to suggest that any Norinco .223Rem calibre cases were lying around, as

Sergeant Gerard Dutton states only that *"Thousands of burnt cartridges were located in the ashes ..."*. He was as is evident elsewhere short on detail as to calibres and/or brand names in the Court documents and his *APJ* report. The blown-up case recovered from the chamber of the Colt Carbine at Seascap is mirrored in photographs of an uncanny similar blown-up 22/250 which came across my repair bench and which I shall detail in a later chapter.



"A": the recovered "blown-up" case from the AR15 Carbine recovered at Seascap. Allegedly caused by a 'batch of faulty ammunition'



"B": Recovered from the Seascap Colt; the Norinco 223Rem "blown-up" case, the case marked "A" above right.

Norinco .223Rem FMJ ammunition is simply basic, sporting ammunition, for small, thin-skinned game animals. When fired from a Colt AR15 rifle, Norinco ammunition behaves similarly to other FMJ sporting ammunition, when fired from say a Ruger Mini-14 or similar sporting type rifle with comparable barrel lengths and twist rates, save for its wound characteristics.



Fig IV: the mirrored "blow-up"

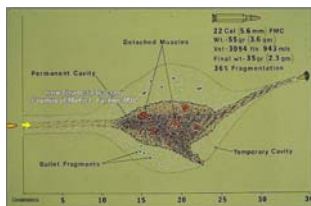
Norinco FMJ cartridges normally produce chamber pressures of lower than 43,500 lbs. pressure (C.U.P). I can also confirm the Norinco importer assured me in a phone conversation that, they *"...have sold millions of rounds of this calibre over the years without complaint"*. Concerning the type of propellant powder, I could only confirm it to be unchanged for many years and still is a single base powder (i.e. nitrocellulose) of Norinco's own manufacture being an extruded, chopped, "disc" type, rather than the "stick" or "ball" type powder, the averaging load being in the vicinity of 25½-grains in weight.

So Norinco .223 Rem FMJ ammunition should produce velocities averaging around 3200fps in a 24" barrel, but certainly no more than 3,150 fps from the 20" barrel of the rifle variant, and probably nearer 3,000 fps average. From the 16" barrel of an AR15 Carbine I doubt Norinco ammunition would have achieved any more than about 2,950 fps and this ammunition would have produced from the Carbine variant between 1,126-1,098 ft/lbs of energy at the muzzle. The rifle on the other hand with its four extra inches of barrel would definitely produce an increase in velocity and so delivered energy.

In relation to a segment of the shootings around table #9, Mr Bugg QC entraps himself just as did the authorities in that infamous assassination of John F. Kennedy with a re-run of the "magic bullet" theory. Commencing his scenario of the segment, Bugg qualifies his statement of facts to the Court at page 85/2 by saying, *"the precise order in which these three men were shot is not clear,"* yet he then boldly launches into an explanation that in my opinion is flawed.

The DPP explains that Walter Bennett (DVI #15), was struck in the neck by a "near contact shot", with the shooter, *"...touching them almost with the barrel of the weapon."* But contrary to Mr Bugg's conclusion, in the *WBR* we learn that Walter Bennett, Raymond Sharpe, and Kevin Shape (DVI's #15, 16 and 18), were all shot at a range of "distant"; i.e. beyond a metre the farthest range determined in the report. Mr Bugg claims that the single projectile which struck a standing Walter Bennett in the neck, passed through and killed him, retained enough mass, energy, and stability, to continue on, to strike a seated Raymond Sharpe in the head and kill him instantly. However the report tells us that projectile that killed Raymond Sharpe, struck him, *"...right of the head at top of ear, travelling forward and [importantly] upwards exiting the forehead region, [and significantly,] no bullet or fragments [were] recovered."*²

When given due consideration you surely can conclude that the explanation by Mr Bugg Q.C. regarding the path of this single bullet is a flawed hypothesis. For yet again he was constrained by his knowledge of the faulty exit gift-shop door and the firm conclusions he and his crime scene examiners had advised claiming the easily destroyed '29 total shots' scenario.



M193 ammunition wound diagram -
by Martin Fackler MD

Here Mr Bugg's synopsis would have us believe that there were two substantial, fatal wounds, without [fragmentation](#) around both wound channels and a divergent bullet path that creates an improbability factor that would be difficult for a forensic pathologist to explain away convincingly. It becomes evident Damien Bugg QC's position had to be maintained so as he could hold to his contrived sequence of events in the Broad Arrow Café, of the flawed 29 shots killing 20 and wounding 12 others and this all achieved in "approximately one and a half minutes to, at the outside, two minutes."³

I must reiterate that I do agree entirely with the assessment of author Andrew MacGregor, when he writes, that this misleading concoction is nothing more than, "a complete and utter fabrication."

When one considers carefully the *WBR* at pp37-39, the Dutton and his co-authors make it very clear that of the 25 victims shot and killed at various but relatively close ranges with the .224" 55-grain FMJ Norinco bullets, in 19 hits on 15 people, no bullet fragments were recovered even although in many of these instances fragmentation was evident. In other words, fragments were spread all over the crime scene - the NSW ballistic team simply failed to recover them. Even Dutton states, *"...I was a little surprised to find that perhaps a dozen fired cartridge cases had been 'souvenired' by members of the public,"* and he counted 30 shots, not 29. In 12 other victims in all, except in one instance, the projectiles had totally lost original form and dissected in a majority of instances at the weakest point, near the knurled cannellure, just as I have noted they would earlier in this narrative.⁴

End Notes

¹ Sergt Gerard Dutton, "Ballistic Evidence," *APJ*, p.224.

² Sgts G Dutton, S Roach, J. Dickinson & Dr Tim Lyons, *WBR Vol3, No4*, p.38

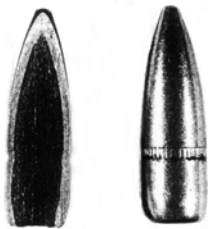
³ *ibid. WBR*, p.38; Court Document, p86/1-4

⁴ Court Document @ p.117

Projectile Construction

Chapter 9

Perhaps it is pertinent here to explain briefly one of many construction techniques of FMJ projectiles, so that the reader can understand why projectiles with inherently different physical characteristics react in dissimilar ways, producing unique outcomes resulting from their particular method of construction and material used. You can then make up your own mind as to that which is written in the Court Documents concerning fragmentation and shrapnel induced soft tissue trauma. However one small point should perhaps be made here. In a small number of cases, when FMJ projectiles of strong construction are fired at high velocity from intermediate to contact ranges to pass through soft body tissue without striking bone for instance, then to some extent the entry area of the wound-channel can be *cauterised*: i.e. blood vessels or veins ruptured by the bullet sometimes do not haemorrhage. Hence on occasions surprisingly little bleeding occurs.



**Norinco
.224" x 55gr S-BT
FMJ bullet**

We will deal primarily now with the two calibres and projectiles that caused death and injury in the Port Arthur shootings, a.) The .224"x55-grain FMJ semi-boattail Norinco bullet as fired from an AR15 Carbine, and b.) The .308"x144-grain BT FMJ (ball) bullet fired from an FN FAL self-loading .308W rifle.



**ADI .308" x 144gr
BT-FMJ bullet**

The manufacture of projectiles since the 1940's has been developed into a very exacting science with many bullet manufactures producing well in excess of a 100 different types in their range of light calibres, and all designed to excel in a specific application. The manufacturing process of rifle projectiles while basically similar for all is at the same time unique to almost each type, and so I will take the liberty of generalising on production techniques here.

The Norinco .224"x 55gr FMJ projectile begins the formation process from a metal disc, stamped from out of a roll of sheet alloy material which for the purpose of this essay I shall call "copper," just as Gerard Dutton does. The stamped-out disc is then subjected to various stages of forming called "cupping" and as it progresses through the process it eventually is cupped into an elongated tube or envelope, in this case averaging about .022" wall thickness and .225-.226" OD, into which a short length of lead alloy wire is injected. In both projectiles we are dealing with, the wire is injected from the bullet's base towards the nose, while it still is not unlike the blunt bottom of a straight-walled cup or mug.

The cup with the extruded lead-wire inside is then subjected to several stages of forming which squeezes the blunt end into a curved tapered nose. The curve characteristic is termed the bullet's "ogive". At a point approximately one third of the total overall length from the projectile's base, it is knurled around its circumference, and this formation is termed a "cannelure" which fulfils several important roles.

When projectiles are pressed into the neck of the primed case during the loading operation, it is into this cannelure that in factory rounds the neck of the case is crimped, thus aiding in retaining the projectile in the case to produce a consistent overall loaded cartridge length, and so provide a clearance called "freebore", to the lands in the rifle's "throat", when the live round

is loaded into the chamber. This constant freebore ensures consistent accuracy and (importantly) lower initial chamber pressures. A secondary and equally important role for the cannelure is that of preventing the projectile from "backing-up" into the case as a result of recoil while retained in the magazine, especially when fired in self-loading firearms.

Unlike some other brands, the Norinco FMJ projectile's cannelure, is the sole means by which the lead core is *locked-into the jacket*. This type of cannelure in thin jackets also produces a weak point in the projectile's envelope, as proven I believe by the *Wound Ballistic Review* article. Then as a final phase in production, the bullet passes through several swaging dies, the lead-wire is trimmed to length and the projectile final swaging to a consistent diameter of .224".

Now the manufacturing technique for the 144gr FMJ .308" projectile doesn't vary significantly from the above, but there are three important disparities: the cannelure in this instance is of a progressive taper to a 90 degree forward shoulder, and is "knurled" with a plain, shaped, wheel into the envelope as such. Also the bullet is of a true "boat-tailed" design. With its very efficient ogive and full boat tail, it has a much superior ballistic coefficient retaining velocity and accuracy at long ranges. But importantly, the projectile's skirt at the base of the copper jacket-cup is returned under. The ballistic coefficient by the way, is the ratio of the sectional density of a bullet to its coefficient form, and so represents the projectiles *ability* to overcome air resistance in flight.

Also, the jacket wall made from tougher alloy, and is significantly thicker at around .033". The tougher, thicker material ensures that when this bullet strikes a dense, hard target or soft body tissue, it will preserve almost intact the original shape and total mass, relying on kinetic energy alone to produce significant wound channel trauma; it is not engineered to shed fragments. When comparing delivered energy of the .308W cartridge with its ADI 144gr FMJ projectile travelling at 2700fps, with that of the Norinco 223Rem with its .224"x 55gr FMJ projectile travelling at say 3200fps, the former generates around 2250ft/lbs of energy at the muzzle while the latter produces 1280ft/lbs or just 56.8 percent to that of the .308W round; the deficiency in the .224" calibre bullet worsens rapidly as the range increases.

However, regarding the Norinco bullet, outcomes are entirely variable. Upon striking hard material (also bone) and soft body tissue, the nose of the projectile in the Norinco rapidly deforms and compresses, hence as compression of the jacket and extruded lead-wire core progresses, the lead core is extruded past the cannelure and immediately begins to back-out of the open base. Before the nose has deformed back to the cannelure and because of its light gauge, the jacket begins to fracture at the cannelure and so begin to shed jacket fragments immediately.

Within the disintegration process timeframe, the lead-wire extruding from the base of the bullet sheds mass as lead fragments. These lead fragments if produced from a bullet striking say a concrete floor can produce in some cases wounds not unlike shotgun pellets, although the entry wound inevitably are never round. One must also keep in mind that while this process is occurring and completed in milliseconds, the whole mass is spinning at extremely high revolutions.

After considering the foregoing, I hope the reader can now understand why there was so much "shrapnel" present as "fragments" said to have caused many of the superficial wounds to survivors, some, although not life threatening, nevertheless the wounds caused much blood loss and were deemed by RHH staff as "NT Category #4", and still quite serious.¹ The majority of those evidencing these superficial wounds received them in and around the environs of the Broad Arrow Café. It then begs the question: *"Who or what prevented the NSW forensic crime scene examiners from executing a vigorous examination of the Broad Arrow Café so as to ensure they retrieved a significant mass of fragments and bullet remnants as a*

result of the multitude of bullet damage that was clearly evident, in furniture, fixtures, walls and especially from under the floor coverings?" This relatively confined area within the café and gift shop should have in effect, acted like a "bullet trap". The Tasmania Police training video provides proof-positive of this significant bullet damage.

Conversely, and following exactly my above scenario, while seven persons were shot with the NF FAL 308W understandably, there was just one bullet fragment attributed to having been shed from just a single 144gr .308" bullet recovered by police.²



The lower of
2x7.62mm bullet
exit holes to the
panel on RH side of
the white Corolla
sedan at Port
Arthur Store



The uppermost of two
7.62mm exit bullet damage
on white Corolla

That fragment was found in the body of Zoe Anne Hall, the woman shot and killed in the white [Corolla](#), at the entrance to the Port Arthur General Store. Two 308 calibre exit bullet holes were evident on the white Corolla, both on the right hand side: one exited central in the RH side rear panel, well below sill-height, while the other exited the [pillar](#) just to the rear the driver's side window frame. So regarding the Norinco projectiles; of the 45 or more shots fired inside the Broad Arrow Café alone, it can be said fragments must have been spread all over the immediate area and beyond and even the other two crime scenes where they were expended. Likewise here no bullet material was collected that would surrender any substantial or conclusive forensic evidence. So I contend that the ammunition choice of Norinco was not the coincidental purchase of an intellectually impaired Martin Bryant as Crown Prosecutor Damien Bugg QC and others would have us believe. Along with the entirely professional selective execution of people inside the Café the ammunition was chosen after consideration and firsthand knowledge by professional killers.

Interestingly, in articles published in the rash of articles that have appeared in newspapers and magazines beginning around 29 March 2006, one sensational writer even made the outrageous claim that when the gunman exited the front door of the Broad Arrow Café he "began firing at those now fleeing, with bullets designed to piece steel." ³

End Notes

¹ David Smart, "RHH Emergency & Medical Management of Port Arthur Victims, *EMA Papers*, p.53

² Gerard Dutton, "Ballistic Evidence," *APJ*, at p.216

³ Robert Wainwright, "Remembering Port Arthur", SMH magazine, *goodweekend*, 1apr06, p.24

The Faulty Cartridge Theory

Chapter 10

The Colt AR15 Carbine 223Rem, S/No SP128807 "was found in ashes at the periphery of the guesthouse foundations; luckily it had not been exposed to the extreme heat in the centre of the fire...", nevertheless it was "extensively damaged" (see APJ at p.216).

There is but **one** reason to explain why the alleged two primary firearms were damaged. The other firearms are really incidental: those described as a "cache" of firearms discovered by police in the burnt-out ruins. These firearms were nothing more than props or padding, for effect. The "cache" of firearms was there to emphasise a perverted public perception of '*more guns*' in any situation, equates automatically to "*MUCH more danger*". To such simpletons inanimate objects have abilities beyond our imaginations.

No it was just that the alleged *primary firearms* had to be damaged. Ask yourself, "How could it possibly have advantaged the gunman to damage the firearms allegedly the weapons used in 34 of his murders? Discard and conceal, but just damage them? After all, surely there was heaps of collectable empirical evidence remaining at the seven crimes scenes? Anyway most people believed (wrongly as it turns out) there were hundreds of eyewitnesses who could positively ID the gunman as Martin Bryant, propagandas that ranks in this case as a major con.



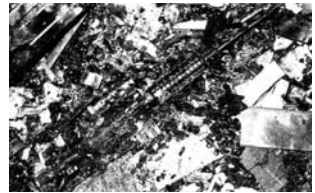
Sgt Gerard Dutton displays
the carefully damaged Colt
AR15 SP-1

What if the two primary firearms, were not the same weapons used, at any of the crime scenes? After all one primary firearm auditioned and cast to play its part - was "unwell"- laid up in the repair rack at Terry Hill's Guns and Ammo shop. Would it not then be imperative for the schemers and operatives to destroy the forensic and ballistic integrity of all "throw-down" evidence? Otherwise the deception would be easily exposed - especially if the accused were to have had a trial by jury. For the very same reasons the SOG Sergeant had to burn the BMW and torch the Cottage so why not the same criminal minds compelled to carefully destroy the ballistic and forensic integrity of the firearms - carefully - and ensure they were left behind; not totally destroyed you understand.

But Sgt Dutton [showed](#) them off for the media. But when one examines the police firearm forensic examiner's photograph of the Colt AR15 Carbine, lying there among the [ashes](#) of Seascope as was published in the December 1998 *APJ* at p.218, several important details are revealed:

- Combusted material protrudes from beneath the firearm.
- The firearm has a *straight*, 20 shot capacity magazine in battery.

- The magazine floor-plate appears to be blown-out to one side and
- Surprisingly, the very inflammable Uncle Mike's nylon sling with its equally flammable padding is only *partially* combusted.



The deliberately blown-up Colt carefully subjected to fire: forensically & ballistically sterile

Sgt Gerard Dutton was the Tasmania Police's Forensic Firearm Examiner, and when he examined the Colt AR15 Carbine after retrieval, his report in the APJ explains the firearm exhibited the hallmarks, symptomatic of an abnormal, uncontrolled, chemical reaction contained within the cartridge case, which remained there in the breach; it was blown-up.

But, Sgt Gerard Dutton concludes, *"What an interesting end result to the examination of the Colt rifle! As a faulty cartridge was responsible for jamming the AR15 and preventing further discharge."* I shall demonstrate how Sergeant Dutton's "interesting end result," and conclusions as to a "faulty cartridge" caused the blow-up are in reality quite flawed, and I will do so, in spite of today's Police Commissioner Richard McCreadie, who when obviously referring to Mr Dutton, recently enthusiastically proclaimed, *"We have the best ballistics expert in the nation - there's no doubt about it."*¹



Sgt Gerard Dutton, OIC Tasmania Police Ballistic Section since early 1995, '...the best ballistic expert in the nation...'

I would have to concede though that Sgt Gerard [Dutton](#) has certainly been recognised for services rendered being reported as *"...the first Australian police officer to be accorded the Distinguished Member Award from the Association of Firearm and Tool Mark Examiners in the USA."* In the Journal of the International Wound Ballistic Association of America, there was also published an article prepared by him and three co-authors. But what was the irresistible lure that caused Mr Dutton in 1995 to up-stakes, leave the temperate climate and the highest paid police force in the nation of Sydney, New South Wales? , transferring to Hobart at the southern extremities of Australia, with its snowy-peaked Mt Wellington as a winter backdrop, and there to take-up a position with lowest paid police force in the nation -Tasmania Police?

Dutton had previously firmly established his credentials in the NSW Police Service's Forensic Ballistic Section, because of his success with two important cases; the Victor Chang murder, and later with Snr Const Andrew Grosse as part of *Task Force Air* and after a lengthy investigation in presenting forensic evidence, critical to the successful prosecution of Ivan Robert Marko MILAT for the 'Back-Packer murders' in the Belanglo State Forest in the southern highlands of NSW. As for the reason given by Dutton for his move to Australia's southern most island state he explains, *"I was drawn to Tasmania for the lifestyle and cheaper housing."*

However, some time after the Port Arthur Dutton massacre, he took part in a Group Study Exchange to the South East of Florida (USA), and the Bahamas with Rotary International to "sow the seeds of love," as a guest speaker, and of course there he received his Distinguished Member Award. But regarding his overseas trips, just how and when, were monies appropriated, leave granted and permission given to facilitate his speaking on these matters of criminal justice? I'm afraid I cannot tell you who signed-off on it all.²

"Are there factors we are not informed of, which may have influenced the advice 'graciously' supplied that made that advice provided by Colt less than objective?"

I'm sure you find it curious to say the least, that by world standards, an insignificant jurisdiction of Tasmania Police, should produce a rather low-ranking police sergeant who after delivering an address to the assembly, is accorded such a rare, impressive, international award from such a prestigious American organization as the *Association of Firearm and Tool Mark Examiners of the USA*. You see I'm not overstating this point; don't forget it was that very weekend in April 1996 that saw - coincidentally of course - a reported 700 delegates from 17 countries assembled in Hobart for the Pacific Area Newspaper Publishers Association conference (for more on the over zealous media see Chapter 3).³ [Bolt+round](#)



A live 223 Rem round beside the rotary bolt from a Colt AR15, less extractor

But my curiosity is equally aroused by the fact that the more or less a "brother" organization to the above prestigious group - **The International Wound Ballistic Association** - was wound-up shortly after producing their publication, Volume 3, No. 4, which featured the Port Arthur Shooting article prepared by Sergeant Gerard Dutton. Perhaps Port Arthur alone can produce *infinitum* significant, coincidental, happenings such as:

- The 700 PANPA media people in Hobart for the weekend,
- The Airport disaster rehearsal completed just the previous weekend,
- 25 specialists among the 42 doctors from across Australia who'd barely concluded a review of the 'code brown disaster plan' before the first shots rang-out, and
- The 22 body mortuary ambulance - *the only one of its kind in Australia*,
- A reported 463 trauma counsellors on-tap who spoke to 1000 survivors and family,
- Aust. Army Engineers on tap to construct temporary seating at St Davids,
- Military helicopters and crews who flew all night of the 28th - to name but a few.

I have neither the space nor the resources to pursue this particular line of inquiry in this small publication, but I have at least established to my satisfaction back in February of 2004, that a James F Taylor was indeed in 1996 employed as an engineer by the Colt Manufacturing Co. Inc, Hartford, Connecticut. Unfortunately, I have been unable to make contact with him as he no longer is in Colt's employ, although I would very much have liked to put a number of important questions to him in an attempt to expose his conclusions to some public scrutiny, regarding comments he purportedly made regarding the blow-up of the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine.

Equally it can be said, Gerard Dutton asked questions of Colt, that simply upon close examination and by applied physics, he and his colleagues should have been able to answer better on the spot and from out of his own department's resources. So let us now examine the Colt carbine and determine how it came to be "extensively damaged."

As we mentioned earlier, police recovered the Colt AR15 in the periphery "ashes" of the Seascope Cottage fire. Here it had been placed with considerable care. This is the cottage incidentally, from out of which 14 hrs of random shooting at Police had occurred from more than one gunman. Curiously, the DPP Mr Bugg, QC, would have us believe that after the Colt AR15 *blew-up*, causing Martin Bryant to fly into a rage and destroy the FN FAL, and then along with blown-up Colt Carbine, remove them both from inside of the cottage carefully placing the Colt under the cottage at its periphery and with equal care but considerably more physical effort, allegedly placed the FN FAL in the gutter of an out building well away from the main cottage.

Apart from this scenario making little sense, importantly a cooperative Martin Bryant never did corroborate Bugg's synopsis. On the contrary during police interrogation as well as in the record of conversation with police negotiator Sgt Terry McCarthy, Martin Bryant destroys Mr Bugg's summary of this segment entirely! In describing the demeanour of the gunman as being consumed by "rage" leading directly to his actions that saw the FN FAL physically destroyed, is entirely at odds with all of the sworn statements of the eye witness accounts of the gunman throughout the entire incident, not to mention the negotiator tapes. Remember it is the DPP's

contention that Bryant wrecked, but then placed the FN FAL ever so carefully from outside of the building, as opposed to it being discarded in one of the rooms, among other weapons later recovered from inside the building, or having been thrown from a window or door-way, as "Jamie" a.k.a. Martin, agreed was *a good idea* and indicated he would do.⁴

So first let's look at what was recorded by Police at Seascope, regarding the destruction of the firearms, and we lead into this plan, when Jamie tells McCarthy, *"...I'm gonna actually have it [the knife] next to the pilot's ribs."* Then McCarthy, finding the conversation becoming quite bizarre asks, *"Can I take it that you won't have any firearms with you then?"* To which Jamie replies matter-of-factly, *"That's correct...they'll all be destroyed."*

To which McCarthy in a tone of disbelief questions, *"You're gonna destroy the firearms?"* Not much negotiating going on here, I might add. Rather the intended action or "outcome" is emanating from inside Seascope. Jamie the alleged intellectually impaired young man seems way ahead of Sergeant Terry McCarthy here! Or is it simply the "strategy" earlier conveyed by the former SOG 'controller' to Jamie?

"Yes break them up," chimes in Jamie. But here the bizarre becomes the ridiculous. For McCarthy leads Jamie by saying, *"Okay. What are you going to do with them after you destroy them. You going to throw them outside so that we know they're all outside before you go to the aircraft or..."*

J: I can do that. Yeah. Would you like me to do that?

Mc: Well that yeah it'd probably so that we know exactly where they are um (p.53)

J: Good good good good

Mc: yeah that would be a good thing to do.

J: Good Idea.

(Note: the entire proposition to "destroy the firearms" is in *the future tense*, so the motivation - 'rage' is a *furphy*.)

Question here: "How did Police intend to determine ALL the firearms had been thrown outside?" Are they psychic? No, but the controller had a strategy even although it is a little transparent.

Also, at this point in time, Jamie (the lone gunman), had obviously not experienced any horrific blow-up with the Colt AR15. Again no rage at this point, so why later on? Continuing, we find that shortly at p.54, Jamie tells Sergeant Terry McCarthy, *"I'll toss them [firearms] out the window on the right hand side...of the Seascope yeah house,"* and further he pinpoints this window to be on the ground floor *"right hand window"*. But that is not what occurred... Shortly thereafter the phone goes dead after an interception by a person identified in the transcript as "Inspector Gray" — so much for Police assurances of the Telecom land-line being a 'dedicated or isolated land-line'... or was it the appointed stage for contact to cease?

So what can we make of all of this. Well in the transcript of their conversation Jamie volunteers that at that point of proceedings the time was, **"just after nine"** or 2100hrs when Jamie has told police the firearms are yet to be destroyed. But hang on! According to the expert findings of Sergeant Gerard Dutton, the Colt AR15 - at least - blew-up "accidentally"! Can you see the contradictions here?

Also why would a Police officer encourage a yet to be positively identified, supposed gunman and murderer called "Jamie", to destroy vital evidence? Especially when we are told by the Court Documents, "Jamie" a.k.a. Martin Bryant was the only shooter and firearms are after all inanimate pieces of wood, (or plastic) and steel. If Jamie was to exit the premises with a hostage and leave the firearms behind inside Seascope, how would they pose any danger whatsoever to anyone including police? If abandoned, the firearms would definitely be of no danger at all to anyone! Remember, as it turned out, the knife Jamie said he had, was at this

time lying quietly in the blue "Prince" sports bag the gunman had abandoned on the table in the Broad Arrow Café another anomaly it would appear, but let us not be distracted at this point.

Let us now consider what I believe is the reality of what has occurred here. You must realise that throughout this complicated psychopolitical exercise, the conspirators have made a considerable number of colossal stuff-ups! For starters, we now can say with a degree of confidence at least 4 and possibly 6 *agent provocateurs* were shot dead there that day. Regarding the firearms, one of two firearms "cast" in the primary role as throw-down look-alike (never actually to be used in the shootings) was absent without leave - sitting quietly in the 'for-repair-rack' of Terry Hill's Guns and Ammo shop.

While Martin Bryant willingly admitted owning a 223 Remington Colt AR15 Carbine, alleging he'd obtained it from Guns and Ammo, he was according to the Hobart gunsmith Stuart Wood allegedly still trying to obtain this model carbine on Tuesday 24 April, four days before the massacre and the same day he had taken the Armalite AR-10, 7.62 NATO rifle into Terry Hill leaving it for repair. Obviously Martin was really in a bind and because of his impaired intellectual capacity, he was unable to resolve the situation; one of the three firearms he'd been meant to contribute, cast to play the roles of *primary throw-down firearms* on 28-29 April at Seascope was "unavoidably detained" at Terry Hill's gunshop!

This was yet another major gaffe. Hence, while the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine brought to the Peninsula that Sunday could be easily blown-up with the specially prepared hot round at the appointed hour (possibly by the controller Rick or Mick), there had to be some fancy footwork to physically destroy the "stand-in" .308" cal firearm later carefully placed the porch gutter of an outbuilding for its 'curtain call' and appointment with the forensic firearm examiner's work bench. You must understand this must have been a close call as the "G" Series FN FAL rifle was the sole firearm detailed to match the calibre used in the shootings! So this unique model self loading rifle was indeed the 'stand-in' that played-out the *correct calibre role* of the Armalite AR10 7.62 NATO rifle, the actual weapon I firmly believe was used to wound Graeme Collyer in the Broad Arrow Café, some of the subsequent shootings in: the bus park, the 4 murders at the Port Arthur Tollbooth, the murder of Zoe Hall outside the General Store and the woundings sustained among the 14 people targeted during the ambush on the Arthur Highway outside Seascope. If the Seascope controller had not smashed-up the FN FAL rifle there would have been no .308" cal rifle to recover from Seascope.

Perhaps this goes some way to explaining the content and unnamed source of accounts published at the time in *Who weekly*, 'not distributed, on legal advice' in Tasmania, in which the author Kate Halfpenny claimed, the gunman 'removed from a Prince tennis-racquet bag' an 'Ar-15 rifle and an SKS-46' and commenced his shooting in the Broad Arrow Café.⁵



Port Arthur Tollbooth in April of 1996, looking WSW

Now let us direct our attention toward the geography of the [Tollbooth](#) site which also must be taken into account, as when Peter Hessman arrived there from the Café, the site was in heavy shadow from the dense, tall, eucalypts that surrounded the site. Here darkness occurred closer to sunset than had it been on open ground thus depriving Detective Hessman of a more thorough, extended search. The passport photograph was identified as that of the gunman by Aileen Kingston, the Toll Booth attendant who'd locked herself in for an extended period that afternoon, a position she confirmed in her amended or second sworn statement made on 17 June, importantly, sworn out 51 days after the incident. To put it another way, just as Ian Kingston (no relation) like so many other eye witnesses, was asked to revisit their recollections of the gunman. In his case, it occurred after being subjected to about 50 days of newspaper and television photographic propaganda such as "the gunman", "this is the man" etc, which undeniably must have influenced all such statements. However I must emphasise, that in the

gathering dusk of the evening of 28 April, the most fortunate recovery of Martin Bryant's passport only indicated a strong *possibility* that Martin Bryant was somehow connected, nothing more.

But approximately 1hr and 45 minutes later and at around 1900hrs (7.00p.m.), Michael Cordwell an uncle of Martin Bryant's, called Police Headquarters and inquired if indeed his nephew was involved in the Seascapes siege. An Inspector informed Mr. Cordwell only that, "...the person involved was known by the Christian name of Martin". Around 2000 hrs (8.00 pm) Mrs. Carlene Bryant accompanied two Police Officers to Police HQ, but curiously, Mrs. Bryant was not then asked to corroborate Michael Cordwell's earlier assessment of the tape-recorded voice of "Jamie" as to being one and the same as Martin Bryant her son. While this attendance by Carleen Bryant accompanied by Petra Wilmott, would have been the first opportunity for police to obtain a photograph of the suspect, surprising at about 2030 hrs (8.30 pm), just 30 minutes later, senior police officers were somehow able to circulate a photograph of the suspect among the SOG officers there!

Instead she is asked *detailed questions* concerning his overseas trips and particulars about Martin's home at New Town. How at this early stage of their inquiries did police know of Martin Bryant's frequent overseas trips? Indeed, how did police evaluate this knowledge as being of such an urgent priority over and above establishing the positive identity of the alleged lone gunman "Jamie" being one and the same person as that of Martin Bryant? It makes no sense.

Of course my question becomes irrelevant if Police had already alerted their negotiator Terry McCarthy of the presence of another and therefore second unidentified gunman (the covert controller) secreted away inside the cottage. **Tasmania Police must have known another gunman was present inside Seascapes; Jamie used the name "Rick".** This would go some way to explain the police pretence of an urgent interest in Clare Street, and Martin's frequent overseas trips, because I also have learned that the Tasmanian SOG's had been recently earlier training for an expected "terrorist attack" that was supposed to occur 86km northwest from Port Arthur at Richmond.

Although this information came from an impeccable source, I would have been less than receptive to it, had not the *agent provocateur* Blair Frances Saville, in Risdon Prison - who **right out of the blue** - asked the accused, Martin Bryant:

"Did you think of shooting up Richmond?" ⁶

So there we have an agent acting for Tasmania Police admitting to having foreknowledge of an impending terrorist attack in Southern Tasmania. The other question that then can be asked is this; *"Did the police information come from the same source as the earlier forecast impending shooting massacre that emanated twice, from the lips of NCGC's spokesperson Roland Browne?"*

Further to this part of the siege, the DPP would have us believe that as a result of Jamie's *"Good idea"*, triggered by the Police's chief negotiator Terry McCarthy, that just two firearms (and the two of them allegedly were used to murder at that stage, at least 33 persons and so were crucial evidence in the Crown's case), from among a "considerable number of firearms" also recovered and "badly effected by heat" from the ashes of Seascapes, one was claimed by police and the DPP to have been "blown-up" accidentally and yet the other one destroyed in rage? But why did none of the other firearms receive similar treatment? This fact is in itself quite illogical and inexplicable.

As I explained much earlier, the DPP tells us the FN FAL was **destroyed in a rage**, but if we are to believe Jamie, **then it was destroyed in good faith**. I could forgive the reader if about now you have become confused, but you are not confused are you? In reality some of the establishment officials whose names appear in the various reports and court documents are

those who have attempted to confuse us! It becomes obvious to anyone studying this segment, that what we are being shown here is a complicated EXERCISE vital facts of which some of the powers-that-be want to conceal. Therefore is it any wonder that in his interview on Channel 9's ACA, the principal Police Negotiator Terry McCarthy was caused to conclude, that his "bizarre" conversations with Martin Bryant in an imaginary world of "Jamie" seemed to him a strange young man simply "*acting out a role.*"



Evidence: the 'throw-downs', a Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine & "G" Series FN-FAL on Sgt Dutton's bench.

After all of this, the only [two firearms](#) that were destroyed were also never thrown from any ground floor or upstairs window either. Even stranger is the fact that at no time did police and certainly Detectives Paine and Warren bother to ask Martin as to what exactly occurred regarding the massive, alleged "accidental blow-up" of the Colt and the alleged enraged destruction of the FN FAL! Not one question! Police even failed to ask how Martin was able to place both of these firearms outside, unobserved! You surely must agree these anomalies are more than *exceedingly curious*, they expose the extent of the conspiracy that pervaded the entire exercise I believe.

1. No other firearm among the cache recovered from the ruins was said to exhibit any evidence of physical destruction.
2. No other .308" calibre firearm was noted as having been among that cache of firearms either.
3. If "Jamie" a.k.a. Martin Bryant had been holding the Colt AR15 at the time it exploded, I can confidently attest from my first hand experiences of such events, Martin would have suffered at least, considerable hearing damage, to such an extent, that for many days hence he would not have easily partaken in *any* conversation with police, ambulance officers, doctors, lawyers and his girlfriend Petra Wilmott, without his condition being obvious to some or all the parties present and so this would have been noted by someone. Such a painful condition was never mentioned in any document whatsoever.
4. Of the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, "The pistol grip was missing" and Mr. Dutton tells us the retaining screw was "still attached". I'm caused to ask; "Was the retaining screw still *in place*?" There is a subtle but important difference. In other words, to determine the truth here close examination of the screw's position, of thread to action, and tension evidenced on the thread would tell an important story. Yet again the facts are ignored or unrecorded.
5. The grip itself retains the safety plunger, spring and safety select lever. While the grip was missing, "the safety plunger was still intact" - see *APJ* at pp. 221-222. This confirms the AR15 was placed *very* carefully and not discarded in a rage either.
6. "The magazine fitted to the rifle was empty and all the internal components - the follower, spring and floor plate - were missing" (see *APJ* at p.221). The Carbine's magazine housing was quite distorted, and these parts were never recovered. Now the photograph (*APJ* p.218) taken when the wrecked Colt AR15 was "first uncovered in the ashes," with a straight 20 shot magazine in battery, and not its original 30 shot



The deliberately 'blown-up' carefully placed & carefully burnt "throw-down" Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine

magazine. Interestingly, the DPP used both a 20 and 30 shot magazine (see Court Doc. p.76/19) in a very unconvincing way to calculate their version of the Café shot sequence. Regarding the Colt magazine found in the Volvo, we're not told what capacity that magazine was, but simply that it "contained 12 rounds". But what logic can the court use to argue that such a professional gunman would revert to a smaller capacity magazine, as the incident unfolded toward the Seascape siege?

7. The AR15's breach bolt was "seized" just back from the fully locked position with a fired "cartridge case in the breech." - (see *APJ* at p.221)
8. Upon freeing the breech bolt assembly enough so as to move it to the rear, the fired case was able to be removed, but was further damaged with, "...the extractor tearing a large chunk of brass from the head and side of the cartridge case still in the chamber."

This I contend to be incorrect: The gaping hole in the area of the rim of the case occurred at the moment the case exploded; the brass being eroded by the jet of super heated and expanding gas under extreme pressure.



Fig iii: The 'blown-up' Norinco 223Rem case Mr Dutton adjudged resulted from a "batch" of faulty ammo

9. Gerard Dutton notes clearly he'd, "never seen a cartridge case that had been subjected to so much internal pressure... [such] amazingly high chamber pressure...(it looked like a belted cartridge case)," he quipped. (see *APJ* at p.222).



The "mimic" 22/250 blow-up Fig_ii_blowup

What a pity Gerard hadn't seen my work bench from time to time. So what does all this mean? Well try as he might Sgt Gerard Dutton, influenced by *assistance* and *conclusions* from Colt's Mr Taylor, is less than convincing in his explanations and conclusions reached regarding the cause of the blow-up and destruction of the two primary firearms as published in the various documents and as reiterated in the Court documents.

While the mechanical condition of the AR15 Carbine when recovered cannot be said to be common (apart from it being subjected to fire), I can state such a condition is not uncommon.

The cartridge in the Colt AR15 could not have been discharged unless the round was chambered and the bolt fully locked in battery. Just as Taylor answers Dutton's query to the contrary proposition; Taylor says, "the answer is no," so clearly he's saying the Colt could not have been fired with a partially open bolt. - (see *APJ* at p.223)

Taylor is quite correct in his answer here, "the bolt had to be locked," or in battery, "at the time of ignition" (see *APJ* at A2. p.223). The cartridge was discharged by the normal method of the trigger being depressed. It did not "cook-off" either, as this would have left the chamber empty, and hammer "cocked".

But! Why does he choose not to inform us of the hammer's registration, at the time the AR15 Carbine was recovered from the periphery of the guesthouse foundations? (see *APJ* at p.216) Was the hammer cocked or in the fired attitude? This important question remains unanswered, and had it been addressed by the ballistic firearm examiner we would have been able to establish with more certainty as to the "cause" of the blow-up. So why was this important question overlooked?

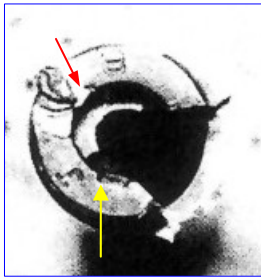


Fig iii Comparison:
Two of 3 head stamp
figures - J & 8 - are
visible on the "blow-up"
Norinco case (even the
crimp signature is
identical!) recovered by
Sgt Gerard Dutton.

Obviously Sgt Gerard Dutton failed to note the hammer's attitude when the firearm was recovered. This was I believe an obviously grave error. Colt's Mr. Taylor does not make any comment on this important anomaly. Why? As we shall learn shortly, a "cook-off" theory would present Dutton with yet another dilemma.

[Fig iii Norco223 head](#) [Norinco head-stamp](#)

In a normal firing sequence, when the hammer strikes the firing pin, the pin compresses the primer cup, and by compressing an impact sensitive chemical impregnated disk against an integral anvil, primary ignition occurs. An extremely hot, fast burning gaseous flame, shoots into the propellant powder by way of the flash-hole/s, the propellant powder charge ignites and burns progressively. As the nitrocellulose "powder" combusts, the chemical reaction rapidly

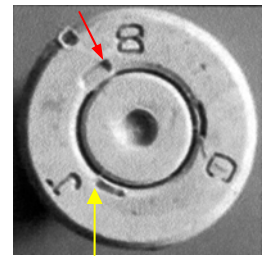
produces an enormous volume of oxygen which enhances the combustion process that in turn produces rapidly expanding super-heated gases which reach a peak chamber pressure in a span of just 2 milliseconds. This chemical reaction launches the projectile which in a matter of from a few inches accelerates rapidly reaching its maximum velocity in approximately 28" of forward travel, expressed as feet per second (fps).

Sergeant Dutton's (see above @ 7.) statement of, "the extractor was damaged with the claw bent outwards to a point where it could not support the case head..." This statement locks him into a contradiction (see *APJ* at p.222).

In the very next sentence he explains that when the bolt was freed so as to retrieve the, "faulty cartridge" (see *APJ* at p.225), it resulted in, "the extractor literally tearing a large chunk of brass from the case head and side of the cartridge case still in the chamber." Now think about it: that is impossible.

In his explanation he said and I repeat, the extractor claw was, "bent outward to a point where it could not support the case head," therefore it is impossible for the extractor to have torn out a large chunk of brass from the case head if it could not contact or support. If this is not enough of a problem for Mr. Dutton, I'm then caused to ask the question, if a "large chunk of brass" was torn from the case head of this particular 'faulty cartridge' case, that unquestionably is to him a critical piece of material in the DPP's evidence, where is the "large chunk of brass," and why does it not appear in either photographs in the *APJ* article and receives no mention in the Court Documents? [Fig iv blowup](#)

I submit that "large chunk of brass," Mr. Dutton refers to here, in fact was long gone when he examined the firearm, and if there was any metal that dropped away from the case during disassembly (which also is not mentioned in any of his or the Court documents), it may well have been brass remnants of the primer cup and its anvil.



**Norinco 223 Rem
factory head stamp:**
"C J 8" = "Norinco", &
year of manufacture
"1988", identical to the
Seascope round.

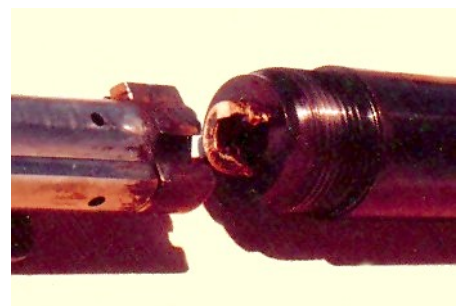


Fig iv mimic blow-up: SAKO L579 22/250,
with bolt in battery position; note
extractor, follower & spring blown away,
bolt head burnt, destroyed extruded case
head (extruded pimple 11 o'clock sheared by
turn-bolt) remains stuck in the chamber of
the barrel pulled from action.

In this instance with regard to the weapon damage, I would suggest the propellant detonated (i.e. the propellant powder exploded). It did not burn progressively. The question that we now need to answer is simply, "Why and how did this detonation occur?"

The expert advice when closely studied in some areas could be said to be imprecise, as a consequence of which it goes some way to blur the conclusions reached. By introducing into his determination some *mystery* batch of dangerous ammunition *jetting around the world from dealer to dealer*, is I believe at best unprofessional, but at worst a misleading speculation. If this expert had specified the ammunition's head stamp, and the precise nature of the ammunition's defect - which he chooses not to do - his evidence could have been demonstrated as significant even worthy of consideration. However, ammunition, like the rifles that consume it have identifying markings that could have conclusively — right there — nipped this conjecture in the bud! There on the failed case (see *APJ* at p.219) is the head stamp "J" and the numeral "8". After considerable investigation, I can say with confidence that the original head stamp was "C J 8" simply indicating the round was manufactured by Norinco in 1988. (see below)

The Police supposedly checked and test-fired other rounds from this same, claimed "faulty ammunition". They also deloused some rounds that survived, and chronographed an indeterminate number. No mention is made of any "faults" in those which they tested. Curiously they also make no mention of harbouring any fear of triggering another blow-up either.

Neither Gerard Dutton or indeed the DPP give any reason why the live rounds recovered and tested were not identified by their head stamp, not even any of the 12 rounds recovered from the Volvo (see Court Doc. p.169/1).

In the *WBR* Sergeant Dutton tells us both .223" and .308" calibre ammunition was deloused for inspection and also chronographed, but he does not indicate the head stamp or from what source the cartridges came. There was as Mr. Perks tells us (p.189/25 Court Doc), "a large quantity of three-o-eight calibre and point two-two-three calibre ammunition," at Clare Street, but he chooses once again not to inform us if this ammunition carried a head-stamp, brand name etc., common with that of cases recovered from any of the crime scenes. I've also learned from a very reliable source that this large quantity of ammunition **adjudged by these experts to be dangerously "faulty"** later found its way back into the commercial firearms trade: a rather curious situation you'd have to agree!

So what did happen to cause such catastrophic damage to the Colt? It really is not so very difficult to determine. I have concluded that a person or persons unknown, very knowledgeable in ballistics and/or small arms munitions who had opportunity, motive and with access to:—

- a .22" calibre bullet-puller - to remove undamaged a factory seated projectile,
- a quantity of pistol or shot gun powder - having a very fast burning rate, and
- a .223Rem seating die (preferably with crimp),

Then deliberately and wilfully prepared a demolition reloaded cartridge, discharged the doctored round in the AR-15 Carbine, so as to pervert the course of justice.

There is yet another possible explanation for such an event that should at least be ruled out here. During the Vietnam War it was not uncommon for Australian and US military personnel whilst active in the field, to carry in their kit a handy explosive called C-4. Although meant for other purposes, it was not uncommon after a successful ambush of enemy forces, for at least one of the AK-47 or SKS carbines left behind by the enemy, to be booby-trapped. A live 7.62x39 round was deloused by carefully removing the projectile along with the propellant powder. The powder was then replaced with a full case of C-4, the projectile was re-seated and the neck re-crimped. The demolition round was then either placed in the magazine, or chambered and the weapon which was left cocked. When some unsuspecting enemy later

retrieved the firearm and summarily cleared the weapon by firing it, the person either suffered severe wounds at least or was killed outright by the resultant explosion.

But the Seascope AR15 was not subjected to this method of destruction, as the damage was not consistent with such a catastrophic event. Though such a scenario must be considered, but at the time was certainly easily eliminated as even a remote possibility, by forensic chemical tests upon the weapon by Police to determine what chemical residues were present in the case, chamber and action, but like the Broad Arrow Café we are told *"...physical examination only"* were deployed, as *"No chemical tests were carried out..."* and were never planned to be carried out. - (see APJ Dec 1998, p.217) [Fig. ii. blowup](#)



Thus I'm confident in my assessment that a *demolition round* was deliberately prepared and fired in the AR15 Carbine so as to obliterate ballistic evidence. The super-rapid expanding gasses drastically eroded the flash-hole, primer pocket and cut a slot towards the extractor way, probably consuming the primer cup and anvil and certainly extruded the head of the case into the ejector hole, stripped-out the magazine follower, spring and floor plate, and deformed the magazine housing.

This blast of hot gas possibly even stripped the pistol grip from off its mounting screw, a not uncommon result in such a ruinous detonation. I have seen such an event erode and consume entirely that section of the case head which is unsupported over the extractor slot, such as occurs with a steel fabricator's plasma cutter, and you can see this effect in the photograph of the "mimic" blow up of the L579 SAKO in 22/250 calibre, see at right.

But it really staggers me that ballistic experts, who carried out this obviously important task in the investigation, failed to reach a plausible finding. One could be forgiven surely for concluding a simple and logical determination was at odds with that which the authorities had determined the Court should hear as "fact," and never tested by Mr. Avery, Martin Bryant's defence council. Sergeant Dutton went to quite extraordinary lengths to rebuild the damaged Colt — like the Phoenix bird out of the ashes. But what was this futile endeavour supposed to achieve? I'm firmly of the belief these actions only expanded the blurred evidence.

Why was an AR15 Carbine in pristine condition given television exposure, instead of the "blown-up" carbine in the same condition at the time it was recovered at Seascope? Importantly, was the specimen exhibited by Police on television one and the same as the Seascope specimen? Would it be too far-fetched to suggest this could have been a "buddy" AR15 Carbine to those that passed through the hands of the Victorian Police Firearms Registry, "firearms surrendered during amnesty [that] were meant to have been destroyed"? ⁷

A provincial newspaper informs us, *"two unnamed senior police officers were quoted as saying the AR15 ... allegedly used in the Port Arthur massacre was surrendered to a police station at Bayswater in suburban Melbourne in 1987, during a gun amnesty called after Julian Knight shot dead seven people in Hoddle Street."* ⁸

A later article below does little to clear up any ambiguity in the matter, especially with regard to the movement records toward the end-users, but in reality it raises more questions than it answers, telling us the total number of firearms in the shipment was in fact a much higher than earlier claimed, and possibly included various types, makes and calibres...

Then there is the Bendigo gun dealership to consider:

Gun dealer breaks veil of silence

THE veil of silence surrounding Bendigo gun dealer Garnet Featherstone lifted a little yesterday.

Earlier this week police said they had sold 56 high-powered and military style guns to Mr Featherstone, after they were handed in during an amnesty held in 1987.

It was later learned the guns had been sold back into general circulation, although police said they required the weapons to be sold overseas.

Mr Featherstone yesterday broke his silence on the matter with a telephone call to radio station 3BO.

"The deal involved a number of firearms and police have full and complete details on where each and every one had gone," he told the radio station.

"At no time was there any requirement that the weapons be exported."

— The *Bendigo Advertiser*. 19jun96.

So when these newspaper reports are carefully considered on this most important matter, we are informed on the one hand specifically seventeen (17) Colt AR15 firearms only, were reported as sold to the Bendigo arms dealer, while it appears from a local newspaper in the city of Bendigo the shipment consisted of a total of *56 high-powered military style firearms*. This latest revelation of a further 39 *unspecified* firearms included in the sale shipment to the Bendigo dealer, immediately raises further unresolved questions, (there were 45 firearms recovered at Seascope).

In an earlier print run of this work, I'd written that a Melbourne newspaper had reported Victoria Police as selling 17 banned Colt AR15 firearms, previously surrendered to them in an amnesty, to a Bendigo arms dealer, who paid somewhere near \$40,000 for the shipment. The article stated the sale of the firearms was conditional to them being "sold overseas," a claim which when repeated by me produced an angry reaction from Mr. Garnet Featherstone, with him steadfastly denying directly to this author that any such requirement was stipulated by the vendor. Mr Featherstone phoned me on 13 September 2002 expressing outrage as to any suggestion that he acted improperly concerning this firearms deal; entirely understandable given the circumstances. Featherstone repudiated any claim of being subject to any restrictions having been placed on him, other than those dictated by the firearms laws in place at the time. However he declined my invitation to explain the movements of the shipment of AR15's in question and would not provide any details as to the end-user/s, or the state in which the purchasers resided. But this important part of the story only ever seems to become more fragmented and contradictory the deeper one looks.

As a retired firearms dealer myself and once even a trade customer of Granite Arms, Mr Featherstone's trading name, I do hold some sympathy for his situation. However in rejecting my proposition to clear-up the matter leaves him in a circumstance where the public are only apt to speculate; that is his choice. Although I'm loath to conjecture, in this instance I have what I may call a "gut feeling" that if Mr Featherstone were to allow us to peruse his firearm register, the firearm in question would not number among those he traded. Regarding the Port Arthur Colt AR15 carbine though, I'm firmly of the belief this firearm had already been removed altogether from general circulation and so did not number among the 56 firearms I have since learned constituted the total shipment in the Bendigo deal.

But the above article from the Bendigo Advertiser prompt me then to ponder; "Was the quite rare "G" series FN-FAL 7.62Nato self-loading rifle, bearing the serial number G3434, reintroduced into private ownership via the same conduit as did the unspecified "56 high-powered military style firearms" sold to the Bendigo arms dealer by the Victoria Police sometime after 1987?"

Before Port Arthur, Victoria Police had a system as about as "unsinkable" as the Titanic, and when it struck Bill Drysdale's "iceberg", the system was exposed as having loopholes you could drive a B-double-semi through! Like the builders of some claimed fail-safe systems, Commissioner Sinclair defended Victoria Police's "system" resolutely for as long as the controversy raged in the newspapers - then the media and firearm owners allowed it to die. I cannot understand why Victoria's firearm owners allowed the police off the hook, although as to how this occurred, well as the principal body of the so-called 'powerful gun lobby' SSAA, did no more than their usual powder-puff protest.

Mr Drysdale told the Sunday Herald Sun, a mark on the barrel of the Port Arthur weapon, described to him by Inspector Maxwell, matched a mark on the rifle he'd surrendered that had been made by his gunsmith: *'My rifle also had a collapsible stock and a Colt sight, just as the massacre weapon has, he said, I did the right thing and handed the weapon in, and if the Police put it back into the Australian community I would be disgusted'*. Drysdale was reportedly adamant the firearm in question, was previously owned by him, and surrendered by him to Victoria Police in February of 1993 for which he was paid around \$1700 in compensation.⁹

In the prevailing financial climate under which Victorian Police were forced to operate at the time, during the tenure of the Kennett Government, it required of them to be shall we say, resourceful? As is addressed by Noel McDonald in his excellent book on the subject, the Victoria Special Operations Group (SOG) sold-off a shipment of firearms, among them, some 17 Colt AR15's, to a Bendigo firearms dealer. For the entire shipment of some 56 firearms in all, they reportedly received almost \$40,000 or around \$714 average, for each firearm.

Now while Mr Drysdale surrendered his AR15 to Victoria Police in February 1993 and apparently was assured it would be sent overseas and used for 'military purposes', this assurance has been proven hollow, as police later claimed their records show this particular firearm was destroyed on 9 March, 1994, a claim that since has been proven to be incorrect.

So, with **"56 banned firearms...sold back into general circulation,"** do any of the identifying details entered into the Bendigo Arms Dealer's firearm register, match with those of the *various other firearms* recovered by police from the burnt-out ruin of the Seascope cottage around April 29-30 of 1996? Does this go some way to explaining why Sergeant Dutton was reluctant to document the movement of any of the firearms that were in Seascope or even the three primary firearms? Does it explain why this author came under pressure immediately one of those caught-up in this situation read of my concerns in print?

We are aware that Insp. Maxwell of Tasmania Police visited the mainland to inquire into the matter, and that he met with Mr. Drysdale on Friday, 21 June 1996, and was reported to have been, "ordered by them not to talk to reporters." Insp. Maxwell surely must have met with Officers of the Victoria Police firearms registry on that trip, but I wonder if he also visited Victoria's substantial provincial city of Bendigo as well? ¹⁰

The Deputy Commissioner of Victoria Police, Graham Sinclair was quoted as saying, "It's difficult for the force's data to be 100 per cent accurate ...," I would suggest an understatement in light of the same newspaper's report which states that a quiet thorough **"...investigation found police had failed to record in the police firearms database the serial numbers of the weapons they sold..."**

As a consequence, a simple public disclosure at the time by the Victoria Police Commissioner via his superior the Minister for Police, Bill McGrath, together with a limited examination of dealer's firearms registry entries and Gerard Dutton's records could have eliminated once and for all the controversy that has deliberately been allowed to remain unresolved regarding the origin and movement of the burnt and damaged firearms recovered from the ruins of Seascope

Cottage. This author has been unsuccessful in even obtaining a response to inquiries to obtain a copy of the reported commissioner's "full report" into the matter as ordered by the then Minister for Victoria Police, Bill McGrath.¹¹

But if there is one consistency in this story, it's the inconsistency of statements reported in the press by all of those who should know exactly what occurred! From the pages of the *Geelong Advertiser*, it seems Commissioner Sinclair's admitted inaccurate record keeping, suddenly almost self-repaired, and causing more confusion when he was reported to have explained:

'One of the weapons was sold privately in Victoria to an approved purchaser, and four others were sold to a gun dealer in Victoria. Of those four, three have been sold to approved buyers who live in Victoria. The remaining weapons were sold outside Victoria to a gun dealer in Queensland and South Australia.'

You will note Mr Sinclair quite deliberately chooses not to disclose the number of these "remaining weapons", nor how many were sold to the alleged dealers in South Australia and Queensland, nor where this unknown number of "remaining firearms" and the make and serial numbers of them ended up! Really, it's as clear as mud!

This aspect alone of the movement history of the Colt AR15 SP-1 surely raises some very awkward questions and so I ask you to consider these following points: —

- All of the published and available reports attributed to the Victorian Police Firearms Registry, other serving police, the then Commissioner and the Minister responsible shows a litany of claims that in many instances contradict one another. As a consequence, the matter has to date never been resolved satisfactorily.
- Recent ongoing reports from many reputable sources, including serving Victoria Police themselves, detailing widespread imbedded corruption at the highest levels of the force, which has lead in recent days to just one of a multitude of incidents being addressed. This deplorable situation obviously did not come about over recent times, but developed far back into the period we are dealing with here.

Although Mr. Bracks has avoided establishing a Royal Commission like the plague, *"Australia's best known anti-corruption investigator, Tony Fitzgerald, QC, has been called in to conduct a key inquiry into corruption in the Victoria Police."*¹²

- The veracity of the claim attributed to Deputy Commissioner Sinclair saying, "Our records show that it [Mr Drysdale's Colt AR-15] was destroyed in April 1994," is completely shattered if the *Geelong Advertiser* faithfully reported his other published claim regarding "ballistic tests".
- Was Mr. Drysdale's firearm destroyed? Considering the above narrative, how could the gun have possibly been destroyed? This author has not seen an iota of convincing evidence to support the notion.
- It becomes evident the knowledge of a future "need" or "role" for this firearm, by person or persons unknown, must have arisen either prior to or at the time the (false) entry was made in the Victorian Police's Firearm Registry or data base, if indeed any entry now exists. Is it not then fair to say, 'the perpetrator had to have motive and opportunity to falsify the record and having motive, a foreknowledge of a role the Colt AR15 was to fulfil'? Does this not constitute proof of yet another conspiracy? What other explanation is there? Why has no one been asked to explain under oath what really occurred in this instance?
- It has been claimed a "ballistic test" conducted by Police eliminated Mr. Drysdale's AR15 as being one-and-the-same as the "blown-up" Colt carbine recovered at Seascope. How on earth could ballistic police - even *"the best ballistic expert in the nation"* - conduct a ballistic test on Mr Drysdale's Colt AR-15 Carbine, when it was supposedly destroyed by Simms Metals, *more than two years earlier*? For remember, senior Victoria Police claim their records show Mr. Drysdale's AR15 was officially "destroyed" as early as 9

March 1994. How is it that the entire general public have accepted such a blatant deception!?

Returning now to the Tasmania Police's ballistic examination of the Seascope recovered blown-up Colt AR15. Nowhere can I find mention in any of the reports that the examiners made a *Cerrosafe* cast of the chamber, to measure its dimensions so as to compare them with a standard chamber, thus determining the extent or severity of the chemical reaction that occurred. Neither can I find mention of them slugging the barrel.

To preserve all possible remaining evidence, and gather important information, a *Cerrosafe* cast could have been made of the chamber, and its dimensions carefully measured with micrometer. Also a slug swaged through the barrel, miked and both subjected to microscopy; *then* with this evidence preserved, the weapon could have been rebuilt if those preliminary findings so demanded.

I should also note here, that because the rifle experienced this "blow-up" it would have achieved little if the Ballistic Police had attempted subjecting the Colt AR-15 to any projectile striation matching, as not only did they not have a pristine bullet recovered from any of the victims, but the barrel signature would have been so severely altered due to the horrendous event itself, hence results would have been inconclusive.

It would be an *exceedingly* rare occurrence for any factory loaded cartridge to ever mimic the horrendous chamber pressures exhibited in the photographs of the deformed .223 Rem case at p.210 of the *APJ* article. Let me explain.

Manufacturers, ever conscious of the many factors that impact upon their ammunition being used in firearms of varying mechanical condition, in environments totally outside of their influence or control, and by shooters of all abilities and intellect, only ever load each different cartridge combination with powders that entirely or almost entirely fill the case; this eliminates the possibility of overloads and/or double loads entirely.

Now, suppose a round had misfired, and the hammer blow via the firing pin, had driven the unfired round just far enough into the chamber for the projectile to become stuck in the lands at the throat. When the round was extracted manually, the projectile may have been left lodged there in the throat, with a following live round inadvertently chambered and fired. A huge overload condition would have occurred! Effectively, 110 grains of projectile would have been subject to the original powder charge. However the following facts tell me this did not occur.

1. The neck of the case is "crimped" into the projectile's cannelure to prevent this very scenario occurring in Norinco factory loaded ammunition and this case appeared at first to have been originally crimped. But upon a second closer examination of the photograph it appears it could possibly display a slight variance to a factory original crimp. Mr. Dutton does not tell us if he eliminated that possibility either, by inspecting other fired cases from the Broad Arrow Café for instance.
2. But, every rifle "overload" I have examined have involved
 - a. hand loaded cartridges,
 - b. primers that had all at least leaked badly,
 - c. some primers were even pierced by the firing pin, and
 - d. all the actions had been severally tested, even extractors dislodged from bolt heads.

But! Importantly, among actions subjected to this scenario, I've never seen a total action failure such as exhibited in the case of this AR15 Carbine wrongly attributed to "faulty" factory ammunition.

In the case of a barrel obstruction, unless the obstruction was in the form of a projectile as described in the foregoing (i.e. stuck in the throat) the barrel would exhibit a bulge at some point between throat and muzzle, so that possibility is ruled out also. Even hard chrome barrels subjected to such an event while okay to the eye, will when slugged show-up the tell-tail slight bulge signature.

However, when the projectile is carefully pulled from a cartridge, the powder removed and discarded, the case re-filled with a fast burning pistol type powder, the projectile re-seated and crimped, it only remains that the round be fired in the chamber for it to detonate and destroy much of the rifle. In fact the enormous volume of rapidly expanding gas produced by such a detonation will forge an exit by the path which offers the least resistance. That is simple physics. A quite ingenious method by which evidence was destroyed in this case, don't you think?

I could if asked easily reproduce and mimic identical physical damage as found in the Seascope AR15 carbine, and almost probably at the first attempt.

The cartridge case Dutton found stuck in the chamber, exhibited head deformation with the brass consumed in the area where the case-head is unsupported over the extractor groove in the face of the bolt head. Case-head brass was also extruded rearwards into the ejector way; the case's flash hole has obviously been eroded enormously by the jet blast of super-hot gas, from its normal .078-.080" diameter to something in the order of .125" in my estimation. Likewise, the primer pocket, which normally is .175" in diameter, would have been expanded to in excess of .202", or 15 per cent in my estimation. I would also suggest that the overall maximum length of the case would have been stretched from the normal 1.760" by at least 10 per cent to around 1.936". The case's head stamp has *almost* been obliterated by the crushing compression force against the bolt face. Mr. Dutton also does not mention the fact, but I suspect, the locking lugs of the breach bolt would certainly have been set-back by at least .015-.020", producing excess head space which contributed to the massive case failure. **This set-back would have been a second witness too the bolt being in the battery position when it was fired.** No mention is made of bolt lug setback in his articles. When the case head extruded into the ejector way, (see the oval knob-like protuberance of brass material on the case head in photo *APJ* p.219), it would have crushed the ejector spring.

Now we must in all fairness consider one other *very remote* possibility that just *this one round* for some reason happened to be a hand load cartridge as opposed to a factory load. This would introduce an uncommon but still possible condition of the case being incorrectly "sized" by incorrect die setting or die setting for even another firearm entirely when the round was loaded. This would produce say .010" excess head space. In such circumstances the following would occur:—

When the firing pin strikes the primer, the kinetic energy shunts the cartridge forward into the chamber until it binds at some forward point, enabling primary ignition to occur. The primer cup then "pops" or backs-out of the pocket upon primary ignition and the chamber pressures begin to rise as the powder ignites and burns. Momentarily the case "hangs-up" as the case wall expands against the chamber and so fill-out to the different chamber shape. Then, as the pressure builds, it remains "hung-up" at the front or neck section of the case, while the base is driven by pressure rearwards, stretching the case until it slams into the bolt face, thus flattening the primer back into the pocket and filling its chamfered mouth in a very recognizable and distinctive attitude. At most, this would cause the case wall to separate just forward of the case's base and extractor groove upon extraction, leaving the forward part of

the case in the chamber, thus preventing another round from being chambered and fired. If the brass was faulty and just short of full case separation this is easily detectable by dissecting the case; a telltale thin section of the case would be exposed just forward of the head's extractor groove and primer pocket would be expanded. So it can be said, definitely no such event occurred.

Conclusions to the "Blow-up" of the Colt AR15

Practical experience over the repair bench as a gunsmith, the reloading and shooting of many thousands of rounds from the bench and in the field assists me to reach the following conclusion.

In relation to the damaged Colt AR15 SP-1 carbine S/N° SP128807, I can conclude that a person or persons unknown interfered with just one cartridge, knowingly converting it to a demolition-round resulting in irreparable damage to the firearm, the evidence of which was further blurred by the house fire. I believe I'm not being overly critical to suggest the forensic examination was further exacerbated by various actions within the examination procedure, which caused Mr Dutton to reach a wrong conclusion, a situation incidentally, which was ignored and then reinforced by the DPP, and his American award. I would not suggest Sergeant Gerard Dutton knowingly contributed to this situation, as I believe he has exhibited on at least several occasions a high degree of honesty and integrity in conclusions he clearly enunciated. I do believe though that the "expert" advice he received was at least unhelpful. I can only conclude with regard to the court, that it was subjected to such a cacophony of ambiguous "facts" because the reality of events conflicted with the verdict the justice system, politics and the global "gun control" network demanded.

End Notes

¹ Sgt Gerard Dutton, *APJ*, December 1998, p.225; Barbara Pondgratz & Judy Tierney; "Richard McCreadie – The man behind the uniform", ABC-TV's *Stateline*, 22aug03.

² Rae Walsh, "Ballistics expert hits an international mark," *The Mercury* – n.d.; Ellen Whinnett, "Crime Under the Microscope," *Saturday Mercury* 17jun00, pp.34-35; Sgt Gerard Dutton, "Ballistic Evidence," *APJ*, p.222; GCE Team History 19feb03 at:- <http://www.tased.edu.au/tasonline/rotary/gsehis.htm> .

³ By-line, "Newspapers proved relevant, publishers told," *The Mercury*, 2may96, p.3.

⁴ Court Document, at pp.52-53.

⁵ Kate Halfpenny, "The Suspect", *WHO weekly*, 13may95, p.24

⁶ Statement made by Blair Frances Saville, from conversation with Martin Bryant in Risdon Prison, 1645 hrs, 3aug96.

⁷ *Bendigo Advertiser*, "Weapon claims flout law: Drane", 10jun96.

⁸ *ibid inf*

⁹ Phil Maguire, "'The gun may be mine'", *Herald Sun*, 23jun96, p.3

¹⁰ *Bendigo Advertiser*, "Weapons claims flout Law: Drane" 10jun96; Phil Maguire, "'The gun may be mine'", *Herald Sun*, 23jun96, p.3.

¹¹ Wayne Jones, *Herald Sun*, 16jun96, pp.1&4.

¹² Richard Baker, "Top corruption fighter called in", *The Age*, 2jun04.

The FN FAL Self-Loading Rifle; a history

CHAPTER 11

The FN FAL or in the French, *Fabrique Nationale Fusil Automatique Leger* was invented by the engineer, Dieudonne Saive and first produced in 1950 by Fabrique Nationale d'Arms de Guerre in Liège, Belgium. Of course Germany produced semi-automatic rifles, the G41 around 1942, and the superb G43 from around 1943, which saw much service during WW-II, but the FN FAL was the first post-war true self loading (semi-automatic) military rifle produced in Belgium and it was adopted immediately by Britain and all of her Commonwealth countries.

The FN FAL was preceded by another rifle out of Dieudonne Saive's early experiments with various firearm designs in the 1930's. In 1936-37 he patented his prototypes only to have this work interrupted when Germany occupied the FN factory in May 1940. Escaping to England he recommenced his work, which resulted in the **Fabrique Nationale Model 1949** (above), better known to firearm collectors today as the **FN-49**. In England nicknamed the "SLEM" or "Self-Loading Experimental Model", the first order for 2000 rifles for field trials by British troops in the war was only cancelled when it became obvious the end of hostilities was imminent. The FN-49 was supplied on nine individual contracts in various calibers totaling around 1200



The Fabrique Nationale Model 1949 or FN-49 self-loading rifle. [fn49full](#)

firearms in all upon its launch from Liège in 1947. Although this rifle did not feature in the Port Arthur incident, it nevertheless was there in the sights of the "gun control" disarmament schemers; a self-loading military firearm.

Now to the FN FAL: Originally designed for the 7.92mm Kurz round, the FN FAL was soon adapted for the new calibre, the 7.62x51mm adopted by the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) created at the conclusion of WW-II. The new calibre was already known in America as the "308 Winchester" (308W) but in this rifle it was designated "7.62 NATO". The FN FAL-IPW (infantry personal weapon), is a rifle of air-cooled self-loading design, having a gas cylinder in which a piston is moved, positioned above the barrel. The gas generated by the combustion of the cartridge propellant is metered through a manual gas regulator control into this cylinder. After the piston delivers its power stroke rearward to cycle the action, it is returned to its forward position after each shot by an independent return spring in the butt.



From the PTV tape, Sgt Gerard Dutton briefly describes the FN FAL: no mention of the uniqueness of the "G" series variant

When the magazine ammunition is expended, a hold-open device retains the bolt and its carrier in an open position to allow for magazine recharge, and subsequent return to a loaded condition. The

Port Arthur rifle, a "G" series FN FAL Serial #G3434, which is subject of our investigation, has a high rear aperture sight graduated from 180-550 metres in metre increments, and a round post adjustable foresight protected by look-alike SMLE ears. The magazine is a straight, detachable, pressed metal box type with a capacity of 20 rounds; the imperial pattern model magazine will not interchange with the metric pattern rifle.

NATO adopted the [FN FAL](#) in 1953 chambered for the 7.62x51 mm "T65" cartridge along with



Identical to the rare "G" Series FN FAL 7.62 NATO self-loading rifle recovered by police, damaged, at Seascope: it was a never-used Throwdown

thirty-six treaty countries following suit, many of whom manufactured the FN under licence, some calling it the "FN Browning" and designated the "T48". Some 90 countries used

the rifle over the next 50 years, and it was manufactured in eleven countries including, Argentina, Belgium, Canada, England, India, Israel, Libya, Peru, Singapore, the USA, and of course in the Lithgow Small Arms Factory (now closed) in Australia.

Via Britain and incorporating their own design modifications and designated the "X8E1" and "X8E2", the Commonwealth of Australia imported five "G" series (metric pattern) FN FAL rifles for trial. Those serial numbers are listed as follows: #50, #G79, #G80, #G83 and #G84.

The Commonwealth of Australia by agreement undertook to produce its own FN FAL at Lithgow Small Arms Factory (later called the ADI) at Lithgow in NSW, with this variant designated the "[SLR L1A1](#)". The first deliveries were made in March of 1959 with around 222,773 produced there up until production ceased in 1986. In 1962 Lithgow began producing the L2A1 of which some 9,557 are listed as delivered. All of the rifles sold to private end-users in Australia were self-loading rifles, incapable of manually selected fully automatic fire.



The SLR L1A1 7.72 NATO common to the ADF & exhibiting at least 5 subtle features different to the metric "G" Series rifle

SPECIFICATIONS FOR THE TYPE "A" FN FAL:

- Weight 9lb., 8oz. (4.3kg) with empty magazine; 10lb with full magazine.
- Calibre ·308W (7.62x51mm).
- Standard NATO spec., ammunition produces 2800 fps.
- Effective range 600yds (approx.550m.)
- Overall length 41½" (105.4cm).
- Barrel: 21-inch-long (53.34cm), with four grooves, RH twist
- Flash suppressor, long Belgium (bee-hive type) registered at 12 o'clock.
- Bore diameter, groove, ·3075"; lands, ·2995".
- Rifling is concentric 4 grooved - with a RH twist of 1:12.
- Cyclic rate of fire 650/750 rpm.
- Muzzle Velocity 2,800 fps.

I should emphasise here, all SAFL & ADI (Lithgow-Australia) manufactured FN SLR ·308 cal rifles have serial numbers prefixed with the letters "AD" followed by six numerals.



"G" series FN FAL: LH-side of action, note 3 position S.R.A. safety lever.

The "G" prefix on the rifle subject to our investigation as was retrieved from the roof gutter at Seascap indicates conclusively it was of Fabrique Nationale, Liège manufacture and therefore made on the metric pattern.

So let us look at a little background to these early shipments of FN FAL rifles by the Browning Arms Company to the United States. Shipments commenced in September of 1959 consisting of "samples", among which are said to have numbered one bearing the Serial number, "G493". Now these FN FAL's, even over forty years ago, caused some concern among the authorities, which lead to the Alcohol

and Tobacco Tax division (ATT), the forerunner of the later BATF, carrying out tests and appraisal of the rifle to determine whether or not the rifle was in fact in their eyes a machine gun or not.

At that time, the then director of the ATT, Dwight D. Avis, determined that the FAL did not contravene Section 5848 of the National Firearms Act (USA), and so Browning, relying on that determination, began exporting to America further shipments of the FAL "for sale to American collectors" and civilian end-users.

From the pages of the October, 1962 edition of the official organ of the NRA, the *American Rifleman*, (and today still a popular magazine), is advertised for the sum of USD\$180 what they classed as the *standard NATO Military Rifle*, which in fact is the FN FAL.

By January of 1963, and over a 39 month period 1,815 of these rifles were shipped into America, and I suspect many were destined for the sporting market. The company that facilitated these imports into the USA for civilian use was none other than the company founded by John M. Browning — the Browning Arms Company (BAC). In addition to those rifles for civilian end users, The United States Government imported a total of 3,303 FN FAL rifles *for government trials*, but my research tells me the highest numbered "G" series rifle imported by the USA is listed as Ser. No G3134 — just a neat 300 below the Seascap FN FAL.

It was in the early months of 1963, that the ATT became apprehensive as to the ease with which some military type firearms could be modified to cycle as machineguns. Although expressing some concerns, the ATT, assured Browning that the FAL's imported before the April 3 1963 determination, were considered "legal" and so that appeared to be the end of the matter.

To assist in the 1963 ATT determination, BAC supplied ATT a rifle for testing, and recorded as Ser. No G3084, just 350 away from the Port Arthur rifle. Despite the ATT's 1963 determination though, all was not to go well for American licensed dealers it seems.

Our search now takes us to America's rugged Pacific North West, to Seattle a city of 520,000 in Washington State. Here in February of 1968, despite ATT's previous 1963 determination regarding imported FAL's, the US Federal Government indicted one James E. Jacques, a Seattle firearms dealer, for "possession of unregistered machine guns". Jacques had five FN FAL's on his inventory and in the Court documents of this case, United States v Jacques, in which incidentally the charges were eventually dismissed, one rifle is of interest to us, which bears the Serial No G3357 and even closer than the rifle previously mentioned above and **just 77 away from the Seascap specimen**. Here our search narrows just a tad more. In an article by James O. Bardwell in *The Small Arms Review*, Vol 4 No. 4 of January 2001, at p.63, the author states this last rifle 'came via Canada'.

An important fact that cannot be denied with regard to the FN FAL bearing the Ser.No G3434 retrieved at Seascope is this: being a "G" series variant, we know it was manufactured in the metric pattern and so it follows that parts for this rifle are not interchangeable with those of an Australian manufactured SLR, all of which are manufactured on the inch pattern, excepting the flash suppressor. Even a magazine to suit the L1A1 will not fit or operate in the rifle recovered at Seascope.

One is then caused to ask, *"Who supplied Sergeant Gerard Dutton with a metric pattern FAL rifle from which he was able to cannibalise metric pattern parts, and so facilitate his repair, rebuild and test firing, of the badly damaged Seascope FN FAL #G3434 ?"*

We do know this much: The NSW Police Service ran many advertisements in various newspapers during the period of Howard's obnoxious "gun-buyback" scheme. In the [Sunday Telegraph](#), February 23rd, 1997 at Page 39 the FN FAL was obviously seen as a prize by the "gun control" disarmament regime: NSW Police Service ran a large advertisement which features an ADI inch pattern L1A1 clearly recognisable as such, by the flash suppressor indexing nut, front sling swivel location, two holes in the forend pistol grip and even down to the sand-cuts on the bolt; all distinguishing features of the Australian SLR variant. This particular SLR shows a 30 round magazine in battery - usually only ever used in the select fire variant deployed as support when circumstances dictated for the squad machine gunner. They paid our young servicemen a few "bob" a day to lavish care upon SLR's such as this, but now they have been turned into brake bands for railway trucks. The ADF never had SLR's in



"G" series FN FAL 7.62NATO self-loading rifle, scoped.

Today in 2006, and directly resulting from the "gun control" network's bans, confiscations and destruction of these examples of engineering excellence, their value has risen considerably.

So for those who in an attempt to justify their meekness and boast of the "windfall" in funds for them to spend on runabouts and fishing poles after visiting the local "gun-crusher", today's advertisements offer the odd 'second hand scoped "G" series FNFAL in 7.62 NATO - in excellent condition', for sale in America at US\$8,500.

Important Note:

The forgoing was first written-up before the year 2000, and like any ongoing investigation the known facts only ever grow and develop at a rate that corresponds with the new evidence as it is uncovered, evaluated and fitted into the story. It is from such newly discovered evidence that conclusions can be reached and their impact upon the rest of the scenarios that knit the story together can be replaced so that it begins to reveal itself into a complete "tapestry" that is the massacre at Port Arthur.

With that in mind, I want to reiterate that two of the three primary firearms, were never used at any of the crime scenes by the gunman. The FN FAL was a stand-in for the intended stand-in: the AR-10, 7.62NATO Rifle. This other stand-in, cast to play the part of a *throwdown*, was actually quietly sitting in the repair racks of Terry Hill's Guns & Ammo shop. It missed the que

call! A substitute had to be found at short notice, hence the "G" Series FN FAL self loading rifle filled the breach. That is why police couldn't very well have been seen to support a scenario involving any 30cal firearm having been discharged in the Broad Arrow Café, as *the 41½" long FN FAL would not fit in the sports bag*. So from the police crime scene examiners on up through the DPP to Justice Cox, the actuality of the 30cal weapon being used in the Café simply never happened.

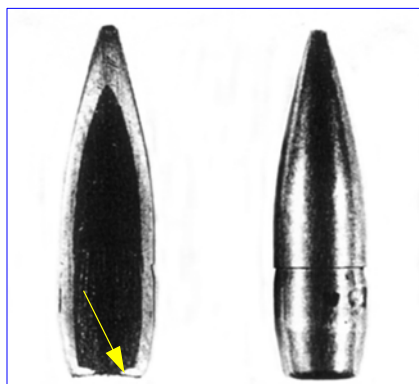
Our investigations show I believe robust evidence that the three primary firearms including the Daewoo self-loading 12ga shotgun, were discharged in the dinning room of the Broad Arrow Café, the latter just once.

.308W FMJ - Ball - Ammunition

Chapter 12

In 1955 the United States of America used its power to have all 15 of the NATO treaty participants adopt as the universal small arms calibre the cartridge they designated "T65," commonly known as 7.62 NATO; the commercial equivalent designation being the .308Win. It is in essence a shortened version of the USA's old 30 calibre 30/06 military round and was able to be manufactured on the same machinery. The "T65" round had won out against Britain's 7mm EM2 rifle project.

The calibre has been loaded with various rifle powders and bullet weight combinations as "standard military ball" ordinance, by many factories in Europe, the USA, Canada, South Africa, Israel, India and Australia. In my experience imported ex-NATO ammunition were usually loaded with 150-grain FMJ boat-tail projectiles.



ADI's 144 gr BT 7.62 mm FMJ projectile loaded in standard ADF 7.62 NATO ammunition before down-sizing to the 5.56mm ball ammunition. Note the 'returned-under' cup at the base, which assists to lock in the lead core.

Prior to Australia's Armed Forces adopting the Steyr AUG as their individual weapon (IW), designated the "F88/Aug", the only Australian 7.62 NATO ammunition available to the public, came by way of Rifle Clubs, assisted around 1986-88 by the Hawke administration's hurried reduction of reserve military ordinance stocks, and a host of ex-military 7.62 NATO ammunition produced by [ADI](#) at Maribyrnong, Victoria in preparation for the soon to come civil disarmament program. This ammunition was *filtered down through* to licensed dealers via Rifle Clubs and so to civilian end-users.

Unlike the light jacketed .224" FMJ Norinco bullets used in the Broad Arrow Café, the bus park and Jetty Road, this 7.62 NATO ammunition is loaded with a 144-grain FMJ full boat-tail projectile, the gilding-metal jacket of which is of a much heavier gauge (.034") and with the boat tail skirt returned under at the base, thus encapsulating the lead-core.

By way of the "Wound Ballistic Review," I mentioned earlier, I can say with confidence, that the 7.62 NATO ammunition expended by the shooter at Port Arthur, was of the type designated as "F4," as opposed to the earlier designated "L2A2". F4 is loaded with 44 grains of AR2206 Mulwex powder and a 144-grain FMJ boat-tail projectile all manufactured and loaded by ADI at Maribyrnong in Footscray. This load reputedly produced average velocities through an L1A1 SLR of around 2700fps, producing around 2,329 ft-lbs of energy at the muzzle. Dutton reveals that in chronograph tests this ammunition produced average velocities of 2730 fps (*WBR* @ p.39). The earlier ammunition designated L2A2 was loaded with AR2201 Mulwex powder. Both of these powders are of a single base nitrocellulose propellant, the latter found to be unstable in high ambient temperatures.

Shooting the FN FAL (SLR) Rifle

In shooting this self-loading rifle, on the firing range, I would have to say it is not unpleasant to shoot, when compared to earlier military full-bore calibre rifles in bolt actions and self-



The L1A1 rifle: known to Vietnam veterans as the "Slur" or SLR.

loaders. Certainly with repetitious use, mastering the L1A1 version, became easier over time, but it appeared to me however to be difficult for persons of small physical stature.

Physically larger in all dimensions than the demure .223Rem round, when the very hot .308Win spent case is ejected from an FN FAL, it is ejected forward of 90 degrees to the horizontal axis of the barrel. As I explained above, this is a great plus for left-handed shooters. In the "G" series model, the cocking handle is a knurled knob with a hole down the centre and is located on the left hand side of the bolt carrier, unlike the L1A1 SLR's cocking handle, which is retracted under spring pressure, folding flat against the receiver.

Achieving consistent accurate hits with this firearm when shot off-hand, at fast moving targets, would I believe prove not easily achievable unless in the hands of a trained, practiced and competent marksman, familiar with the rifle. My judgement here I believe, is especially pertinent, considering at no time was it proved by the Court that Martin Bryant ever owned or practiced with an FN FAL rifle much less the one recovered from Seascope, that was alleged to have been used by the shooter in the Historic Site car/bus park, at the Port Arthur Tollbooth, Port Arthur Store forecourt and Arthur Highway at the entrance to the Seascope Guesthouse.

The FN FAL: smashed in rage but, PLACED with care?

CHAPTER 13

When the time frames of the Seascapes siege & Police Negotiator's transcript are examined thoroughly, not only is the emotion of "rage" illogical & implausible as a reason for any of the firearms being damaged, but "rage" never figured as a factor in any document pertinent to the case, save that emanating from the Police Forensic Firearm Examiner.

Considering the dozens of eyewitness statements and a clip from the audio taped conversation between Sgt Terry McCarthy and Martin Bryant inside Seascapes, the emotion of "rage" is not evidenced. The various amateur video tapes corroborate the eyewitness' accounts of even the gunman who caused all the mayhem at the Historic Site walking calmly and without visible emotion. With regards to all of the firearms at Seascapes, "Jamie" did volunteer to Sergeant Terry McCarthy that he intended to "break them up," (see p.52 transcript); not just one of them. Why then would Martin Bryant have bothered to physically damage just the FN FAL after the AR15 SP-1 had blown up "accidentally" and then go to considerable lengths to ensure both survived the fire? The Colt AR15 and the FN FAL were not discarded: I firmly believe both were PLACED with care (possibly even before the siege commenced), outside of the cottage, by **someone - other than Martin Bryant - who foreknew the cottage was to be torched**. Neither firearm was forensically linked to the Broad Arrow Cafe, so this action is not only entirely logical but it is surely probable.

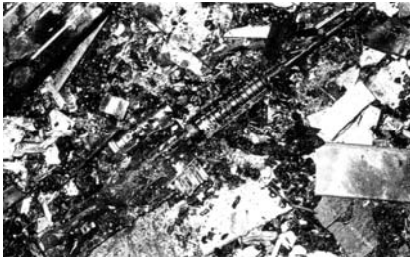
Let me state firmly, that like the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine Serial No SP128807, the FN FAL - Serial No G3434 was not used as a murder weapon by the gunman during the massacre at Port Arthur. There is ample evidence to state firmly the 30cal rifle used for some of the shootings in the café, in the bus park, at the Tollbooth, in front of the Port Arthur General Store and on the Arthur Highway outside Seascapes was an AR-10 rifle and like the Colt rifle, it also was never recovered by police.

There is absolutely no experiential evidence that confirms the "G" series FN FAL was used as a murder weapon in or near Port Arthur that weekend. I have reached a firm conclusion upon examination and in consideration of all the evidence to date that the role played by both of these firearms was that of *throw-downs*.

I'm sure you can imagine the short twinge of desperation that ran up the spine of the Seascapes controller, when it was learned Martin could not produce his AR10 308W rifle. What to do, what to do? You see there is no mention of another 30"cal self-loading rifle there among the

cache of firearms later recovered burnt and destroyed in the fire. It may have been a close call; all that ammunition and no AR-10!

Also of significance, is the considerable anomaly exhibited in the Police forensic evidence photograph of the Colt AR15 SP-1, lying there among the ashes at Seascap (see *APJ* at p.218) exhibiting considerable residue ash of the cottage inferno, lying beneath the firearm; this is contrary to the law of physics. The Colt allegedly was placed there by Martin Bryant before he torched the cottage! But that is quite impossible.



Look carefully at the Colt Carbine; ash can be seen underneath the firearm. How can this be so?

Consider also that it was largely via file footage of the electronic and print media and especially supported by Mike Bingham's *Suddenly One Sunday* (at pp.22-23), all of which resurfaced *after the fact* by the way, that was integral in laying the foundation to what was intended to be perceived as manifestly a media legend: *Martin the 'pyromaniac'*. So that the torching of the BMW and the Cottage would then be accepted by the public as a culmination of the twisted state of mind of "Jamie the torch"... But hang on! The negotiator's transcript and PROI Court Document never exposed Martin Bryant as harbouring any intent to set fire to the BMW or to burn Seascap to

the ground. Interestingly dressed in his casual Sunday clothes, Commissioner John Johnson, gave journalists their first "crumbs" of the incident at Police Headquarters in Hobart late on Sunday afternoon. At which point, a female reporter when posing one of the early questions asked, if police had contact with the offender, and Johnson answered in the affirmative, to which the same female then curiously asked, "*Has he set fire to buildings?*" to which Johnson responds; "*There is no information about setting fire to buildings.*"

I used the adjective "curiously" quite deliberately, because from the mid 1980's of the shooting massacre at Milperra in Sydney until the shootings at Monash University on October 2002, "fire" was a tool in just two shooting massacres; Aramoana in New Zealand and Seascap in Tasmania. The Tasmania SOG trained officer publicly named by my colleague as 'Rick or perhaps Mick' being the controller inside Seascap during the siege, and from New Zealand news reports at the time and his testimony under oath before the Commission inquiring into the shooting of Joe Gilewicz, I believe he was present at the massacre crime scene of Aramoana...

To the Police Negotiator Sgt Terry McCarthy, Martin volunteered, that under the bed in an upstairs bedroom he had "*some explosives um it's actually not nitroglycerine um what's that other one round plastic um gelignite is it?*" But still it must be stated, Martin expresses no intention of burning the cottage and no suggestion of a desire to use this, "*round plastic um gelignite,*" with its alleged "*made in China...*" label (Court Doc). But Sgt Terry McCarthy's support team picking up on Martin's comment in passing, regarding throwing firearms outside, had McCarthy convert a notion into a firm undertaking that "Jamie" should, "throw them [the firearms] outside" to which "Jamie" responded, "Good idea." No rage exposed here.

None of the DPP's suggestions with regard to the fate of either of the weapons contain logic and there exists no evidence to support their synopsis what-so-ever as to why the FN was *physically* destroyed. Police avoided this subject during the interrogation of Martin Bryant also, why? The DPP alleged the FN FAL was destroyed in a "rage", while plain photographs show the FN was placed *with deliberate care* to ensure the firearm would be recovered by police.

As Mr. Perks explains Police recovered the FN FAL "lying in the gutter [of] the balcony roof...of a small cottage to the south of the main residence," and well away from the Colt's resting place



Approximate time 1200 hrs
29.04.96 Seascope:
The damaged FN-FAL still in the
gutter awaiting recovery...

(see *APJ* at p.216 & Court Doc., at p.189/5-11). But he fails to explain **when** it was recovered, and why it took police **five-and-a-quarter** hours to locate it! But, where the alleged integral Redfield scope and mounts located? After all, the scope and mounts were claimed by the DPP as allegedly *integral parts of this particular FN FAL rifle*. Mr. Perks explanation to Cox C.J. of where the FN FAL was "discovered" is at least unhelpful, but was the evidence intentionally so? It was 4 years and 4 months before the DPP's little diversion would be publicly exposed.

Before we leave this particular point, no scope mounts, taped fixing holes etc, are integral with the original FN FAL rifle. Hence scope mount manufacturers who produce mounts suitable for the FN FAL rifle, require that the bolt cover be replaced with the scope-mount manufacturers' own replacement bolt cover, which has a "base" integral in the cover and it is to such a base, the scope rings clamp hold the scope sight in zero. No such modified bolt cover is shown in any of the published photographs within the articles authored by Sergeant Gerard Dutton.

However, in the March 24 2001 edition of *New Idea* magazine at pp.24-25 an article was published which was an adaptation of a much earlier interview central to this article entitled, "*The story that was never told*". I'm caused to wonder if the editor was aware just how appropriate the title turned out to be!

This article refers almost exclusively to the untold story of one of the surviving victims of the Broad Arrow Café, Carolyn Loughton and her daughter Sarah who died there in the Café. But ironically (or deliberately?) in this publication, a most [revealing photograph](#) appears (see thumbnail below), which either clarifies or confuses even further where and when the FN FAL was located by Police at Seascope.



Media bussed from Hobart via
Taranna to the Tollbooth and
Seascope on Monday am

Captured there on record in the roof gutter of the porch (*not a balcony*) on the eastern side of the cottage adjacent and to the south-east (Craig Harwood states to the "east") of the smouldering ruins of the main Seascope cottage and approximately 8'6"-9' above the common ground level, lies the FN FAL rifle, with its light orange-coloured furniture of fore-end, butt-stock and leather sling visible and with a 20 shot straight pressed steel magazine in battery. But where's the scope sight and mounts?

As a result of this revelation, when one carefully inspects the photograph as published at the bottom of page 211 of the December 1998 *APJ*, the FN FAL is just discernible in that same porch roof's gutter centre of the photograph. So the FN FAL was there, while what appears to be a plain clothed Police officer stands several rungs off the ground on a ladder supported by the same cottage's western eve, while six of his colleagues stand about below him.

Now I would point out that we are told the media entourage was [bussed](#) to Seascope Cottage and permitted to enter the property at 1230 hrs (12:30 p.m.) on Monday April 29. When shadow angles were checked in the *New Idea* photograph at p.24-25, they appear consistent with that time scale. We must take into account the substantially longer shadows exhibited in the photograph published in the *APJ* at p.211 and so I would estimate this particular photograph was captured approximately at about 1400hrs (2.00p.m.), or **two hours** after Paul Brobin must have taken his photograph that was subsequently published in the *New Idea*. These extended shadows confirm the bus load of TV and print media photographers and

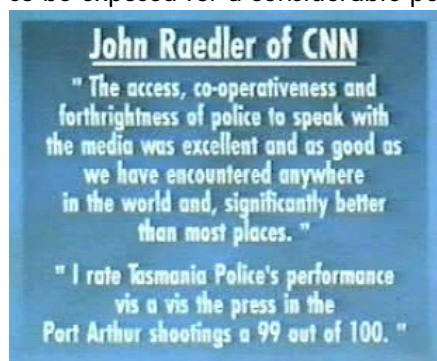
journalists were allowed to wander through this crime scene, among the Firemen, ever before Police had swept the area clean, and recovered all the vital evidence.

No wonder CNN's John Raedler issued his now almost legendary declaration regarding media treatment by Tasmania police. If the various witness statements by Victoria Police and Tasmania Police SOG officers, including Craig Harwood, are to be considered as credible, then it is unreasonable to suggest the FN FAL in question should have been recovered, some time between 0840hrs (8:40 a.m.) at which time Martin Bryant was formally arrested by Constable Paul Hawkins at Seascope, and no later than 1030hrs (10:30 a.m.) at which time Detective Sergeant Morrison ordered all SOG's to withdraw to the holding area.

Why did police not recover the FN FAL until after the media were given their guided tour? Obviously it overlooked in the SOG's sweep for weapons. Also importantly, the FN FAL rifle is definitely there in the gutter at 1230 hrs and still there at around 1400hrs (2.00 p.m.) on 29 April; why? Several police other than the SOG Sgt Fogarty are obviously being yet again less than truthful in their statements...

I would also make this point: the FN FAL there in the porch roof gutter as *large as life*, published in colour, in this national magazine for all the readers to see, but incredible as it may seem, its presence was not mentioned at all by either the article's author Debi Marshall, the photographer Paul Broben or the editor, nor is it mentioned in the company's photographic library. I wonder if the FN FAL was ever spotted by *New Idea* staff?

The DPP expects the public to believe as the Court did that FN FAL, said to have been 'destroyed in anger,' was carefully placed in the roof gutter in the hours of darkness unobserved by any of the SOG officers? So who did place the FN FAL in the gutter? Think on this: from the audio tapes between "Jamie" and Police Negotiator Sgt. Terry McCarthy, we are told how "Jamie" was quite aware of Police SOG officers using "state-of-the-art" night vision optics, and even quite close to the cottage, so how did someone from inside Seascope become invisible to these well equipped SOG officers, to place with care this rifle there in the roof gutter, and the AR15 at the cottage's perimeter, both requiring the person or persons to exit the building and so be exposed for a considerable period of time?



An unprecedented endorsement of police accommodation for a huge media contingent and their network's ratings-driven desires by CNN's John Raedler commenced.

Imagine if you will Martin Bryant creeping around the open courtyard, stepping onto the porch veranda, drawing himself to his full height of around 5' 11" and while holding onto the porch post with one hand, stretching to his limit, to slide the FN FAL rifle up and away from him into the end of the roof's gutter and doing all of this unobserved by any of the SOG officers in the police cordon with their night vision equipment? This episode is just too crazy for words. For I have attempted to repeat that manoeuvre myself, and at 5' 10" and fully extended, from the ground my reach was short by at least 18"-2' and so I could not have placed the FN FAL in the gutter and neither could Martin Bryant. To do so would have involved a second party to assist him, unless of course the rifle was placed there before the siege

Now when the FN FAL rifle was retrieved, it was found to have suffered "considerable impact damage indicative of being struck with force against a hard object" (see *APJ* at p.219) and a considerable number of the rifle's parts were "never found", but importantly the barrel was "bent noticeably towards the left" (see *APJ* at p.220). One part which is not listed missing but does not appear in the photograph or the PTV tape is the FN FAL's carry handle.

Please remember that forensic evidence was never presented to the Court, proving that the damaged FN FAL #G3434 was the firearm that delivered the bullet that killed Zoe Hall as she sat in the white Toyota Corolla, parked on the driveway of the Port Arthur General Store. In fact, no evidence was ever presented to the Court, which proved this FN FAL was the 7.62mm firearm used in the Port Arthur shootings. Consequently, G3434 could well have been prepared for its role and subjected to "impact damaged" elsewhere and even before the shooting ever began. If the FN FAL had been damaged at Seascapes during the siege would not the Police crime-scene investigators have recovered at least *some* of its missing parts there?

Consider also the natural way for a person to swing that FN FAL against "a hard object" to destroy or render it inoperable. I submit the person would grasp the rifle by the muzzle end, dictated by the weight distribution (one does not pick up a base ball bat by the heavy end). So the butt would be away from you, natural underside down (magazine pistol-grip and sling), and then it would be swung hard against a substantial vertical object so as contact would be made in the magazine area, the weakest section of the rifle. Here a quite remarkable reality comes to light. If this did occur, it could be easily proven whether or not a left-handed person damaged the FN FAL, as the barrel was bent to the left. Try replicating this experiment for yourself. I wonder if Rick or Mick is left or right handed?

Of interest is other information I received from a credible source that the FN FAL was not "discovered," laying in the gutter of "the balcony roof" or indeed the porch roof as is shown in the *New Idea* article. As I have indicated His Honour, Chief Justice Cox, and Mr. Perks have not delivered to the public the truth of the matter. So was the FN FAL actually discovered by a fireman in a ditch nearby? If this is the case, did someone see a need to relocate the FN FAL and have it remain there for long enough so that the media could "unintentionally" prove for the court by photographic evidence, that the FN FAL was not discovered in the wrong place? Like the spent case placed under the arm of a deceased Alannah Mikac in Jetty Road by person or persons unknown, the anomalies surrounding the FN FAL again calls into question the DPP's case against the accused as sustainable.

We must now consider yet another rifle recovered by police in their sweep of the grounds. Acting Sgt Craig Harwood of Victoria Police SOG in his statement tells us, **"A further rifle was located on the grass to the north of the cottage."** But no one wants to volunteer a description of the "rifle" and as you read on, you may be able to grasp the reason why.

From a number of independent and reliable Tasmanian sources, all of whom obtained their information first hand from serving Tasmania Police, I have been made aware of details of the rifle Harwood mentions in his statement. I was informed the firearm was a "Heckler & Koch sniper rifle". After Victoria Police SOG had been withdrawn from Seascapes on the morning of 29 April, they were returned to Hobart and debriefed whereupon some were provided hospitality in the homes of Tasmania Police SOGs, also having just been stood-down from duty. My informant told me the origin of the information came from a host of one of these billeted Victoria Police SOG officers.

Now it was at this point, information collected earlier in the course of our investigation began to throw some light on just why it was that certain people in the Victorian firearms trade and Victoria police who'd stepped into the media spotlight on the subject of firearms movements in that state, suddenly exhibited a reluctance to provide frank open answers on the subject.

While unable to corroborate some of the following information, with the witness to these private conversations understandably now very ill at ease to expand on their statements, I do believe the story as I understand it should be put on the record for you to consider. My decision has been influenced especially by earlier mentioned revelations that centre on Victoria, gun dealers and disposal of police firearms.

Now to get down to some specifics here: my research shows that back when Victoria Police had the ear of premiers like "Dick" Hamer, requests for equipment were usually taken care of as a priority. But over the period with John Cain (Jnr) at the helm (he resigned suddenly in August 1990) and his successor Joan Kirner, fiscal rationalism translated into 'No. you can't have it'. At the end of the 1980's Victoria Police's SOG unit was well equipped with a number of Heckler and Koch marksman police special rifles in their armoury. Specifically, they had a number of H&K PSG-1 7.62 (NATO) [Sniper Rifles](#) with integral scope and mounts.

But either Cain or Joan Kirner, really put the "squeeze" on the police budget. Desperate to



Heckler & Koch PSG-1, 7.62 NATO Sniper rifle: this 'Police Special' version, weighs 14 lb, has as optional a Hensoldt 10x optical sight & a 3 lb trigger pull.

update other vital equipment and with funds denied them, ingenuity or initiative came into play; the answer lay with selling-off some of the police "farm" ... in the form redundant firearms, including a number of PSG-1 rifles, there being at that time no 'war on terror'. The PSG-1's were then valued at approximately \$2,000 - \$4,000

trade. So sometime during the period of 1987-91, along with a considerable number of other firearms, a number of H&K PSG-1's were 'sold to a Victorian licensed firearms dealer' and ended up on the tables at Tasmanian gun shows.

In fact, my source claimed to have personally seen "at least three H&K Sniper Rifles sold to end-user-collectors in Tasmania from a Hobart gun-show," shortly before the 1996 massacre at Port Arthur. So as the uniform national gun laws took effect after May of 1996 this class of rifle was included on the "prohibited" list. I learned that one of these Tasmanian end users, at the time residing in Tasmania's north, boasted to my informant when he surrendered his PSG-1 rifle in the 'buy-back', he "received compensation of \$16,000" and so he'd "doubled his original outlay".

Now back to Seascope: My source informed that when the Victoria Police SOG spotted the H&K Sniper Rifle lying on the grass at Seascope that Monday morning, he told his host later that he 'couldn't believe his eyes' when he recognised the rifle by some damage marks on it as being his personal H&K rifle, earlier allocation to him when he was an SOG officer in Victoria Police, and which had been disposed of by Victoria SOG Police some time earlier. So let me ask the question

Did in fact Act Sgt Craig Harwood (the Vic. Pol. SOG), accompanied at the time by Snr. Sgt. Morrison and Sgt. Hayes (the latter two now retired officers, are featured in the Update "Ten Years on etc" later in this work), recognise or even identify the mystery "further rifle...located on the grass to the north of the cottage", as formerly the sniper's rifle, allocated to him by Victoria Police?

If this should be the case it then prompts some rather awkward questions of a number of persons in the Tasmania Police and Justice system, does it not? Is this the reason everyone from Tasmania Police's Forensic Firearm Examiner, the DPP and, radiating out to the then Commissioner of Victoria Police, even a couple of Victorian licensed gun dealers - the whole lot of them - are demonstrably reluctant to provide straight answers to questions about certain centrefire military-style-firearms that earlier passed through the hands of Victoria Police to a certain Victorian licensed gun dealer and on to end users in Tasmania?

But is it then also possible the former SOG officer "Rick" or "Mick" the controller inside Seascope was the culprit in charge of the cache of firearms including "the further rifle"? To me it at least seems entirely logical; after all this person is a self confessed trained weapons specialist.



Sikorsky UH-60 Blackhawk

But like the change in the MV Bundeena's schedule it seems to me the H&K PSG-1 also slipped under their radar...

The above scenario also reminds me again of the Colt AR15 SP-1 .223Rem Carbine that was handed to Victoria Police, and so it heightens the probability ten-fold I believe that this firearm did play some part in this whole police fiasco. But now we must deal with another aspect of the siege which dominated much of the

conversation between Martin Bryant and the Police negotiator Sgt Terry McCarthy; the HELICOPTERS.

In the audio transcript of the conversation, the subject of helicopters is raised first at page 2, with the term used 47 times in the next 48 pages, with a total of 58 pages in all in the Seascope McCarthy/Jamie transcript; that's a preoccupation second to none in the entire conversation between these two people!

When the transcript is examined and with regard to these helicopters it becomes obvious, one is also reminded of the statement attributed to Constable Pat Allen who mentions that helicopters were operating all night:

*"...you couldn't see the choppers, but they were going back and forth all night ...it must have been like what it was in [Vietnam](#)."*¹ (wav)

We are told in the court documents and the EMA papers that at the time 'no helicopters based in Tasmania were capable of night operations'. Further more, these same papers tell us that the contractor Helicopter Resources, while 'operating several other machines from Hobart ... it is not uncommon for three or four machines to be available in Hobart but only one pilot'.² So were these helicopters referred to by Const Pat Allen, part of the Army's fleet of [Black Hawk](#) helicopters attached to 5 Aviation Regiment, Townsville?

Importantly all these rotary-winged air-craft required pilots licensed to fly them and rotary-wing pilots are scarce it seems, in Tasmania at the time. But with regard to the Townsville based Blackhawk fleet, this is the same group that just 44 days *after* the Seascope siege was concluded, and on the night of 12 June 1996, lost two of their Black Hawk helicopters in a fatal crash. The two choppers collided at 60-90 knots some 70km north-west of Townsville at around 6.53p.m., plunging 50 metres to the ground and exploding in flames resulting in the deaths of 17 elite troopers (including members of the SAS Regiment), and severely injuring 11 other personnel.³

Rumours have persisted from various northern based sources - even 9 years on from this crash - alleging the pilot out of 'helicopter No.1' was dead 'before the aircraft hit the ground'. Recently this allegation was confirmed as "credible" by two people; one a troubled "whistle-blower" from out of the intelligence community and the other a former military officer from Townsville. One early report into the crash mentioned the term 'accidental discharge' (AD's) as being the cause. However, I would point out, the SAS personnel do not use the fault-prone F88 Steyr, subject of many such AD-inquiries since this firearm was adopted as the ADF's individual weapon (IW).

While this author is not prepared to suggest this accident is in anyway linked to the psychopolitical massacre at Port Arthur, I can confirm some quite strange, but energetic attempts to steer this investigation towards an incarcerated felon occupying a cell at the time in a Perth goal since the early 1990s and later convicted of serious crimes; but realistically it was a deliberate ruse. This male felon was simply too old to be the gunman, as he was 34 years-of-age at the time of the massacre. So I have chosen to include this for no other reason but to allow you to consider the material and make up your own mind.

All of the emergency helicopters in Tasmania had completed their ferrying operations of injured victims to Hobart and terminated their flight operations before failing twilight, bearing in mind that according to meteorological information, sunset that evening occurred precisely at 1715 hrs (5.15p.m.) at Seascope on the evening of 28th April 1996.

We are told in various documents (including Mike Bingham's *Suddenly One Sunday*), that there were **no helicopters in Tasmania equipped and certified for night flight operations on the evening of the 28-29th April – NONE** – other than a number of the Australian Army's Sikorski UH-60 Blackhawk helicopters that coincidentally just happened to have been brought there from the mainland some time before that Sunday evening.



The OH-6 in early US-Army colours

But there is yet another possibility, and I ask the question; "Were there any military [OH-6](#) or AH/MH-6 "Little Bird" type helicopters in Tasmania on that same evening?" You see I have been informed by a reliable Vietnam veteran that a number of his veteran friends witnessed up to six of these helicopters airborne in various locations, including the Sorell district shortly before and after the Port Arthur incident. Like the large dual rotor Chinook also seen as partaking in the same exercise in the same area, all were painted a dull mat-black suggestive of a paint having a radar absorbent ability.

But regarding the Blackhawk helicopters, is it not yet another most fortuitous coincidence? I'm caused to wonder have the Blackhawk helicopters ever been across Bass Strait since April of 1996. Especially taking into account the fact that the entire Blackhawk fleet that were initially modified with long-range fuel tanks fitted (for extended flights), which directly lead to escalating maintenance problems that have over the years been brought to the knowledge of the general public. One other consideration should be made here. The EMA report tells us that it was always difficult to secure helicopter pilots on a Sunday, but also just by another stroke of luck (?) authorities were able to secure the services of no less than **three pilots**, but unfortunately they don't enlighten us from where they were drawn at such short notice.

Is it possible that perhaps a couple (or all three) of the pilots just happened to be some of SAC-PAV "helpers" from the Defence Forces? Although there is no doubt that military helicopters with night flying capabilities, operated over the Tasman Peninsula on the night of 28-29th April, should our investigations to establish the origin and type of these aircraft, possibly be focused further a field, say a source other than that of the Australian Military?

It seems quite logical really, that the three mystery pilots were sourced from the military when it is pointed out that the three pilots received **no public recognition whatsoever** for the vital role they played in the evacuation of survivors to Royal Hobart Hospital for emergency, lifesaving treatment. This is a quite stark fact, when you consider the media's appetite to promote and reward such selfless acts in today's politically correct regime. Media and PR entities never miss an opportunity to promote the striking of medals, issuance of certificates, and holding of "ticker-tape" parades and such at the drop of a hat!

Without wanting to heighten speculation, in investigating this act of terrorism which was the shooting massacre at Port Arthur, I have been forced already to widen my search boundaries by the source of two of the identified firearms: both were of European manufacture, and more common to America. It was unquestionably intended that Martin Bryant was to take the Dutch manufactured AR-10 ·308W Carbine to the Peninsula that Sunday. But this firearm had been retained by Terry Hill, for repair inadvertently taking it out of circulation, and this simple departure from "plan" to police interrogators was an obvious nuisance. The FN FAL ·308W rifle was also of European manufacture. Both these models are in truth rare firearms for this country.



The AH/MH-6

Even Andrew Fisher, of ABC-TV's "late news" on 28 April 96 says in reference to the containment of the shooter/shooters at Seascope, that the cottage now is "surrounded by Army & Special Weapons people..."



Should we have to consider even the possibility of specialist personnel being whisked away in the dead of night to cover their tracks? One must be aware such specially equipped rotary-winged aircraft as the Sikorsky UH-60 Blackhawk could I'm told if required, range as far as Antarctica via the ASIO base on Macquarie Island; it is of course the shortest (covert) [route](#) to the American continent. But that is the stuff of '*conspiracy theory*' and I prefer to stick to evidence collected by dogged investigation, which has uncovered a conspiracy of considerable dimension and there is

defiantly no theory in that finding!

There is just one other firearm that I must mention, which was certainly there in a cottage at Seascope. In the sworn witness statement of Donald Gunn, taken by Police on 15 May 1996, he makes it very clear that some time after 9.30 a.m. on Sunday the 28th, at which time, after two guests that they had sat at breakfast with (the mysterious "Julie" and "Virginia" from Sydney) had departed, David Martin gave Donald Gunn and wife Stephanie a guided tour, "through a cottage that was being built", one and the same cottage that on Monday afternoon police allegedly recovered the FN FAL from out of its roof gutter over the porch. So while on this "tour" Donald Gunn says he, *"...went into the pump room to have a look. Leaning against the left hand wall was a rifle."* He goes on to explain that earlier David Martin had mentioned that, *"...he shoots feral cats that come onto the property, as they kill the bird-life."*

Curiously the Police fail to mention this firearm at all in their interview with Martin Bryant. Why? Police ignore this firearm as if it never existed, just as they did the H&K Sniper Rifle.

End Notes

¹ Ellen Winnett, "Port Arthur – Untold Stories," *The Mercury*, 26nov96

² Co-authored by Morgan, P. Morgan, A. O'brien & G. Lennox, *Ambulance Perspective*, EMA papers, p.31

³ *Sydney Morning Herald* 13.7.96 @ p.

Building the Crown's Case

Chapter 14

Eyewitness identification of a felon from police-constructed photo identification boards (i.e. mug-shots) is **inadmissible evidence in a court of law**. At least this was in place in 1996. Today one is not entirely certain just what statutes and procedures, traditional in our justice system are survivors under present political vandalism. But certainly as I understand it a witness still must be prepared to point out an accused before the court, a reality surely lost on many in the general public, whose raucous cries for blood often drown out the voice of reason. Martin Bryant is a case in point.

The DPP's case against [Martin Bryant](#) compiled from evidence collected and assembled by the special Port Arthur task force of Tasmania Police was willingly promoted as based on "solid" eyewitness evidence to a imprudent public by the ghoulish media, subservient to agendas that snigger at principles that hold to maxims such as 'innocent until proven guilty'. The case against Martin Bryant was in a word - weak. As I have intimated elsewhere in the narrative, from out of the mouths of Tasmania Police, material collected by them was devoid of empirical evidence linking Martin Bryant with any of the shooting deaths inside the Broad Arrow Café crime scene, even when buttressed by the 'mug-shot' board.



Martin Bryant, the 28-year-old of Hobart in Tasmania: sacrificial lamb in an evil conspiracy that enveloped a nation

If this is the position with the 20 shooting deaths inside the Café, what of the other 15 Port Arthur murders? It then should come as no surprise that the arm of the establishment's Federal Justice Department in Tasmania, the Department of Public Prosecutions (DPP) was in my opinion quite desperate to avoid a protracted, unyielding defence of the accused, especially using evidence that may have established "reasonable doubt" in the minds of jurors. But through protracted manoeuvring, there was no trial - just a sentencing hearing. Oh how fortunate for the DPP!

How providential for the establishment hoi polloi that their collective minds of vast legal and worldly experience could be brought to bear on the mind of (psychologically speaking) an "eleven-year-old" Martin Bryant. How fortunate he should yield to the charm of a senior counsel and embrace a life of incarceration, when he changed his plea to one of "Guilty" on 30 October 1996? This single act, ensured there would be no trial by jury, just the sentencing hearing.

In the Court Document, Mr. Bugg QC suggests that in a short period leading up to the Port Arthur incident, Martin Bryant visited various "gun shops in Hobart" (see Court Doc p.52/19) and purchased in "October or November of 1993 an AR-10" — 30 months prior to the incident, from out of a Newspaper advertisement. If this is what occurred, it then begs the question:

"What has the AR-10, .308W self loading rifle got to do with the damaged Colt AR15 SP-1 .223Rem Carbine (or indeed the smashed and incomplete FN FAL) or the mayhem that ensued at Port Arthur, seeing as how Police retrieved Martin Bryant's Armalite AR10 .308W Rifle

from Terry Hill's Guns and Ammo Gunshop, where it had been left for repair as early as the 24th March 1996 - 35 days prior to the massacre?"



Glen Martin

If the Police were so interested in this particular rifle, why did they ignore almost entirely the arsenal of firearms found in the burnt out ruin of Seascope? Firearms, which [Glen Martin](#) publicly denied as ever having belonged to him or his parents, David or Sally Martin, but which were at least allegedly discharged at police during the siege? Who transported them to Seascope - for Martin did not carry them there, and he was never charged with any associated offence!

I also know and have verified with a witness, that Martin Bryant visited the Hobart "gun-show" on the weekend of the 20-21st April 1996, and my trade source tells me Martin Bryant, *"spoke to him for at least an hour...he wasn't interested so much in modern stuff (i.e. military firearms) on my table, but was fascinated with the antiques. He talked for most of the time about the rolled brass cartridges used in the Martini Henry 450/577 and the like. He's no fool you know, as he's made out to be, but a polite young bloke and his conversation I would have to say was quite intelligent."*

The law is supposed to be common sense...and the Crown's introduction of the AR-10 was only ever done, because they have a problem. They had no empirical evidence to link Martin Bryant with the FN FAL, or the scope-sight they repeatedly attempted to associate with it. Martin Bryant was still adamantly denying having "ever seen that one" as late as page 288 of the Police Record Of Interview (PROI) Court Document. It becomes obvious the AR-10 was only ever entered into evidence because of the prosecution's pathetic attempt to make the flimsiest of connections between the FN FAL and AR-10; both firearms sharing a common calibre of .308Win!

This I believe is nothing more than the old ploy of guilt by association. The AR-10 is the *first weapon identified* by Mr. Bugg Q.C., (see court Doc., at p.53/2) and it still is being mentioned at least at page 276 of the PROI Court Document **even although the AR-10 had a 35 day water-tight alibi!** Damien Bugg's exercise in this regard was to succeed in blurring the evidence further and insulting the intelligence of a generally firearm-ignorant public.

On page 54/4-5 of the Court Document it is claimed Bryant stated that "he had purchased elsewhere...an AR15," but at p.203-4 of the PROI Court Doc., and after Paine referred to the firearm on the floor as a "point two two three calibre" which he said we "recovered," Paine then asks, Q. "Ahh, from ahh, I believe ahh, from a repairer, being repaired...Does that ring any bells?" To which Bryant replies, "That one was repaired for me, that other one, that AR10...that, I took that over to Terry Hill." Responding, Paine excuses, "Ohh, so I've got them confused." Can you see the distraction being created here? But truthfully, Paine didn't even confuse intellectually impaired Martin Bryant...

It was earlier that Warren had asked Bryant, Q. "Have you ever had a three O eight?" - [i.e. a .308"] A. *"Three O eight, yes. Had a three O eight...That was one Terry Hill was repairing,"* - (Court Doc., PROI at p.202). So here Bryant readily admits to owning a .308W calibre firearm, an AR-10 .308W, and he did not confuse this firearm with the Colt AR15 .223 Rem Carbine or indeed any FN FAL which he stated he'd never seen before.

Bryant freely admitted to having purchased and owned three firearms: 1.) the Daewoo 12 ga. self-loading shotgun recovered from the boot of his Volvo abandoned at the Tollbooth, 2.) a Colt AR15 Carbine in .223 Rem and, 3.) the Armalite (incorrectly referred to as a "Colt") AR10 .308Win Carbine handed to Police by Terry Hill. But I should point out that interestingly,

Martin Bryant did not actually ever admit to owning the individual Colt AR-15 SP-1 Carbine shown to him by Police, which they recovered from the perimeter of the Seascope cottage. With regard to the 'arsenal' of firearms at Seascope, "Jamie" was recorded in the Seascope phone conversations, and @ p.9 of the transcript where he confirms that he, "...only owned a couple of guns.." and that "...all these other guns are here and everything."

We now need to deal with the other side of the story concerning the licensed firearms dealer Terry Hill. When Martin Bryant walked into the *Guns & Ammo* store on 24 March 1996, muzzle-first over the counter he shoved a bundle; a towel-wrapped Dutch manufactured AR10 7.62Nato rifle. Routinely, every firearm that came over Terry Hill's counter attracted a safety inspection, and on this occasion to his horror he discovered not only 17 live soft-point sporting rounds in the magazine, but also a live round in the chamber!

An outraged Terry Hill told me he of his shock and reacted by scolding the customer, "***Why are you carrying this thing around loaded!?***" Whereupon the young man responded by producing a valid firearms licence, endorsed for, "prohibited and fully automatic weapons". But the licence was in the name of "Martin Ryan". During the interview I learned that Bryant had made several subsequent visits to Guns & Ammo, purchasing three gun cases on Wednesday April 24, and later (possibly Friday 26th), three boxes of 12ga shotgun shells. But strange as it may seem, Police have never made any attempt to uncover who supplied Martin Bryant with his forged licence ...

Two days after the massacre and on Tuesday 30 April, Terry Hill read the front fold-out page of *The Mercury* with fully exposed face captioned: "***This Is the Man ... Martin Bryant 28***". He thought they had the name wrong, but positively identified the photograph as that of his customer with the Armalite rifle left for repair, Martin Ryan. So Hill phoned Police and spoke to Const Hortele volunteering information regarding the identity, movements and firearm details concerning the male featured on the Mercury's front page, telling the constable he believed this person was the holder of a firearm licence in the name of 'Martin Ryan' who'd left his Armalite AR10 ·308W rifle at the *Guns & Ammo* gun shop for repair. Now another important point also needs to be made here.

You may remember that around 1.10 p.m. on the morning of 28 April, Martin Bryant visited his acquaintance of 15 years, Roger Larner who lived on Palmers Lookout Road near Port Arthur. As he alighted from his distinctive yellow 244 GL Volvo, Roger Larner at first failed to recognise his old acquaintance as since last they had met, Martin had grown his hair long, an experience repeated by another witness early that morning, who'd known Bryant previously as a customer; Angelo Kessarios proprietor of Midway Point News Agency.

I have also been able to confirm that Martin only began growing his hair long in June of 1994. Consequently, as Bryant had produced to Terry Hill a (laminated) **photo ID Gun License** bearing the name of **Martin Ryan**, it must have been forged quite recently and long after June of 1994 for instance, as the photo showed the subject to have long blonde hair. So after Terry Hill's phone call to Police that Tuesday 30 April, he went to Police HQ and surrendered the Armalite AR10 rifle, serial number #1590, to Const Hortele, receiving a police receipt.

With formalities out of the way he was thanked sincerely for his public spirited cooperation by the constable and was escorted below, to inspect the yellow Volvo in the police property security compound, but alas no one could find a key to the gate. However while there at the mesh gate, Terry pointed out to Const Hortele, Martin Bryant's **grey wallet** still sitting there **on the dash-board of the Volvo sedan**; the same wallet from which Martin Ryan had removed his firearm licence when he deposited the Armalite AR10 for repair on 24 March. However the attitude of Police was shortly to somersault as soon as the Port Arthur Task Force was formed, to carry police investigations forward.



Armalite AR-10 7.62 NATO rifle

Hesman informed Terry Hill he was calling from Bellerive police station, suggesting that police had information that Terry Hill allegedly at one time owned a Dutch manufactured [AR-10](#), then amending his position by asking Terry if he was related to an Andrew Hill, suggesting that the firearm Terry had surrendered to Police just two days earlier on 30 April. It seems police may well have had this conversation with Terry Hill on a speaker phone, as very audible and certainly above the other background chatter Terry heard clearly a different male voice interject saying, "*Oh, no, no, no, not related.*" [AR10-A2_rifle](#)

About Thursday 2 May, Terry was behind the counter of his gun shop, when a phone call came in from a police officer attached to the Task Force, who identified himself as Peter Hesman. This is one and the same as the SOG officer referred to as "Detective Hesman" by his colleague Inspector John Warren in his proof of evidence statement.



Armalite AR-10 A2 .308W rifle: identified by eyewitness as identical to the rifle used by the poked-faced, stocky, gunman inside the Broad Arrow Café to critically wound him.

After careful thought and checking of his register, Hill was able to inform police that this same Armalite rifle had been earlier deposited "on consignment" for sale by commission *at Guns & Ammo*, by a Mr Andrew Hill who at the time allegedly worked as a cameraman for ABC-TV and was no relation to Terry Hill the gun shop proprietor. Some weeks before the rifle was returned for repair by Bryant on 24 March `96, Andrew Hill had collected the rifle, allegedly telling Terry Hill, "I've found a private buyer," with Terry reminding the customer to be sure he fulfilled his obligation of ensuring his 'private buyer had the correct licence' before he handed the rifle over.

Terry Hill also alleges that he later discovered this same former owner, **the other "Mr Hill"**, enjoyed a close friendship with a certain policeman and allegedly used to regularly shoot his AR10 with this policeman-friend, other members of the SOG and members of the Naval Reserve at a local police firing range.

So it is not so hard to understand why perhaps Terry Hill soon felt the heavy hand of authority, via a blatant conspiracy, and a criminal attempt to coerce or intimidate Terry Hill, via a co-conspirator - his own solicitor at the time incidentally - Mr. John Avery. For Avery attempted to have Terry Hill falsely admit to having sold firearms to Martin Bryant in the first instance, and even this very same AR10, 7.62NATO rifle.



Page 1 of Avery letter to Terry Hill: click on [both links to read all.](#)

certain they did not, and more on this point later. But when their intimidation failed to

This deplorable conspiracy and attempted coercion, instigated by the Tasmania Police were even blatantly confirmed in a [two page letter](#) bearing the [signature](#) of John Avery of Moonah. Dated 6 June 1996 this correspondence was addressed to Mr. Terrance Hill, at his home address - not his *Guns & Ammo* business address. It can be said police enthusiastically engaged in this conspiracy, even although they knew full well the Armalite AR10's movements had only ever implicated Terry Hill, because the firearm was legally held on the premises on two occasions: once when owned by Mr Andrew Hill and once when owned by Martin Ryan.

But did the police ever investigate the matter thoroughly and question Andrew Hill who owned the AR-10 previous to Martin Bryant? I'm quite

intimidate Terry Hill to perjure himself, they changed their angle of attack, instigating a snap inspection of his premises in June of 1997, which lead police to revoke Hill's Gun Dealer's license, forcing him to close-down *Guns & Ammo* forthwith. Police then provided spurious reasons to formally refuse to issue a dealers' license in his wife's name which effectively denied the family even a livelihood! With "advice" metered-out by such "principles" justice surely is a pipe dream. John's *Bryant original crayon* worthy investment, but just a pity the prisoner's Mum can't realise its value to lighten her burden of the caravan daily grind. Wonder if John is still her legal counsel?

In a newspaper report Mr. Geoff Easton for Tasmania Police in a pathetic attempt to explain away the mystery of the forged firearms licence stated, "... according Tasmania Gun Registry, no licence had been issued in the name of Martin Bryant or Martin Ryan." ¹ But is the Commissioner's Media manager Geoff Easton daring to claim it even is believable that a diligent investigation would have discovered a **forged licence listed in the Tasmania Police's Gun Registry?** Also we must consider a rather obvious coincidence: take the first and last letters from Martin's surname of "Bryant", we are left with "Ryan". Now that is convenient when a forger is pressed for time I would think.

The article goes on to explain that on one occasion when Bryant was in the Guns & Ammo shop, Martin had told Terry Hill that, *"his solicitor had organised the paperwork for him so that he could obtain a licence."* And, who was the Bryant family Solicitor at the time? Well, we are certainly informed that John Avery acted for Martin's mother, Carleen Bryant. As well we are informed that Mr Avery acted for Martin, after David Gunston stood aside and so I believe it can be said, metaphorically speaking, Mr Avery wore a number of "hats" - legally.

It is a sad fact - not confined to Tasmania Police - that when under pressure from an outraged public and stirred on by an enthusiastic "gun control" network, the media and politicians for "a result" at any price, all too often police officers make blunders. But in my opinion "blunder" is not the proper term in this instance. For the suggestion that Terry Hill supplied Martin Bryant with the firearms or indeed any firearm rested on police obtaining evidence to prove the fact. They could not, as no evidence existed and so they chose to employ the most reprehensible tactics imaginable against an innocent man to gain an advantage.

It was bad enough that Police resorted to such unprofessional and unlawful actions in the first place, but to then like spoilt brats deprived of getting their way, go and destroy a man's livelihood: that is quite reprehensible! But, Terry Hill's problems didn't stop there. Hardly had Terry Hill time to catch his breath, when in July of that same year, a vexatious civil suit was launched in an attempt to prove liability on the part of Terry Hill - accused for a second time - of supplying arms to Martin Bryant.

At the time, it was reported 'the plaintive may seek to subpoena Martin Bryant to appear as a witness'. Apart from the fact the litigation duplicated actions launched in America by "gun control" activists there, the action set precedence in this country. As for Bryant being slated as a witness; I believe that single fact ensured the civil action would never proceed to court. But at the time, Terry Hill wouldn't have been aware of that position. Though it was not until 14 March 1998 - *two long, stressful years* - that *The Mercury* newspaper announced the civil action had been formerly discontinued by Mr Quin, due to "stress". At the time, an undoubtedly also very stressed Terry Hill was reported as calling for a Royal Commission into the whole Port Arthur massacre, including the known false police allegations against him that lead to the Quin action - possibly the first private citizen to do so.



Ten Years On: John W Avery was reported to be writing a book on Martin Bryant. He'll have plenty of time now, as his licence to practise law was revoked 16 May 2006 & his partnership founded in 1976 dissolved. The Law Society of Tasmania has referred the complaint to the DPP for prosecution as he was convicted of Embezzlement of client's monies held in trust.

Neville Quin of Bicheno on Tasmania's Northeast Coast, who launched this Civil Action, had gone to Port Arthur that Sunday with his wife Janette and two other friends. When the gunman exited the Broad Arrow Café, Janette and her husband were standing a short distance from the Café near the Trans Otway bus. It was beside this bus that Janette was firstly shot and injured by the gunman with the Colt AR15 rifle before the gunman recovered the FN-FAL rifle from the boot of the yellow Volvo and returned to shoot her a second time, fatally. The gunman also pursued Neville Quin onto the Trans Otway bus, where he shot and injured Mr. Quin, stating just before he fired the shot, "No-one gets away from me!"

Mr Quinn's civil action against Terry Hill transformed his family's experience into nothing less than a "nightmare vendetta": the action only proceeded on the legal advice of the then Chairman of Tasmania branch of the National Coalition for Gun Control, the rabid "gun control" advocate and Federal Justice Department employed solicitor, Mr. Roland Browne.

This is the same prophetic individual who prior to the Port Arthur massacre stated, for national television viewers on Channel 7, *"We are going to see a mass shooting in Tasmania of the likes you have seen in Strathfield and Hoddle Street, unless we get national gun control laws."*

In my younger days, I spent a long stint as a sales-rep, cold selling for a reputable national company. So by nature I had learned to be a keen observer of human foibles, a practice continued later in my business as a gun dealer, with customers, opposition gun dealers alike. So you can understand I find it just a little curious that so much police attention was directed towards just one gun dealer in Hobart, Terry Hill. In spite of Terry's willing co-operation with police, beginning on Wednesday 1 May, for many months to come, Terry was their target.



Stuart Woods at his gunsmith's work-bench

There is at least another well know licensed firearms dealer in Hobart besides Terry Hill's Guns and Ammo shop. Probably about ten minutes from the city centre [Stuart Woods](#) still operates as a gunsmith/firearms dealer and was reported as telling the Herald Sun's Wayne Jones on Friday 3/5/96, that Martin Bryant had visited his establishment no less than 'twice in the week before the massacre'.

Woods was further reported to have stated Bryant's first visit that week occurred on Tuesday 23 April, when he attempted to purchase an AR15 (i.e. a Colt AR15 223Rem), and was told this model firearm at the time was not available, but would cost him around \$3500 - \$3800. The report continues with Woods claiming Martin Bryant returned for a second visit on Friday morning of April 26 - two days before the massacre. This time he made a request of Woods to repair an Armalite AR10 308W rifle that Bryant claimed was 'missing some parts' and he inferred not having the gun with him at the time. The same report goes on to demonstrate Stuart Woods was aware of considerable alleged movements in that same week before the massacre of Martin Bryant in relation to the firearm and another unnamed gun shop; obviously Terry Hill's Guns & Ammo.²

Recent enquires have prompted a further allegation, regarding the enormously wasteful, costly and hugely unpopular Howard "buy-back" scheme and several prominent people then in Hobart's gun trade. The allegations centre on alleged preferential treatment by the firearm regulatory body in their dealings with two parties. It has been alleged the Don Jones group of Kempton, manufacturers of the AAA range of arms, was able to secure a substantial compensation settlement by submitting 'containers of defective, scrapped, parts' that were subsequently valued by a police approved valuer and compensation paid out. It has been further alleged Stuart Woods secured exclusivity in the greater area of Hobart as the police sanctioned and approved 'firearms valuer'.

However, from this segment of the story a stark fact emerges, which destroys the prosecution's fable of Martin Bryant owning and using a Colt AR15 SP-1 .223Rem Carbine in the Broad Arrow Café at Port Arthur that Sunday; the one subsequently recovered by police from the ashes at Seascope in a damaged state.

You see, Martin Bryant had only reached the stage of attempting to purchase an AR15 on Tuesday 23 April, and obviously he had still had not advanced past attempting to do so when he returned to Woods' gunshop on Friday morning of April 26. Even the title of the Herald Sun's Article - "Desperate bid for a gun", witnesses the desperation of young Martin to obtain this type of firearm. By this stage Bryant's controller must have been more than a little concerned as well, as obviously a part of the plan was going awry. For this is just two days before the massacre and obviously Martin's inquiry as to the immediate availability of parts for the Armalite, demonstrated his helpless predicament: no AR15 223 Carbine, and his only 308 rifle - the Armalite AR10 rifle was laid-up for repair at Terry Hill's Guns & Ammo shop. It was a major spanner in the "gun control" works scheme: both guns cast to play their role as "primary firearms" in what was to be a world class event and both of them were unavailable on the day! I'm thinking there must have been some urgent phone calls or faxes between Tasmania and the mainland about this time...



Pastor Alan Anderson:
During the funeral of
Nanette, Alannah &
Madeline Mikac in
Melbourne, he attacks all
citizens wishing to keep &
bear firearms & their
freedoms.

On that Sunday evening as people gathered in shock, the Peninsula's local Pharmacist, Walter Mikac came to the Historic Site searching for his wife and children. He met and was comforted by his close friend and neighbour the Nubeena GP, Dr Pam Ireland, who introduced him directly into the care of a Church of Christ Pastor, [Allan Anderson](#) from Horsham in the Western District of Victoria, who sidelined as a trauma councillor.

Now one must realise Horsham is 300km from Melbourne; a three and a half hour drive to the domestic terminal of Melbourne Airport to begin with! I'm curious as to how Pastor Anderson was able to arrive in time at Hobart City Airport then to be bussed the 90 km to the Historic Site at Port Arthur along with the first contingent of about 70 Grief Counsellors by the time the Coroner was conducting his walk-through of the Historic Site crime scenes just after 7.30 pm on the Sunday evening! Not only would his bags have had to have been packed in anticipation, but he would have been required to depart Horsham as the first shot was fired inside the Broad Arrow Café!

Incidentally, when it comes to gun massacre counselling, Pastor Anderson has "form": he "counselled" survivors of the 1987 Massacre in Queens Street, Melbourne. It was Anderson in his wisdom that ensured Walter Mikac was shepherded on the Monday morning to witness the grotesque scene on Jetty Road for a viewing the bodies of his wife and two young daughters as they still lay there almost 24 hrs after they had died.

It was this unlikely 'man of the cloth', who exposed himself as more than just a church of Christ pastor, when in an unsolicited phone conversation with a friend of one of the victims he exposed himself as in possession of knowledge that had to have been gleaned from an address book known to have been carried on the victim's person. That address book was never ever returned either. It would be difficult to convince me that the pastor does not number among the 21 plus colleagues who were easily identifiable as *agents provocateurs* proving I would contend that Port Arthur obviously harboured some huge attraction for their ilk on the 28th April 1996.

From an article published by *The Bulletin*, many interesting events that occurred during and after the siege at Seascope cottage on the evening of 28-29 April are confirmed. For instance Dr Ian Sale verifies that he was already present at the Taranna FPCP in the wee small hours of

Monday Morning the 29th April, when Const Garry Whittle was transported to the Police Forward Command Post there from the wet culvert beside the Arthur Highway outside Seascope. Dr Sale must have been a very busy man: Dr Ian was present in the rooms with siege negotiator Terry McCarthy very early on. He also accompanied police on their forced entry raid late that evening on Bryant's Clare St home and then he must have carried on to Taranna and was there for the remainder of the night. After Bryant's arrest, Dr Sale returned to the Royal Hobart Hospital before 1026 hrs, at which time Martin Bryant was admitted to the hospital's ICU suffering category 1 burns. ³

We have never been told of the copious attention of mind manipulation deluged upon Martin Bryant in the weeks and months ahead - until he caved-in and changed his plea to "Guilty". John Avery admitted to 14-15 visits to his cell in Risdon, but of Dr Sale's Risdon sojourns - we can only speculate; could he have topped John Avery? At least though, from the transcripts released to the public in the April 4 2006 edition of *The Bulletin*, we can see the ineffectiveness of psychiatric programming on a subject of such impaired intellect. What a mess they made of it... Clearly, a confused mind when overloaded with information becomes manifestly scrambled with the "new" stories nothing less than *argumentum ad absurdum*.

But returning to Constable Whittle: after he had been earlier rescued by SOG Police, from a gutter beside the Arthur Highway outside Seascope, the constable went off duty, returning to his wife at Dunalley, showered, and went to bed, only to shortly be forced to awaken, rise and take a phone call from his superiors. They summoned him, 'come back you must be debriefed'. Dr Sale tells us he later saw Whittle 'leaning against a wall' at the Taranna PFCP: "That goes against all common sense," Dr Sale was reported as stating.

The Bulletin article goes on to recount just how trauma was amplified for a third time that day in the experience of hundreds of visitors, SES personnel and staff who were held by authorities at the Historic Site that night:

"Workers and visitors - confused, scared, angry, and vulnerable - were herded into group debriefing sessions. Later, Sale interviewed some of them. "They could barely remember anything," he tells *The Bulletin*. "They were so wired up. It was a ludicrous thing to do."

Wendy Scurr told me, "*We were treated just like animals.*" A bowl of water was placed in the middle of the room and a ladle was placed in the bowl. "*We all sat around in a circle. Most of us were as dry as a wooden god, and we had to share the ladle to get a drink. A pet dog strolled in and it shared our bowl of water... it was terrible.*" Among these "herded" people were a considerable number of witnesses; their police statements surely could hardly have survived untainted.

In the weeks that immediately followed the massacre, PAHSMA management redefined the Site maintenance man's job description, and he became with out so much as a shred of training the official on-site 'counsellor'. As his role in the nailing up of *That Door* was never actually dealt with officially, his new role proved a disaster! Mrs Scurr told me recently, that shortly after a visit to his office matters divulged in confidence were repeated word by word to her by two of the staff and with hours of her consolation! She was threatened, that failure to attend sessions would see workers compensation interfered with. Mrs Scurr and other colleagues were outraged and it wasn't too long before Edwards had a sea-change when he secured a position in the employ of Risdon Prison.

In the first fortnight after the massacre, 'a reported 463 counsellors spoke to 1000 people,' prompting Dr Sale to liken this obscenity to 'a public infection control program'. *The Bulletin* article goes on to confirm what has been for this author obvious from my earliest research into the massacre at Port Arthur:

"Now, most experts agree Port Arthur was a high watermark in misguided dogma.

"A Royal Hobart Hospital staff counsellor later complained that some counsellors, whom she tagged "disaster vultures", flew in from interstate despite her urging them not to. She was affronted by their "aggressive" approach, which, she wrote, "added greatly to the tension and stress of an already difficult situation".

"Counsellors will tell you that the zealous push for debriefing may have prevented some victims from developing PTSD. But how do they know? They don't. No one does. There is no consensus on the best form of treatment." ⁴

Before we leave these "disaster vultures", it was 9 May 1996, that Pastor Anderson returned to Melbourne where at the Fawkner Cemetery he preside over the funeral of Nanette, Alannah and Madeline Mikac, whose remains were laid to rest in the Mikac family plot; four generations of the Mikac family are now interred there. Walter buried Nanette in a blood-red coffin, with blood-red lining...

By July of 1996 Walter Mikac officially joined the NCGC, being trundled out onto the podium at all their important East Coast "gun control" rallies, including Hobart. Described by the media as "the man who became the face of the tragedy", he certainly became NCGC's emotional promoter and the *raison d'être* in Australia at least for their global disarmament program called "gun control". During this campaign a television news service reported that Walter was about to marry, as Walter had abandoned the Peninsula and returned to his former home town, the city of Melbourne where he took-up residence.

When the "gun control" network brought 3 couples who were the parents of children who died at Dunblane to Port Arthur and while I can find no request having been made for this visit by survivors, the NCGC used Walter Mikac and friend in a publicity seeking role to attend the [photo-session](#) beside the newly erected Cross memorial.



Scots Visit Port Arthur:
Parents of Dunblane massacre victims at Port Arthur memorial with Walter Mikac standing second from right



Crown Princess Mary of Denmark:
International Patron of the Alannah & Madeline Foundation

Seventeen persons in all died at Dunblane Primary School massacre in Scotland on 13 March 1996: 15 five-year-old primary school children, their teacher Gwenne Mayor and the perpetrator Thomas Hamilton (who suicided).

But the ongoing "gun control" program of private disarmament rolls on. Two years later on August 14, 1998 in Melbourne, Walter presented what was described as, "an inspirational address," to a charity lunch for the *Alannah and Madeline Foundation* which he established to help child victims of crime. During his presentation he told the guests of a "very special woman," at his table, perhaps in an endeavour to quash earlier rumour of 'marriage', revealed to guests as a Prime-TV Channel 7, 'part-time sports reporter,' Kim Sporton of Melbourne. In the first week of April

2000 the couple married in Melbourne.



So there: John Howard MHR, the National Patron of the Alannah & Madeline Foundation.

The credibility of this Foundation was greatly enhanced, when on 13 October 2005, Jen Kelly of *The Sun Herald* reported lovely Danish Crown Princess [Mary](#), herself a former Tasmanian, was "named the international patron of the Alannah and Madeline Foundation" akin to 'royal endorsement'. Seems the foundation's chairman John Bertrand of yachting

fame had invited the Danish Royal to join the group which has as its national patron none other than John Winston [Howard](#).

On the 28 April 2000, the fourth anniversary of the Port Arthur massacre, about 1,000 people were reported to have made a pilgrimage to Port Arthur for the dedication of a memorial pool and garden beside the destroyed and skeletonised Broad Arrow Café. But, as the newspaper's sub-heading commented: "Newlywed Mikac stays away..." ⁵



Port Arthur victim
51 year old
Tony Kistan

Then there was 51-year-old [Tony Kistan](#) who died in the Broad Arrow Café. Kistan was until at least 1982, a notable and enthusiastic political activist in South Africa opposing the apartheid policies of the Botha Government. These revolutionaries were united under the convenient disguise of the Congress of Democrats, founded in 1953, by the Lithuanian Jew, and Colonel in the KGB, the "revolutionary", Joe Slovo a revolutionary "[buddy](#)" of the later black president Nelson Mandela. In 1949 Slovo married his first wife Ruth First, the daughter of the then treasurer of Communist Party of South Africa. From 1963, Slovo was exiled from the country, under the Suppression of Communism Act, and the couple were also banned from attending all public meetings, though Ruth First remained in South Africa to take a hands-on role in running the ANC after 1963.

Two important incidents occurred in 1982:

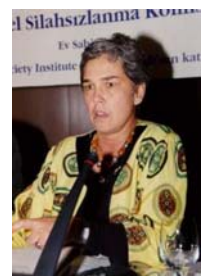
- 1.) With Joe Slovo in Mozambique, a parcel bomb exploded in the building housing the ANC, killing his wife Ruth First, while his future wife Helena Dolny, also in the building at the time, survived unscathed.
- 2.) In Australia in 1982 and with the Hawke Labor Government in power, Tony Kistan along with his wife Sarah and sons Nesan and Adrian fled to Sydney. After the family's arrival we are informed by Major Ray Allen, that Tony, 'became an active member of the Dulwich Hill Salvation Army church movement'.



Yesterday's terrorists
become Today's heroes:
L-R: Nelson Mandela &
Lithuanian Jew & KGB Col. Joe
Slovo,

So in spite of the façade of the Salvation Army, the "Red Shield" seems for Tony Kistan more of an antonym than a paradox. The anti-apartheid movements united by the Congress of Democrats were outwardly at least actively tied to the "gun control" network just as Nelson Mandela's legacy demands to this very day. The case of Tony Kistan appears to be entirely inconsistent; outwardly and at every opportunity he and the family are promoted as devout Christians, But as I understand it, Tony was a Salvation Army employee, not a convert, perhaps a quite convenient arrangement.

The International Individual Disarmament Symposium sponsored by George Soros in Istanbul on 18-19 January 2002 exposed another South African person of interest: Adele Kirsten is this possibly a *typo* or subtle name change from Kistan? Remember, Tony Kistan the former South African we have just dealt with? Adele attended this "gun control" disarmament convention along with guest speakers Rebecca Peters and Philip Alpers incidentally.



Adele Kirsten:
"gun control"
advocate, RSA

We shouldn't be surprised to find Adele [Kirsten](#) is director of the group Gun Free South Africa (GFSA). Along with more than 250 other groups in the "gun control" network, we shouldn't be surprised to find that GFSA has campaigned intensely since the mid-1990s for prohibitions and tougher gun laws in South Africa. In November 2000, the South African Parliament passed the Firearms Control Act, which was a giant shift down the "gun control" path "restricting access to firearms by civilians". Many South Africans among the law-abiding civilians (some

remote farmers) now genuinely fear for their lives in the lawless climate that has burgeoned since the general election in 1994, nevertheless they are now denied firearms to defend their own lives.

As a member of the Facilitations Committee of the Peters-led IANSA in the Republic of South Africa, Kirsten has received numerous honours for GFSA's work in "gun control". In 2000 she was named 'South African Woman of the Year' in the category, of 'media and communications'.

Then there was the American couple, Dennis Olsen, a 54-year-old delivery driver and his wife Mary, a Hallmark greeting-card store manager of Vancouver, in Washington State, America. Mary survived unscathed, while Dennis suffered what were first assessed by Wendy Scurr in the bush behind the Café as "shot-gun wounds," a judgement seconded by ambulance personnel who tended his wounds. Designated wounded victim #P13 in the *WBR* at p.42, he was hospitalised for a day, and his wounds were listed as, "lacerations to the right side of the head, left eye and left chest from secondary fragmentation." It must be remembered the official line had to be maintained due directly to "that door" and the restricted time factor which insisted that the Daewoo shotgun was never discharged, or even "used" at the Historic Site that day.

From *The Nando Times* (30apr96) of the USA, who interviewed Dennis Olsen while he and his wife were still in Hobart, it was reported that Olsen said, *"upon his return, [to America] he probably will get up on a 'soapbox' and talk in even more passionate terms about his long-held belief in gun control,"* an experience plainly Dennis Olsen was not unfamiliar with. Put bluntly, American - Dennis Olsen - was yet another "gun control" activist. Could I be forgiven for suggesting he was yet another "gun control" foot-soldier who that day was deployed and on active duty in the field? On the home front of Tasmania, before and ever since Port Arthur, Roland Browne is quoted *ad nauseam* in Hobart's Mercury, in the "gun control" network's all-out support for the Federal Government's expanding gun prohibition program. The "gun control" activists are not separated by national borders or oceans and NCGC pursues their global agenda in all of Australia at every opportunity still today.

It was the fleet footed Roland Browne I should remind you, who greeted the *first* ABC journalists to arrive at the Hobart Police headquarters media room, to be briefed on the Port Arthur shootings; he beat the press. Roland must surely have ranked important enough in the scheme of things to have been informed by none other than Geoff Easton, after all Easton was the Police Commissioner's own media man. After Browne's earlier well reported, prophetic proclamations, honestly, can that be classed as a "quick" response?

Now back to the Police interview. Importantly, try as the police might, Bryant was adamant about not owning or even having seen the FN FAL before, the second of two primary weapons allegedly used at Port Arthur. In the Court Doc., PROI, at p.196, Bryant willingly acknowledges ownership of the Daewoo shotgun, p.197 and at p.208 he of an AR15 ·223Rem, but importantly not necessarily the one shown him by Police, then at pp.202-204, he acknowledges ownership of an AR10 ·308 Win that he says was *"repairing at Terry Hill"*.

But! At pp.201, 202, 208 and 276, and as late as p.144 of the 146 page PROI, Martin Bryant is still emphatically denying ownership or ever having seen the FN FAL and the scope and mounts Police and the DPP assert were integral with it. Martin Bryant says, (p.201 & 202) *"I've never seen that one before. Never. That's not one of mine"*. And with Warren holding up a scope claimed somehow to be part of the FN FAL, Bryant says, *"No I've never seen that scope before in my life"* (p.208). Again, and with Warren holding up the FN FAL and a scope one more time, Bryant reiterates, *"...No, no, I've never seen that one before. Never."*

Even very early in the PROI at p.107, Warren tries his level best to trip Bryant up, into admitting he *"had those three"* (including the FN FAL) with him in the Volvo that Sunday, to

which Bryant answers, *"I, I had two guns with me, I took for target practicing. I took the shotgun and the little other gun, the Colt,"* and understandably and without legal counsel present, he continues, *"And I must have got that burnt that little, little one in the middle."* One of only two instances where Martin Bryant weakens under a relentless lengthy unlawful interrogation by Police all conducted without his counsel present...

But importantly, police never did establish when and from whom Martin Bryant purchased the "...little other gun, the Colt..." Remember, according to a Mercury article, Martin Bryant was still trying to procure a Colt AR15 .223 firearm from Stuart Wood's gun shop on Friday, 26 April, just *two days before the massacre*. But you will be able to consider a further revelation that I believe goes a considerable way to explaining this reported claim by Stuart Woods, and to exactly where Martin purchased "that little one", his Colt AR15 SP-1 carbine.

But Paine will not let go of the tenuous 'calibre-link' between the FN FAL and the Armalite AR10 rifle. He labours on suggesting to Bryant, *"Now you say you've never seen that three O eight [FN FAL] before but you did in fact own a three O eight."* Bryant answers freely, *"Yeah, definitely...inaudible..., AR10."* And then when questioned as to when he'd purchased his AR-10 .308W he replies, *"...this is going back six, seven years now"* and continues, *"Out of the paper, out of the Mercury."* (Court Doc., PROI at p.202).

I believe I have shown this 'six or seven year' estimation to be somewhat inaccurate on the part of Martin Bryant even a lie. But the window of opportunity for Martin to have made the purchase from Andrew Hill had to be after he had obtained his forged licence, to be sporting his recently grown long blonde hair; so the purchase of the Armalite AR10 7.62 NATO (308W) rifle occurred sometime after June of 1994. But remember for police to have established this date, and the details of previous owner as Andrew Hill would have been quite unhelpful to the whole prosecution's case; the media then may well have been able to have exposed Andrew Hill's alleged policeman-friend and naval reserve friends shooting together on a police shooting range with Martin Bryant.

It would appear Police failed to inform the DPP whether or not they had bothered to check the Guns & Ammo firearm register. For had they checked, they would have discovered contained in Terry Hill's records the details of previous owner, Andrew Hill of Hobart. Also don't forget the extent of persons that could have been deeply implicated in the Terry Hill conspiracy affair. For such a revelation, would have forced them to publicly exonerate firearms dealer Terry Hill and that meant a loss of face and possible exposure of all the conspirators to litigation and even possible criminal prosecution.

So Bryant freely admitted to owning the Armalite AR-10 7.62 NATO rifle. Also with regard to his later response to Paine's question *"Did Mum know you had these guns?"* A. *"Mum never knew, no"*; this means the prosecution believed that even although Martin... ("I'm not that bright," see page Court Doc 207), was nevertheless clever enough to successfully conceal for a very considerable time, at least 5 firearms and thousands of rounds of ammunition from all of the family including Carleen Bryant and girl friend Petra Willmot, who he'd had an intimate relationship with for at least 2 months.

Before I leave the above PROI document and Martin Bryant's interrogation, I should draw your attention to the fact that nowhere in any of the various articles (e.g. the *APJ*), is there a photograph of the Redfield Scope and mounts supposedly integral with the FN FAL rifle. That I'm sure you'll agree is quite incredulous.

It almost defies belief that the interviewing Police, Inspector's R. Paine and J Warren, would be so naïve as to believe for a moment that this Redfield Scope and mounts could be *an integral part of the FN FAL rifle* (see p.17 of the PROI), when it is obvious there appears to be no way of fixing the sight to that type of rifle. I find the situation even stranger to say the least, the

DPP should have accepted such nonsense as evidence and that Mr. Avery sat there muted, allowing his client to be "stitched-up" by such irrelevant, inadmissible, nonsense. Were police terrified at the prospect of a trial in which a credible eyewitness could have come forward and describe in detail the rifle used in the Broad Arrow Café, bus park outside, the taking of the hostage Glen Pears and murder of his companion Zoë Hall, and in the ambush and wounding of the people on the Arthur Highway outside Seascapes providing a description that ruled out the possibility of that firearm being a scoped FN FAL?

You see, as I have explained, the "G" Series FN FAL was an emergency late "stand-in" to fulfil the role of the *"30calibre throw-down"*, because Martin had been unable to retrieve his AR10 ·308W rifle for that role, as it left for repair at Terry Hill's Guns and Ammo shop. One should also be aware, that to the layperson eyewitness, unfamiliar with firearms, the profile of the second rifle used by the gunman, the Armalite AR10 ·308W rifle (clean), could mistakenly be seen to have a scope sight fitted, where as the profile lines of an FN FAL exhibits a clean top action line - hence I believe the attempted deception by police! This becomes very clear, an



AR-10 ·308W rifle: [Note the profile](#)

inarguable fact I would suggest and when the repeated observations are noted by witnesses in their statements they often suggest the rifle/s used in the café had 'a scope sight fitted'. However, those witnesses familiar with (military) firearms make no such claim. (L: [AR10-A2_rifle](#) R: [G-series scoped](#)



"G" Series FN FAL, scoped: [Note the profile](#)

What a deplorable state of affairs, heightened by the fact neither police nor Martin mentions a word about the Redfield Scope evidencing any *damage* either. Remember the DPP alleged that the FN FAL was wrecked in rage with scope fitted to the rifle. The DPP's case alleged the FN FAL was wrapped around a hard immovable object with such force so as to bend the barrel to the left, break-off the dust-cover and smash open the damper spring tube losing some of the parts. If indeed that is what occurred, the scope mounts and the scope's tube would have suffered irreparable, obvious damage! Neither the prosecution nor the accused mentions at any stage in the Court transcript any damage apparent to the scope or mounts. Does this not tell us that the Redfield Scope and the mounts were not an integral part of the FN FAL rifle? Remember Bryant's level of awareness is evidenced when he was shown the fire-effected AR15 Carbine. Straightaway Martin points out: "It's a mess isn't it." (See p.198 of the Court Doc.)



FN FAL - SLR: [Note the clean profile](#)

Martin Bryant volunteered to police exactly how the mysterious purchase of the AR15 Carbine was financed (see Court Doc. at p.210). He explained he used part of the \$4,000-plus proceeds, realised from the sale of his inflatable Zodiac and its 25 hp Evinrude outboard motor.

This claim goes some way to fitting with other known movements of Martin. But, we now know Martin sold his Zodiac, **unexpectedly** less than 3 weeks prior to the Port Arthur Massacre. So why is there no attempt by the DPP to establish details of that sale, details I'd suggest that would have added substantial weight to the prosecutions brief...or would they have?

Consider this possibility: Martin Bryant realised the cash from the sale of the Zodiac some time after the 7th of April and headed for the Hobart Gun Show of Saturday 13 April 1996. So with his forged gun licence in the name of Martin Ryan and sporting his recently grown long blonde hair style Martin Bryant was seen by witnesses to attend the Hobart Gun Show held in the Wrest Point Casino and he told several people he'd purchased a new "little one"; was he referring to the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine? For early in my inquiries an informant has stated he's seen Martin Bryant doing the rounds at this gun show. The informant further alleges that a knife maker

from up Sorell way he referred to as "AB" spoke to Bryant as he moved about before leaving the premises. In that conversation he further alleged that when a fine hand-made knife was offered to Bryant by the stall-holder, Martin replying in words to the effect, 'Oh sorry, I can't afford that much today, as I just bought this little one', patting a package he raised which partially exposed a firearm, the muzzle of which and bulk indicating it to be a Colt AR15 carbine. My informant further alleges that earlier he'd sighted a Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, "with a collapsible stock", for sale on the table of a certain well known Hobart Gunsmith, who was definitely not Terry Hill. Now here a conundrum arises:

Why would Stuart Woods allegedly tell reporters Martin had enquired of him if *"an AR15 was available"* on 23/04/96, if Martin Bryant had already purchased a Colt AR15 Carbine at the gun show on 13/04/96? Was there an ulterior motive for Woods to suggest Martin Bryant did make this inquiry?

Now the circumstances surrounding both the Zodiac's purchase and sale are like almost all that is on the periphery of the Port Arthur psycho-political adventure masked with intrigue and unbelievable coincidences. Nevertheless, let us look at this segment a little closer also.

From when the Bryant family bought a weekend shack near Port Arthur in spite of media and one writer's slant to the contrary, Martin befriended a number of the Peninsula's local youth. His father Morris Bryant introduced the lad to skin-diving in the waters thereabouts, and this later expanded into scuba diving.

His friend and benefactor Helen Harvey died in a two-car collision 1.6 km north of Copping on 20 October, 1992. Helen Harvey's Mazda 121 was said to have veered into the path of an oncoming Ford Fairmont. In less than 12 months and on 14 August his father Morris died under quite dubious circumstances on Martin's farm at Copping. His body, with a lead-weighted diving belt wrapped around his neck and upper torso, was recovered by police two days later on the 17th from a dam on the property. Police also recovered a strip of 30mg Serapax tablets on the body, from which approximately 18 tablets were missing; hardly a factor of significance to have influenced Coroner Edward Vickers' verdict of the death as being 'consistent with suicide,' I should think. Local resident was quoted in a lengthy article at the time as saying '*I really think his father's death has a lot to do with this [massacre]*' said Jodie Hodgett. *He was blamed for his father's death by the whole community pretty much ... and he's carried that with him.*' Ironically, I believe neither the journalist nor Hodgett realise just how accurate the statement is, although their understanding of it may be entirely at odds with reality! ⁶

Martin was already by this stage a keen scuba-diver, a past time that suddenly expanded for him. My inquiries show that during the early 1990's, Martin was not isolated and friendless, as the media and some authors would have us believe, but instead he had a small circle of friends, some on the Tasman Peninsula, while others scattered about, one even named from the Pelterata area.

The story goes that while Martin was on a visit to Melbourne in 1995 and while walking down Elizabeth Street he sighted an inflatable craft in a window display, and placed an order. This seems to be how Martin did business. Now, another source actually took Mr Andrew MacGregor to a Zodiac agent in Clarendon Street, South Melbourne, where one staff member claimed Bryant purchased an 11'6" Zodiac inflatable. The same person (who claimed to be a staff member) alleged that Bryant had first "arrived on a motorcycle". This informant further alleged that as it was "off season" in the marine trade, and the inflatable was not on the ground floor showroom, but upstairs (a claim I believe is difficult to sustain, as it would mean Bryant had his inflatable for at least 6 months before he purchased the power unit for it).

Continuing the story teller alleged that after looking it over, but not making a deposit, Martin placed 'a firm order' and promising to return later, allegedly taking a flight back to Hobart that same day. But who loaned an unlicensed Martin Bryant the motorcycle? My inquiries revealed in 1995 you couldn't hire a motorcycle in Melbourne, even if appropriately licensed.

Now this same source informed Andrew MacGregor that he was "surprised" when Martin returned at all and collected and paid for the Zodiac, allegedly making this crossing of Bass Strait aboard the *Spirit of Tasmania*. But even more incredible is the allegation that Bryant arrived to collect the Zodiac driving a Mitsubishi van, and paid for the Zodiac with cash.

This allegation raises another question: It has been clearly established that Bryant surely had a forged firearms licence, and the former SOG, and at Seascapes the "controller", was well placed within the covert section of Police to effect that issue, but who supplied (a still unlicensed Martin) with the Mitsubishi van? The informant then further alleged Martin was so impressed by the good deal, that while staff prepared the inflatable for transporting, he slipped away, returning shortly with a case of Guinness; what else would we expect than Martin's favourite - mentioned 8 times in the various court documents - than a tip from an appreciative customer.

There are a number of claims in this segment that even with the guided tour for Andrew MacGregor, has not convinced either Andrew or myself of the story being credible. For be aware, that the Victoria Police SOG would undoubtedly be quite familiar with the same dealership's staff and premises.

I can confirm that from inquiries that I instituted in light of the forgoing, Martin Bryant certainly did purchase a 25 hp Evinrude, which he used to power his Zodiac inflatable from a well known marine dealership in Campbell Street Hobart somewhere between January and February of 1996; no more than 3 months before the massacre.

From the PROI in the Court Documents we learn Bryant originally bought the yellow Volvo sedan, registration number CG-2835, for towing the 11'6" Zodiac with its 25hp Evinrude outboard, on his scuba-diving expeditions, when he stated, "...I didn't use the Volvo very much, once I sold the boat...", somewhere between the 1/04/96 and 12/04/96. But any fondness he'd amassed for scuba-diving turned sour when obviously on one *if not his first trip* out, disaster almost overtook the adventure. It appears that accompanied by his first girlfriend Janetta Hoani, Martin launched the Zodiac at Recherche Bay. The sea conditions were reasonably slight, but an unfavorably low air temperature persisted, and the pair made their way down past the South East Cape to near Hen Island. All was going well, when the first tank of fuel ran out. Upon switch-over to another (full) tank, and unbeknownst to Martin a fuel line connection "came off". With the abyss that was Martin's mechanical aptitude, his repeated attempts to start the fuel-starved Evinrude failed. With the pair shaking uncontrollably from the cold, the situation was looking grim, when a fisherman picked them up after they'd fired a distress flare - a close squeak that convinced Martin the Zodiac was 'for sale'.

The same South Melbourne informant though alleged Martin Bryant had later around the 7 April 1996, placed an order with his firm for some small spare parts for the Zodiac craft, just three weeks prior to the massacre but that Martin never did pay for or collect the parts. Now if the allegations from this source are not credible as I suspect they are, then understandably his last claim that of him never being questioned by police regarding the Zodiac transaction is true.

From my own inquiries I can state with confidence that Martin Bryant's estimation of "less than 3 months" having elapsed before he disposed of the inflatable unit does check out. I can also reveal that I'm quite aware of who the mystery person was who purchased Martin's 11'6" Zodiac with its 25hp Evinrude motor and trailer. Remember Martin tells us he only received approximately \$4,000 or less than half of the "nearly" \$9,000 all-up cost of the unit new, but

still enough cash to cover the cost of purchasing his 'must buy' and 'type-cast' Colt AR15 Carbine.

In fact I can state confidently that a well known Hobart entrepreneur engaged in the up-market sector of the hospitality industry purchased Martin Bryant's inflatable: the only question that remains, was the buyer coincidentally attracted to the bargain price or not?

I believe time has proven the messenger who guided this investigation to South Melbourne is at least dodgy and at this stage all but one piece of information is proven as untrue. However I felt you should have the chance to consider the story. I now believe the reason for this elaborate hoax has everything to do with muddying the waters around that important mystery male at Seascap, their *main man* - *Rick*. Of one thing I can be certain, persons other than, and in addition to "Jamie", were simultaneously inside Seascap, during the siege, besides Martin Bryant and the killers' victims. I will deal with Rick elsewhere, be patient please. But of Rick - the phantom of Seascap - in the negotiator's transcript was mentioned no less than 39 times: in contrast police ask just once about "Rick"!

Here's a sample of Martin's confused, contrary recollection as recorded in conversation with *agent provocateur* Blair Saville on 3 August from his sworn statement, concerning "the guy," who Martin believed he'd kidnapped at the Fortesque Bay turn off: —

B.S. What happened to the guy

M.B. I put him in the boot

B.S. Did he die

M.B. I don't know he was in the boot when it [the BMW] exploded

B.S. There is a pretty good chance he's dead then

M.B. Yeh I think so...

In light of considerable number of persons known to be heavily involved in this psycho-political operation - the Port Arthur massacre - I strongly believe that "Rick" was in reality a very important person using an alias like "Jamie"; I believe his name was Mick. Was this "Rick" or Mick the mystery male caller who phoned Martin about a TV set, mentioned by Petra Willmott in her statement? Not surprisingly police were coy on all such allegations, and never probed Martin on any of his puzzling claims; the answers would have not been helpful.

They never dared to probe the burning question of how "Rick" vanished in the aftermath of the inferno at Seascap! All of the investigators' unwillingness to exact closure on the "Rick" or Mick aspect is strongly suggestive of them in fact being complicit in exactly who Rick is - yes, is!

The exposure of the identity of Rick unquestionably in my opinion would prove so very embarrassing, even catastrophic to the whole of the exercise and destroy entirely the official line of a "lone gunman," Martin Bryant. It would seem entirely logical that it was Mick who murdered first David Martin and then Sally Martin.

Though the DPP implies that "Rick" and Glen Pears are one and the same, that is nothing more than yet another of their deceptions! Glen Pears was originally from Tasmania, he was not from Victoria, and he lived at the time in Sydney. Also Martin in the personality of "Jamie" was sure that the lone "hostage" (Glen Pears), which he unconvincingly believed he'd captured at the Palmers Lookout Road turn-off and locked in the boot of the BMW - reported in early media reports as burnt to death in the boot of the car - but as Martin tells us in the Court Document, as he bangs on the back door of Seascap, the car exploded. - (see Court Doc. PROI at p.103, 107 etc).

But Martin Bryant's vague and uncertain recollections of what he himself actually did, between 0105 hrs on Sunday 28, and 0835 hrs on Monday 29 April, are entirely consistent with him having been subtly influenced to *act out a role*, just as Police Negotiator, Sergeant Terry McCarthy told Ray Martin in his interview with Win TV's, *A Current Affair*. Little wonder he commented that the experience for him was "bizarre".

I find it difficult to accept that Glen Pears - at least in the personality and mind of "Jamie" - could have been considered to figure in any negotiations towards helicopter rides out of Seascope on the night of the 28-29 April 1996, if he "believed" Pears died in the boot of the BMW, as he certainly expressed a belief that Pears had died that way when interviewed by police. However, as we know police set alight both the BMW and the Seascope Cottage this segment must still cause some of them nightmares at least!

In summary, let's not forget these facts:

1. The AR15 SP1 substitution almost surely originated in Victoria,
2. The most substantial interstate SOG involvement, came from Victoria,
3. The Zodiac inflatable came from Victoria,
4. A principal "grief counsellor" who remarkably was able to travel from Hamilton to Port Arthur in an amazing time frame - was Victorian; and he made 6 return visits.
5. Key psychiatrist Prof Paul Mullen and a psychologist, Ian Joblin, both came from Melbourne, Victoria.

The state of Victoria figures prominently in the Port Arthur equation, doesn't it?

Shooting Practice

When Martin Bryant was questioned about learning to shoot his firearms, the Crown's case is less than convincing. It would have taken a great deal more extensive and intensive training with the two primary firearms, overseen by qualified instruction before Martin Bryant could reach any minimum level of competency, even if he were not mentally impaired.

Even with extensive expert advice and training some people are never able to be classed "proficient shooters," but let's give Martin the benefit of the doubt. But, consider this information; a reliable informant who travelled on a Cruise Liner remembers Martin well on the voyage, and observed Martin over a considerable period of time shooting a shotgun over a clay-target trap affixed to the stern of the ship. From his personal observations he commented that Martin Bryant shot at a large number of clay targets, but try as he may, Martin failed to hit a single clay-pigeon. In fact, the observer commented that he really believed, 'Bryant couldn't hit the broad side of a barn, but he appeared to enjoy himself all the same'.

The Police questioned Bryant regarding the location and extent of his firearm practice which the Crown would have us believe transformed Martin Bryant into a proficient special operations combat marksman.

Martin told the two detectives that he used to go to a, "*spot between Dunalley and Eagle Hawk Neck*," and turn down a road there to a "*forestry place*." He went on saying he used to "*shoot trees...[and] tin cans, [but] never bottles, no not bottles `cos they break and they could injure the animals..*" Bryant also volunteered that he "*never shot animals*" either.

When the Police suggested he'd taken along "targets" he admitted, "*Yes*", just home made targets made from cardboard, with circles drawn on them, and the total ammunition consumed in this amazing transformation is claimed to be just 'several hundred rounds' in total. (Court Doc., PROI at p.215-216)

Detective Paine asked Martin, "And umm, when you practiced your shooting, did you, where did you hold the gun?" To which Bryant (A) responds: —

- A. Up like this, on my left.
 Q. So you're left handed.
 A. Umm, I write with this hand.
 Q. Ohh that's right, sorry yeah.
 A. I but this is me finger.
 Q. So if you held a gun, you would pull the trigger with your, a finger on your left hand?" [To which Bryant responded,]
 A. Yeah that's right, yeah.

Now let's look carefully at this point. Martin wrote with his right hand and at least believed he shot a firearm from his left shoulder. This is not an uncommon trait among shooters in my experience and I myself did shoot right or left handed with equal speed and accuracy. But I also shot regularly then, perhaps as much as every other day.

So I have made this point here for no other reason but to indicate clearly that even with Martin's supposed intellectual disability it is possible for him to be ambidextrous. However, in my own case, while I very much favoured my right hand in shooting, and sport, I did play some sport left handed. I could also shoot equally as well off either shoulder. But I must stress my shooting experiences occurred in situations not comparable with the pressure situation the gunman worked under in the Broad Arrow Café and elsewhere. So consider the following especially in relation to this fact.

At page 140 of the Court Document Mr Bugg Q.C. states, *"Your Honour, throughout the incidents that I described to you today most people who had an opportunity to observe Bryant stated that he appeared calm, unrushed and not showing any signs of emotion..."* Although, I have no hesitation and every confidence in stating, the eyewitnesses Mr Bugg is referring to here, never laid eyes upon Martin Bryant that April day, anywhere inside the Broad Arrow Café.

Considering Martin Bryant's left handed shooting posture this is completely at odds with at least four eyewitness statements and there are no witness statements to the contrary: why did the DPP choose to ignore this fact? Consider that the gunman was shooting at seven separate and uniquely different crime scenes, all of which demanded of the gunman differing weapon skills, but still he aimed and shot the firearm while it was held at his right side, or his right shoulder and therefore:

Repeatedly, the gunman is witnessed as being right-handed, while Martin Bryant is by choice shown to be left handed by police interrogators.

Martin Bryant had quite limited sessions of shooting — at most a few hundred rounds into motionless, static, paper targets — it is an impossible proposition for him to have *transformed himself* into the *right-handed* calm, mechanical gunman that controlled entirely at least five of the six crime scenes on the Tasman Peninsula in 1996, using two firearms of markedly different handling characteristics, different recoils, length of pull and weight of trigger pull. One firearm weighed a whopping 10.5 lbs. (4.76kg) loaded and was 148 cm long, while the other was a mere 6 lbs 13 oz (approx. 3kg) loaded and was just 86 cm long...

Eyewitness accounts at the six crime scenes on the Tasman Peninsula state, the shooter fired his firearm from his right hand side. Therefore, consider the Court Doc., PROI *edited* version and beginning with Bryant's second answer to Paine's question of, *"How many guns do you own?"* Bryant replies, *"I own umm, a shotgun and a semi-automatic and another semi-automatic. Three altogether."* Later in this document it is clearly established Bryant was referring to

- 1.) Colt AR15 · 223Rem,
- 2.) Armalite AR10 7.26NATO (- 308W) Rifle (in *Guns and Ammo* for repair) and
- 3.) a Daewoo 12ga self-loading shotgun, which the DPP and Gerard Dutton claim was not fired during the incident but was recovered from the Volvo's boot abandoned at the Port Arthur Tollbooth.



Hobart's Risdon Prison:
A poignant reminder of Martin Bryant's situation; "No Exit - Go Back."

Again I ask: where did the FN FAL rifle come from? I'm firmly of the position Martin Bryant purchased the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine from a stall at the Gun Show staged at the Wrest Point Casino on Saturday 20th April. So why were police so taciturn when it came to establishing any of the three primary firearm's movement history? I'm forced to conclude the answers would have proven quite embarrassing to certain persons in positions of power able to deploy coercive influences upon police asking the questions that forced them to abandon and/or perhaps even ignore such routine police investigations of firearm movement history, in favour of their own "security" (such as was deployed against the innocent firearms dealer Terry Hill). [Risdon entrance](#)

If one considers the documented evidence and does not ignore his mother's assessment, I believe I can confidently state Martin Bryant was intellectually incapable of preparing a cartridge and then to comprehend that as a result of such a cartridge's preparation it would "blow-up" the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine.

I'm also comfortable with my conclusions regarding his last trip to the Tasman Peninsula as a free man, that as no empirical evidence was collected by police from the Broad Arrow Café, linking Martin Bryant to any of the shooting murders in and about the Café I can but firmly conclude Martin Bryant was never at any time there inside the Broad Arrow Café on Sunday the 28th of April 1996.

Conclusion

Immediately after Martin Bryant staggered from the inferno that was the Seascope cottage suffering quiet serious category 2 burns, *but importantly alive*, those central to this awful exercise were forced to face the prospect of an unwelcomed *trial by jury* and the distinct possibility of their scheme unravelling before an angry public. This outcome was further amplified by the fact there were some millions of average Australians among this same citizenry who were facing reluctantly the forced surrender of their treasured private property - their firearms - to this same authority.



Martin Bryant's Cell in Risdon Prison's hospital.

The time has come for some weight questions to be answered and the questions will be raised as this work is brought to a conclusion.

Intellectually impaired Martin Bryant has been forced by subtle impositions to resign himself to the confines of his solitary [cell](#) is separated from the general prison population, inside Risdon Prison's hospital. He demonstrated throughout the transcript of his police interview a longing for friendship. In Risdon he is even [denied](#) friendship ordinarily taken for granted with fellow inmates by cunning mind games subtly implanted into the minds of some interns - and Martin himself.



Martin Bryant's exercise cage:
Have we really advanced since 19th century & Port Arthur's Separate Prison?
'For the term of his natural life'

I have demonstrated the Crown's Case against Martin Bryant, is exceedingly feeble, and would be easily destroyed by an energetic intelligent defence counsel championing his client's rights. The Prosecution constructed their case on "sand". A good hard shake and it would collapse like a pack of cards. The question that now is riding on the morrow is this: In the fullness of time, will some plucky sole step forward and confront the establishment as advocate

for Martin Bryant, whose whole of life is shackled Tasmania's "closed shop" of justice, and the walls of Risdon Prison?

End Notes:

¹ Das, Sushila - in Hobart, *The Age* newspaper, 22nov96, p.6.

² Wayne Jones, "Desperate bid for a gun," the Herald Sun, 4may96.

³ "The trauma trade", *The Bulletin*, 27jan04, at <http://bulletin.ninemsn.com.au/bulletin/site/>

⁴ *Ibid*, *passim*

⁵ n.a., *The Mercury*, p.1, 15aug98; Whinnett, Ellen & Barbeluik, Anne, *The Mercury*, p.1, 29apr00

⁶ Kate Halfpenny, "The Suspect," *Who Weekly*, 13may96, pp. 28-30

Part II

On the Road to Seascape

Special Guests to Tea

Chapter 15

The Seascape segment of the Port Arthur massacre begins with the not-so-ordinary “guests” who lodged with Sally and David Martin, on the night of Saturday, April 27. All 4 guests stand out as - quite unusual. As I have already demonstrated the massacre was nothing more or less than a horrid exercise, continuing along that scenario, please let me set the scene.



"The Pink Palace" - Seascape

The planners surely would have chosen [Seascape](#) very early in their plan, and as such much planning had to have been undertaken concerning this location. Therefore, would such an important site, critical to the achievement of their goals be simply left to chance as to security and control? Does it not make sense that the planners would need to know exactly who was lodged there on the Saturday evening? Why wouldn't the planners install their own people and so leave nothing to chance?

Stephanie and Donald Gunn: had booked ahead, this couple motored up from their Hobart home, and checked in on that rainy, Saturday afternoon at 1.45pm. Later at 4.30pm, two other guests arrived, who Gunn claimed were named **Julie and Virginia** - no surnames even suggested as possible here. That is a telling point I would suggest. He also claimed they both hailed from Sydney. But is Donald Gunn's recollection of the girls accurate or had he possibly been ... misled? On the last count, I think not.

For as accurate as I can be, these female guests' names were almost surely Lynne and Jean and if I'm correct, then they hailed from Melbourne. For I believe this pair was also - “on the job”! While the Gunns dined out, returning at around 9.00pm and socialised with the Martin's for a while, the two mystery female guests went to the Historic Site to experience Port Arthur's popular *ghost tour*, and if working, take the opportunity to check-out the site for the exercise, on the morrow. Upon their return to Seascape the 4 guests retired for the evening.

On the Sunday morning, it is claimed just the six sat down to breakfast together at about 9.00am, with “Julie” and “Virginia” (or was it Lynn and Jean), departing Seascape 30 minutes

later at around 9.30am. Though strangely neither Donald nor Stephanie recall the colour and/or even the make of the vehicle these female guests were driving. Strange, especially when all the evidence is considered carefully, the vehicle *has to be* a rather distinctive model 244GI Volvo sedan in an equally distinctive *Volvo yellow*. I do wonder if they ever made a statement for police ... Julie and Virginia that is. What a pity I have no signed statement by either female in my files as yet. I'm betting the DPP couldn't furnish one either!

But then also for many years now I've pondered the identity of the two females who admitted ownership of the "clone" yellow 244 GI Volvo sedan on the Historic Site. The facts suggest to me that they are the same pair who Donald Gunn is referring to here and I'm sure we will meet them both again near Clougha on the Historic Site.

Remember that Sunday 28 April, dawned a beautiful, mild, sunny day; perfect for sightseeing - the purpose of their stay at Seascapes according to Donald Gunn.

But curiously the Gunns seemed to have - hung about - delaying their departure from Seascapes until quite late in the morning. You see Donald states he and Stephanie departed "about 11.15am - 11.20am".

Even after taking to the road the couple confined their sightseeing - the claimed purpose of their trip to the Tasman Peninsula - to Stewarts Bay, White Beach, and Nubeena, where they broke their sightseeing to play tennis at the local school until 2.00pm; hardly a '*seeing the sights tour*' I should think.

From Nubeena they drove via Premaydena to reach Eaglehawk Neck in about an hour and a half (3.30 pm), where they say they learned from the lady at the café, there was "a gunman on the loose", and so they then tootled off home, where they arrived within the hour, at 4.20pm. This rather nonchalant indifferent understanding of events doesn't fit with people across the nation- let alone on the Peninsula. Before they left Nubeena the sky would have been filled with helicopters as was reported by locals and the raucous scream of police and ambulance emergency sirens would have been quite difficult to ignore! But from Donald Gunn, not even a line to acknowledge awareness of that commotion.

Donald Gunn's stated departure time of "about 11.15am - 11.20am," conflicts with at least two other witness statements, and indeed the DPP's case itself. This time puts Stephanie and Donald Gunn in the time zone at Seascapes when allegedly shots were fired that killed David Martin! And we know that at this time Martin Bryant was miles away at Forsett. Can you now see the problems Donald Gunn's statement causes?

Not only was Martin Bryant witnessed 61km away from the Martin's, drinking coffee at the Forcett Shell service station when the DPP claims he was murdering David Martin inside Seascapes, but is it possible Donald and Stephanie Gunn got their facts wrong? Or were they indeed at Seascapes at the time of this murder? Mr Bugg QC, simply cannot have his cake and eat it too, no matter how intense his desire to do so.

A Sunday Drive

Now upon this supposedly tranquil, sunny morning beside the waters of Long Bay, we have to introduce the young intellectually impaired young man, Martin Bryant.

Martin made an unhurried, almost scripted journey from Hobart down the Tasman Peninsula, departing - so Mr Bugg claims - from his Clare Street [home](#), at 9.47am that Sunday. He left New Town behind as he drove over the Tasman Bridge and



No. 30 Clare St, New Town



Midway Point News Agency

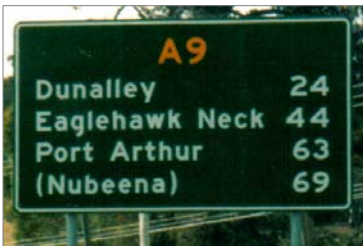
developing? He's being shown-off, noticed. The minimum duration possible to drive the Arthur Highway between Sorell and Port Arthur is 55 minutes. I have timed this trip myself (before the road was upgraded) and can confirm 55 minutes is achievable - just.

along the highway he went, making weird stops and purchases: at about 10.30am, from Midway Point [Newsagency](#) he stops to buy a disposable (butane) cigarette lighter - but Martin didn't smoke. Seven to ten minutes further along he again breaks his journey at a small [supermarket](#) in the main street of Sorell, (now a newsagency), where he buys a bottle of tomato sauce - have you noted a pattern



Forsett - Shell petrol station

In the central part of Sorell, Martin turns right at the traffic lights, and entered the Arthur Highway. On he drives for 7km through Forcett to the [Shell](#) service station, where he stops to chat with Garry King, who makes Martin a cup of coffee. King estimated this time at between 11.30am and midday.



Road sign just east of Forcett Shell SS.

NOTE: the distance to Port Arthur - 63 km

Meanwhile and according to Damien Bugg QC, a murder had been committed (by Martin Bryant) in the Seascapes Cottage! As David Martin had been shot twice and stabbed with a knife. You see Andrew and Lyn Simmonds who then lived just opposite, confirmed during a later interview with Andrew MacGregor that they both heard the two

shots coming from the Seascapes Cottage *precisely* at 10.40am that Sunday as both stood outside their home beside a vehicle.

But back to Martin Bryant's Sunday drive: he leaves Garry King, and drives through Copping, over the swing-bridge on the Dunalley Canal, south through the countryside of the Forestier Peninsula and is witnessed descending the hill to sea-level as he enters Eaglehawk Neck from the north.

Crown Prosecutor, Damien Bugg QC, chooses not to name this witness or give a time, as no doubt about now you are beginning to realise that the time line Mr Bugg QC is presenting to the court as *fact* is becoming decidedly feeble.

But Mike Bingham (*Suddenly One Sunday*, p.158) corroborates a statement we know was given to police by a female witness and Peninsula resident who made a positive ID of Martin Bryant, driving his yellow Volvo through Eaglehawk Neck at 11.30am, 'happily engrossed, jumping up and down in time to the music he was listening to in the car'.



Taranna Convict Shop & Bakery
- now abandoned

Martin still had 19km before he would reach Port Arthur. But at about 11.45am Martin Bryant yet again broke his journey 6km south from Eaglehawk Neck at the Taranna Convict Shop & [Bakery](#), operated by Christopher Hammond. Mr Hammond noted the "yellow coloured Volvo" that "came into the store car park for fuel...I put the petrol in and he paid me with a ten and five



Roger Larner cMay 1996

dollar note...." Note that Mr Hammond has suggested he fuelled the Volvo - there's no suggestion of filling fuel-cans. At Taranna Martin would have been delayed from 3 to 5 minutes and there remain a further 6 km to Seascope, and a further 4 km to Port Arthur.

But, Martin Bryant cruises past Seascope, on through Port Arthur and turns left into Palmers Lookout Rd, continuing for about 2.5km on past the fork in the road where he visits his old acquaintance Roger [Larner](#), a segment of his journey as witnessed by Jai Nichols who we shall deal with shortly. Roger Larner who's property fronts [Palmers Lookout Rd](#), timed Martin's arrival, "at 1.05 pm," (1305 hrs), and it is Mike Bingham who tells us Martin departed after 'about ten minutes' - or at about 1.15pm.



Roger Larner's place c2002

Now the young teenager Jai Nichols was dropped off at the Port Arthur General Store by his grandfather at about 12 noon that Sunday. He intended to hitch a ride to Hobart. Jai first walked the 2.6 km to the Fox and Hounds. Here and after "*waiting for two or three minutes,*" beside the northbound lane, he states he saw, "*a yellow Volvo with a surfboard on top coming down the highway...*," towards him, southbound towards Port Arthur; the vehicle proceeded on past him. Some minutes later he recommenced walking towards Hobart, and just short of .7km from the Fox and Hounds and as he approached Seascope, the same yellow Volvo overtook him, its brakelights came on, and it turned right, into Seascope, and went right on down the driveway.

Nichols described the driver as having, "sort of bleached blonde hair, he looked like a real young looking bloke," and he hadn't seen him before around Port Arthur. So in reality, Jai Nichols was the last member of the public, documented as having sighted Martin Bryant, before he was secreted away in Seascope not to reappear until SOG's arrested him naked and badly burnt outside Seascope at 0835 hrs on Monday 29th.

Damien Bugg QC goes to considerable lengths to detail those parts of the statements of witnesses such as Michael Copping, John Mason and Doug McCutcheon that by stretching their ambiguities he is able to have them support his synopsis of Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo having already arrived at Seascope by as early as 11.00am, so as to buttress the flawed time line to account for time of death of David and Sally Martin.

Now to the "clone" yellow Volvo: Mr Copping stated he "*saw a yellow Volvo parked at a slight angle outside the front door the MARTIN'S HOUSE.*" But was it Martin Bryant's Yellow Volvo? Now we must consider very carefully the mystery female guests allegedly from Sydney, and allegedly called Julie and Virginia. Now it is understandable that all of the participants in this horrid conspiracy were left no alternative other than to distort the story so as to save their collective hides. If it was a planned exercise, then surely that is not too difficult to accept.

So is this what actually occurred with regard to some claims made in the signed statements - importantly never tested under oath - that were made to police by some visitors to the "Pink Palace on that Saturday evening before the fateful Sunday of the 28th of April 1996?

You see I suggest these two females are one and the same two females who admitted to being in charge of a yellow Volvo identical to that of Martin Bryant's that PAHSMA staff discovered secreted away in dead ground on a street behind the "Clougha" cottage.

This "clone" vehicle was discovered by Paul Cooper while the gunshots rang out at the Broad Arrow, at about 1335hrs. Cooper stated that he "recognised it," as one and the same as "the gunman had been in the boot of earlier [parked beside the water]." The car had been hidden

on Tramway Street which runs East and West up dead ground to the South of Clougha and it was therefore out-of-sight to the hundreds of people fleeing the shooting over the greater part of the Historic Site's grounds.

Paul Cooper asked several women close by if they had seen *"anyone in the Volvo as [he] believed the gunman must have been in the near vicinity."* One admitted to being the driver. He advised them both 'not drive the vehicle as it was a restricted zone, and as the gunman was driving a sedan identical to theirs - they could well be inadvertently shot at'.

Within a few minutes, the gunman had departed the Site via the tollbooth. But very shortly these two females must have returned to their yellow Volvo sedan, and moved the vehicle to Church St, whereupon another member of staff stopped the female driver and yet again urged her to leave the car, lock it up and take shelter with the other visitors in the site cottages. However this unidentified female driver surreptitiously departed the environs undetected by any of the Historic Site staff, even evading the gatekeeper on the Champ St barrier beside the Port Arthur Motor Inn!

Consider though this important point: for those who managed this disgusting exercise, it would have been mandatory for them to ensure Seascope Cottages did not host any nasty surprises in the form of a guest or guests, with some latent ability experience or expertise for instance, that could have been employed to intervene successfully in their disgusting plot, an action I should think which could have disrupted or even jeopardised the entire exercise.

It is also my considered opinion, that it would have been necessary for the terrorists to have taken control of the complex and its occupants on late the Saturday afternoon, so as to deny any uninvited and therefore unknown guests who could have come to the assistance of David and Sally Martin and so jeopardise the exercise. Therefore I conclude that the Martins would have been hostages from sometime late on the Saturday afternoon before the massacre.

The planners would have demanded some considerable lead time window of security of their programme by having *their people* monitor the site chosen as the control centre - Seascope. So I would ask you to give sober consideration yet again to this question: Were Julie and Virginia in truth Lynne and Jean? And - did they perhaps not at that time hail from Sydney, but instead from just across Bass Strait and from the mainland city of Melbourne?

After consideration of the immediate forgoing, was the *"... yellow Volvo parked at a slight angle outside the front door the MARTIN'S HOUSE,"* seen by Mr Copping, in fact identical in model and colour to Martin Bryant's Yellow Volvo, the "clone" yellow Volvo sedan later seen by various reliable witnesses for some considerable time in restricted areas of the Historic Site after the gunman had departed the precincts.

I can state with confidence that when Martin's yellow Volvo 240 GL departed Seascope for the vehicle park outside the Broad Arrow Cafe, it was not driven by Martin Bryant. The driver must have been the yet to be identified blonde-headed gunman. Martin Bryant I believe must by this point have been in the care and control of a person called "Rick" or "Mick". Possibly other accomplices were involved, and together they must have subjected Bryant to a form of constraint (mentally or by drugs for instance) so that he remained inside Seascope not to emerge until Seascope was a raging inferno and out of which he staggered with his clothes alight, at 0824 hrs next morning.

How can I state Martin was not behind the wheel when the yellow Volvo departed for Port Arthur? After all, Mr Bugg tells us that it was Martin Bryant who came upon two young female's in their broken-down van beside the Arthur Highway. But Mr Bugg accepts that Bryant assisted the young ladies with his auto electric skills, a claim I can refute with some established facts and simple logic:

1. **Martin Bryant** has confirmed on a number of occasions and over a long period of time that he **was totally lacking of a mechanical aptitude**. He could not discover that a broken fuel-line on his outboard was the cause for his inability to restart the motor.
2. Also, confirmed by Professor Paul Mullen and even again during Martin's conversation with Roger Larnier, to name but two witnesses, Martin stated that he would have nothing to do with smoking and the taking of drugs such as marijuana.

You see the blonde-headed driver who alighted from Martin's yellow Volvo beside the Arthur Highway just south of Seascapex exhibited many key characteristics completely at odds to that of Martin Bryant.

- **This blonde male exuding the "musty smell" of 'weed' or marijuana and the male 'did a deal' on the side of the road, paying Ms Lynd with a \$50 note for a satchel of Marijuana.**
- Martin never ever used or associated with illicit drugs. For years he'd been a health fanatic.
- **The Volvo driver demonstrated a comprehension of and skill in basic auto-electrics.**
- Conversely, Martin was mechanically ignorant; he always carried a can of petrol in his Volvo because, "...the, it, it was the gauge was pretty, fairly faulty you know." * Also during his one and only jaunt in his 11'6" Zodiac with its 25hp Evinrude outboard he and Janetta Hoani his girlfriend at the time almost died from exposure at sea, when Martin could not restart the Evinrude when the first tank of fuel ran out; he didn't know to turn the fuel tap on.

But the gunman driving the yellow Volvo have just departed from Seascapex Cottage had pulled over to assist Gaye Lynd and her friend. Unable to restart the overheated engine, the blonde haired male exuding his musty smell, leant into her van, held a loose lead tight to the battery terminal, so as to start the overheated, dead motor. As Gaye Lynd and her female companion let the motor idle, that is when he did the \$50 drug deal. Remember also, Martin payed for every other item on that trip from Clare Street to Port Arthur down the highway with heaps of small change. From the break-down site the gunman made his way through the Port Arthur Tollbooth, down Jetty Road to the car park, after defying parking instructions issued by Ian Kingston when he parked the Volvo at the waters' edge some 50 yards from the Broad Arrow Café entrance door.

Here we shall break the sequential order of the story, taking it up once again after covering the police reaction to Mrs Scurr's 000 emergency call timed at 1332 hrs and made from the Information Centre, at about which time the gunman was preparing to depart the Tollbooth and progress toward Seascapex Cottage.

* From the PROI in response to a question from Insp Paine.

Constables Decoyed

Chapter 16

We are not privileged as to who decided to split the force at Nubeena. But Const Garry Whittle proceeded directly the 11 km to the Port Arthur Tollbooth, while Const Paul Hyland carried on via Premaydena and Taranna thence south to the Fox and Hounds just north of Port Arthur a trip of a total 24.5 km.



Port Arthur Tollbooth

But at the Port Arthur [Tollbooth](#), the gunman had in the most callous exhibition taken the lives of four occupants of the gold or tan coloured BMW adding to his gruesome trail of murder back down Jetty Road to the Broad Arrow Cafe. Nearby the Tollbooth at the entrance to the Historic Site, Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo sedan with a surfboard on its roof-rack stood abandoned with its rear RH passenger window exhibiting [bullet damage](#). The car everyone would later remember even to surrender Martin's passport. A false signpost if you will, pointing to Martin Bryant; *'Look, I've been here'*. But for those who hadn't seen him actually hijack the BMW sedan, the abandoned Volvo was a frightening riddle: *'Where's the gunman now... lurking in the bush?'*



LH rear compartment window, bullet damaged

However, somehow the DPP's assistant Mr Nick Perks, was able to tell us that at this point the gunman transferred certain items from the yellow Volvo to the BMW; 'the Colt AR15 rifle, a quantity of ammunition, two sets of Smith and Wesson handcuffs and most probably at least one container of petrol.' - (Court Transcript, p.157)

Several points to consider here:

1. Nick Perks refers to the Colt AR15, as a "rifle", not a carbine.
2. Perks makes a point of claiming a pair of handcuffs were transferred.
3. There was no witness to this transfer of handcuffs - but like his friend Mr. Perks could be psychic I suppose, and
4. Mr. Perks also dares to assume a 'probable' transfer of 'at least one container of petrol'.

Point "4" could well have been included in the chapter, "Building the Crown's Case" I think. Also, the probability of this last item "4" being transferred I challenge and shall expand upon my reasons for doing so later in the narrative. Remember, without at least one container of petrol, the prosecution's theory as to the circumstances surrounding the torching of the BMW is implausible.

Beginning with Robert Salzmann out of the BMW, the gunman changed from the 223Rem calibre weapon, once again taking up the FN FAL 308W self-loading rifle as his weapon.

Two-timed for start-time

The local Constable Paul Hyland of Nubeena, and Constable Garry Whittle from the neighbouring Dunalley Station 41 km north of Port Arthur, had been teamed-up to investigate



Structure at the
Coal Mines

an anonymous informant's claim of a 'drug-stash' find. So Const Whittle joined his colleague and they drove through Saltwater River and on to the Coal Mines, an undeveloped Historic Site of former convict days. These old abandoned convict coalmines are sited about 6 km north of Saltwater River on the remote north western tip of the Tasman Peninsula bordering Frederick Henry Bay, and are 41 km from Port Arthur - about as far away from Port Arthur these local policemen could be sent in the local command area. Hobart, the State capitol is in truth closer, at just 33 km, across the waters of Fredrick Henry Bay to the northwest. The constables searched the ruins for the drugs and allegedly found nothing more than a 'quantity of harmless white powder'. So at about 1323hrs, the constables informed VKT in Hobart that the "stash" of heroin allegedly concealed at the [Coalmines](#) was a hoax.

But before they had even left the Coal Mines site, Garry Whittle tells us in his statement, VKT came back by radio to inform the Constables of a major incident at Port Arthur: Whittle timed this call at 1335hrs, although Deputy Com Richard McCreadie states the time to be 1336 hrs. [0+4min]

At 1339 hrs [0+7min] the Ambulance Service was notified of the incident.¹ But, as few details were known at the outset, little information would have been transmitted over the open Police Radio channel to the Constables. At 1345 hrs [0+13min] Inspector Barry Bennett was notified and dispatched for Taranna, with two CIB personnel departing from Bellerive a minute later.

At 1351 hrs [0+19min] Assist Com Luppo Prins was notified, and the MIR room was activated. But the two Constables who'd been at the Coal Mines were meantime returning the 19 km to Nubeena Police Station, over an exceedingly narrow, poorly aligned, rough, but sealed road; the journey would have taken them some 15-19 minutes, making their ETA at Nubeena Police Station of 1353 hrs [0+21min].

Perhaps just a minute before the two Constables arrival at Nubeena, and timed at 1352hrs, eyewitness Jim Laycock made his second "000" call from the Kodak Express shop at Port Arthur, to inform police in Hobart of the shooting of a female and abduction of a male just 50 or so metres across the highway and before his very eyes, at the entrance to Port Arthur's General Store.

Digressing for a moment, Police Radio VKT in Hobart, were undoubtedly not alone in the monitoring of radio traffic on their single channel #6 analogue system that day. We are aware of proven covert monitoring taking place, in addition to any legal amateur scanning activity by members of the public, media journalists and the like. There is also at least one documented reference of additional unspecified radio equipment deployed and in use, vaguely described as, "SAC PAV radio equipment".² However we have learned from a police sergeant tasked within the operation, that the above quote certainly understates the true situation.

End Notes

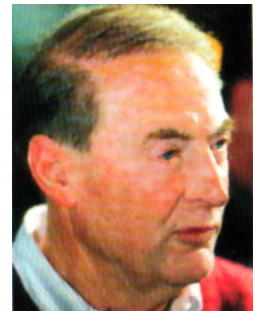
¹ McCreadie, Richard, Port Arthur – an Overview of Police Response, p.6

² *ibid.*, p.8

Missing in Action

Chapter 17

Jim [Laycock](#) stated that the gunman departed the Port Arthur General Store, and after just about 3 minutes had elapsed, Const Chris Iles arrived on the scene, and parked his marked police vehicle outside Port Arthur's Kodak Express shop operated by James Laycock's daughter Melanie and his son-in-law Yanni Kateros. Here he spoke to Jim Laycock at about 1355 hrs [0+23min]. Const Iles had approached Port Arthur from the north down the Arthur Highway. As Const Iles' movements that day are ... officially speaking ... the most closely guarded secret of the exercise, I can but speculate, surely he must have passed the gold BMW before the gunman had alighted from his vehicle parked at the Seascape entrance and so before he began shooting at the 5 southbound vehicles. The Constable's eventual actions are suggestive of panic. But certainly in those first few minutes, Constable Iles' unannounced, unplanned presence in the area must just as surely have caused the individuals secreted covertly in and about the general area who were running the operation an onset of heightened nervous tension I should think?



Witness: the late
"Jim" Laycock



Zoe Hall was shot 3 times while
seated in the driver's seat of
this white Corolla

Mr Laycock knew the former local constable well and so he briefed Const Iles on shootings at the tollbooth, the murder of the female seated in the white Corolla and the kidnapping of her male companion in front of the town's General Store. Const Iles was also informed that with the male hostage in the boot the gunman had driven off north up the highway in a BMW. So the constable instructed the informant to get into the police car intending they should follow the gunman in the BMW so as Laycock could assist in identifying the vehicle; Laycock promptly complied with the constable's request and Iles then drove across the highway, stopped and both alighted, while Iles checked the female in the [white Corolla](#) for vital signs.

The gunman had shot Zoe Hall from her left side 3 times with the FN FAL 7.62 NATO rifle with only two exit holes evident in the vehicle: the RH side [pillar](#) and the RH side [rear door](#). Once At this point eyewitness Kyle Spruce corroborates Jim Laycock's account of what occurred next: Constable Iles for no apparent reason, and on the spur of the moment, changed his mind, leaving Jim Laycock standing there on the driveway, he roared off alone in his marked police car, at high speed, north up the Arthur Highway, and for the purpose of this narrative, Const Chris Iles has now literally disappeared off the face of the earth... [ETD: 1358 hrs or 1.58 pm - 0+26min].



Bullet damage, Corolla
RH rear door



Bullet damage,
Corolla RH pillar

So it would appear Chris Isles departed the cross-over at Port Arthur General Store, 5 minutes before Const Garry Whittle departed Nubeena, or 13 minutes before his estimated arrival of 2.11 pm, at the entrance to the Historic Site's Tollbooth, just 100 yards away from Port Arthur's Kodak Shop. 1411 hrs [0+39 min].

About here, there arises quite a mystery: As Const Iles initially approached Port Arthur from Taranna he should have passed the BMW at some point; either travelling north, or parked at the Seascap entrance. Yet another scenario is possible: had the gunman completed his task on the highway outside Seascap and parked near the cottage and all the wounded from the ambush, withdrawn to enter the premises of the Fox and Hounds? This last scenario seems the logical one to me. But then, what happened when the constable departed driving off north up the Arthur highway past these same positions at high speed? As by this stage, if Const Iles drove past the entrance to Seascap - 3.3 km up the highway from the General Store - he would have done so at an estimated time of 1404 hrs - just approximately 3-4 minutes after the gunman had finished his highway ambush and withdrawn into the environs of Seascap Cottage.

It was at the estimated time of 1409 hrs, Const Hyland had received a radio message from Hobart Police HQ informing him of the wounded from the five targeted vehicles ambushed as they passed south by the Seascap entrance having been given shelter in the Fox and Hounds. So the question remains, where did Constable Iles disappear to? Remembering he had at this time a clear run north through the gunman's shooting gallery outside Seascap, as he had withdrawn inside the environs. So the fleeing constable could well have driven on past, then left the Arthur Highway for the sanctuary of a forest track that as a local policeman for many years, he would have been very familiar with.

Now a little Peninsula background is warranted here: Const Chris Iles was the former Nubeena Policeman, prior to Const Paul Hyland's posting there in the autumn of 1995. Hyland took up residence in the Nubeena police house with his girlfriend Merran Craig, although I'm unsure as to Hyland's former position and posting. But for some considerable period up until 1995, Chris Iles was the well known, local Port Arthur area "cop".

Some time ago a former Peninsula local confirmed that during his time at Nubeena, 'Chris Iles was known to associate with Ian Kingston', who in those days operated the Trading Post, a sort of op-shop at Port Arthur, while he also worked a gravel truck on the Tasman Peninsula.

Certainly well before 1996, and also just prior to Paul Hyland's posting to Nubeena, this same informant alleges that 'a policeman together with a local identity' were subject to police prosecutions and court actions, 'in relation to illicit drugs'. The informant went on to allege, 'both the accused were slated to have simultaneous hearings', strangely (or not so strangely for Tasmania), the hearings were moved to the Launceston Magistrates Court, and the matters were never reported in the southern based newspaper *The Mercury*. Somehow - perhaps again because it is Tasmania - my informant alleges 'the policeman was convicted but retained his employment', with Tasmania Police and received inconsequential disciplinary action but also that 'the magistrate gave him a non custodial sentence'. Allegedly, his partner-in-crime also received a 'non-custodial sentence'. In the wash-up of the case, allegedly the unnamed policeman was transferred, effective immediately.

My inquiries also suggest it wasn't until after Hyland came to Nubeena in the autumn of 1995 that Ian Kingston was elevated to the position of SES unit manager for the Tasman group. Of course as regards Constable Chris Iles, his new posting was north to his new Police Station at Sorell, 52 km north up the Arthur Highway, in that same year. So Iles stumbled on the crime...

So back to the situation at Port Arthur and consider, **"What exactly was this former Nubeena policeman doing cruising 41 km down the Arthur Highway and out of his jurisdiction?"** Coincidentally of course his journey - all the way to Port Arthur - just happened to coincide with the joint Dunalley and Nubeena police investigation of an anonymous report of an illicit drugs "stash" which turned out to be nothing more than an unidentified white powder at the Coal Mines, 30 km from Port Arthur, and about as far away that the Nubeena police can get without leaving the Peninsula.

The joint investigation by Hyland and Whittle no doubt involved radio chatter over the open Police analogue radio - at least between Police HQ in Hobart and the two Constables. Radio traffic I would suggest that would surely have attracted the attention of this former Nubeena Policeman. Also of interest is the fact that it was in June of 1995 Ian Kingston was employed by PAHSMA and entrusted with the responsibility for security for the Historic Site on a part-time basis, while he continued in his role as Unit Manager of Tasman SES.

Though because Const Chris Iles is not on the public record as taking any further part whatsoever in the Port Arthur incident, I'm forced to raise the following points:

"What triggered Constable Iles' abrupt, and unwarranted withdrawal from his former community, and the abandonment and disregard for the wellbeing of the male hostage, he'd been informed was abducted in the locked boot of the gold coloured car heading north?"

But even further questions are raised; Keeping in mind that eyewitness Kyle Spruce stated that he told Const Chris Iles, the gunman driving the BMW, "had someone in the boot", and Jim Laycock named this policeman as Const Chris Iles, I also ask these questions:

1. Why was Chris Iles not mentioned in any of the official reports?
2. Why did he abandon the community people he knew, and who knew him well, and so leave all these people's wellbeing in the lap of the gods?
3. What heavy influence was brought to bear that caused him to vanish?

When Const Iles had driven off to the north, if he did pass Seascapes, he certainly had an exceedingly small window of time to pass over that section of the highway and not get caught up with the gunman and the BMW at the entrance to Seascapes, or indeed to miss out on passing Constable Hyland driving south.

I'm prompted to remind you of the debacle that was the Aramoana shooting massacre in 1990,[§] which saw Police Sgt Stewart Guthrie shot and killed with his own hand gun and I would suggest that the unionised police environment would have demanded that in any such future exercise - like the Seascapes siege - the highest authority within the force would ensure police not be placed in any danger of being shot and killed, not only by offenders, but especially by colleagues - even if those colleagues were operating in covert roles. Mind you, if I'm right, then no one bothered to tell the front-line uniformed police of this proviso, most likely not even after the fact! After all, in relation to exercises involving matters of national security that are placed under "D" Notices, police would surely operate on a need to know basis only, wouldn't they?

But there is one other possibility. Perhaps Const Iles left the Arthur Highway, and entered the Port Arthur Caravan Park and secreted himself away there until the pandemonium of the massacre had died down somewhat, then after darkness fell, to *blend in* with general police traffic about the Peninsula. The caravan park I speak of here is sited on an isthmus of land which borders Stewart Bay to its north, and it has a vehicular entrance from the east side of the 2.6km stretch of highway, between the Port Arthur General Store and the Fox and Hounds. Without speculating, this seems to me to be the only other possible explanation for the disappearance of the "Thin Blue Line". But this small but important incident is in reality right up there among the most perplexing *unsolved mysteries* of the Port Arthur massacre.

[§] (See pp. 37-39 *Template for Terrorism at Port Arthur*)

The Thin Blue Line

Chapter 18

We pick up the story with Constables Garry Whittle and Paul Hyland having just returned from the Coal Mines to (Hyland's) Nubeena Police Station. Here both constables pause for VKT in Hobart to update Hyland via a more secure land-line on developments in the shooting incident at Port Arthur. Constable Garry Whittle departs Nubeena first at approximately 1403 hrs, [0+31 min], advancing southeast directly towards Port Arthur and the Historic Site's Tollbooth. When Constable Paul Hyland departs he proceeds north via Premaydena the 17 km to Taranna on the Arthur Highway and 10 km north of Port Arthur, apparently in a hope they would apprehend the offender/s in a pincer movement.

So at about 1403 hrs, Garry Whittle was first to depart Nubeena, going directly to Port Arthur, a short trip of 11 km over reasonably aligned and sealed road surface; trip duration, about 8 minutes. This would put Whittle at the entrance to the Historic Site Tollbooth by about 2.11 pm or 1411 hrs [0+39 min].



One of the "ghost" police launches

Coincidentally (?) at this same time - 1411 hrs [0+39 min] - both of Tasmania Police Marine Division's sea-going motor launches *Van Diemen* and *Vigilant* were tasked and dispatched down the Derwent River 'at full speed' headed for Port Arthur. Obviously someone believed these launches could fulfil an important role. But the massacre was unfolding entirely on land... So understandably I know of no one who has confirmed sighting either motor launch in Carnarvon Bay on the 28th or 29th of April 1996. It becomes abundantly clear from a report originating from Assistant

Commissioner Luppo Prins, reported as stating that in the early stages "we" had an expectation that the attack would involve the ferry *Bundeena*, loaded with passengers as being the primary target.¹

By studying the profiles and performances of individual senior officers of Tasmania Police, I can offer a firm opinion that Mr Prins did not number among those who were 'in the loop' or 'in the joke' as it were, regarding the Port Arthur exercise. I would also opinion that as Assist Comm. Luppo Prins used the pronoun "we", he was in effect confirming more than himself holding with that reported belief. As a consequence, I'm also of the firm opinion this suggestion did not come from Comm. John Johnson as he was managed sideways to fulfil a role within the Premier's Department, and the belief would not have been expressed from lower ranks, so I believe it originated from a close colleague - Deputy Comm. McCreadie.

It also is interesting to note, on that Sunday evening before departing the PAHSMA staff had departed from the inappropriate 'debriefing' in the Backpackers' Hostel, Ian Kingston also had voiced the same belief, even although the gunman had long departed the Historic Site without ever going near the *Bundeena* and was supposedly under siege inside Seascope. For Kingston volunteered to Site staff, words to the effect, '*He [the gunman] was insisting to park down near the water ... you know he was trying for the ferry*'. In fact, in his statement to police, Ian Kingston states he saw the gunman walk from his Volvo with a video camera over his shoulder and his black bag and go into the Information Centre where the ferry [passes](#) were dispensed.

Though like the architects of the exercise, Tasmania Police had failed to take into account the rescheduling of ferry trips to the Isle of the Dead, because the winter timetable had commenced that very Sunday. That year, Easter fell 3 weeks before that Sunday, the 28th April. Traditionally, after Easter the scheduled trips of the *Bundeena* were reduced from 8 trips a day to 4 trips a day with a total of just 2 trips out to the Isle of the Dead. However, with the sudden flush of tourists that Sunday - the first warm, sunny day for weeks - and it being a weekend to boot, Ann Hillman who was in charge of ticketing that weekend, had instructed Wendy Scurr to advise the ferry skipper that an extra tour would be scheduled that day and this extra trip would depart the timber jetty at 2.30pm. From ticket sales, Ann Hillman was able to further predict the ferry would be filled to capacity.



A current PAHSMAS entry receipt also covering an Isle of the dead cruise at 2.00pm.

This would mean, 128 passengers would be aboard, plus the crew and a tour guide as it birthed. On the jetty waiting to board for the next trip, there would have been a further 128 visitors: Two hundred and fifty six people mustered like sheep in a race, ready for slaughter! The gunman had the firepower and the necessary items to carry out his killing there to maximum effect. Even the unexplained, recent shipment of military blankets for the Historic Site would have been coincidentally *timely*. The chilling reality had the schedule change not been overlooked is that the death toll could have been seven fold higher than he achieved in the Broad Arrow Café.

Reminds me of what Robert Burns wrote all those years ago, as their plans and schemes had '*gang aft a-gley*' giving them '*nought but grief and pain*'...

The gunman was surely forced to implement 'plan-B': the Broad Arrow Café. Although dispatched at full speed, both motor launches must have somewhere in the course of the trip been recalled before they reached the calmer waters of Masons Cove. After all, their arrival may have been seen by some people there that day as even more than odd.

But regarding the recall of these launches, who issued the order to return to base and when was it issued? You see no recall is mentioned in any official report; too embarrassing? The proposition of them having been tasked for a waterborne intervention involving a perceived attack on the Bundeena is strengthened by the actions of Anthony Nightingale (identified as one of two ASIO agent), who jumped to his feet and yelled out, "No No, Not here!," before he was shot dead.²

The Major Crime Squad was tasked at 1413 hrs, [0+81 min] - (EMA Report at p.6).

Meanwhile as the Nubeena Constable, Paul Hyland, approached Taranna via Premaydena and at a time estimated at about 1400 hrs Hyland received a radio message informing him of 'shot and injured people were sheltering at the Fox and Hounds Hotel'.

From Taranna, and alerted to the change in vehicles, with the gunman now driving a BMW, he drove a further 7.5 km south past Seascope, to the Fox and Hounds Hotel. Const Hyland makes no mention of sighting the BMW as he came over the rise and drove past Oakwood, as the short highway ambush was already complete, with the gunman withdrawn into Seascope cottage confines. Hyland himself tells us he received updated information at Taranna (a small 'window' there allows radio reception) and so he, quote, "...kept a lookout for a gold BNM (sic) sedan." He also notes the presence there on the highway '100m south of the driveway into to Sea Scape ... an aqua coloured 4-WD vehicle stopped on the southern lane'; Linda White's abandoned 4x4 vehicle.³

Constable Hyland does not mention sighting Constable Iles in his marked police vehicle either, not surprising when one considers the whole exercise. Constable Hyland had about 24.5 km to

cover from Nubeena to the Fox and Hounds, more than double the journey of Const Whittle and the first 17 km of the journey involved a poorly aligned sealed, but narrow road and so his estimated time of arrival at the Fox and Hounds is 1422 hrs - 2.22 pm [0+90 min].

Meanwhile Const Garry Whittle who'd arrived about 11 minutes earlier had, I believe, gone directly to the Port Arthur Tollbooth. For reasons never revealed to the public (and certainly contrary to his own account), we have established facts, that I believe show clearly Const Garry Whittle must have broken his journey at the Tollbooth. The reunion of Constables Hyland and Whittle has yet to occur after which they drive "in convoy" to Seascope.

So Garry Whittle has at least 25 minutes in which to view the bodies of the 7 deceased persons lying around the Tollbooth and in his line of vision on the upper portion of Jetty Road, before proceeding the 100 or so yards to Port Arthur Kodak Shop. But what took Hyland so long to beckon Garry Whittle to join him?

At 1425 hrs the Police Negotiation Team is tasked.⁴ At 1532 hrs police had first learned of a male hostage having been forced into the boot of the BMW and driven off north from the entrance to the Port Arthur General Store. Deputy Comm. Richard McCreadie has included the above time under his heading he termed a "response". Did police act upon a "hunch"?

Having reached the Fox and Hounds, Const Hyland tells us "four or five persons" approached him in the driveway, and there he states he "attended to" a male with an open wound on his left hand. This assistance would have taken some minutes to complete. Interestingly, the injured male he attended to was designated "P9"; 50-year-old Mr Simon Williams, a Canadian Embassy official who suffered a "fractured 2nd metacarpal". Though Const Hyland fails to mention Simon Williams' wife Susan, ("P10") who suffered extensive damage to her ring and middle finger on her left hand and had her left little finger amputated by the bullet. But Hyland does mention being "directed to" an injured female lying on a bed. Obviously these diversions would have accounted for a delay there of at least twenty-five minutes minimum.⁵ (Ready to depart 1447hrs; 0+1.15min)

The interval of Paul Hyland's delay at the Fox and Hounds was the governing factor for his radio call requesting assistance from Garry Whittle. These eyewitnesses could only have told Hyland of the last known sighting of the gunman, on the verge at the entrance to Seascope. Hence Whittle had a minimum of 40 minutes in which to examine for vital signs at least the 8 deceased: 7 around the tollbooth, and Zoë Hall in the Corolla at the Port Arthur General Store.

In May of 2001, with Andrew MacGregor and a former local resident, we retraced the movements of the various individuals implicated in the incident. This exercise gave us invaluable local experience, such as timing, attainable trip durations, distances, road conditions, topography and the like.

Now in consideration of solid evidence that came to hand over the last 6 years, it is now my firm opinion, that during those 40 minutes, Const Garry Whittle had to be the one who identified a particular deceased person near the Tollbooth on Jetty Road: Russell James "Jim" Pollard, and segment that is fully addressed in Chapter 21, "He's Out!".

Although for reasons that only Constable Garry Whittle can explain, he specifically does not mention ever having attended the Port Arthur Tollbooth scene. Instead he states he observed *"a small number of persons around the toll booth and three people outside the business premises Kodak Express [at Port Arthur]."* This account specifically does not mention deceased persons. Was Garry Whittle trying to tell us as much information here as was acceptable to his superiors? In light of the nature of this whole affair, surely Garry Whittle's statement would have been perused by his superiors before it was forwarded onto the DPP? It

is my considered opinion after gathering and perusing considerable evidence, clearly the statement or "Proof of Evidence" from Const Garry Whittle has been considerably filtered.

In this instance and concerning the identity of Russell James Pollard, because of the timing of the message relayed to NSW Police at Bingara, and then passed on to Julie Butler, Const Garry Whittle had the origin of the information passed to Police HQ, and if not Whittle, then I ask, who possibly could that messenger have been?

Now back to events as they progress toward Seascope. In relation to the Kodak Express shop, some minutes earlier, Jim Laycock, his daughter Melanie and husband Yanni Kateros, were in their photo lab that the couple operated on the western side of the Arthur Highway, situated 100 metres outside the historic site. The Kodak Express shop is no longer operating, but the building was still standing idle when I last visited the area, almost opposite the Port Arthur General Store's southern access.

From witness statements we learn that Mr Jim Laycock, had recently purchased a half share in the Port Arthur Motor Inn having 9 months previously relinquished his lease on the Broad Arrow Café, which he'd operated for many years. That Sunday afternoon while Laycock was in the rear of the Kodak Express premises, he stated he heard 'five loud gunshots' which alerted him to something being amiss. His son-in-law Yanni Kateros, a former soldier in the Greek Army, at once identified the gunshots as made by a full-bore "military" calibre rifle, near to the Tollbooth, about 100 metres to the south.

As Jim Laycock and son-in-law Yanni Kateros exited the front of the premises to see what was going on, a car with three young Australian males pulled into their driveway and one of them warned the pair, *"there's a madman gone crazy in the site, he is shooting people ... get the police and ambulance."* Laycock himself made two phone calls to Hobart Police, with the first he timed at 1342 hrs (1.42pm) - [0+10min]. While the operator held the line, Laycock went back outside and observed "2 crumpled bodies" on the drivers' side of what he later knew to be a BMW near the Tollbooth, information he then conveyed to the operator.

At 1347 hrs the Eastern Districts CIB Task Force was tasked; EMA Report p.6.

Jim Laycock made a second "000" call, timed at approximately 1352 hrs (1.52 pm), and this call was made after the gunman had locked a male hostage (Glen Pears) in the boot of the BMW, and hurriedly departed the scene after he fatally wounded the hostage's companion (Zoë Hall). Jim Laycock states he witnessed the gunman raise his rifle to waist height and seemingly without aiming, fire two or three shots through a closed, left, front car window which killed the female (Zoë Hall) seated in the driver's seat of the white Toyota Corolla.

Laycock estimates that no more than 3 minutes elapsed after the gunman had shot Zoë Hall, before at the wheel of the hijacked BMW and with hostage Glen Pears in the boot, he took-off at speed, disappearing north up the Arthur Highway towards Taranna, and a further 3 minutes had Police Constable, Chris Iles stopping, observing and disappearing north also. The time now is 1.55 pm or 1355 hrs - [0+23min]

As mentioned above, Jim Laycock had just weeks before relinquished operating his lease on the Broad Arrow Café. PAHSMA had taken over the operation, installing their manager Peter Bourke; effectively the Historic Site had then become solely, a State Government business enterprise.

Jim Laycock had known Martin Bryant, firstly as a local boy, later as a teenager and later as young man. In consideration of all the other eyewitness accounts, and without exception, Jim Laycock's statement can be said to be precise, detailed and credible. As well, the witness statement provides police with a unique and crucial observation, when he stated that he had,

"...known Martin Bryant from age 10 years until he was 23 years old." Yes, Jim Laycock had known the accused for thirteen years, and knew him even as, *"...one of the local kids"*. But on that sunny Sunday afternoon, Jim Laycock observed the gunman for between 5-10 minutes in the clear, sunny, light of day, and yet he stated quite adamantly: -

"I did not recognise the male [gunman] as Martin Bryant," - my emphasis.

Jim Laycock provided police with two statements: the [first statement](#) dated 10/05/96, by which time it was common knowledge Martin Bryant was the accused, and it was in the last few paragraphs of that first statement he makes his firm judgement. He also deliberately describes the gunman as a *"blonde headed person ... [who] appeared to be in then low twenties about 5'10 tall,"* and that description did not describe Martin Bryant, and corroborates the description of witness John Godfrey. At the time Godfrey described the gunman as follows: *"Long blonde hair, full face, large eyes - his eyes looked like they had a frightful appearance - clenched teeth, no hat, dark top. The male appeared to be lounging in the vehicle and was not driving quickly. He looked directly at me, but made no effort to turn towards where we were."* When I again spoke to the witness recently he was adamant: *"I was no more than forty metres away. He was not tall, even sitting in the car I could tell he was not a tall person. He had an ill-fitting wig on that was tilted. He looked directly at me, and I can tell you he definitely wasn't the same person that was on the [front page](#) of the newspapers a few days later."*⁶



30.04.96
The first of the
digitally-enhanced
"madman-eyes"
media photographs

In Mr Laycock's second statement dated 01/07/96 he was caused to defend what he'd stated to the press - you guessed it - concerning Martin Bryant. For the press some how knew Bryant was guilty and so 'sink the boots in,' was the media's standing orders it seemed. Though earlier in May of 1996, one magazine at least swam against this tide.

The article quotes the witness as saying, *"Martin to me never looked like a physical person. He was always gentle, he was quiet, he spoke softly,"* says Laycock. *"Because he was simple he got into trouble and was bullied. He'd look straight at you and ask silly questions,"* he stated. Sadly, I cannot ask Jim Laycock to expand upon his very significant statements, as sadly he passed away a few years after the incident.⁷

About 13 minutes after Const Iles had vanished at Port Arthur, and keeping firmly in your mind the uncertain analogue radio coverage that prevailed around Port Arthur, Const Whittle states that after he'd parked outside the Port Arthur General store, he communicates his latest assessment of the incident to VKT in Hobart.

What caused the police radios to operate just fine here - that one day?

A Devil of a set up: PFCP & politics at Taranna

Supt Bob [Fielding](#) writes in a police publication that he arrived at the Taranna Devils Park at between 1400 and 1430 hrs. Now I find this time difficult to accept as credible, especially when you consider he'd driven up from Police HQ in Hobart, a trip of around 85 plus km: even at emergency speeds a trip duration of at least an hour and 15 minutes. Supt Barry Bennett was OIC at Taranna at the time and he tells us Fielding arrived at 1500 hrs - incidentally the same arrival time Bennett provides for himself; at first it would seem this to be an error on his part. But after considering all that I have gathered on Barry Bennett, I believe while technically it is an error, he nevertheless is trying to point out his precarious position by making astute readers look deeper for the office politics factors here. After all, both accounts containing this



Bob Fielding
explaining just who
set the cottage on
fire & that the
hostages were
'probably all dead'.

information were jointly published in the same article and I'm sure you'll understand what is going on here after you read on further.

You see Dist Supt Barry Bennett provides readers with a comprehensive account of his movement on the day. In Hobart, Bennett and his wife had been on their way to a barbecue around lunch time that day when he was summoned by phone to 'come back in' to Police HQ (Hobart), to attend a shooting incident at Port Arthur. When he arrived he met with Asst Comm. Luppo Prins, who assigned [Bennett](#) to take charge of the operation, depart immediately for Taranna, and he is reported as stating his arrival time at Taranna PFCP at "about 3.00 pm," - [i.e. 1500 hrs]. So Barry Bennett was OIC at Taranna Police Forward Command Post. ⁸



Interrupted Sunday:
At Taranna, Supt Barry
Bennett's talks to ABC-
TV reporters

According to an official report, Assist Comm. Prins had not been notified of the shooting incident before 1415 hrs.⁹ Yet again I find this time supplied by Richard McCreadie, questionable. In briefing Barry Bennett, Luppo Prins tells him he'd dispatched Supervision Insp Wild [1345 hrs[‡]: 0+13 min], although this is his only mention of this officer, and strangely this officer doesn't figure anywhere else in the entire story.

Bennett borrowed a flashing red light from the Traffic Division, attached to his unmarked police sedan and drove himself to Taranna, obviously at very high speed. His trip time is almost credible but it prompts me to give his probable ETD as definitely no later than 1355 hrs. Bennett also makes the observation he found it difficult to communicate via his radio on the way; channel 6 was in use for the incident and was grossly overloaded. Upon arrival at Taranna however he deliberately states radio transmission was unsatisfactory being very, "scratchy and very poor"; in fact he is forced to arrange an open land-line with Hobart so as they can communicate with some degree of satisfaction.

Taranna Devils Park is a private wildlife park then operated by former media person, John Hamilton. Now when Barry Bennett arrived he tells us 'some young constables had taken over the office and with concurrence of the owners had started to set up the four command posts', while a road block had already been set up and manned at the Nubeena turn-off, just south of the PFCP.

In light of Barry Bennett's recount of events, does Fielding's claimed arrival time stand up to further scrutiny? In the article attributed to Supt Bob Fielding, he claims he was at home when he got the initial call into the Operation Centre (at Police HQ). So roughly speaking he and Bennett had similar initial impediments to their arrival times. Both officers must have been informed consecutively at worst. But Fielding chooses not to elaborate on the circumstances surrounding his receipt of his initial summons. But he tells us that before he left Police HQ, he was assigned to *"...go to the Forward Control post and take over from Supt Bennett"* - (my emphasis): his primary task it would seem. Why would this be so? Obviously, Fielding was not taking his orders from Assist Comm. Luppo Prins. I suggest Fielding's orders almost surely were delivered to him by the then Dept Comm. Richard McCreadie. It becomes, who by his action and deeds demonstrates from very early stages that he'd begun to gather control of the whole of the police operation.

Police command protocols dictate that once an officer is put in command of an incident, he stays until his assignment is complete. If the incident is prolonged, such as was the outcome here, then he is found somewhere to take time-out to rest and put his head down if necessary; but he retains his command and is kept informed of any developments.

[‡] Richard McCreadie, Police overview, EMA papers, p.6

Considering the cavalier admissions exposed by Police training video 'for police eyes only', the past controversies associated with certain SOG officers named in the Mahoney Inquiry of March 2000, into the July 1991 death of Joe Gilewicz and various other controversial homicide cases, the internal politics of Tasmania police become ever so clear. In the critical segment of the siege at Seascapes Supt Bob Fielding makes a quite extraordinary admission regarding how Martin Bryant was forced to come to the police. When combined with comments on the status of the hostages, I believe it is clear that relieving Barry Bennett of his command takes on the significance of an imperative, prior to him ordering the SOG to commence any type of action that could be termed as *taking the initiative*; McCreadie was manoeuvring the troops for that important final phase.



28/04/96 Taranna PFCP:
Supt Bennett's 2nd press
conference

Even although Bennett mentions that, "*Bob [Fielding] arrived about 3 pm and told me to go home,*" causes considerable problems for whoever issued Fielding those orders countermanding Barry Bennett's commission as District Superintendent for the peninsula. It surely must have caused a certain senior officer some heartburn back in Hobart when Barry Bennett resisted being stood-down and continued to carry out his assignment. Supt Bennett tells us he briefed the first SOG contingent which arrived by helicopter and that he then

held the first of two media conferences, which he estimates to have occurred at about 4.00 pm (1600 hrs) at least an hour after Fielding claims he arrived and immediately told Bennett to 'go home'. Of importance here is the fact Bennett tells us further that as this first media conference broke off, 'Geoff Easton's SAC-PAV counterpart', Peter Hazelwood from out of the Premier's Media Office, arrived to greet Barry Bennett. Geoff Easton had gone to the MIR at Police Head Quarters, to handle matters at the top - so to speak.

We are told Barry Bennet gave a [second](#) press conference and from the Police Training Video, we know it occurred after darkness had closed in. Two other facts emerge in the article attributed to Supt Barry Bennett: firstly he claims that Det Insp Warren arrived at the PFCP and was assigned to "go to the incident site and to take charge of the detectives and the investigation." I've found no documented evidence the order was ever acted upon. Did Supt Fielding countermand Bennett's orders at some time and is that why Warren returned to Hobart? For remember we are told that DI John Warren lead the first police contingent, accompanied Dr Ian Sale and some of the local media, to make their (now known to be) illegal forced entry into Bryant's Clare St residence, late that same evening.

The second claim is even more disturbing. Mentioned directly after his account of DI Warren's assignment, he deals with the arrival of **Inspector Freeman** at the PFCP. In this instance, Supt Barry Bennett, writes, "*Inspector Freeman arrived and I tasked him with the security of the incident site. That is the historic village and where the bodies were in the fort.*"¹⁰

Supt Barry Bennett tells us he gave two briefings to the media, the first at around 1600 hrs with just 10 or 12 attending his first briefing. He also tell us Peter Hazelwood arrived at the end of that briefing and so I would suggest this SAC-PAV man out of the Premier's Department would have organised media briefings at Taranna from this time forward.

Although no time is provided for Barry Bennett's second briefing when 'around 200' gathered about him, I can say with certainty it occurred after darkness had fallen at 1731 hrs, as the photograph attests.

Clearly, while the order may well have been issued to Inspector Freeman - and I have no reason to believe it wasn't issued - but the fact is the order was never acted upon. Inspector Freeman is not mentioned in any other document in my files. As I have stated elsewhere, one lone uniformed policeman, "Detective" Peter Hessman was delivered by a police car to the Broad Arrow Café at 1626 hrs, the vehicle then departing the site. Later, just after 1730 hrs, two

unarmed female police officers were delivered by helicopter. So who countermanded Supt Barry Bennett's most important and second assignment given directly to Inspector Freeman upon his arrival at Taranna, to go and secure the Historic Site where the incident had first occurred? Is it possible that Bob Fielding also intervened and countermanded this order? This anomaly demands the close attention of any future open inquiry as the 6 hr delay was so devastating to the health and well being of so many people - some still to this day.

Tasmania's Power Structure Surfaces

Police Commissioner John Johnson's "star" was on the wane, and even although Dept Comm. McCreadie was junior in policing to Luppoo Prins, the McCreadie "star" was in rapid ascension.

After all, for selected nations, 1996 marked the acceleration into that age of international terrorism with the followers of Islam pointed out as the 'bad-guys'. You see Johnson was of another era. In 1992, when John Johnson and his 2 Australian police colleagues were in Dakar, among 143 delegations at the 61st General Session of Interpol, "terrorism" was not listed as being on the session's agenda. It seems that Richard McCreadie had got the establishment "nod".



28/04/96, the Duty Minister
& former Tasmania Premier:
Ray Groom - the Minister for
everything to do with Port
Arthur it would seem.

In his report to the EMA seminar, Richard McCreadie even confirms Assist Comm. Prins assigned Dist Supt Barry Bennett to set-up the Taranna command post, but very noticeably, not a word about Supt Fielding's assignment, to rush down to Taranna and relieve Barry Bennet of his command immediately upon his arrival. Sequentially, McCreadie then confirms Comm. John Johnson was recalled and "immediately [briefed](#) the duty Minister," who just happened to be Ray Groom, the recently resigned State Premier.

As the Sunday evening approached Comm. John Johnson seems to have been conveniently *managed* out or side-lined from the media spotlight, to 'became part of the State Crisis Centre' formed at the Premier's Department. From the late afternoon of that Sunday, Richard McCreadie became the face of Tasmania Police via the media to the world as he assumed "overall command of the police involvement..." in the whole exercise: it had been developed quickly into a global media feeding frenzy, with an immaculately turned out Dept Comm. Richard McCreadie, the central figure now in what Geoff Easton described as the "*process of regular briefings to the media for the duration of the incident.*" The media considerations where huge; two media liaison officers were flown in from Victoria and two arrived from NSW by commercial airlines early on Monday morning, to bolster the two SAC-PAV trained officers there on the spot, making a total of 6 liaison officers we know of on the exercise.¹¹

Let us now return to the two uniformed, local Constables, Paul Hyland and Garry Whittle. At an estimated 1447 - 1453hrs, the Dunalley Constable, Garry Whittle, departed Port Arthur General store in response to a radio call from Const Paul Hyland, and he proceeds north up the highway to join his colleague. On the way he was stopped by two motorists both of whom informed him of people being shot near the Fox and Hounds Hotel, 2.6 km north up the highway. We are also informed that it was at 1447 hrs [0+15 min], "the Fire Brigade [was] notified."¹² This timing I find curious; shades of their ordering out prematurely the water-born response. But we know senior police were in fact complying with recently established police protocols here. The point being, this fire brigade call-out, timed at 2.47pm, is simply *too early* for police to be reactionary. There exists no documented evidence indicating they

had been informed before this time that the BMW had been torched! Please keep this in mind, and we shall return to this first act of arson all in good time.

Now to Garry Whittle. After his brief distraction, he passes the Fox and Hounds and joins Paul Hyland about 500m south of the Seascapes entrance heading north. As they proceed, Whittle mentions passing by "a 4x4 vehicle" about 150m short of the Seascapes entrance; the aqua blue Holden Frontera, parked in the southbound lane, adjacent to an access gate to the adjoining property to Seascapes, and we shall deal with this episode shortly.



Lynda White's Holden Frontera: abandoned 150m south of the Seascapes entrance.



29.4.96 Hijacked BMW: Totally burnt-out shell of the 'Sepang Bronze' BMW, looking SW. First reports stated the hostage had been burnt to death in the boot.

Upon reaching Seascapes, Const Hyland states he observed the BMW parked, "...on the grass lawn...facing east. This vehicle was on fire." His ETA here is approx 11 minutes after the fire brigade is called-out at 1458 - [0+2.26min]. An extract from the notes of Garry Whittle, provided at the debriefing (11.25 pm 28th), he states while at the vehicles with Paul Hyland, he, "observed smoke coming from a vehicle which appeared to be burning." It seems reasonable to suggest the flames were not obvious at this time, possibly obscured by the thick smoke. It was at this same time incidentally, that the second "Squirrel" chopper was tasked to assist in the recovery of wounded. The approximate times for Whittle and Hyland's movements have only been arrived at, after very carefully reconstructing the events to this stage, sensitive to giving both Whittle and Hyland the benefit of achieving each destination at *the earliest time possible*.

Regarding the constables arrival at Seascapes, Richard McCreadie tells us, "*the first police arrived at 1412 and confirmed activity at Seascapes and the burning BMW.*" Now this time is quite impossible. For I would hasten to remind you that Constable Garry Whittle had one minute earlier, at 1411 hrs, only just reached Port Arthur!¹³

Also consider this same exercise put Const Paul Hyland at his primary destination, the Fox and Hounds, at 1422 hrs some or 10 minutes after McCreadie's report claims they had completed their tasks at Port Arthur and the Fox and Hounds and made their way to Seascapes. The time recorded in the EMA report is so impossible, it would have meant Paul Hyland had no injured people to see at the Fox and Hounds, as he would have come south down the Arthur Highway before they had been targeted by the gunman! However, perhaps Mr McCreadie was inadvertently referring to the mysterious SOG, who I would opinion must have been already there in the environs of Seascapes, before the BMW was torched, and we shall meet him directly.

Const Whittle parks his marked Police vehicle across the road south of the Seascapes entrance as a road block, and Hyland moved-off in his vehicle north, up the rising slope past the Oakwood sign, over the crest and into the left-hand bend, until just south of the entrance to "Benbullen". Here he too sets up a road block stopping all southbound traffic.

But meanwhile back at the Port Arthur Historic Site, 471 Tasmania police personnel and ten Victoria SOG officers that arrived that evening were yet to materialise. When the first police were logged into the Historic Site at 1626 (4.26pm), perhaps Tasmania Police were testing the theory of "the Power of One". An hour and four minutes later at about 1730 hrs, police presence was boosted 200 percent, when two, unarmed, female Constables, fresh from the Police Academy stepped from a helicopter; the result of a promised reinforcement by a SOG group.

The 'thin blue line' spread among the 500 visitors and dozens of staff over the whole of the Historic Site was indeed to remain thread-like ... for yet a further two hours! 1930 hrs - [0+6 hrs] At last the Historic Site is declared secure, but for six traumatic hours everyone there could only hope that the gunman did not return!

Skeletal 'Insider Politics'

As I have attempted to do in all my writings on this sober subject, I want to provide the reader with the opportunity to consider essential background material of individuals with whom we are dealing, whether it be Tasmania Police, bureaucrats, various Ministry people and the influence their past activities and associations have upon events dealt with here. I believe very strongly it would be foolish of us to reject such information, and very imprudent to reject the reality of such quite extraordinary pressures probably being exerted upon those in any of these areas of authority who may have been tempted to not 'hold the line' and voice their suspicions and/or knowledge of the true nature of the massacre as a matter of conscience.

To this end let us look a little closer at the possible reasons behind the Bennett-Fielding assignments and orders countermanded at Taranna.

At the time of the massacre at Port Arthur, Barry Bennett was 49-years-of-age having been a Tasmania Policeman for 31 years. Along with 24 other recruits he did his training in the Sackville Street Academy in Hobart in 1965, graduating as a "junior constable" first tasked as a 'driver for detectives, watch sergeants, duty inspectors and policewomen'. With just 2 years on the job, in 1968 he volunteered for a tour with the UN police in Cyprus, and at the end of his tour of duty and 21-year-old, he toured through Europe for his leave-time.

Upon his return to Tasmania and sporting a beard, Bennett was assigned to the drug squad, then in its infancy with just 2 members; former Deputy Comm. Keith Viney and one Terry Cashion (a name you may wish to follow in the article on this disc by this author, "Template for Terrorism...etc")

Still later, he again transferred back into the Drug Squad, this time with Terry Cashion and Luppo Prins. Bennett credits this early experience in the Drug Squad to the 'opening of doors to an influential career in the CIB'. In 1992, he was assigned commander of the SOG, a rank he held until he was posted as Superintendent in Eastern District which he held in 1996 which included the Port Arthur area. In 1972, what began as a minor dispute with his immediate supervisor at the Glenorchy CIB blew out of all proportion resulting in him being suspended for six months. He fought the matter through the Magistrate's Court in Hobart, with 3 of the 4 charges being dismissed and him being found guilty of being absent from duty for 15 minutes and fined the grand sum of \$15; he returned to work immediately.

At the time of the massacre at Port Arthur, it should be remembered Barry Bennett was a trained negotiator in siege situations with 14 years experience and was also the immediate past Commander of the SOG. At Pelterata in July 1991, it had been Barry Bennett who was the negotiator who pleaded with the Vietnam veteran Joe Gilewicz 'to abandon his siege', telling him to "Please, please, don't go outside with a gun". The results at Pelterata was a hugely embarrassing episode for a number of police, none more so than Richard McCreadie, resulting in the very controversial Mahoney Inquiry in 2000, also addressed in the above mentioned article, "Template for Terrorism...etc" - one volume of the report of which still remains "Restricted".

I believe this is the primary reason the police negotiator and his team had to be kept in Hobart and away from Taranna; so the negotiator's mobile van arrived late? I'll bet it did! There was one senior officer who could not have dared to have the initiative and ingenuity of Bennett with his 14 years experience as a negotiator and former SOG commander influencing the required outcome of the siege; after all, was Bryant meant to even survive?

When all of Bennett's past police experience is considering, the countermanding of Luppo Prins' assignment issued directly to him for the remaining operations out of the Forward Command Post at Taranna, by a colleague of same rank Bob Fielding, comes sharply into focus.

After Bryant's sentencing the EMA Port Arthur Seminar was held in Abbotsford, Melbourne on 11 and 12 March 1997. Some 5-6 Staff members of PAHSMA were refused permission to attend; Ian [Kingston](#) alone was sent to Melbourne. My inquiries have found that these same staff members - most survivors of the massacre - remained unconvinced that the Ministers, Parliament, the bureaucrats, police and their employer, the Government of Tasmania, were giving due consideration to addressing their interests and any of the matters they continued to raise of their ordeal, a conclusion only heightened when they read of the outrageously false claims, in the paper Ian Kingston presented in the Melbourne Metropolitan Fire Brigade's Theatre Number One during the final stages of the EMA's March 1997 seminar.



Security officer: Ian Kingston 1996

In that paper for instance, just some of the claims made were:

- In the Summary it states he "...was present at the Broad Arrow Café during the period when many of its patrons were shot."
- "Was involved in organising the immediate evacuation of people from the Café itself, other visitors in the immediate vicinity in and around the Port Arthur Site and for co-ordination of local Emergency Service Volunteers (Fire, ambulance and SES), once they arrived at Port Arthur."
- For a short period, he assumed "...the responsibility of weekend supervisor in the absence of the Senior Management," away at the weekend seminar at Swansea,

In the body of Kingston's presentation he went on to claim that he,

- "...ran into one of the entrances of the Café...[where he] came across two bodies..."
- He further claimed, "I saw a number of people shot," before he got out of the Café and further claimed, as he came out of the door, "...people were flocking in thinking it was a re-enactment of some sort."
- Upon exiting the café he "...evacuated as many of the people as [he] could in [his] immediate area."
- He claimed the have shouted out "*fire*", in the café, where upon "...people started to leave the Café area."

The last claim is a gem; it really is in the same league of foolish logic practiced by Anthony Nightingale who in the Café got to his feet and informed all in earshot, "No no, not here!" to be immediately targeted by the gunman and shot dead.

But all of the above claims attributed to Ian Kingston are easily proven as false if you consider the evidence I have presented throughout this work. In fact, for the majority of the period the gunman was on the Historic Site, Kingston had secreted himself in The Parsonage some 425m from the café and was discovered there after the gunman was observed to have departed the Tollbooth.

When these offensive claims were put on the public record by Kingston, five PAHSMA staff members instigated legal action by letter dated 4 August 1997, which after some time caused Mr Kingston to issue an unreserved written apology. However, two staff members decided to take their grievances further by going directly to the top person in SES; the Director of Tasmania SES, Joe Paul. But in 2006 Kingston's outrageous claims[§] are again published! ¹⁴

[§] In 2006, Kingston was quoted as stating, he should have "hid behind the door and waited until he (the gunman) came out and scruffed him." So Kingston is still at it. Continuing, he explains, "I just left [the job] because of the circumstances, and because, I suppose what was happening at the Site, what was

In their meeting with Joe Paul, Mrs Scurr told me that exchanges became quite heated as they listed the false claims the Tasman Unit Manager had put on the public record. But yet again they seemed to be 'hitting a brick wall', which caused Wendy to suggest; "We are being lied to here Joe!" This triggered an immediate response with his words to the effect: *'You think we [the SES] have been lying! You should go and ask the police about the lies they've told you!'*

Continuing, Mrs Scurr told me that she and her companion were so outraged by this claim they straightaway went to Police headquarters to see Barry Bennett, a policeman both had gotten to know on his visits to the Peninsula where he met with ambulance volunteers and the like in the wake of the massacre. They were determined to put Joe Paul's suggestion 'that police had lied to the public about the massacre' directly to Supt Barry Bennett. The Superintendent was unavailable, and determined not to let the matter rest, Mrs Scurr made a firm appointment to see him about a week later.

At the appointed time Mrs Scurr met with Barry Bennett, out of his office in the upper levels of Police Head Quarters in Hobart and she put Joe Paul's allegation directly to him which made him 'visibly upset'. He promised to take the allegation made along with other grave concerns straight to a higher level. As Wendy Scurr departed the hallway, Bennett's raised voice was clearly heard to state, *"Luppo! Get in here ... Now!"* Had Bennett realised this probing was not about to go away? Had the allegations made by Mrs Scurr and the concerns she had raised caused Bennett to catch on to what actually had occurred there - right under his nose at Taranna? Did he then begin to 'rock the boat'? We may never know, but consider this following development.

On 16 February 1999, an incident occurred which Barry Bennett understandably has been quoted as describing as *"the worst day of my life."*



The Wilson presentation in the Historic Site's Government Gardens, 24 Oct 1997: McCreadie never apologised to staff for the 6 hrs of trauma but tells them to 'forget April 28 and get on with life'.

The Bennett's son Ty was a young Constable in Hobart and had been in Tasmania Police for 5 years. Like the two constables who were decoyed and sent on a wild goose chase after a 'drug stash' to the Coal Mines that April Sunday in 1996, Bennett is quoted as telling us his son Ty *"...had been called out to attend what turned out to be a false alarm. His car went off the road and he was killed."*

As many as 4 other Peninsula survivors, colleagues of the two who visited Joe Paul's office, all knew of this development and were caused to wonder had it occurred as a result of the meeting with Barry Bennett? Remember Barry Bennet was the only senior Police Officer who apologised to most of these Peninsula survivors: 'We really let you people down that day,' he had said. Oh, and by the way, it was subsequently announced that on 26th July, 2000, the informed Tasmanian Director of the SES, and Midlands Shire (Kempton) Councillor Joe Paul, "passed away suddenly".¹⁵

During this time of post massacre turmoil Richard [McCreadie](#) made an official visit to the Historic Site. Staff on duty that sunny Friday, 24 October 1997, were instructed to assemble in the Government Gardens on Site at 11.20am. The new Commissioner arrived in his smart blue uniform with his shoes shining like mirrors and presented the Deputy Mayor and his wife with certificates of appreciation from Tasmania Police for catering that nourished the visitors held for 10 or more hours in the Motel and Backpackers Hostel for counselling etc. Peter and Maureen Wilson operated the Port Arthur Bakery, but had to resort to recovering food from the

happening in my life." In August 1996 his 13 year marriage ended and after he was found *in flagrante delicto* & left his employment there in November of 1996. Former wife Maria Stacey won promotion.

Broad Arrow Café to supplement their supply; but the staff had to “eat crow” that night. While McCreadie never apologised for the police’s 6 hour delay, or his failure to investigate the 3 shots on the site after dark that Sunday, arrogantly he offered advice to those assembled contrary to all medical opinion at the time: ‘...forget April 28 and get on with your lives’.¹⁶

So is it any wonder those Peninsula survivors still when I last spoke with several of them, wonder openly and anguish that by some awful chance their actions ignited a sequence of events that resulted in an unstoppable and dreadful consequence... Nothing ever came of Bennett’s promises, and nothing is now expected; all of these Tasmanians I’m told understand first hand the extent of corruption that pervades *the thin blue line*.¹⁷

End Notes

¹ n.a., *The Mercury* 31dec96)

² #0154 Tasmania Police Training Video; McCreadie R., EMA Report p.6

³ Hyland, Const Paul, to prove – statement, undated.

⁴ Richard McCreadie, “An Overview of the Police Response,” EMA Report, p.6

⁵ Mr Perks, Court Doc., pp. 169-170;

Dutton, “Port Arthur Shooting,” Wound Ballistic Review, Vol 3 No. 4, p.42.

⁶ John Godfrey, witness statement; interview

⁷ Kate Halfpenny, “The Bizarre life of Martin Bryant,” *Who weekly*, 13may96, p. 28

⁸ Jenny Flemming, “Port Arthur”, PASA Police Journal, Vol.78, No3. March 1997, p.5

⁹ Richard McCreadie, “An Overview of the Police Response,” EMA Report, p.7

¹⁰ *Ibid*, p.6

¹¹ Geoff Easton – voice transcript, Police Training Video.

¹² Richard McCreadie, “An Overview of the Police Response,” EMA Report, p.6

¹³ Hyland, Const Paul, to prove - statement; McCreadie R, “...Overview of The Police Response,” EMA Report, p.5.

¹⁴ Sarah Price, “The remains of the day”, *The Sun-Herald* 9apr06, pp.55-58

¹⁵ Late News, SES News, Queensland, July 2000.

¹⁶ Neil MacKinnon, PAHSMA Staff memo 15oct97; notes by W. Scurr, 24oct97.

¹⁷ Barry Bennett, Assistant Commissioner, “Crime and Operations”, pub, Dec. 2001, Tasmania Police Journal, pp. 17-21, at:

http://www.pat.asn.au/uploaded/62/290039_04taspolicedec01.pdf.

Highway Ambush

Chapter 19

The gunman's "[shooting gallery](#)" outside the Seascape property, covered a 400 - 500 yard (365-450m) stretch of the Arthur Highway. At its northern extent, a sweeping bend on elevated ground immediately south of the entrance on the carriageway's western verge to what was then Andrew Simmons' property "Benbullen," south over the crest at this bend extending down along a 300-yard, dipping straight, past the Oakwood sign, past the [entrance](#) to Seascape (where the gunman stood), through a culverted-dip at its lowest elevation, at a sweeping left-hand bend, about 210 yards south and beyond the entrance to Seascape, to its southern extent near a cottage on the left or eastern verge of the Arthur Highway.



The Seascape ambush site looking SE towards Seascape entrance; dist. LH



Gunman stood on the verge (RH of frame) near the Seascape entrance

and the 4 who suffered gunshot wounds there, all ended up at the Fox and Hounds, where Constable Paul Hyland made for, after receiving radio information of their plight as he passed through the limits of Taranna, 6-6km to the north.

In this incident, the 5 vehicles targeted were all travelling south in the southbound lane of the highway the carriageway traversing a substantial side-cut adjacent to the northbound lane. There is to the west bordering this road, alignment very high, steep and heavily timbered ground. The conclusions I draw here have only been arrived at after careful consideration of all the witness statements we obtained out of the DPP's office. After your consideration of this segment, you can draw your own conclusions. The motorists who were ambushed at the Seascape entrance,

In the Court Documents, at pp.164 -172, (see *Deceit & Terrorism* court Doc folder) the DPP's Assistant Counsel Mr Nick Perks, presents his hypothesis of the highway shootings segment as fact. I'm afraid his theories do not stand up to close scrutiny. It becomes clear when all evidence I've collected is considered, the five cars involved have been "shuffled" so as to support Mr Perk's hypothesis which he presented to the Court as fact. At the conclusion to this segment, you will be able to consider weighty argument as to why the authorities should desire to shift attention away from the occupants of a bright red Ford Futura sedan, who while injured, (the husband and wife are both Canadian nationals), survived the ambush that day.

So let me explain what occurred here by putting the 5 targeted vehicles in what I believe is their correct sequence.

After shooting Zoë Hall at Port Arthur the gunman drove the BMW to Seascape at high speed up the Arthur Highway, and upon reaching the entrance, in the words of eyewitness John ROOKE, the BMW, "cut straight in front of me," and parked in the Seascape gateway. ROOKE was southbound, driving to Port Arthur at a sedate 50 kph. The eyewitness states he saw the gunman alight, move quickly to the eastern verge, behind the left rear of BMW, and immediately raise a rifle, aim, and fire two shots (from the AR-10 · 308W) at John ROOKE.

FIRST TARGET: Datsun 180B sedan driven by John Rooke. John Rooke was alone, driving the first vehicle to enter the gunman's Arthur Highway "shooting gallery," and hitched to his Datsun 180B, Rooke had a trailer-load of rubbish. Mr Rooke estimated he was no more than "about 20' away" when the gunman opened fire, but fortunately both shots missed. This action by the gunman constituted count 60 on the indictment, charge of attempted murder against Martin Bryant. (I firmly believe Bryant was at this time inside Seascapes with and controlled by his friend "Rick" or "Mick")

After Rooke passed the gunman, and before rounding the bend at the bottom of the incline, (about 60 yards or so past the entrance to Seascapes), in his rear-view mirror, he states he saw the windscreen and the front, passenger side window, "get blown out" of a "red Falcon" sedan following him towards Port Arthur; I must agree on this point with Mr Perks, and believe John Rooke has mistaken the sequence although he did see this event, a position we shall examine directly and clarify.

SECOND TARGET: a blue Holden [Frontera](#) 4x4 with 29-year-old Linda White at the wheel and beside her, later fiancé - and now husband - Michael Wanders as a passenger. I'm now firmly of the belief this was the vehicle succeeding John Rooke. These two young people were "sightseeing" that sunny day, and as they drove in their words "slowly", south towards Port Arthur, Linda had just commented on the pretty sight of the pink cottages of Seascapes to their left, when she noticed a male with a rifle by his side, standing on the left verge of the road. Thinking it was part of some show, she slowed even more as they approached him. The man raised his rifle and fired, the windscreen "shattered," and a hole appeared in front of her face at eye level. At that instant she felt a stinging sensation at her left cheek, and when she looked down, realised her right forearm had sustained a severe injury. In fact, designated "P8", Linda sustained fractures of the ulna and radius of her left forearm, and extensive muscle damage, which required surgery and 4 days in Royal Hobart Hospital. Lynda White's Frontera and the Police Traffic vehicle were added "props" for the huge [media](#) group, bussed in on Monday around 1230 hrs.



2nd Target: the Frontera suffered bullet damage & stalled 120m south of the entrance



Seascapes cottage

Linda White and Michael Wanders in the Frontera had been targeted by a volley of 3 or possibly 4 shots, one of which disabled the throttle cable, causing the vehicle's motor to die and it rolled to a stop around the culverted bend, coming to rest adjacent to a road sign informing northbound traffic: "Seascapes 200m".

This is the incident Joe Vialls used, to highlight the gunman's accuracy skill he used to immobilize the blue Frontera, in articles the headlined, "The Beirut Triple". But more importantly I believe at the same time Vialls was also attempting to shift attention away from the red Futura. Joe Vialls' theory here has not a shred of credibility. For the gunman to instantly recognise arguably *the most unlikely vehicle* in Australia to pass by Seascapes that afternoon, and then know and recall the anatomy of its engine compartment so accurately, so as to be able to sever the 4mm diameter throttle cable and kill the motor with one shot, defies all comprehension. What I'm saying here, is that in 1996, the Frontera was an uncommon model anywhere, even on the Tasman Peninsula.



29/04/96: The abandoned Frontera south of the dip at Seascapes is subjected to media attention

However when the Frontera rolled to a stop, both occupants alighted and hurriedly changed places, only then did they discover the motor wouldn't start as the accelerator was dead. WANDERS began running towards Port Arthur but suddenly realised Linda was running north to a

burgundy red Fairlane facing south and stationary in the dip. It was the driver Doug Horne, had been wounded when they passed the gunman, and he stopped while he and his male passenger attempted to swap places. But Doug eventually stayed behind the wheel, and for the moment, we shall pause the scene at the abandoned blue 4x4 Holden Frontera, and return to the third target; the burgundy Fairlane.

THIRD TARGET: a burgundy red, Fairlane driven by Douglas HORNE with 4 passengers was the third target to pass the gunman. This third vehicle was described by various eyewitnesses as a 'big dark car' and yet another witness as a "red" car and by a third as a "Falcon". Although of bulkier dimensions than the Ford Falcon, the Ford Fairlane sported many similarities and some even identical parts, hence the eyewitness's confusion here. But seated beside Doug Horne and in the front passenger seat was Neville Shilkin, behind him his wife Helen, and behind Doug, sat his wife Fay.

John Rooke truly believed he was correct in his statement thinking that the red Futura driven by Simon Williams was next in line to him and so the second car. But as I will demonstrate, it was an illusion created by the three succeeding vehicles, changing the sequence by which they exited the ambush site.

In his statement Rooke explains how he had determined what he saw in the rear-view mirror, when he states, that in the red Falcon, *"there was only the two Williams' in their vehicle"*. Quite so, but there was only two people in the blue 4x4 Frontera as well, and he confirms this observation some time after the Williams had arrived at the Fox and Hounds in their red Futura, and at the same time confirmed to his own satisfaction both its windscreen and front passenger windows were shot out.

But after much consideration I'm firmly of the opinion that John Rooke was confused as to the fleeting image he'd seen of a vehicle shedding exploding glass as viewed in the left-hand rear-view mirror of his Datsun 180B as he entered the sweeping left-hander, as the scene disappeared from view. You see it is my recollection that the fully imported Japanese manufactured Datsun 180B sedan, had as original equipment two external, rear-view mirrors which incorporated anti-glare properties, and an optical quality which by reducing the image size "distorted" the driver's view.

Remember Rooke was towing a trailer loaded with rubbish, and so his internal mirror was likely obstructed. So as he entered the left hand bend 60 yards after Seascapes, he would have to have used the external, left hand mirror, to sight the car being shot at. No doubt Rooke saw glass exploding from a windscreen and side window of a vehicle. Importantly this vehicle was I believe the blue 4x4, and remember it would have been 60 yards distant, with its surfaces in full shadow, and so its colour would have appeared darker and difficult to identify in an instant.

I firmly believe it was not a "red Falcon". For I contend that ROOKE was in all probability persuaded to hold this belief, because the red Futura (Falcon) was the first car, that overtook him, while he was parked about 300m past the Seascapes entrance near a white cottage, with its windscreen and side window blown out. As John Rooke alighted from his parked Datsun 180B, the red Futura came into view right beside him, and it exhibited obvious gunshot damage, all of which occurred in a considerably short time frame.

Now, following close behind the red Futura, came Doug Horne in his Burgundy Fairlane, also damaged by gunshots. Distracted by the obvious, Rooke has understandably failed to see the blue 4x4 Frontera, parked, silent, and now abandoned on the road, 100 yards further to his rear. When Rooke arrived at the Fox and Hounds, 4 or 5 minutes later, the Williams' red Futura had "just pulled up", and he later learned its two occupants were - Mr and Mrs Williams.

You see Linda White and Michael Wanders had in panic, climbed into Doug Horne's burgundy Fairlane stationary in the dip in the moments before ROOKE had alighted from his Datsun, and consequently, the memory of the indistinct image in the rear-view mirror was superimposed by the reality of the first car that passed him; the "red Falcon" driven by Simon WILLIAMS. When John ROOKE arrived at the Fox and Hounds, he acknowledges the vehicle that followed the WILLIAMS' car, which he describes as another "Falcon"; however I firmly believe it was in fact the burgundy Fairlane driven by Doug HORNE.

THE FOURTH TARGET: a red Ford "Futura" (Falcon) sedan, driven by Mr Simon Williams, with his wife Susan in the passenger seat was the **fourth** vehicle to pass through the gunman's field of fire. Mr Williams was in fact a Canadian Embassy official stationed in Canberra who was holidaying in Tasmania with his wife. As an aside, interestingly, Williams never made any statements to the press, a task that fell to his senior officer, the deputy Canadian High Commissioner, Gardner Wilson. Now John Rooke stated that he heard 4 shots in all fired at the vehicle that followed him, which he mistook to be the red Falcon. We know that at least 3 shots struck the Frontera, while the police shot sequence we obtained, records just one bullet struck Simon and Susan Williams' vehicle. Simon Williams states that he overtook 'a reversing white car,' before passing the gunman, and this was in fact a Silver-grey Magna. He also states after his windscreen and both front side windows exploded, he became *"...aware that a burgundy coloured car was stopped in the left lane,"* which he overtook and continued driving.

As I have mentioned above here is the weighty evidence showing that Rooke's second 'red Falcon,' was in reality the **burgundy red Ford Fairlane** and not surprisingly, another eyewitness Michael Wanders, also refers to this Fairlane as a "Falcon".

THE FIFTH TARGET: a silver-grey Mitsubishi Magna sedan. The **fifth** vehicle targeted in this ambush, entered but did not pass through the gunman's field of fire. This vehicle was driven by Anne Elizabeth Wardle, and was carrying 3 female passengers.

Anne Wardle states while travelling south and as the Seascapes cottages came into view to their left, *importantly*, they were following a vehicle, which she "can't describe". This I believe had to be the blue 4x4 Holden Frontera; none of the occupants of the Magna described, this vehicle or saw it targeted, as they had yet to see the gunman. Also, if this 'indescribable' vehicle had been John Rooke's Datsun, Anne may well have not been able to identify the make or colour of the car, but she certainly would have recognised and remembered a trailer loaded with rubbish towed by it and closest to any following vehicle.

Anne Wardle further states that when she reached a point about half way down the incline towards the Seascapes entrance she recognised as a threat, a male standing beside the road with a gun. She stopped her car in the southbound lane. That puts Anne Wardle at between 150 - 200 yards from the top of the crest on that straight downhill [section](#). Now effected by alarm, Anne struggled to engage reverse gear, and no sooner had began reversing against the traffic flow, when two vehicles travelling south and close together, overtook the reversing silver-grey Magna.



The Gunman's Range: looking north from Seascapes entrance past the Oakwood sign (L dist) to the "crest", from the gunman's position beside the hijacked "Sepang Bronze" (gold) BMW.

Seated in the front passenger seat with Anne Wardle, Sylvia Riley mentioned seeing a "big dark coloured car," in front of them as they entered the downgrade past Seascapes (the 4x4 blue Frontera I contend), and yet another "big dark car" followed by "a red smaller car" that overtakes them. I believe although somewhat vague in detail, it is nevertheless a corroborative statement of other witnesses. Wardle then moved over into the northbound lane, deciding it a safer option, as she reversed towards the crest beyond the Oakwood sign; this crest and bend would obviously have

concealed her vehicle to any south bound traffic approaching from Taranna. Part way to the crest, all 4 females witnessed the windscreen and side windows of the Futura explode. Though none of the four witnesses in the Magna mention sighting the gunman shooting at the Fairlane driven by Doug Horne that preceded the red Futura down that straight.

However with regard to the ambush of the red Futura we learn of an important observation: Silvia Riley, sitting beside Anne Wardle in the Magna, states that as the red car approached the gunman, he walked almost to the centre line on the road, and shot the car at point blank range. Importantly, when targeting every other vehicle, the gunman remained at the side of the road when he shot at the occupants. After considering carefully all the witness statements, it becomes obvious the occupants of the red Futura were singled out for **special attention**: Why? We shall return to this point directly.

After making a distinctive, and more concerted effort to target the Canadians, Simon and Susan Williams, the gunman turned his attention to the silver-grey Magna, about 190 or so yards north, still wending its way in reverse up the slope to the crest, and he fired just one shot, which penetrated the windscreen at the bottom of the drivers' side corner.

The four women's statements confirm that at this point, a degree of terror had gripped them, and no doubt those last few yards over the crest must have seemed to them to take an eternity to cover. Anne continued reversing the remaining few yards or so into the driveway of "[Benbullen](#)" where she turned to the left, and drove off towards Taranna. Remarkably all 4 women were unharmed. Anne Wardle states that, *"a short distance along the road, I spoke to a male person collecting firewood on the right side of the road."* This person almost surely would have been Douglas McCutcheon, who did make a statement to police, but for some curious, unexplainable reason, not only does he not mention his encounter with four, terrified, excited, females in a silver-grey Magna with a bullet hole on the windscreen, but he goes so far as to deny ever having sighted any of the shot-up vehicles from outside Seascapes; again a rather curious attitude.



The entrance to "Benbullen", at the time home to Andrew & Lyn Simons, Andrew being employed by PAHSMA as a manager.

Anne Wardle and her companions drove north to the Shell service station-come-Convict Bakery, operated by Christopher Hammond at Taranna, where they ordered - I would suggest - 'a very strong' coffee. After the 4 women had finished their coffee and their nerves had calmed somewhat, upon leaving the Bakery they met with police who'd by then arrived at Taranna and set up road blocks and to whom they gave statements of their encounter with the gunman.

This short but confusing segment of the massacre will undoubtedly for long time to come cause authors writing on the subject to hold differing views. But I believe upon close study of the available statements, the reality of the event unfolds. To protect an untruth, one must surround it with a legion of untruths. So now you draw your own conclusions.

A considered summary of the episode on the Arthur Highway, shows the gunman's actions directly effected 13 persons travelling in 5 vehicles, and it was carried out in the surprisingly short time frame of no more than one to one and half minutes at the outside. From John Rooke's statement I can also estimate pretty well when this ambush was terminated at about 1400 hrs (4.00pm), or 22 minutes before Const Hyland arrived at the Fox and Hounds.

From the shot that killed Mr Robert Salzmann near the Tollbooth, the gunman had recommenced shooting with the AR-10 .308W, he continued using that rifle until the last round was fired, on the highway outside Seascapes which struck the windscreen of the silver-grey Magna driven by Anne Wardle. The gunman discharged a total of 23 rounds of 7.62NATO (308W FMJ) ammunition in this ambush. You will note from the statement by Mr Perks for the DPP,

and perhaps relying on the public's ignorance in the heat of the emotional sentencing hearing, he has promoted himself as psychic, when he mentions the transfer of "two sets of Smith and Wesson handcuffs" (that never existed) and a container of petrol to the BMW while the gunman was still at the tollbooth. What evidence did he possess which enabled him to state this as "fact"? None of the eyewitness accounts, no part of transcript of interview of Martin Bryant and definitely no photograph entered into evidence support his statement; truthfully it is misleading rubbish. His statement that "most probably" the gunman removed "at least one can of petrol" into the BMW is in the same vein as there is absolutely no evidence to support his allegation. - (Court Transcript, p.157)

The gunman had already demonstrated his discipline, and astuteness regarding magazine capacities, and the significance of maintaining his firearm in a loaded state at all times when inside the Broad Arrow Café. Therefore I'm not speculating when I suggest, that outside Seascope he would most certainly have maintained these same disciplines. Hence when he fired the first shot here at John ROOKE he would have commenced with either a fully loaded 20 rounds in the magazine of the AR-10 or a magazine less the 2 rounds (the court claims 3 rounds) he discharged when he shot and killed Zoe Hall in the white Corolla. That being established, and the likelihood he had more ammunition at hand, after just firing 9 rounds, why then did he break-off his ambush, and not use some of the 11 (or 8-9) remaining round in his magazine, at least to disable the Magna's engine (which faced him), and kill the four occupants?

After all some pundits claimed he was a diabolically accurate shot (Joe Vialls). We are told his object seemed to be to kill as many people as possible. It is an inarguable fact that there was one vehicle in particular that was singled out though for a concerted attempt to kill the occupants, above any of the other 4 vehicles - the Canadian Embassy official and his wife in the red Futura. After this couple had past out of range of the gunman, there was just a single, passing shot fired, to convince the occupants of the already retreating silver-grey Magna, to clear out, so they did not hang around and see what else transpired.

Now to expand on why it was that the two Canadian nationals attracted special treatment when they entered the gunman's field of fire:

Among the almost endless list of happenings, politicians like Ray Groom would have us believe were "coincidental", just 11 days before the massacre, and on the 17 April, the Canadian High Commissioner from Canberra paid an official visit the Historic Site. But in the same newsletter, Site staff were also informed, *"Our new Minister, Ray Groom, and the director of Tourism will be on site on Thursday, 18th April, and will be joining the Ghost Tour."* It seems the 'Minister for everything-to-do-with-Port Arthur' saw it necessary at that time, to pass a critical eye over the Historic Site. The question remains; for what reason did Ray Groom pay an official visit to the Historic Site at this "11 hour"? Just another coincidence ... I think not.¹

You see there are many very good reasons for Canadian interests in an exercise that would add weight to their concurrent global "gun control" program. For in Canada until 1977, there was no permit, licence or what ever, to purchase, keep, carry store or use, ANY long arm. Before 1934, handguns required no licence. The global "gun control" network and their global apologists in successive Canadian administrations had for a long time been actively pursuing their goal, the eradication of private ownership of firearms in Canada.

In 1991, Canadians saw Bill C-17 enacted and 4 years later came C-66, but both Bills were made irrelevant by the freedom loving, suspicious-of-authority, non-compliant, ordinarily law-abiding Canadians. One of the new requirements held that the 10 percent mobile population, 'notify police of their changes of address'. It failed, they would not comply; even with the threat of a severe penalty of 2 years gaol! This non-compliance has carried forward to this day with no sign of abating. By 2001-2002, of an estimated 16.5 - 20 million guns nationally, 4 million guns

remain unregistered! Non compliance of handgun registration remains at an estimated 70 percent - and this is occurring in spite of the Canadian Government expending the *obscene* estimate of CAN\$1.5 - \$2 billion, to establish their firearm registry! ²

The Canadian pressure for "gun control," is led still today by Ms Helen Cukier (at right), a close comrade of Ms Rebecca Peters incidentally and president of the Canadian Coalition for Gun Control (CGC).

A professor of justice studies at Toronto's Ryerson University, Ms Cukier co-founded with Ms Heidi Rathjen the Coalition for Gun Control (CGC) in Canada, following the 1989 massacre by a "misogynist" (a term used by CGC to describe the gunman in their article), who shot and killed 14 women at Montreal's L'École polytechnique, using a Ruger Mini-14 223Rem carbine fitted with a 30 shot magazine. In 2000, Ms Cukier was even awarded the Canadian Governor General's Meritorious Service Cross for her "gun control" efforts, something the Australian *hoi polloi* have not been game to or forgot to do with Rebecca Peters here I may add. ³



Prof. Wendy Cukier, co-founder of Canada's CGC



The Montreal gunman:
Marc Lepine

So can you now imagine the impact and momentum that could have been achieved by Canadian authorities, had the "Bundeena" schedule remained unaltered, and it had been targeted instead of the Broad Arrow Café?

- A couple of hundred or more shot, burnt, and lifeless bodies recovered from the icy waters of Masons Cove, many of them Canadian seniors, as well as a Canadian Embassy Official and his wife ambushed and shot dead in their car?

I believe it can be argued successfully there was at least CAN\$1.5 billion of good reasons that support my synopsis put forward here.

Post Script

In the political fall-out after the "escape" into public hands of the Police Training Video, the "newsbreaker" run by *The Mercury*, makes it abundantly clear the Commissioner Richard McCreadie showed not the slightest concern when the positions - still held by three of his senior officers - were advertised as vacant. These contracts were not to be renewed. Luppó Prins, Bob Fielding and Syd McClymont were as the headline read "cut adrift" and the officers could not hide their indignation and a reshuffle[§] was to result.

Then on Saturday 6 March 2005, another article announced, *"After 42 years on the job, one of Tasmania's highest ranked and most respected police officers is retiring. Assistant Commissioner Luppó Prins will be farewelled by Tasmania Police tonight at a dinner with 230 colleagues, professional associates and friends."* A feature article followed on March 12, in which it confirmed his retirement would take effect on March 23, 2005. ⁴

In that same month while he still held the rank of Assistant Commissioner of Tasmania Police, Luppó Prins travelled to Canada as a guest speaker - possibly as an appeaser. You see someone didn't even give him the opportunity to retire with grace; his first inkling to the reality when he read of his position advertised as vacant in the newspaper! He would be guest speaker at the first Fraser Valley Law Enforcement Conference with the convention theme slated as, "Mass Murder in the Home, the School and the Workplace: Spree Killers and Annihilators".

[§] When considered against the background of the unsolved murders of 1993 and 1995 in Tasmania's Northeast of two young females, both foreign nationals, it is interesting that the article also predicted a promotion for the former officer in charge as St Helens (recently posted to Glenorchy) Insp Fiona Lieutier to fill one of the vacant positions of a Commander.

He joined 9 other guest speakers listed to present 13 hours of official police stories covering six cases of mass murder including:

- The 13 March, 1996 massacre at Dunblane Primary School,
- The 28 April, 1996 massacre at Port Arthur and
- The 20 April, 1999 massacre at Columbine High School in Jefferson County, Colorado.

On Tuesday March 15, 2005 Luppo Prins presented his 1½ hr "Port Arthur Tasmania" address, beginning at 800 hrs, which was billed at this convention as *"the most horrific incident of mass murder in Tasmanian and Australian history and one of the worst ever reported worldwide."*

I made a request for a transcript of Luppo Prinn's address, prior to the cut-off date for registrations, but was turned down and via e-mail, being informed all such conference material was deemed "restricted". Why should we be surprised, after all, the victims must never be told anything about the life changing incident they experienced? We are left to wonder just what slant Mr. Prins put upon the details of the story he related to the international VIP guests, which must remain concealed from the public for ever it seems. ⁵

End Notes

¹ Port Arthur Historic Site Staff Newsletter, 18apr-01may96

² Pierre Lemieux, "Resisting a bad law," *The Gazette* (Montreal), 16jun04

³ <http://www.theinfozone.net/salw1.html> ; *Outdoor Canada Magazine*, Minuteman article by Ms Cukier, Ms Peters & Ms Stohl – Aug 2004

⁴ Heather Choy, "Top cop lays down his badge," *The Mercury*, 6mar05 p.15; Heather Choy, " Still haunted by murder," *The Mercury*, 12mar05, p.8

⁵ <http://www.fvlec.org/speakers.html> Fraser Valley Law Enforcement Conference 2005

Shiny Toys for Big Boys

Chapter 20

After several years of examining the culture which persists within Tasmania Police, exemplified in the article on this disc titled *Template for Terrorism at Port Arthur*, it becomes obvious the young people who choose employment *in the force* perhaps having the highest of ideals as they go off to the Academy, graduate to work under office politics possibly more callous than any other state in the Commonwealth; have a falling-out with the "top brass" and an unscheduled "sea change" comes about swiftly thereafter.

Nevertheless such an environment does on occasion produce a pleasant surprise for the better I would suggest. Case in point is this information that came to light. Early in this inquiry we learned from a former policeman who was, in late April 1996, actually assigned to "set-up" and "operate" one of these '*shiny toys for big boys*' on the Tasman Peninsula. He referred to this "toy" as his colleagues did, by the acronym of the "BFST" (translated to us as the "big f-----g shiny truck"). We also discovered that the "big shiny toy" was shipped to Hobart from the mainland in the belly of Hercules military transport plane, on the Sunday evening. To accomplish this mission on a Sunday in an extremely limited time-span, there just had to have been prior arrangements made.

The officer who ran this mobile communication van was I believe Andrew Gunston, later as police sergeant to be labelled by a most uncomplimentary nickname when he was the victim of a vindictive campaign emanating from within Tasmania Police which ended in the courts and saw him leave the force.



A typical American police communications "field van" in 2004



Former Police Sgt. Andrew Gunston

What I'm saying here yet again is this; other mainland people pre-empted the massacre! Think on it: to get the "BFS truck", the Hercules aeroplane fuelled-up and ready to fly, and the RAAF crew all assembled at the departure point, does not happen in just a few hours!

Ten years on, such mobile communication vans maybe fairly common to many state police jurisdictions in [America](#), but I would suggest such equipment items remain uncommon to State police 'stables' here in Australia, at least until after the 'war on terror' was triggered by "9/11". I'm reminded of an earlier major incident in which it took the full might of the Australian Army 24 hours to get urgently requested heavy equipment, 55 minutes away at Puckapunyal, down the highway to Melbourne when the Westgate Bridge collapsed!



Former SOG: Michael Charles Dyson

After its arrival at Taranna, the "BFS truck" was deployed somewhere on the Arthur Highway about the area to the north of the Seascope Cottage, while the siege was in progress. Of considerable capacity, the "BFS truck" had fitted to its chassis a large aluminium pantec in which was housed a control module to run radio communications, repeater equipment, listening devices as well as a thermal imaging device. It most probably involved the use of equipment contained inside the "BFS Truck" that Insp Bob Fielding explains ensured they, "*established a line between the SOG strongholding [sic] area*"

and the Police Forward Command Post (PFCP) at Taranna, with the vehicle having to be moved twice so as *"to sustain the connection."*¹

The Violent Incident Management Plan (VIMP) drawn up by personnel such as former SOG Sgt Michael Dyson and with the office housed in a covert department of Tasmania Police. I suspect that officers in this department were surely part of the national network of BCI, as our information has it that Dyson was for a period, just prior to the Port Arthur operation, based in Melbourne and working with the Victoria Police. At any rate, their VIMP called for the deployment in this instance at Seascope of a device called an "echidna".



Seascope's steep driveway

In Chapter 18, I explained how Assist Comm. Luppo Prinns had assigned Supt Barry Bennett to take overall command of the PFCP set up at the Taranna Devil Park, and how Supt Bob Fielding had upon arrival countermanded those orders. Although no specific time is given us by Barry Bennett, it would appear that some time after the police negotiators - back in Hobart - had lost contact with Martin Bryant at Seascope at about 2137 hrs (9.37pm), finally Bennett acquiesced, stood-down, and 'went home', although he could not sleep and lay awake on the bed watching updates of TV news as the night wore on until he finally received "a phone call

directed by Bob [Fielding]....," announcing Martin Bryant's arrest at 0835 hrs on the Monday morning whereupon he showered, changed and without eating breakfast drove back to Police Headquarters in Hobart.

But some time after Supt Bob Fielding had taken over the role of Forward Commander, he was later to express lingering frustration, as the execution of "their" plan was frustrated by the terrain at Seascope, with it proving to be entirely unsuitable to deploy their "echidna". The hi-tech machine had to remain packed away in the "BFS Truck". Apparently the device's umbilical cable only stretched 300m, and so the SOGs could find *"...nowhere to hide the operator...."*

So much for "their" Violent Incident Management Plan, conceived by experts no doubt! The operator was even apprehensive of a likely failure should they have tried to negotiate the narrow bridge over the creek at the bottom of the steep driveway into the Cottage, let alone the other problems.

At Seascope it would appear "echidna" proved to be a 'lame duck'...

But the physical size and weight of the "BFS Truck," meant that it must have been shipped to Tasmania before the massacre. For surely the smallest budgeted police jurisdiction in the land did not have the financial capacity to have even the *echidna* in their SOG stable, let alone this 'BFS Truck'? Due to the time constraints, it was quite impossible for the federal authorities to have transhipped all of this gear in response to the incident; it must have arrived before the fact.

You see the National Crisis Centre was only contacted by Tasmania Police on Sunday evening at 1719 hrs - (5.19pm), and it was into this organisation attached to the Premier's Department that Comm. John Johnson was managed out of the media lights sideways, shortly after his first and only media conference on Sunday evening. But curiously it is documented that ASIO dispatched "technical support" at 2215 hrs or 10.15pm that Sunday night ... but from where, Canberra or Hobart?

You see, Hobart Airport would have been already closed to all operations, long before any aircraft originating from anywhere on the mainland at 10.15 pm could arrive. So I would contend it seems obvious this 'technical support' was on-shipped at 10.15pm from Hobart, not

the mainland. Or perhaps ASIO coincidentally had a contingent of technical support personnel in Tasmania at the time - tripping over a thousand journalists and the nation's entire specialist trauma surgeons no doubt! After all, in August 2004, at least one Commonwealth employee supposedly on holidays in Tasmania must have in truth been 'working' that Sunday at Port Arthur, as this claimed "nurse" received a hefty "six-figure pay-out" through the County Courts of Melbourne for her hurt and injury.²

In the book *Suddenly One Sunday*, at p.111, Bingham writes that, "Phones are surprisingly good at detecting background noise...." He claimed that 3 of the police negotiating team in Hobart used leads off the not-so-secure land line into Seascap to listen intently for background noises which would indicate the presence of others in the building; sobbing, voices etc. Looks like "echidna" had been scripted to make its grand entrance, after the portable phone was switched off and contact lost with "Jamie" at which time Bennet had relinquished his command to Supt Bob Fielding. It must have surely been a long frustrating night at Taranna for some of the VIMP architects - and even for the controllers inside Seascap...



1st Helicopter & that
"Black Van"

Remember here at Seascap according to Police, they were confronting the devilish mind of a lone gunman; intellectually impaired, Martin Bryant with a mind, capable of operating at a fraction above a level that ninety percent of eleven year olds were capable of.³ It boggles the mind to imagine the outcome if these incompetents are ever confronted by the real thing!

Yet another mystery vehicle figures heavily in the Port Arthur massacre: a strange [black van](#), with blacked-out windows.

In the video shown on national TV by *A Current Affair* (ACA) and with anchorman Ray Martin at the helm, amateur video footage (possibly the Turner tapes), captured from somewhere near the bridge over the mouth of the small stream that runs by the penitentiary to enter Mason cove there, is quite revealing. Several clips of the segment where two "rookie" policewomen are interviewed show a red and white 'Squirrel' Rescue Service chopper on the grass stationary but with its rotors turning. Each clip shows a different but concurrent visit by 'Squirrel' helicopters to the oval.



First Squirrel: with "P1" just
landed on Queens Domain, Hobart
after the trip from Port Arthur



Mystery "black van" (centre):
cropped from an amateur's still
photograph showing the 2nd
helicopter landing

As the first clip launches, the narrative infers we are seeing the [first Squirrel](#) helicopter arrival. The EMA Report shows the first helicopter was "tasked" at 1359 hrs, while Luppó Prins puts the first 'Squirrel' arrival there at 1456 hrs (2.56 pm); the EMA papers tells us it departed at 1430 hrs. So if Prins' time is correct, then with a flight time of just 14 minutes to Port Arthur, it took 42 min to get the first chopper airborne. But in the next of the 2 clips, we see another 'Squirrel' helicopter, this time parked much closer to the picket fence, and car park. Luppó

Prins tells us that the subsequent arrivals of helicopters occurred at 1507 hrs (3.07 pm), 1540 hrs (3.55 pm), with the last one arriving at 1616 hrs (4.16 pm).⁴

In the background of both amateur video clips, is captured a distinctive, commercial-type but quite out of place black van, with all its windows blacked-out, parked there in the middle of the roadway, out front of the Broad Arrow Café. We also have on file a [still photograph](#) of the black van showing the second helicopter landing, which corroborates the first ACA Video clip.

Other still photographs demonstrate the mystery black van had not arrived when the first ambulance and paramedic vehicles first parked out front of the Broad Arrow Café.

Interestingly, the black van captured on both clips parked in the same spot, just so happens to be configured similarly to those used by a particular Commonwealth agency. The ACA's (Turner) video clips and the photograph we have, confirm the van's approximate arrival time, but in themselves do not verify the mystery van's departure time.

However, we do have on file an accurate running log record compiled by a PAHSMA staff member, which evidences some 161 vehicular movements logged as passing through the boundary of the Historic Site, between the hours of from 3.10pm (1510 hrs) to just after 5.40 pm (1740 hrs). From these log-sheets, photographs and Video tape, I can confidently say that the mystery black van arrived on site after 1510 hrs (3.10 pm), and departed 2 vehicles after 1740 hrs (5.40 pm).

In other words, the black van remained within the precincts of the Historic Site, parked for most of its stay there, right out front of the Broad Arrow Café, for a minimum of some 2½ hrs! The black van was parked maybe just a few yards away but close by the only distinctive fawn coloured campervan that appears in many of the photographs and video tapes captured of the Broad Arrow cafe that Sunday afternoon, parked adjacent to the oval's picket fence, just west of the small guard-house.

Now the "black van" account doesn't end there; we also have learned from an eyewitness who when driving north past Seascope that Sunday afternoon, observed white smoke rising from a gold coloured car, parked well to back of the allotment at Seascope. Reacting naturally he wanted to assist in putting out the fire, so he stopped his vehicle at Seascope's entrance, and ran down the steep driveway into the grounds. However hardly had the witness gained the narrow bridge in the driveway over the creek, when two heavily built males, whom by their authority and demeanour were taken to be police, confronted this witness.

Without displaying any identification, the eyewitness was told bluntly; "Clear out now!" and then, "Get the hell out of here - you're not needed," or words to that effect.

A little perplexed, and before he turned to retreat, the eyewitness observed just beyond the farthest male, 'a black, people-mover-type van with all of its windows blacked out', parked on the pavers near the cottage. This incident occurred in that very small window of time, between when the BMW was set alight, and Constables Garry Whittle and Paul Hyland arrived on the scene at the estimated time of 2.58 pm (1458 hrs). One of the persons this witness saw in the grounds of Seascope undoubtedly would have been the "Fat Controller" - who went by the name of 'Rick' or 'Mick'.

When all of this little intrigue is considered, it prompts me to ask: How many persons arrived and departed in this Commonwealth registered and operated black van? What role were the occupants tasked to do with regard to the massacre? The van beat every policeman to the Café, and could hardly be termed reactionary in the true sense of the term. Surely those in authority would not suggest we accept that Martin Bryant had such influences that he also engaged a Commonwealth employee to act on his behalf? Who drove the van onto the Historic Site and what activities was the driver involved in there at the Broad Arrow Cafe? Did the van's presence there have anything to do with the cadavers of two deceased agents inside the Broad Arrow Café? Oh, and by the way, because of the Historic Site's staff member's thoroughness, we even have the black van's Commonwealth registration number!

So you can appreciate when Terry McCarthy made the comment during the ACA interview for *Port Arthur - The Inside Story*, that Martin Bryant's language was suggestive of him *working to a script* does clarify somewhat here I believe as *many a truth are spoken in jest*.

We have also learned from another witness, that military personnel of unknown identity and with some ambiguity signed-out of the military barracks at Hobart on Saturday 27 April, 1996, an all-wheel-drive "army truck and trailer," onto which they loaded considerable and various equipment they had brought with them to the depot. The truck and trailer were returned, sometime before the informant returned to duty early on Monday morning. Following his normal routine, he made an inspection of the vehicles, all garaged, present and correct - well nearly. Relief turned to a smouldering anger, as the truck and trailer came into view in such a mess they looked like they'd just completed the Paris to Dakar rally - mud from top to bottom, unwashed, contrary to standing orders.

Could this truck and trailer have been used to deploy "technical support" in addition to the "BFS Truck" reported as having been forthcoming from the Federal authorities? Was it used to deploy and operate a radio repeater and other covert communications equipment, secreted somewhere on the abundant tree covered high ground of the Tasman Peninsula for the duration of this - "exercise"? If so as you can see like an SOG, controller and covert agents, this equipment was in the field well before the balloon went up.

The Helicopter Service

With regard to the role played by the State Rescue 'Squirrel' helicopters, these machines were under the co-ordination of Police Search and Rescue (PS&R) but were operated by Helicopter Resources, a private contractor. Of a single engine configuration, they were then about twenty years old, and although the contractor operated 'several other machines' importantly there was only one pilot available. This fact immediately raises a most important question: *"Where was PS&R able to source at a moments notice, at least two other pilots certified to fly rotary-winged aircraft?"*

Two 'Squirrel' helicopters were tasked immediately, while a third Bell 'Jetranger' was put in the air later and used first to ferry a contingent of SOG's to Taranna, tasked at 1557 hrs and arriving at the PFCP with the officers briefed by Supt Barry Bennett at approximately 1600 hrs.

The first 'Squirrel' to arrive at Port Arthur carried two paramedics, with the second machine following five minutes later, carrying three paramedics. When considering the movements and claims made by Lynne Beavis - see chapter 26, "Unhelpful Casualties" - it is interesting to note, that no "nurse" from Melbourne is mentioned by the authors of the EMA Ambulance Perspective report, although they do praise the work of an "off-duty Hobart nurse" and two doctors visiting the site as interstate tourists - one of those being the Vietnam veteran and Sydney orthopaedic surgeon Dr Bill Maguire and his wife Dorothy.⁵

Post Script

Former SOG Michael Charles Dyson, in 1996 held what can well be described as 'a position of privilege' in a covert department within Tasmania Police where among other things he assembled VIMPs. In the years following the massacre at Port Arthur, he established what today in Tasmania could be said to be the State's premier security firm, Dyson Corporate Securities, on Cascade Road, South Hobart.

As Managing Director with a staff of 12 males and a total of 30 personnel I can but suppose he approves entirely of the company philosophy promoted: **"Be nice to people, nice gets nice, and all things being equal, courtesy can be very persuasive"**, a real *"Hawaiian Holiday"* type viewpoint I would suggest and reminiscent of the atmosphere promoted by "Jamie" in the early phone conversations police made with the Seascope Cottage that Sunday afternoon as evidenced in the audio segments released to the public.

Recently I was reliably informed by local people that the firm has taken over security matters for the Launceston Hospital and the TT-Line ferry services to the mainland. Michael became almost a household name in Tasmania from 1991- 2000 in all of the controversy that surrounded

the SOG shooting of Joe Gilewicz. At the Pelverata bush cottage, and as "Alpha-1" Dyson was the SOG Assault Team Commander in that 1991 police killing of the Vietnam veteran.

I have had the (unpleasant) honour of a phone conversation with "Charlie" - his second name is Charles - when on a speaking engagement in central Queensland back in September 2004. Andrew McGregor was engaged as a guest speaker and had just finished addressing a public meeting in Launceston on Friday evening October 31st. Earlier that morning Mrs Scurr had flown to Mackay and was met by our hosts. After a night train trip to Sydney on Thursday 30th, I too flew to Mackay that Friday afternoon and friends, who met me at Mackay, drove me the 73 km to the west and our host's home at Nebo. That evening at Launceston, Andrew named the controller inside Seascope and as the evening wore on a phone call came through with Mrs Scurr first taking the call from a person who would only give his name as "Charlie".

In his conversation he told Mrs Scurr he was 'formerly a policeman' and that he was 'there on the day,' but coy as to exactly what role he fulfilled. He didn't believe Mrs Scurr accusation that his colleagues had 'let down' everyone at Port Arthur with a six-hour delay in response to her call. When he turned his conversations to a series of questions, she referred the phone call to me, and so I took the call.

Again all I could extract from the caller was that he was calling from Tasmania and his name was "Charlie" a 'former policeman', whereupon I suggested that my name was actually "Dick Smith". After a very short conversation which was heading nowhere, I told him that I wasn't in the habit of talking to people claiming to be former policemen who refused to give their name - especially like "Bill" or "Charlie"! I suggested, "You obviously have us under surveillance, as you have phoned this private phone number." It was at this point he became quite agitated, quietly threatening me in his tone and language before he slammed the handset down and the line went dead. It didn't take us too long to work out who "Charlie" was; Mick or Michael Charles Dyson. Yes he was the Tasmanian "Son Of God" at Pelverata who loved to dance about from tree stump to tree stump with his "Rambo knife" stuffed down his high-top jack-boots and his assault rifle oiled-up ready to go; a "McCreadie trooper" to the last, our "Charlie"!

End Notes

¹ Jenny Flemming, *Port Arthur*, SA Police Journal, March 1997, p6.

² Christine Caulfield, "Big compo for Port Arthur massacre nurse", *The Mercury*, 10aug04

³ Mr Avery, the Court Documents, p.337/10

⁴ na., *The Mercury*, 31dec96, p.21; McCreadie R, EMA Report p.6; Mike Bingham, *Suddenly One Sunday* p.93; P. Morgan & G. Lenox, *The Ambulance Perspective*, EMA report, p.31

⁵ P. Morgan & G. Lenox, "The Ambulance Perspective," EMA Port Arthur papers, pp.30-33

He's Out!

Chapter 21

With the blonde haired gunman having driven from the bus/car park beside Masons Cove, and with gunshots still ringing out close at hand - as close as the Port Arthur Tollbooth 460m to the north - Information Officer Wendy [Scurr](#) was one of the first people to enter the Broad Arrow Café at about 1350hrs. Indelibly stamped into Mrs Scurr's memory by her St Johns First Aid training was the instruction in such situations: For the officer to be able to administer life-saving first aid to survivors, you must first survive yourself.



Happier days at Port Arthur:
Wendy Scurr, Information
Officer early 1996.

- Photo courtesy of a visitor

Moments after the shooting began, Wendy begun running towards the Broad Arrow Café from the Information Office, when a bullet smashed a window pane in the western wall, zipping past her head, close enough that she felt the disturbed air as it past. At that instance a person came '*...running down the steps in front of the café screaming 'Run!'. 'There's a man in there killing everyone'. I froze. I can't remember how long I stood there. I was looking for somewhere to hide. I decided to go to the steep embankment behind the information office and the Broad Arrow Café.*'[†]

But Mrs Scurr realised she had to make a "000" call to alert police, so she doubled back to the office, made the call and then she took shelter in the bush above the cliff at the rear of the Café complex. It was here while the shots rang out, that she met and triaged the American visitor Dennis Olsen - "P13", (see Chapter 2).

So Wendy somehow scrambled down that cliff face and into the Café dining room. Today the cliff that barked Wendy's knees and destroyed her stockings is the backdrop to the still waters of the memorial pool that quietly honours those who died close by in 1996. As I've mentioned, Wendy was a very experienced and qualified St John's Ambulance First Aid Instructor and former volunteer ambulance officer and on-site First Aid Officer.

So Mrs Scurr entered the Café with the weekend Supervisor Sue Burgess, and colleague Steven Howard. Initially stepping around bodies, Wendy headed for the Gift Shop area for a prompt search of the area, for her supervisor's daughter Nicole, and Steven's young wife of just 3 years - Elizabeth - had both been working there that morning. Hoping against hope that they'd both escaped the awful carnage and somehow had fled the building; Wendy found both young women deceased. Immediately Wendy's St Johns training came to the fore: she just had to take charge in the Café and at once Sue and Steven were allotted outside tasks. Steven Howard was to go and retrieve blankets from the bulk store inside the Information Centre.

So began in earnest Mrs Scurr's role as the Historic Sites First Aid Officer, and she went first to the small wash-room next the kitchen to retrieve the closest First Aid equipment - like scissors (needed to remove clothing etc) to examine and classify wounds. Bandages of sufficient size

[†] See bookmark on this disk, *Statements: My Experiences At Port Arthur on the 28th April 1996* by Mrs Wendy Scurr.

and quantity were also an urgent priority. Working methodically, she found to her annoyance yet again, no scissors! Frustrated as someone had yet again removed them, so a helper was assigned to find scissors and 'all the bandages you can carry!', also to be retrieved from the bulk-store in the Information Centre.

Mrs Scurr's full attention was directed at *the overall efficiency and success of the First Aid phase in and about the Broad Arrow Café* and remarkably, in the café every one of the wounded alive when she entered was saved and they recovered. As the gunshots faded into the distance, other PAHSMA staff joined in the rescue effort. But, NONE of them knew where the blonde headed gunman was, or indeed if he had a partner in crime! Richard McCreadie later remarked:

*"In an environment of trauma created by the event and the fact that the location of the gunman was not known ... a prevailing atmosphere of fear, confusion and panic existed."*¹

- Richard McCreadie

A feeble remark when one realises emphatic, repeated requests for 'police protection' at the Historic Site were ignored by Police; would McCreadie dare to claim his brilliant team didn't keep him informed? In a visit on 24 October 1997 when he addressed the assembled staff in the Government Gardens he demonstrated this indifference and contempt for the wellbeing of these same people... At the very time this "fear, confusion and panic" prevailed among the many hundreds of visitors and staff scattered around the Port Arthur Historic Site, Senior Tasmanian Police, laid on a barbeque for the 400 plus police officers held back at Taranna, just 10 km north from Port Arthur.



Seascope's driveway bridge:

Where a witness was confronted by agent provocateurs & told to 'get the hell out of here,' as the BMW - straight ahead - burned.

The local volunteer Fire Brigade was activated and tasked by police at 1647hrs (4.47pm). They stationed the local fire appliance (no doubt under police instructions), on the Arthur Highway north of the Fox and Hounds, but approximately 400m short of the dip where the Seascope Cottage entrance was sited. A witness (who understandably at this time wishes to remain anonymous), driving along the highway north towards Taranna, saw the burning vehicle, parked at the entrance and ran down the Seascope driveway to offer assistance. He was confronted in the driveway by two burly males he identified as "obviously police"; they told him in no uncertain terms to 'clear-out, you are not needed', and very obviously were indifferent to the now blazing sedan. Note that this witness arrived after the gunman had finished his highway shootings, left the highway verge and his car was now burning even before any fire brigade appliance had arrived and also before the first uniformed police (not in "the joke") arrived there outside the Cottage. This witness departed forthwith and drove away perplexed. Only later when watching the evening TV news did the realisation of what was witnessed there at Seascope sink in.

The first police presence at the Historic Site consisted of the lone policeman (and former SOG), Const Peter Hessman. He was delivered by police vehicle down Jetty Road to the Broad Arrow Café. The running log shows him as entering the Historic Site at 1626 hrs (4.26 pm) and was gone just 4 minutes later and by 4.30 pm. This deliberate assignment of a single policeman to somehow secure the crime scene, must have originated from an order issued by senior police at Taranna PFCP. Bennett who was still at that stage OIC there states he had earlier that he'd assigned Det Insp Warren to take charge of detectives and the overall investigation, while assigning Insp Freeman to the task of "securing the incident site".

Surely no sane person would be game to suggest a single Tasmania Policeman could possibly secure a crime scene on a site which covered in excess of one hundred hectares? But that was the reality and so Hessman was the first armed policeman to attend the Broad Arrow Café. It

becomes obvious as our story continues this policeman was there to perform an indistinct role: the Broad Arrow Café and car/bus park crime scenes remained very accessible to visitors and staff alike for all the afternoon! In reference to this scene, Richard McCreadie made this strange and quite inaccurate statement:

"A holidaying police officer from New South Wales stepped forward and began marshalling all the survivors and bringing some organisation and control to the scene."

Was the Assistant Commissioner attempting a lame excuse to divert some attention away from the negligence of his own colleagues whose advance to Port Arthur was halted at Taranna PFCP for an inexplicable 6 hours?

The 'holidaying policeman' referred to here is Justin Noble, and after consideration of his quite remarkable statement, one would have to concede that to claim he delivered 'organisation and control' is a fantasy.

For apart from exhibiting an athletic capacity, and the ability to present fastidious, sterile accounts, of his extensive movements, its compilation obviously only sprang forth after much consultation with statements all ready collected and available in the BCI office at Police HQ in Hobart, he really dispelled any doubts in the *power of one*; more on Justin's role later.

Justin made claims of having *"...formed an outer perimeter of the site,"* single-handedly even manning Tramway St and Remarkable Cave Rd intersection for a time. Though one policeman on holidays, a Snr Const from Victoria, Dennis Gabbedy, did indeed perform more than his public service that day in the café; he remained at the side of Graham Collyer to tend his life-threatening, category 1 wounds and certainly kept him alive until the paramedics stabilized his vital functions and finally evacuated him on the 3rd helicopter, arriving at RHH at 1602 hrs.²

About an hour and fifteen minutes after the departure of the last wounded survivor aboard the Squirrel helicopter was air-lifted out, another chopper returned to deliver promised police reinforcements to secure the 100 acre Site at about 1730hrs. As it landed on the oval and the doors opened you can imagine the dropped-jaws round about when just two constables alighted! Both unarmed young policewomen, off the beat in Hobart; Ali Denms and Rhani Ahmed.

Before they had time to think, like many of the staff and visitors they were subjected to a good reinforcing dose of the "trauma" McCreadie refers to above. Constable Ali Denms must have been assigned to the Tollbooth area, as courtesy of a video clip from Nine's ACA, the fresh-faced Constable explains it this way: *"A fire engine came roaring along the highway and the driver sort of screamed and said, that um, 'He's out! He's out! The police don't know where he is, he's shooting, he's coming this way',"* towards Port Arthur.

Craig Coombs confirms this report came through, although his timing of the claimed "break-out" he notes to have occurred at 5.00 pm (1700hrs); this time is obviously a little awry.³

Such was the confusion, at Historic site, little more than 4.5 km from the Seascope Cottage and a gunman thought to have escaped the police cordon and on the loose. For by now the earlier controversial incident was "doing the rounds": remember it was SES and Firemen volunteers who had quite rightly eavesdropped on radio traffic passing between Constables Garry Whittle, Pat Allen and an unidentified higher ranking officer (SOG Andrew M. Fogarty?), via the single dedicated analogue frequency used by both SES and Police. The radio conversation confirmed that the two uniformed policemen were intent on intervening on behalf of a naked female hostage Sally Martin, being pursued by the gunman around the yard of Seascope, early in the siege, when they heard the repeated instructions; *"do not shoot, this has to happen..."* Richard

McCreadie was most definitely correct in his description regarding the “confusion” that pervaded the atmosphere about the whole of the Historic site that day! ⁴

There is little known as to exactly what more than a 'name taking role' the lone Policeman, Peter Hessman was assigned to that day, but he circulated about the whole site: Broad Arrow Café, bus/car park, Information Centre, Jetty Road, Tollbooth and the Port Arthur Motor Inn, to name some of the places where witnesses sighted him. We are not informed as to who assigned him his role at the Historic Site either. In a statement provided by Insp John Warren, he refers to Hessman as a “Detective”, as does PAHSMA staffer Aileen Kingston.



Martin Bryant's distinctive yellow Volvo, abandoned by the gunman at Port Arthur Tollbooth. Check out the significance of the registration number.

In her signed statement taken 19 days later, on June 17, Aileen Kingston confirms that at the Tollbooth, it was a “detective Hesman” (sic) who showed her the passport photograph of Martin Bryant which he’d recovered from inside of the yellow 240 GL [Volvo](#) sedan abandoned by the gunman near the Tollbooth. But importantly no time was recorded to indicate the time this incident occurred. Eyewitnesses have assured me though that Hessman was a “uniformed policeman” that day. Although not contained within Kingston's statement, it has been alleged that at about this time it was witnessed that two admission passes were seen sitting there on the dashboard of the abandoned and bullet damaged yellow Volvo sedan. I wonder why the public were never informed of this? Were both admissions dated the 28 April, or had a second admission ticket bearing an earlier date been left as evidence with the gunman's purchase that day, to support a later prosecution allegation of a recent reconnoitre visit to the site by Martin Bryant, which he emphatically denied?

However on that Sunday afternoon, Mrs Scurr recently told me that sometime before 6.00 pm that same evening, she had withdrawn to the Port Arthur Motor Inn, and there witnessed the same uniformed policeman seated at a table, *“loading bullets, quite large bullets, bigger than a twenty two - into either a magazine or a revolver, I’m not sure which.”*

My further study revealed that Peter Hessman was at that time also attached to the SOG unit: was that his true role there that day? We are able to estimate with reasonable accuracy that his encounter with Aileen Kingston had to have occurred at between 4.30-5.15pm, and we know Hessman had no torch. He would have to have completed his search of the Volvo, well before twilight advanced into total darkness at about 6.25 pm, remembering that sunset occurred that day at Nubeena at precisely 5.15pm.⁵

I'm forced to conclude, while Constable Garry Whittle visited the Port Arthur Tollbooth margins, at some time well before 4.30 pm (1630 hrs), he did not confirm the identity of the deceased male; Russel “Jim” Pollard. This task was completed by an *agent provocateur*, out of grave concerns as to the ramifications of his death when considering unknown relationships with persons prominently recorded in the address book carried on his person.

I believe a likely person to have identified Jim Pollard was Justin Noble the BCI Constable supposedly on leave from the NSW Police and holidaying with his wife, but driving his own car which carried Victorian registration; a rather unconvincing cover story you must admit.

This particular incident was partly addressed by the information that came from a protected source in Canberra, and one of the same source who confirmed that the uniformed policeman twice requested “permission to shoot the gunman,” which was twice denied. Further my source explained that the reason the requester found this denial so distasteful was the fact that he had just visited the Tollbooth area and seen for himself, *“8 dead people shot by the gunman.”* Now, his claim here of 8 deceased persons, means that Const Whittle had time to

see for himself the bodies of the three Mikacs, Helene and Robert Salzmänn, Russell James "Jim" Pollard, Rosemary Nixon and Zoë Hall.

The Bingara "Bolt from the Blue"

After considering all of the evidence I have to hand, I can say with certainty Const Garry Whittle did have time and opportunity to do more than check for vital signs in the case of Jim Pollard, deceased on Jetty Road, lying near the yellow Volvo abandoned in the outbound lane at the Port Arthur Tollbooth around 3.20 pm. But after careful consideration of the statement by the NSW Police Constable, Justin Noble I believe Whittle may have been relegated to a more junior role at the Tollbooth, as you may come to understand as this segment unfolds.



Victim:
"Jim" Pollard aged
71 yrs

When two colleagues Mrs Wendy Scurr and Andrew MacGregor, visited Inverell in March 2001, and as guests who both addressed the audience at the Inverell Forum on that Friday evening of the 23rd, a female who operates grazing interests near Bingara, had a friend rise to her feet during question time and she asked a question that hit like a *bolt from the blue*! It was claimed her friend had information delivered to her by her local Police, which proved beyond a shadow of doubt the official account of events that day were fallacious. Later Miss Butler related to me, her extraordinary experiences regarding this time segment of the massacre as it related to her friend Jim [Pollard](#).

On Sunday 28th April 1996, Julie Butler had arranged for local Bingara Police, to travel out to the property and meet with her to clear-up a totally unrelated stock matter. At the pre-arranged time of 2.00 pm, Julie and her mother sat in their vehicle waiting at the agreed rendezvous; but the police did not arrive. Our rural people are very patient and understanding, and so the pair sat quietly chatting, and listening to the car radio. Three hours later and as the familiar theme began, heralding the four o'clock radio news, Julie alighted from the vehicle to greet the local Bingara "cop" she knew quite well.

Now the Butler property is twenty three and a half miles - or a forty minutes drive over gravel roads - away from Bingara in Northern NSW. With the handshakes and an apology for his delayed arrival done with, and before Julie had time to begin with the formal matters at hand, her uniformed policeman friend in serious tones told her that she should listen carefully to what he was about to say. Continuing, he explained that before leaving Bingara Police Station his superior had instructed him, in words to the effect, *'Don't breath a word of what we have just learned to Miss Butler at your meeting today'*.

Obviously the policeman had agonised over his superior's instruction as he drove the forty minutes over the dusty gravel road to the Butler property - after all, back in 1996 there were a few country cops left that believed as members of the constabulary, they enjoyed trust and good friendships of the people of their community built on by them fulfilling their obligations and trust to members of the community they lived among. So, choosing his words carefully, the Bingara policeman told Julie to make sure she watched the evening TV-News services, as there had been 'a serious incident at Port Arthur in Tasmania that would affect her directly'. Cleverly the local "Cop" had reached a compromise position that appeased both parties. Julie Butler's thoughts leaped instantly to the only person she knew who was definitely at that time holidaying in Tasmania: Russell James Pollard, her very dear and long time good friend.

Julie Butler first met Russell Pollard or "Jim" as he preferred, on the University campus where Jim was employed as a supply officer for many years. Pollard had told friends (and it seems at least one of his family), that he was originally from Britain and that he'd enjoyed a 'very successful career in the RAF'. Jim was in 1996 still married but amicably separated from his wife Dawn. But when he'd reached retirement age at the university, he moved to the coast, and instead of putting his heels up as most of us are inclined to do, he decided to set up a



Victim 1 from the
BMW:
Robert Salzman,
58 yrs.

rather unusual law practice. Jim had earlier identified a need among retired people, less well-off than most, who while in desperate need of legal advice, counsel and representation, often missed-out on advice for lack of means.

So then at around 68 yrs, Jim went back to law school at Southern Cross University of Lismore and subsequently graduated in 1996 as a Fellow in Law. He'd told his old friend that he intended to take a short holiday to relax before establishing his law practise to serve the legal needs of the less fortunate on a *pro bono* basis. Jim's only son Phillip has suggested recently in an article, that Robert [Salzman](#) then aged 58 years, was in fact an "old army buddy" of his father's, a claim repeated from an earlier article I was then reluctant to quote, although as to other details in the earlier article I

can but say the claims are entirely at odds with eyewitness reports at the time of the massacre. Though this last claim caused me some considerable problems: How could Salzman and Pollard have possibly been 'old army buddies' when there's a **thirteen year age difference!** Anyhow, Pollard had also told a long time friend that he'd formerly had a 'very successful war-time career in the RAF in Britain' - a claim repeated after his death by his brother to the same friend. When considered carefully, the stories just don't stand up I'm afraid, as former RAF officers - in those years nicknamed the "blue orchids" - would never pass themselves off as 'army buddies', as they saw themselves from a higher station than the lowly *army Tommy*. So what of the claims of Russell James Pollard having come originally from Britain? More on this claim shortly. ⁶

In the weeks preceding the massacre, Jim Pollard had told his long time friend that he'd decided to take up an offer made by his claimed new-found friend Robert Salzman, to join him and his wife Helene on a trip to Tasmania and while there meet-up with friends of the Salzmanns, Kenneth and Rosemary Nixon of Hobart. Jim also confirmed to this friend he planned upon his return to the mainland, he was going to attend the forthcoming Right College reunion with Miss Butler. So what exactly does all this mean?

After having discussed the matters at length with Miss Butler on several occasions, and considering all information very carefully, I believe the facts speak for themselves. Bingara Police were aware of Miss Butler's friendship with Jim Pollard. So it then becomes obvious that via police communications and sometime between 1450 hrs and 1520 hrs (3.20 pm) or at least some 40 plus minutes before 1600 hrs, Bingara Police at the Bingara Police Station had learned very shortly after Russell James Pollard had been shot in a shooting incident at Port Arthur in Tasmania that he was deceased. It was at 1600 hrs (4.00pm), that documents confirm the arrival through the Tollbooth of the first Tasmania Police officer, Const Peter Hessman to the Historic Site. But he had no opportunity to establish a preliminary identification of Mr. Pollard as he didn't break his journey there at the Tollbooth. The local Bingara policeman's subsequent reaction to the information received would seem to suggest the Tasmania informant also curiously exhibited a primary desire to confirm the nature and/or extent of the friendship that existed between the deceased and this local friend Miss Butler.

Police cannot notify next of kin (or friends for that matter) of any death, before the deceased is legally declared "dead" by a medical practitioner. So here we have a situation, whereby someone had opportunity and reason to establish the identity of Jim Pollard lying there on Jetty Road near the Tollbooth and pass the information to police at Bingara, by way of an inquiry, rather than a notification meant for the deceased next of kin. A prominent notation in Jim Pollard's address book had to be the key, which initiated this action, but the question remains, "As Pollard's next of kin had no association with Bingara, was that action triggered by a pressing need by some unidentified person to confirm the identity of persons noted prominently in Jim Pollard's notebook?"

Interestingly, none of Jim Pollard's immediate family including his son Phillip, his brother Keith, twin sister or his wife Dawn (from whom he was separated), have ever received any of Jim Pollard's personal effects, which included:

1. A valuable gold wrist watch,
2. His wallet - and importantly,
3. His address book.

The Police Training Video clearly shows Mr. Pollard's body, furthest from the camera on the western shoulder of Jetty Road, wearing dark sport slacks and a white shirt. His upper body is hidden from the camera and so I cannot say if he is wearing his gold watch or not. ⁷

It is also interesting that Russell James Pollard was one of the last victims to be formally identified, when his son Phillip flew to Hobart from the mainland, but I can also state he was the first deceased victim to have interstate friends know of his death. Recently it was claimed his next of kin had never received a death certificate, a claim at time of writing I'm unable to confirm. Nevertheless:

1. What became of to Mr. Pollard's valueless (but to the family sentimentally priceless) address book?
2. What happened to Mr. Pollard's Wallet and personal papers?
3. What happened to Mr. Pollard's valuable, gold, wrist watch?
4. Why have the family not received his personal effects?
5. Who identified Jim Pollard as deceased and so made the call to Bingara Police?
6. Has a death certificate for Mr. Pollard been issued, and who signed it?

My inquiries always come back to the same question: "Who among those we know of on the Historic Site at the time had opportunity and reason to remove all of the personal items from the deceased Jim Pollard and using information contained in his address book, to then make inquiries of police in Bingara that alerted a friend he had been involved in a fatal incident at Port Arthur?" I shall now try to address this question.

Let us look at the information we have accessed, which deals with the Tollbooth incident in relation to the movements affecting the original occupants of the BMW. The first witness to mention 'a gold BMW' on Jetty Road was Debra Buckley. Debra and her husband Thomas 'at about 1.45 pm' had passed through the Tollbooth in their red Commodore Holden Avis rent-a-car and began the descent on Jetty Road that then led to the Broad Arrow Café car park.

The couple noticed 'a large group of people' jogging across the grassy area about a 100m away, when a male beyond a gold coloured BMW in front of them, yelled out to them something like, *'don't go down there, there's someone with a gun'*. Thomas immediately began reversing their car back up Jetty Road and then turned about (probably at the Church Road intersection) driving back up towards the Tollbooth. Debra Buckley tells us the *"gold coloured BMW which was directly ahead ... [was] reversing and turning to head back in the same direction [also]."* So the 'gold coloured BMW' in question, had also gone through the Tollbooth, down Jetty Road then reversed and turned around to retrace its journey to the Tollbooth and parked in the incoming or wrong lane - so providing a clear run for any vehicle leaving the Site. Thomas Buckley went to Aileen Kingston in the Tollbooth to be told she was aware of the shooting and that the police had been called.

Debra Buckley also tells us she then had a short exchange with a male in the gold BMW who had dark complexion 'perhaps of Greek extraction' she says; this was Robert Salzmann and she conveyed to him the seriousness of the situation. She then turned and saw the gunman down Jetty Road who was in the process of killing Mrs Mikac and her two daughters. At that point, Debra and Thomas Buckley abandoning their Commodore and left the area on foot, so they leave our story. ⁷

The BMW was stationary, parked wrongly in the incoming lane, just beyond the pedestrian crossing at the northern extent of the Tollbooth traffic divide, so blocking all traffic attempting to enter the Historic Site via the Tollbooth's left hand lane, but at the same time giving an unobstructed exit to the gunman about to depart the Historic Site. From this point in time there is a few moments gap in witnesses' statements from when the gunman regained the Volvo on Jetty Road and drove the 60 or so metres up to where he stopped, still facing north in the outbound or correct lane, directly opposite the parked gold BMW. Consequently we are unaware of the movements if any, of the four occupants of the BMW sedan in those next crucial moments.

However the continuity of the story is taken up by the three occupants of a red Ford Corsair as they arrive to enter the Site by the Tollbooth. Debra Rabe, at the time worked at St John Ambulance headquarters in Hobart. On that Sunday Debra, with her two-year-old niece Ashley Rabe, 'a work colleague' from Adelaide Freda Cheok and her son Nicholas, were all enjoying a day-trip to the area from her home in Hobart. Debra was at the wheel, when they pulled up about a car's length from a 'gold' coloured BMW parked in the wrong lane and blocking their entry path. They tell us that a well presented gentleman wearing glasses, 'in his sixties' was seated in the driver's seat of the gold BMW; this was Jim Pollard. Beside Pollard a female was seated who was waving Debra to "go back"; this was "Rosemary" Mary Rose Nixon.

Nicholas Cheok was seated in the front passenger seat beside Debra, with his mother Freda Cheok in the rear seat behind him. Nicholas' attention was focused on a yellow Volvo which had a surfboard on a roof rack he saw parked facing north in the northbound or outgoing lane, directly opposite the gold coloured BMW and therefore in his estimation 'about two sedan car lengths away' from Debra Rabe's car. The witnesses goes on to tell us, a person with long hair was at the wheel of this 'older style car', a Yellow Volvo and a 'short haired female in her fifties' was seated beside the driver; this we now know to be Helene Salzmänn.

With the BMW's female passenger (Rosemary Nixon) still remaining seated in the front passenger seat and continuing to wave them back, Nicholas states that he then saw a man alight from the rear compartment of the driver's side of the yellow Volvo sedan: he was *'probably in his mid sixties and ... of average height'*. This male was Robert Salzmänn who remained standing beside the Volvo while the driver, a male with long blonde hair alighted. Nicholas Cheok continues by telling us that from the body language of these two males, he could tell they were arguing. He further states that the gunman turned to look towards the people in the BMW, then as he walked around the front and down the left side of the yellow Volvo to its rear, he 'distinctly remembers he looked directly at [the witnesses in the red Ford Corsair]', before the Volvo obstructed his view as to what the male was now doing. Importantly though Nicholas did not see the boot-lid raised up, and therefore I can confidently state the blonde-haired male went into the passenger side rear compartment, not the boot, as Nicholas had an unobstructed view if the boot lid of the Volvo had been raised.

The blonde haired male then walked back around the rear of the Volvo carrying two long arms (one on a sling over his shoulder) and returned to again argue with the male still standing beside the Volvo. Now this last point becomes quite critical in us arriving at a sound conclusion to this segment. For if these witnesses' recount of events are correct, and I see no reason to doubt the statements, clearly the two passengers must have entered the Volvo without duress or force of arms. Even more importantly Robert has been seated on the same bench seat beside two long arms! In light of Debra Buckley informing the occupants of the gold BMW of the shootings and the volley of shots that confirmed her story just 60m away down Jetty Road, one must then ponder these three questions:

1. Why did Robert and Helene Salzmänn enter the gunman's Volvo?
2. How was the gunman able to feel so comfortable as to allow a male (hostage?) to sit behind him and beside 2 rifles he's just used to murder 15 people minutes earlier? And,

3. Why didn't Robert Salzman remove the firearms as he alighted and really intervene in the massacre?

The answers to these questions seem so very obvious...

We are then told that as little as ten seconds passed at this point before the blonde haired male raised the gun to inline with Robert Salzman's chest with the muzzle very close to his body and he fired and the man fell to the ground and did not move. I can positively state the Police Training video shows the body of Robert Salzman lying stretched out lying on his back, face up and parallel to the driver's side and close to the yellow Volvo which is parked right over the pedestrian crossing at the northern extent of the Tollbooth divide, facing north, his head to the northern extent of the white lines in the pedestrian crossing (the position shown in the PTV tape is entirely consistent with Nicholas Cheok's statement).

At this point Pollard alighted from the driver's seat of the BMW, walking around the front of the BMW and approached this armed male who'd just shot and killed his 'old army buddy' Robert Salzman standing beside the Volvo. Upon reaching the gunman, Pollard was said to utter but a few words to him, before the gunman again raised the rifle (a 30cal firearm) and with the muzzle again close to his chest and the gunman looking back towards the occupants of the red Ford Corsair, he shot Jim Pollard dead. Contrary to what has been published in *The Daily Telegraph* (attributed to his son Phillip) on April 22, 2006 at page 61, and the citation for the bravery award to Robert Salzman, the claims of both Salzman and Pollard attempting to disarm the gunman near the tollbooth can not be sustained when all the witness statements are considered.



Bullet damage: both the left hand rear window and the quarter pane of Martin Bryant's Volvo abandoned at the Tollbooth were bullet damaged.

Returning now to the witnesses' accounts of the incident we find that while Debra Rabe 'casually put her car into reverse,' Nicholas watched the gunman walk around the front of the Volvo for the second time, open the front passenger door and stand behind that open door. He then reached into the car for the female Helene Salzman and after the red Ford Corsair had moved no more than 'two car lengths' the woman was dragged to her feet and shot beside the rear passenger side door of the Volvo which accounts for the bullet [damage](#) only ever referred to by the DPP indifferently.

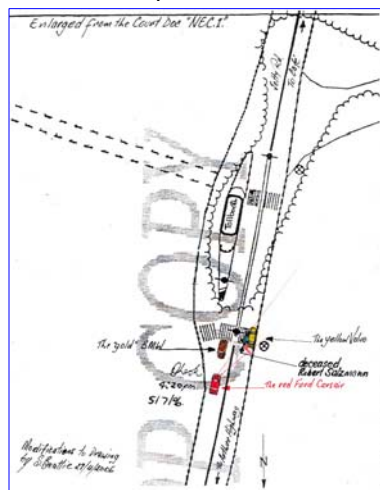
With Debra Rabe's attention now solely focused on removing the vehicle from her boxed-in position in the queue (as another car had stopped behind them), the gunman was still under observation by her passengers. Freda Cheok tells us that that as Debra had reversed into a space (on the eastern side of the road) and looking to her left, she saw the blonde haired male gunman trying to drag Helene Salzman who he'd already shot as she was 'crouched down on the ground', around and across the road in front of the Volvo at its driver's side front corner. Rosemary Nixon still remained seated in the front of the gold BMW as Debra drove away fast from the scene. ⁸

At this point another witness arrives on the scene. Graham Sutherland, his wife Stephanie and two sons were in a V6 Maroon Magna sedan. As they approached the Tollbooth, Mr Sutherland stated, he saw the tan-coloured BMW still parked facing him, and the Volvo still parked in the outgoing lane, both 'slightly in front of the toll booth facing towards [him]'.

Sutherland goes on to state, 'to the driver's side I saw a body laying on the road way, I think face down,' this had to be Rosemary Nixon. He also stated, of the BMW 'the driver's side door was open' and continuing he states: *"The body was completely out of the vehicle. The feet of the body were close to the driver's door and the head was pointed on a 45 degree angle down towards the Historic site. I think there may have been a white top on this person/body with*

fawn trousers. I though (sic) this person was male." Now when the above accounts are compared with the Court Transcript it becomes obvious there are some problems here.

As a consequence, to this investigator the positions of the bodies of Jim Pollard, Helene Salzmann, and Mary Rose Nixon as shown in the Police Training Video and the account as provided in the Court Transcript are not entirely consistent with that which is indicated by witness statements. In the short sequence in which the three bodies are shown on the video, the camera position must have been well to the east of where the gold BMW was parked when



Enhanced and modified "NEC.1":
witness diagram of Tollbooth

the three were shot and killed and marked "B" by Nicholas Cheok on the Court document "[NEC.1](#)". To assist the reader to understand better, I have included an enhanced and [modified diagram](#) that clearly shows the reader three car positions: the 'Sepang Bronze' gold BMW, the red Ford Corsair and the yellow Volvo as well as Robert Salzmann's body. During this video clip captured on Monday 29th, the camera does not pan; it just looks west, across and at right angles to the carriageway, with the three cadavers spread out across the sealed surface: Mrs Nixon wearing white sneakers, red slacks and light top is closest to the camera, lying face down at almost 45 degrees to the alignment of Jetty Road, with her head to the right or north; next Helene Salzman can be seen lying on her back, wearing a dark purple jump suit, head towards the camera and her feet touching the double centre lines on the carriageway. The body of Jim Pollard seems to be partly off the sealed surface, feet towards the camera head obscured, wearing dark shoes, dark slacks and a white shirt. I believe

the position of this last body strongly suggests it may have been moved at some time between when the victim was shot and the video was captured, as the position is inconsistent with that established by several of the witness statements. Consequently, to that end this segment of the investigation is incomplete I believe.

Now to quickly recap briefly the forgoing segment: For those who ran this psychopolitical exercise it becomes obvious that the tollbooth was a critical area of usual entry to the primary field of their operation, an area I would suggest they would most definitely had to have ensured some form of observation and or control over. For instance, if an armed policeman had inadvertently entered the primary field of operation a most adverse and exposed outcome may have unfolded - and they could not allow that to happen. So yet other covert agents would have to have been allocated the role of controlling the tollbooth area. Who were those controllers?

When the inexplicable actions are considered of Robert and Helene Salzmann and indeed the actions of there companion Jim Pollard, I'm forced to abandon my earlier held belief that Jim Pollard was innocently caught up in a covert action on the part of his hosts. It seems yet again the body count of covert agents has risen considerably; is it now probable that 4 or possibly even 6 covert agents died by gunshot while on the job there that day? This I might add has been an unexpected development for this author and so it caused me to investigate these persons who formerly I had considered were simply innocent victims and we shall address my finding very shortly.

In the Court Transcript, Mr Perks states before His Honour Justice Cox at page 162, *"in all eleven .308 calibre fired cartridge cases were subsequently recovered from the vicinity of the tollbooth. All had been discharged in the FN self-loading rifle."* ⁹

Let me state very clearly here, the gunman redeployed an AR-10 7.26NATO rifle at the Port Arthur Tollbooth, not the FN FAL rifle. But first let's do the math: The first shot fired here from the 30cal firearm was in the murder of;

- Robert Salazmann - shot once, then
- Jim Pollard - shot once,
- Helene Salzman - shot once and
- Rosemary Nixon - shot twice

Then when Mr Sutherland arrived at the Tollbooth, in the maroon Magna hire car, the gunman fired two shots at his vehicle, one striking the driver's side door just to the rear and above the door handle, while the other bullet struck the bottom driver's side corner of the windscreen - luckily the occupants were only shaken and sustained no injuries, so

- The Maroon V6 Magna - was shot twice

Then Mr Colin Prout was at the wheel of a white Ford Fairlane hire car with two male friends and as they approached the Historic Site entrance Colin heard two loud gunshots. These would have been the two shots which struck the maroon Magna which was departing at speed. Now ahead of the Mr Prout's white Ford Fairlane was another vehicle - possibly green in colour - and at that time Colin Prout states, 'My attention was drawn, as I heard a further two gunshots to the green car...' So

- The green car - was shot twice

Interestingly, Mr Perks for reasons best known to him has deliberately retold this segment out of sequence. But as you can see, there have been nine (9) shots in total. So my first question;

1. How does the DPP account for the other two shots? Secondly,
2. How can Mr Perks state all eleven .308W cases were discharged in the FN Fal?

You see, not a shred of ballistic or forensic evidence was introduced to the Court, which sustains Mr Perks' statement; in truth for his part, this is a purely speculative statement.

Now to address the results of my research of Robert Salzman and Jim Pollard: I first turned my attention to the claimed successful career of Russell James Pollard in service to Britain's Royal Air Force, the RAF.

Just as I did when investigating "Joe" Vialls, I searched the RAF service records of Great Britain but could find no one by this name having ever served in the RAF during WW-II. I also searched those records for Jim's claimed "old military buddy", Robert Salzman and must admit I wasn't really so surprised when no one by that name was listed as serving in the RAF or indeed any of the military services according to those records I could peruse. In desperation, I turned to search the RAAF - Royal Australian Air Force records. To my surprise I found Russell James (Jim) Pollard had indeed served in our own Air Force and the following are the documented service records located there:

Name:	Pollard, Russell James
Service:	Royal Australian Air Force
Service Number:	71593
D.O.B:	24 March 1924
P.O.B:	Hamilton, NSW.
D. O. Enlistment:	16 Oct 1942 at age 18 yrs
D. O. Discharge:	21 August 1945
Next of kin:	Pollard, Gertrude
Rank:	Leading Aircraftsman
Posting at Discharge:	1 School of Tech Training
WW2 Honours & Gallantry:	None to display
POW:	No

I would point out that in the case of Jim Pollard, having been in the RAAF for just 2 years and ten months and rising to no more than that of LAC, his short time of service could hardly be termed a "successful career", even if it was with another air force. From his date of

discharge, I can say with certainty Mr Pollard left the service at the first available opportunity to demobilise. Now with this little surprise absorbed, I then searched for a death notice to confirm a link that one 'Pollard, Russel James, aged 72 yrs' had died in 1996. I can confirm a death notice was published for Russel James Pollard which also stated his age at 72 years in his local newspaper, the *Newcastle Morning Herald* of 9 May 1996. Now Jim was killed at Port Arthur on 28 April 1996, just five weeks to the day after his birthday and he was reported to have been aged 71 years. This age controversy can possibly be explained by the date of his enlistment on his service record; perhaps Jim put his age up to enable him to be state his age as 18 years - a common enough practice among young males wanting to join the services in Australia in 1942. ¹⁰

Further searches showed there were death notices published for Robert Salzmänn and his wife Helene, on 4 May in the *Lismore Northern Star*, and further legal notices for Robert and Helene appeared on 27 January 1997, in the same publication and I can also confirm that it is recorded both were buried in section "KG" of the northern NSW Mullumbimby cemetery. But of no surprise to this author is the fact that I'm not able to confirm anybody going by the name of Robert Salzmänn, born in 1938, as having ever served in either the RAF or the RAAF during WW-II, which suggests the claim is simply a furphy. ¹¹

The Salzmänn couple have proven quite a mystery. At time of writing though I can confirm from information which appears to have been supplied by Helene Salzmänn's 'close friend', Per Odner, it is suggested the couple at that time had two sons both of whom lived in Switzerland but again curiously this source also claims Jim Pollard and Robert Salzmänn, 'met in the air force during World War II and "had been friends ever since", a friend said.' The couple were also reported as then having resided in the northern NSW town of Ocean Shores (p.c.2483), where Mrs Salzmänn was known as a 'prize winning gardener' of the district. The Swiss connection with the Salzmänn family seems also to spill over into the life of Jim Pollard, for in answer to a journalist's question to her position on "gun control", Mrs Emma Jay, aged 70 years of 'Northern NSW, [and a] friend of Port Arthur victim Jim Pollard' is quoted as responding, *"This business about gun control is a joke really. I come from Switzerland where everyone is taught how to treat weapons sensibly and with care. In Switzerland everyone keeps a gun in their own home and we don't have any problems with them."* ¹²

When combined, the evidence surrounding the forgoing is strengthened considerably I believe when one considers events proximate to the missing personal effects of Jim Pollard in conjunction with the actions of what Deputy Commissioner Richard McCreadie described quaintly as, *"a holidaying police officer from New South Wales [who] stepped forward and began marshalling all the survivors and bringing some organisation and control to the scene."* ¹³

I can do a little better than a seemingly cautious Police Commissioner here and the officer is definitely not Const Garry Whittle either. Surely his profile would have to be that of a person whose covert role (like those of at least another eight to ten or more persons involved) must be concealed from the public. We also have this officer's statement, a real tome that took him a full working day to compose. The first person who fits all the criteria of that culprit is a Bureau of Crime Intelligence officer, who while simply identified as a NSW policeman on holidays, nevertheless is I believe none other than Justin Noble who's 8-plus page statement, to the unwary would seem to exhibit a policeman with extraordinary powers of recall and little else. But the document in fact oozes intelligence! One crime scene of significance he must have visited but so noticeably mentions almost casually was the Tollbooth. Why?

Contrary to the prescribed police protocol, this police officer alone didn't provide his statement to his superiors at his station upon his return *supposedly* to NSW, but instead he supplied his voluminous statement, compiled in various places around Hobart, to colleagues in BCI head office in Hobart. His action I would opinion, confirm Justin Noble as a BCI officer and

that would go some way to explaining why his rank is never mentioned by anyone including Comm. McCreadie, even the make and model of his car remain concealed although I can state it was Victorian registered. Inadvertently his rank is given as "constable" in the bravery awards citation. BCI is a rather strange department, housed among state police, but federal in its operation, just as the Federal Police are. In this case though, why would a NSW policeman be driving his own vehicle on holidays in Tasmania, when his 'own vehicle' carried Victorian registration of OEY- 903? Was he actually stationed in Melbourne and if so what was his special assignment; Port Arthur?

If in fact Justin is a BCI officer and he was the culprit who removed the personal effects from the deceased Jim Pollard, then this would go some way to explaining why numerous people - determined to conceal their identity incidentally - were suddenly exhibiting heightened interest in anyone listed in the address book of Jim Pollard for months after, to the tune of upwards of possibly 50 phone calls to one such individual alone in reference to Jim Pollard. Even Parson, Alan Anderson numbered among those privy to names out of Jim Pollard's address book! This then identifies the parson Mr Anderson as also having covert connections. All because it would seem, Pollard was a companion of Robert and Helene Salzmann and Rosemary Nixon, all of whom died at the Tollbooth that day. These anonymous callers even volunteered some quite personal detailed information about events near the tollbooth also; not the sort of information members of the public would have uncovered so early-on after the incident you must understand. Incidentally, while his wife Kathryn accompanied Justin Noble and so witnessed much of what he saw in the initial stages on the Historic Site, strangely no statement by her is among my files. ¹⁴

You can now understand why the "Bingara bolt from the blue" was quite rightly identified by both Andrew MacGregor and me to be of such importance in the process of unravelling what occurred during the shootings that occurred around the Port Arthur Tollbooth.

Now let us return to explaining why so many people believed the gunman had escaped the police cordon around Seascope. Several important points need to be made here: Asst Comm. for Crime and Operations, Luppoo Prins, was notified of the shooting incident at 1:51 pm (1351 hrs), while he tells us, *"The initial report of the Port Arthur shootings was received at the Hobart Police Radio Room at 1332 on Sunday, 28 April 1996,"* confirming it was Mrs Scurr who made the first 000 call. Interestingly, this time is at odds with the initial call time provided by the later Police Commissioner, Richard McCreadie. Luppoo Prins also tells us his first action was to authorise deployment of the SOG. They were dispatched to Taranna 10 km north of Seascope, where the PFCP was established in the Devil Park. It was here that a barbeque was laid-on to feed the eventual 400 plus police, while the 100 acre Historic Site was yet left unsecured by them and the staff unfed! It is very clear, that senior police entirely failed in their duty here. ¹⁵

Hundreds of visitors, PAHSMA staff, and emergency services personnel - many still locked in cottages with lights off and blinds drawn scattered around the Site - were forced to endure six stress-filled hours of waiting, before armed SOG police in numbers adequate to the situation arrived by bus no less, to escort these traumatised people to the safety of the Port Arthur Motor Inn and the Backpackers' Hostel nearby. Oddly though, we are not informed from whence these SOG's were "bussed". After all, was not every available SOG officer the length and breadth of Tasmania at that time deployed in the role of "total containment" of the gunman at Seascope?

It also must be realized, that long before these armed SOG police arrived on the Historic Site, the eyewitness Lee-Anne Goodwin tells us that, *"at about 6.30pm that night I was on the veranda of CLOUGHA with Brian ALISON and John FEATHERSTONE, fellow workers at the site. All three of us heard three shots, which came in rapid succession from the right hand side, toward the Remarkable Caves. The shots sounded as if they came from the*

bushes next to us, and it sounded like a high pitch sound similar to a rifle. Although edited-out from his original, comprehensive, hand-written and signed statement, eyewitness Steven Howard corroborated this above account entirely to this author and stated it was certainly included in his original handwritten statement to police.



Left: Mrs Scurr indicates where witnesses believe 3 shots came from close by the "Clougha"

Very shortly after these 3 gunshots were fired near [Clougha](#), Robert McLoughlin entered the Port Arthur Motor Inn's reception room, searching for his wife Vicki who was a staff member working on the Historic Site that day, in the hope that she had escaped the attack unscathed. Upon making his entrance, he was confronted by a policeman, Peter Hessman who quietly made an announcement to the staff caring for the traumatised visitors sheltering in the Motel, with words to the effect that; *"The gunmen (plural) are out and we don't know where they are, keep everybody inside, draw the curtains and switch-off the lights."* Mrs Scurr has since told me the curtains would not close properly, and she refused this police directive to switch-off the lights, as in her qualified estimation it was only going to further amplify the trauma people had suffered already. In the minutes that followed, Mr McLoughlin found his wife, and on his insistence, the couple departed the Site immediately.

My point is this. Who fired these 3 shots at about 6.30 pm near Clougha? Considering that as Peter Hazelwood would have us all believe, the SOG had their "lone gunman" at that time, subjected to "total containment," inside Seascapes, why did police ignore entirely these 3 gunshots and they made no attempt to investigate, expose, or make an arrest of the culprit? In



Map of the Port Arthur Historic Site, c2000.

fact the only public document confirming these 3 shots being fired on site was put on the record by Craig Coombs who stated: *"At about 1700 a report came through that it was feared that Bryant may have broken out of Seascapes and was heading back to the Site. Shots were then reported as coming from across the Site."* Could not police inaction in this instance imply a clear knowledge of exactly what did occur in this instance? After all other instances I have exposed here of complicity even responsibility, like for instance the admission to the burning of Seascapes is suggestive of a motive at least; there were so many agents on the Site that day, surely opportunity is not in question. ¹⁶

Picture if you will, men-folk with their women and children there in the gathering gloom of eventide, in unfamiliar surroundings; with wide streets, scattered buildings and ruins throwing long shadows over this 100 acre Historic [Site](#). They were all on foot, all unarmed, some locked in darkened period cottages, dead bodies scattered about, with a *gunman* out there somewhere, and police obviously unwilling to come and protect them... The already 5 hours of trauma was certainly reinforced in every one of those people who heard those 3 further gunshots as they waited quietly over the ensuing hour. Surely their plight must have seemed to have no conclusion as they waited and waited. [PtArthurMap2](#)



2006: The current map of Port Arthur Historic Site after the extensive redevelopment carried out over the last ten years.

Walter Mikac had come to the Site and ended up down Jetty Rd near the Café area in search of Nanette and the two girls and located the family car parked there by the waterfront. It was somewhere around 1800 hrs (6.00 pm) and a Nubeena volunteer ambulance officer had mentioned to Dr Ireland that the bodies of two children were on Jetty Road. So while the Dr Ireland and Kaye Fox walked up Jetty Road to check the bodies, she instructed Paul Cooper the Historic Site tour guide to escort Walter Mikac up to the security of Clougha cottage. Shortly the doctor arrived at Clougha where she conveyed the awful news to Walter

and it was just minutes later that they all witnessed the three gunshots that rang out from the bushes close by. Even the green light emitted by the photocopier had to doused as all of those inside were administered a further dose of trauma in what she described as an 'atmosphere of terror'.¹⁷

At this point let's return to the very fastidious NSW Policeman, supposedly holidaying in Tasmania and who provided invaluable assistance on the Historic Site that day - or so Comm. McCreadie would have us believe. As I have already mentioned above, I was forced to conclude Justin Noble was out of the BCI office and working on a special case as he was driving his own motor vehicle (never described) but which had Victorian registration of OEY-903.

At page 6 of his nine-page statement, Noble mentions that he and wife Kathryn, entered a *"cottage on the south east corner of the intersection of Tramway Street and Remarkable Caves Road,"* where it appears his wife sheltered and he made several phone calls to police HQ in Hobart. Eventually, after directing traffic and making sundry calls to police in Hobart from this cottage, he seconded the owner, a male he states went by the name of "Dale" to accompany him to the Tollbooth area about which his recount is minimal, where he yelled his name out to "SES Ian KINGSTON, and [sic] SES officer [who was] north of the toll booth my name and that I was a member of the NSW Police Service..."

But at this period in the sequence of his movements around the outer limits of the 100 acre Site, Justin Noble could not have yelled out to Ian Kingston north of the Tollbooth, as Ian Kingston had not set up any SES Control there at that time. Secondly, Ian Kingston would certainly love to have been able to include a NSW policeman in his many statements if he had been yelled at by Noble; that is certainty! But Ian Kingston makes no mention of any NSW policeman having identified himself in the area of the Tollbooth. Now this yelling to Kingston was supposedly to gain permission to enter the Site down Jetty Road past the Tollbooth, but this is illogical, for at that time no police lines had been established, so why the request for permission? Perhaps though it gained him some 'padding' for his attendance and duration at the Tollbooth crime scene, considering the occupants of the BMW lay dead and strewn about road there, especially just in case a witness inadvertently came upon him occupied in what ever it is BCI officers on covert operations do at crime scenes among bodies.

He then claims that with permission granted by Kingston, he and Dale 'ran 400 metres south' and out onto the oval where he met Brian Edmonds, a Tasmania policeman, when he approached one of the (Squirrel) helicopters. Now we are told elsewhere that Edmonds went into the Information Centre and phoned police HQ to demand they get some police down to the Historic Site as quickly as possible, but he doesn't mention an encounter with Justine Noble either. Can you see a pattern developing here?

Now this fastidious, pedantic policeman Justin Noble, stated Edmonds "asked" him and his companion Dale *"...to ensure that the site was fully evacuated on the southern side and that all persons were moved to the carpark at the front of the information centre."* This allegation is quite at odds to what the volunteers and PAHSMA staff had already achieved, (as attested by various video tapes) even before the gunman departed the Site, when they had moved all of the visitors *away from the car park* to the safety of the cottages in the Southwest extent of the Historic Site environs!

Now keeping in mind the quick turnaround time of Squirrel helicopters collecting then evacuating the surviving wounded from the Historic Site to Hobart and the fact that as a crew member, protocol demanded that Edmonds stay with his helicopter, but Noble would have us believe that after clearing all of these people from the Site and returning with them to the Information Centre, Noble states he *"...then returned to where Brian EDMONDS was standing"*. If the foregoing is not nonsense, then consider this: Noble then claims that after "Dale" was given permission to 'return home', Noble and Edmonds (still standing about

twiddling his thumbs it would seem), entered the Information Centre and continuing he claims *"Brian and I then began to speak to victims and witnesses to the incident and obtain their details."* This is nothing less than unmitigated rubbish!

Now within the statement Noble notes the names of various people to whom he spoke, among them 'Peter' (Hessman), Ian Kingston (the latter even although he was at such distance that he was forced to yell out to him - once), but of the person whose home he and his wife Kathryn entered, and with whom he allegedly traversed the entire 100 acre site, he only ever refers to him as "Dale", and to my knowledge Dale (?) never ever made a statement to police.

Is it not fair to suggest that as he mentions, no note taking was effected as he propelled himself at speed about the Site, then a position in BCI would have undoubtedly been of great worth in checking the witness statements to provide the 'padding' of names to promote an account of his movements almost believable to the unwary? In the fashion of someone trained in police methodology, like Lynne Beavis and her mention of "Cheryl SCURL" (Wendy Scurr who had nothing to do with Beavis), Noble employed the same almost-correct right-sounding name from a fastidious, trained mind, when he almost gets the witness Kyle Spruce's name right; "Kyle SPROULE". A poor attempt that is a dead give away to any competent investigator I would suggest.

However, from the Information Centre where he claims he took names and details of witnesses under the guidance of a detective "Peter" (Hessman), he then tells us he and his wife went to the Port Arthur Motel (where Hessman sat among staff and visitors) and he claims there he received permission from an attending policeman (not named, who he knew must have been Peter Hessman) to return to the car park, collected his car and in his own word, "[He] then left the scene at about 7.00pm and returned to [his] hotel accommodation."

Here a significant *admission* has been made by a simple *oversight* on his part: As earlier stated I was sure of my ground in suggesting Justin Noble was heavily involved in the events of that day in a covert role and the person most likely in my estimation to have fulfilled a role as Site controller for the operation, but now my allegation is magnified substantially I believe. This pedantic policeman forgot to mention that BEFORE he left the Historic Site at about 7.00pm, and I would suggest just after he left Hessman and vacated the motel dining room, THREE GUNSHOTS rang out, echoing about the hills and bays of the Port Arthur Historic Site at 6.30pm at which time, Noble by his own admission was engaged in some activity or other not witnessed by any person but importantly was still on the 100 acre grounds of the Historic Site outdoors and apparently was *very deaf*; or was Noble wearing hearing protection and did he fire the three mystery gunshots? Noble certainly had opportunity, but did he also have motive? It is my opinion he did.

The above detailed senior Tasmania Police negligence is bad enough, but remember I haven't mentioned police also deliberately left 5 crimes scenes relatively unsecured and open to contamination and tampering even if by BCI officers and the like, for that entire 6 hour period as well! Even the bodies on Jetty Road were rolled aside to make room for an ill directed bus carrying the walking wounded to make its way onto Nubeena Road! †

Three police over 5 crime scenes equals 'unsecured' in anyone's opinion surely. Noble, the holidaying policeman of great assistance had ensured all was wrapped-up and departed the area of operation just after the 3-shot - the international "all-clear" had sounded - which incidentally could be heard at Seascope just as shots at Seascope were heard at the Historic

† Ian McElwee was at the wheel of this bus having just gone through the entire massacre in and around the Broad Arrow Café & then almost 5 hrs later was tasked to drive his bus via Premaydena back to Hobart. Without police supervision he departed by Jetty Road, instead of leaving via Tarleton & Champs Streets past the Port Arthur Motor Inn.

Site. But the power of one – Hessman; there is a limit to just how thinly one policeman can be spread over 5 crime scenes. He did take some details from those who chose to cooperate, but many (approximately 100 or so vehicles), were recorded as departing, as there was no one in authority to prevent their departure! When considered, along with all of the other anomalies, this negligent, inappropriate inaction by police must surely have been deliberate and what temerity for McCreadie and his mates in the Ministry to boast of their pride in the police response!¹⁸

Interestingly, in an unprecedented move, 10 key PAHSMA personnel had been informed by an interoffice memo over the signature of Margaret Jacobs, dated, 18 April – just 10 days before the massacre – that an “off site workshop” that promised to be, “interesting, enlightening and surprising,” was to be held beginning on the 28th April 1996. Little did the staff realise just how profound that memo was to be. The workshop was scheduled to be held with an overnight stay at Meredith House, Swansea some 204 km away up the Northeast coast. The party were to travel in 3 work vehicles, departing promptly from Port Arthur at 11.00am that Sunday.

Upon learning of the massacre from Peter Roach who phoned them from the Site Information Centre, the supervisors immediately started-out to return. Two of the vehicles, after having travelled about 222km on the return trip, were logged onto the Historic Site at 3:50 and 4:04 pm respectively. After at least a two and a half hour drive from Swansea via Nubeena, the second staff vehicle still beat Peter Hessman's chauffeured arrival by police vehicle which had just 28 km to cover from Taranna with siren and flashing lights to clear the way after Barry Bennett issued the orders to Insp Freeman upon his arrival there at about 1500 hrs!¹⁰

When, and from whom did policeman Peter Hessman receive his orders to proceed to the Historic Site that day? Why was Hessman left there alone and without transport? While police deliberately left to chance hundreds of visitors, staff and emergency personnel already mentioned above, plus the five crime scenes, for many hours it seems strange that when Graeme and Wendy Scurr returned to the Historic Site on Tuesday 30 April so as to recover Wendy's motor car, still parked in the staff car-park near the Information Centre, both were in for a surprise. Wendy was transported to the car-park to identify her vehicle by two policemen in their vehicle, and then one of the police drove her car back to the entrance, before handing it over. Obviously in Australia, Police priorities are chaotic; sadly they demonstrate much more care and consideration for motor vehicles, than they do for the welfare of the citizens of the communities they police.

End Notes

¹ McCreadie, “Port Arthur – An Overview of Police Response”, EMA Report, p.6

² McCreadie, EMA Report, p.6; Justin Noble, Statement 30/04/96, taken at BCI Offices, City Police Station, Hobart; var. witness statements; EMA Papers, p.53

³ Craig Coombs, “PAHSMA Response,” EMA Report, p.40.

⁴ Protected source, former Federal Policeman, corroborated volunteer fireman.

⁵ Australian Surveying & Land Information Group, Sunset Results at <http://geodesy.auslig.gov.au> - 4apr01

⁶ na, *The Daily Telegraph*, 22Apr06, p.61

⁷ Debra Jane Buckley, witness statement to Police (undated)

⁸ Various signed witness statements of Debra Rabe, Nicholas & Freda Cheok

⁹ The Court Document Transcript, *Queen v Martin Bryant*, p. 162/5

¹⁰ Salzmann Robert & Helene, at <http://www.rootsweb.com/~nswdps/ausds013.htm>; RAAF Service Records at, rootsweb.com/~nswdps/ausdp208.htm

¹¹ Compilation: Margaret Henderson, Index to Obituary/Death Notice File, October 2005, Richmond River Historical Society.

¹² RAAF Service Records, <http://www.rootsweb.com/~nswdps/ausdp208.htm> ; *Newcastle Morning Herald* of 9may96, Deaths; na "The innocents killed for no reason," *The Daily Telegraph*, 1may96, p.6; na, *The Age* 19jul96, p. A7

¹³ Richard McCreadie, Comm. of Police, "An Overview of the Police Response" The EMA papers p.6

¹⁴ Justin Mark Noble, witness statement, 30apr96, at BCI Offices, City Police Station, Hobart.

¹⁵ Richard McCreadie Comm of Police, Port Arthur – An Overview of Police Response, EMA Report, p.5; Police Training Video, Luppo Prins; Craig Coombs CEO, "PAHSMA Response", EMA Report, p.40

¹⁶ Peter Hazelwood before the Senate Standing Committee - Adelaide

¹⁷ Carol Altmann, *After Port Arthur*, pub. Allen & Unwin 2006, chapter 7, pp. 119-120

¹⁸ Mr J. Purden, PAHSMA employee, vehicle movement log 28/4/96 at Motor Inn entrance.

Bangs & "Coughs"

Chapter 22

"I believe the audio tape ['cuppa' file,] can be said to be objective fact of a Conspiracy in the massacre at Port Arthur."

- opinion of a New South Wales based Barrister at law

In this chapter you may consider crucial information that came to light in August of 2001, during my research and investigation carried forward with the mutual cooperation and assistance from Andrew MacGregor, as I promised earlier in the narrative.

Upon the gunman regaining the Port Arthur Tollbooth area, he had a confrontation with the two male occupants of a sedan. Robert Salzmann alighted from the rear seat, and after arguing beside Martin Bryant's Yellow Volvo, Salzmann was shot dead with one shot from the FN FAL rifle. Jim Pollard then alighted, and was promptly shot dead, with the two females also shot and killed inside the car, but then callously dragged from their seats to be dumped on the bitumen surface. Such actions on the part of the perpetrator mark him as a brutal, cold, killer. From the Court Document, the gunman allegedly then transferred various items into the gold BMW 733i sedan and hijacked the sedan previously driven by Robert Salzman and drove it out onto the Arthur Highway, heading north through Port Arthur.



Witness: Jim Laycock had known Martin since childhood & stated *he did not recognize the gunman as Martin Bryant*

Approximately 200 yards into his journey, he pulled across the northern most entrance to the Port Arthur General Store, set back from the eastern limits of the highway. The gunman's action here was closely observed by witnesses Jim [Laycock](#) and his son-in-law Yanni Kateros. With the BMW, he blocked the exit path of a white Toyota [Corolla](#) sedan. First he kidnapped the driver Mr Glen Pears and forced him into the boot of the BMW, returning to the left of the Corolla, firing as few as two (the police claim three) shots fired through the passenger side window from the FN FAL 7.62NATO rifle, fatally wounding Pear's companion, Miss Zoë Hall.



Bullet damage & a blood stain on the drivers' seat of the White Corolla tell a poignant story.

The blonde haired gunman then drove off at high speed north up the Tasman Highway pausing at the entrance to Seascapes, where he proceeded to shoot randomly at the 11 persons in 6 vehicles all southbound of the Arthur Highway dealt with in chapter 19. The DPP alleges the gunman fired between 9 and 13 shots from the FN FAL at these people. Returning to the BMW he then drove down into the Seascapes cottage yard. I cannot say with certainty though as to who then shifted the BMW to the western boundary of the property where it became bogged to the axle. Mr. Perks tells us it was parked beside a

"line of poplar trees", though in fact they are not 'Poplars' at all, but a double row of more than 24 Pencil Willows - *Salix chiliensis*. (See Court Doc @ pp.164-172)

The then Assist Comm. Richard McCreadie states in the EMA report that at Seascap, "the first police arrived at 1412(hrs)," (2:12pm). So officially at least, it was from this point in time the siege at the Seascap cottage began.

In our early investigation I was searching for a breakthrough, that crack or weak link in the official line of what Andrew and I suspected was a sham. So sensitive to our finite resources, many months of mundane investigative work had to be done; reading and rereading through in excess of a thousand pages of witness statements, Court documents, and a filing cabinet bulging with associated material. One needs to have a 'win' occasionally, a circuit breaker to re-enthuse one's tired mind. But then a pleasant visit and weekend workshop from my colleague Andrew MacGregor proved persistence does bring reward, a result among many along the way that has certainly reinvigorated my determination to complete the task.

Now, in dialogue that even Sergeant Terry McCarthy described as "bizarre" and almost farcical Seascap "negotiations" ensued, (there are various statements of times here). So from about 1530hrs intermittently to sometime between approximately 2100-2130 hrs the supposed gunman "Jamie" — later identified as Martin Bryant, was under siege inside the Seascap guesthouse. As early as page 2 of the court document's record of those various conversations, "Jamie" is talking about wanting to *go for a ride in a helicopter*, and by p.43 he has been worked around to detailing his intentions for that helicopter ride to Hobart Airport and plane flight out to Adelaide via Melbourne.

It is at this point of the two-way conversation, "Jamie" volunteers by his own watch that the time is, "just after nine" (2100hrs 9.00 p.m.). Note please that at this point in time, Jamie's conversations indicate absolutely nothing to support the two primary firearms have been destroyed: Jamie's exchanges all use future tense.

So had Sgt Terry McCarthy been led to believe there was another gunman secreted away inside Seascap? I believe so; even if only to confuse the commander, the "Sons of God" and the negotiator. After all Tasmania Police SOG Officers believed there was definitely more than one shooter! If this was the case, I wonder who exactly did Police suspected was other gunman?

And before we leave this question, I must remind you, that at p.3, paragraph 2 of the Proof of Evidence statement made by Constable Garry Whittle. We recount what occurred as both he and Constable P. J. Allen were extricating themselves from the line of fire on the highway out front of Seascap, along a ditch some 200 metres in length, timed by him at "10:30 p.m."

Whittle states that, "one of the SOG members" had told him and his fellow constable they believed the Police were under surveillance from Seascap via a "night viewing device". As Constables Whittle and Allen crawled along this ditch, Constable Garry Whittle stated, "*...the two members of SOG provided us with protection and information about the movements of occupants of Seascap*" (my emphasis) — "movements" of "occupants"; both in the plural tense.

You may remember, in his debriefing notes, Const Whittle states, "*At one stage saw a female running around the back yard naked. Yelling and screaming.*" No hair colour is mentioned. That had to be Sally Martin, for if not Sally Martin, then who? But when it comes to the Constable who was posted into Nubeena by senior Police Officers, Const Paul Hyland, the story takes a ever so slight twist.

Const Hyland: "*As I was moving my vehicle I saw a person running past one of the cottages towards the entrance of the main residence. This person appeared to have black hair and appeared to be naked.*"



David & Sally Martin: But neither had "black hair" & Martin Bryant could not have murdered David Martin as at the time the DPP claims David was killed, Martin Bryant was 61 km away drinking coffee at Forcett!

Have you noticed how carefully he has choosing his words? Paul Hyland has for reasons that appear obvious to this writer, but certainly would be better known to himself, he introduced a significant slant to his account of this critical opening segment of the siege. Firstly he has not assigned a gender to his description of the person - a quite deliberately choice seeing as how he believed the person appeared naked. However, equally, he has chosen to introduce a degree uncertainty as to the person's dress or lack of it, by stating the person only "appeared to be naked". Can you understand what is going on here? Without attempting to do more than introduce some sense into the situation, there certainly was a 'black haired person' at Seascap that afternoon, but it was neither David or Sally Martin, nor was it Martin Bryant! I would suggest it had to be "Rick" (or more correctly "Mick") the controller and mate of "Jamie"; and he did then have black hair. After all, Martin knew all about him; his wife, her education standard, where his parents lived etc. But obviously the black-haired person could not have been Sally Martin; a silver-grey haired lady in her senior years. Equally it could not have been David Martin either, with his wavy silvered hair! I do not doubt the veracity of Const Whittle's recollection of events and yes, he was naturally taken aback when he saw a naked female being pursued around the yard of Seascap screaming, with the Martin's dog also barking its head off on the end of a chain. This segment has done Paul Hyland no favours I would suggest and so he moves to the "left" in my estimation, as he must have been "in the loop".

The Prosecution is locked into their flawed hypothesis presented unchallenged as "fact" in the Court contending Sally and David Martin were murdered in the forenoon just to fit their less than accurate timeline. However at 2230 hrs, on the Sunday afternoon the SOG officers and the Police Constables at Seascap believed there were also "movements of occupants" (both in the plural) in the cottage and this wasn't the hostage Glen Pears either as we shall see directly.

The Police and SOG officers concluded the source of "movements of occupants" within Seascap was attributable to gunmen (plural). Think about it: non-shooters are of no direct threat to police besieging a site and logically kidnappers are not in the habit of letting their hostages wander about in a besieged dwelling, especially not in this cottage. For Sgt Gerard Dutton tells us that upon examination, "burnt firearms were found in all areas of the ashes".¹

Can you imagine, with 'a firearm in every room' and copious quantities of ammunition all over the place, hostages allowed to roam free would have proved at least - risky? So Constable Whittle's statement is weighty evidence supporting the proposition of there being more than one gunman in the Seascap cottage.

The DDP's case which insists Martin Bryant was the lone belligerent in the Seascap siege and indeed for the entire incident cannot be sustained when all the evidence is considered, and the statement made by Const Garry Whittle alone is entirely at odds and contrary to the whole Mr. Bugg's synopsis.

In a candid interview, sparked by a then forthcoming Federal election, Mr. Damien Bugg was reported as saying that there was, *"An overwhelming body of evidence [that] pointed to Bryant's guilt, and not one piece of evidence had since emerged that would in any way counter that."* His statement now stands condemned as contemptibly untrue. It would achieve little to challenge this QC to a public debate on this matter alone; I suggest it draw no more than a scoff of it being 'unprofessional' for him to comment. But during Martin Bryant's sentencing hearing, the "defence" sat muted and compliant, never airing such material that you have read above... such mulish defence can but attract condemnation!

Checking our Video tape library back in August of 2001, and in particular that segment commonly known as the "Jamie Seascapes audio tapes", Andrew MacGregor and I had decided to each concentrate on different aspects; I was listening for and watching out for background material.

As the voice of the anchor-man trails-off and the unusually high pitched almost cultured, effeminate, voice of "Jamie" fades-in, for a moment in time, I could not believe my ears — a **gunshot!** Long experience told me, **"You have heard a gunshot, and there is NO mention or possibility of one occurring, is there?"** After all it has clearly stated by senior police:

"Police did not fire any weapons during the incident..."

- Then Assist Comm., Richard McCreadie.²

I will expand upon McCreadie's careful choice of words in his statement shortly. But importantly, Police did not discharge any firearm intentionally or otherwise towards any suspect during the Seascapes siege, and so I ask:

"Who, other than Martin Bryant, discharged this firearm inside Seascapes as captured on the audio tape?"

If this is a gunshot fired within the cottage, concurrent with the alleged "lone gunman Jamie" engaged in an uninterrupted conversation with Sgt Terry McCarthy, then surely you now recognise the significance of the event on record here.

Here is irrefutable evidence of a GUNMAN other than Martin Bryant in the Seascapes cottage during the siege!

Now let's clear-up the event exposed by this video clip of the "Jamie Seascapes tapes" which incidentally appears at page 15 of the transcript and is designated "COUGH". After long and sober consideration of the tape's sound-track and picture we decided, because of the crucial significance of our find, there was an urgent necessity to at the earliest time have the tape examined and evaluated by an expert in audiometry, acting as an independent arbiter.

Subsequently, a copy of Nine's video tape and the widely distributed CD-ROM, "Deceit & Terrorism" with the file copy nominated "cuppa" and you can listen to that audio tape [here](#). It is the only known record of this particular gunshot. In May 2004, I received from an anonymous source, a very good quality copy of a video tape entitled Tasmania Police Training Video referred to and quoted, throughout this narrative as the PTV Tape. Within the second session of that tape and approximately at 12:23 there is a 23 second clip of another segment of the "Jamie" tape, which includes some of the conversation between "Jamie" and Sgt Terry McCarthy transcribed at page 6 of the written transcript of the Court Document.

The recorded gunshot, along with other various known true gunshots from the Wilkinson Tape, were together shipped to an audio expert for comparison and his independent report. The ACA video tape known to have contained clips from the armature video tape footage captured by Mr. and Mrs. Wilkinson from Corio in Victoria, visitors that day to the Site, had earlier been accepted as genuine gunshots captured on the Historic Site when gunshots rang out from the Broad Arrow Café and the original tape was introduced into evidence by the Court as "Exhibit P.3" (see Court Doc. p.102).

These recorded shots allegedly originated from the discharges of the Colt AR15 .223Rem Carbine inside the Broad Arrow Cafe. The transcript of the "Jamie" conversation with Sgt Terry McCarthy was also entered into evidence and mentioned by Mr Perks, at pages 43 to 99 of volume 2 of the Crown papers.

Upon our realisation of the significance of my discovery of this shot recorded as "COUGH" we were prompted to ask this question:

"Can we find any other (possibly) companion events recorded in the transcript of the audio tape as a "cough" that are suspiciously similar."

A quick examination revealed there were in fact a further 19 similar events, all confirmed by the police transcript!

The first event appears at p.3 and they continued irregularly but in an unmistakeable and curious pattern at various places with 22 incidents recorded with the transcript ending at p.58, with the last such incident recorded as "Cough" on page 57.

Inquiries have drawn a blank as to the existence or otherwise of any surviving police audio "Jamie" tapes. Little wonder I should say, so the transcript is the only instrument of record remaining, save the channel 9 video. Hence this fact prompts the question, **"Under what circumstances did the master tape of this transcript go missing, and why was there no copy made of such important evidence, and then secured?"** It is my understanding of police procedure, that such tapes are considered by the SOG and their companion negotiating teams as vital for use as training aids: so much for that likelihood. The transcript though makes for interesting reading, with these events recorded as either, "COUGH," "Cough" or "cough"; forms, all there to read, consider and wonder...

So here is a copy of the transcript of the phone conversation, between Sgt Terry McCarthy, in the Major Incident Room (MIR) at Police HQ in Hobart and "Jamie", a.k.a. Martin Bryant, over a claimed but in practice a not-so-isolated land-line. "Jamie" is speaking on a portable telephone inside Seascope on the evening of the 28th April 1996, just some minutes after 1815hrs (6:15 p.m.), and approximately between 6.25 p.m. and 6.40 p.m. by "Jamie's" wrist watch. I have included the section of conversation each side of the target event, as follows:-

p.15

McCarthy: "I want to assure myself that everybody in there are okay. Are they all okay at the moment?"

Jamie: Aw well, I've been given them a cuppa tea an...

McCarthy: You gave them a cuppa tea? Where are they at the moment?

Jamie: I can't tell you that.

McCarthy: Well okay. Okay then...

Jamie: They're Okay,

McCarthy: I take it no body been harmed?

Jamie: No, no one's been harmed they're on a double bed at the present.

McCarthy: Right, no body's been harmed (break in transcript)

Jamie: I've got twenty to seven `cause of I'm making up some sandwiches

McCarthy: COUGH [e.t.t. 00:35 is a discharge (BANG!) transcribed "COUGH"]

p.16

Jamie: these people got, um salad and some steak here...inaudible...

McCarthy: Right.

Jamie: and some eggs an I'm gonna fry up bacon and eggs for them

McCarthy: Uh hu

(Note: "e.t.t." = elapsed tape time. Refer to *Deceit & Terrorism - the Massacre at Port Arthur*, a CD-Rom book by Andrew MacGregor; go to folder marked "avi" and "[cuppa](#)" file then @ e.t.t. 00:35sec.)

As we are denied the chance to access and check out for ourselves the events which the authorities have transcribed as a "cough," when isolated and assembled they occur as follows, please note the pattern:—

Court Doc. Page No.	How recorded	Where Appears In Conversation	Attributed to:
3	cough	Singularly	Terry McCarthy
8	cough	Singularly	"
12	cough	Singularly	"
15	COUGH	Singularly	"
27	COUGH	Singularly	"
37	Cough	1st word	"
43	cough	end of sentence	"
43	cough	2nd word	"
43	cough	8th word	"
43	Cough	Singularly	"
45	Cough	Singularly	"
47	cough	15th word	"
47	Cough	first word	"
48	Cough	second word	"
48	Cough	first word	"
48	Cough	first word	"
49	Cough	first word	"
50	Cough	Singularly	"
51	Cough	first word	"
54	cough	Singularly	"
56	cough	Singularly	"
57	Cough	114th word	"

Just two events are transcribed "COUGH" in CAPITALS; the first @ p.15 of the transcript (**emboldened** above) and the second at page 27 in the transcript document. I cannot tell you why that is the case. But could I be forgiven for suggesting that some honest soul wanted the public to have this audio/visual experience and access, via the ACA tape and/or even unwittingly reproduced for all interested people alike by Mr. Andrew MacGregor in his CD-Rom book, *Deceit and Terrorism - The Massacre at Port Arthur?*

But is this fact not curious? *Every* cough event is attributed to Terry McCarthy; he "coughs" 22 times!

Now this may not seem impossible, it may even seem highly probable to some, especially if Terry was a chain smoker for instance. But really ... a single expulsion transcribed "cough" - try it yourself! And...here it occurs even many times in the middle of Jamie's conversation when McCarthy is not speaking? Even more curious is the fact that it is a single, short, sharp, cough, prompts me to suggest if anyone should attempt to duplicate this distinct sound by coughing they would find it a little tricky. I challenge any one to produce a person who can reproduce 22 successive coughs in that manner that when recorded will produce a similar audio pattern as we captured here.

In this audio tape the event when captured in a sentence is yet again just "COUGH", and done so without even drawing a breath or a break in the conversation and then we are expected to accept that McCarthy was even compelled to do so while not in conversation?

But in each case the events are attributed to Terry McCarthy **only**? The one time we are able to listen to this "COUGH" it can be said to mimic so very clearly, so unmistakably, the audiometry sound wave form of the shots recorded on the Wilkinson Tape attributed to the shooting at the Broad Arrow Café.

I would emphasise the fact again, that EVERY "cough" without exception is a SINGLE event and the one at p.15 has been proven to be of high frequency.

Even more interesting to me personally, is the fact that we are not told of one shot being fired from the Seascapes cottage in the siege, that specifically originated from the Colt AR15 Carbine in .223, but remember we are told that numerous times a 7.62x39 type 56 carbine was discharged inside Seascapes. When first we compared the Wilkinson tape shots with the "COUGH" shot, experience told me that when an expert examined this tape the report could well state the two sounds originated from *different, but like sources*.

Why not two coughs or three or four if McCarthy was clearing his throat? But common sense tells me that a person's *cough* does not produce an audio sound wave signature approaching anything near "high frequency".

The independent audiometry professional was informed the subject matter of the report we required, **did** concern the Massacre at Port Arthur, but he was not told of our suspicions as to the nature of the noise recorded as "COUGH" and indeed he was not made aware as to our belief as to what we'd heard or that the segment was transcribed. He was simply directed to that section of the tape as being the "target sections" which we required him to evaluate and report on, namely, that of the Wilkinson Tape first "shot" as the control sound, the other sound being that section coming over Jamie's speaking voice on the Seascapes Tape as defined above. He was asked to produce a "sound wave signature" of each and to record them for archiving purposes, and make on this material a written report.

In Fig.1 (below) we see at top the sound wave signature recorded as "COUGH" in the

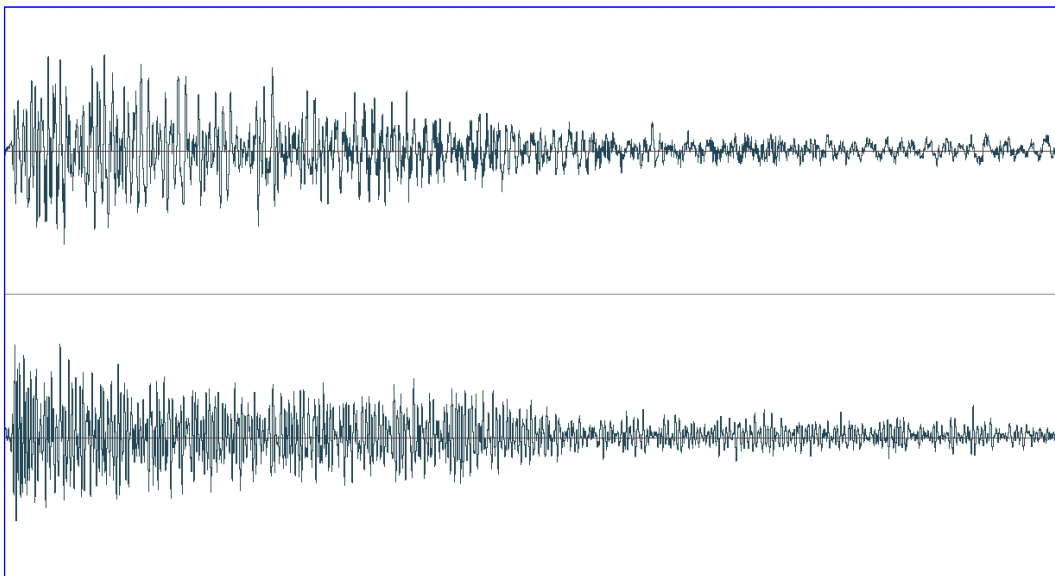


Fig. 1

transcript of the Court documents at p.15 with the source attributed to Police Negotiator, Sgt Terry McCarthy. At the bottom we see the sound wave signature of the first shot from the Wilkinson tape *outside* the Broad arrow Café. Please note and compare the duration, the modulation, and the frequency pattern of both sound waves. You will note the difference in the two sound wave patterns, although duration and peak modulations are very similar, with only pattern of frequency slightly different, just as I suspected the report should show.



Type 56 SKS Carbine (Chinese)

In Fig. 2 we see the initial or "attack" sections only, of both sound wave form signatures along with the Sound Technician's analysis of the comparisons of the two sound wave forms as follows:-

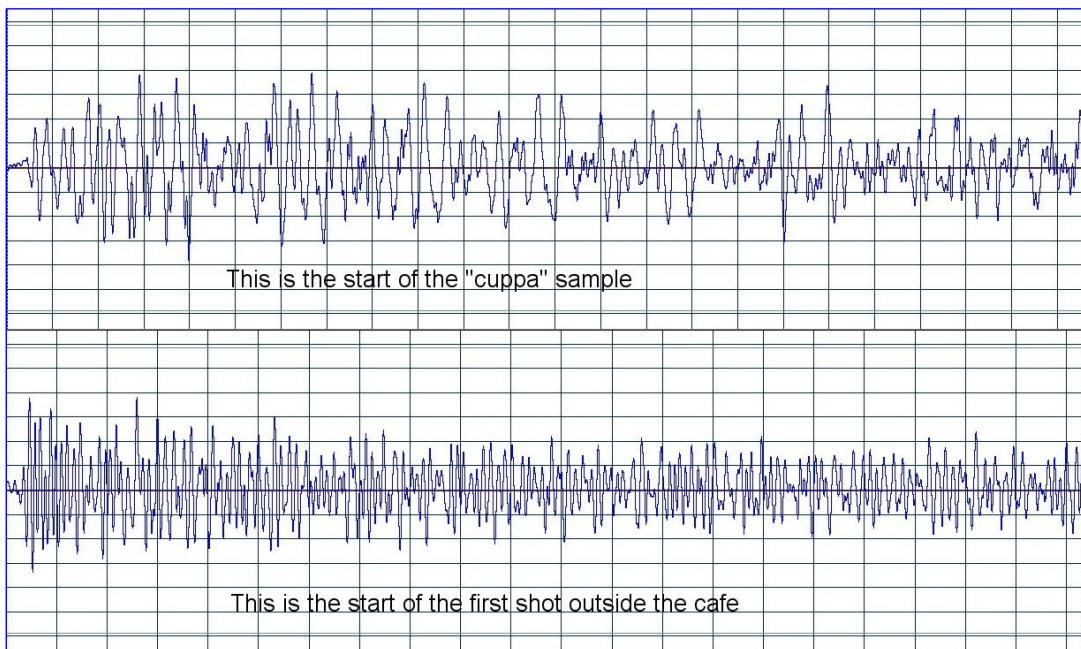


Fig. 2

"These are the 'attack' sections or beginning of each waveform, one is extremely sharp (café) and the other is soft or blunt ('cuppa' [file]). They were not created by similar density or velocity sources."

I believe here we have an independent expert's evaluation which confirms that the "cough" is indeed a gunshot, and I contend this gunshot or 'control sound' was produced by the Colt AR15 ·223Rem Rifle, or like calibre.

In the case of the Colt AR15 ·223Rem rifle, with its comparatively small bore to case capacity and relatively faster burning powder, higher chamber pressure, higher velocity, and lighter projectile produces a sharp "crack" as the projectile and vented propellant gas leaves the muzzle, far in excess of the speed of sound as is evident when any such high velocity/small-bore firearm is discharged in an unrestricted environment and is heard by bystanders in close proximity.



1967 Colt AR15 A-1 SP-1 .223Rem rifle

While in the case of a 7·62x39 calibre Type 56 SKS (or SKK) carbine discharge; it's my qualified opinion this is the source of the gunshot recorded on the "cuppa" file and in this instance the firearm would have been discharged inside the cottage. This calibre burns a comparatively slower powder which produces a lower (45,000psi) working pressure propelling a heavier 122gr bullet at a slower even modest velocity of 2,410fps through its significantly larger bore size (larger by some 37·5 per cent). Collectively these factors produce a slower velocity sound wave, hence its distinctive duller "thud" rather than the "crack" and sharp curve produced by the 223Rem from the [AR15 a-1 rifle](#).

So in reference to a single shot taken from the Wilkinson tape, our sound expert concludes that:

"These repetitive sequences are of a high frequency thus suggesting a high velocity and/or a high density source. A normalisation of this waveform to the above ["cuppa" file] sample (as has been done) also indicates a much higher SPL of the source (Sound Pressure Level) showing it was louder too.

"The interspersation of erroneous frequencies [originating from Jamie's voice] within the "cuppa" [file] sample in no way detract from the fundamental harmonics of the source. Basically speaking, the voice component does not interfere with the basic source of the sound." He continues, "This ["cuppa"] wave form is of a lower frequency which indicates it was created by a lower density source. This wave form after normalisation shows a lower or softer SPL at creation (not so loud). The falloff of the fundamental frequency shows this factor." End of report.

Please remember, it is my belief that the mystery gunman (Rick or Mick) who discharged the gun shot released inadvertently to the public via the media and submitted for test and evaluation, would have discharged the firearm in a room a short distance away from "Jamie", almost surely above, and as the Fogarty Statement suggests, also with the muzzle at least pointing towards but more than likely protruding from a window opening, which has the effect of slowing down the velocity or deflecting high velocity air returning past the shooter from the muzzle, which in effect dulls the sound wave modulation or volume, significantly. This is the physics principle upon which firearm noise suppression devices are based.

In conclusion of the sound wave form tests, it seems an irony, that because of the firearms prohibition and destruction called a "buy-back" scheme which resulted from this shooting massacre, we are unable to replicate these tests privately so as to witness yet for a second time our findings. For us to conduct such a test privately would involve travel to America where an American could supply the firearm and carry out the discharge; what odds Rebecca Peters or even John Howard would be most reluctant to assist in such an endeavour, even in the cause of truth...



**Comparisons L-R:
30M1-A carbine,
7.62x39 Russian,
.223 Remington**

End Notes

¹ Dutton, *APJ*, Dec98, p.215.

² McCreadie, EMA Report, p.9

Seascape siege - where FIRE was the Criminal's "eraser"

Chapter 23

*"The hand that kindles cannot quench the flame,"
lest the persons are exposed for what they are...
- with apologies to Byron.*

Arson in 2003 cost Australians a staggering A\$1,350m. Though to arrive at the real cost to the nation's people, it would surely be closer to the truth if a significant portion of the A\$5,880m cost designated as "fraud" in crime, was factored-in, wouldn't it? ¹

Undoubtedly fire has for so long been a tool of criminals to erase evidence of their presence at the scene of their crime or even to implement the actual crime ... and so it was at [Seascape](#). As DNA has become the forensic examiner's 'flavour of the moment', so the criminal now uses fire as his tool to neutralise this advance in fighting crime.

It seems an irony that no one knows this better than Tasmania Police officers themselves as Supt Barry Bennett writes:



The Burnt-out BMW

"Once upon a time, a group of youths would steal a [car](#) and take it for a joyride, then abandon it without doing too much damage. Today, they take it for a joyride and then set it on fire to destroy any evidence." ²

In considering arson linked to crimes committed by "sheltered" criminals as it applies in Tasmania, I can state my inquiries indicate the method is popular; a number almost exhibit a signature in the crimes I've looked into where certain people of interest crop up from time to time in such cases.



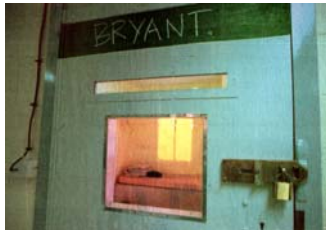
1230 hrs: Seascape ruins smoulder at left, while deep wheel-tracks lead to the burnt-out BMW wreck to right middle distance. The throw-down FN FAL rifle lays there quietly in the gutter of the porch roof, nearest to the camera - still undiscovered.

But at Seascapes, the prosecution pointed the finger of accusation at intellectually impaired Martin Bryant acting alone. The list of his charges in this country set a precedence:

- 35 counts *murder*,
- 20 counts *attempted murder*,
- 3 counts *inflicting grievous bodily harm*,
- 8 counts *inflicting wounds*,
- 4 counts *aggravated assault*,

To which the DPP Damien Bugg QC, added two more serious charges, the criminal acts involving the BMW and Seascapes Cottage itself:

- 1 count of *unlawfully setting fire to property, namely a motor vehicle*, and
- 1 count of *arson of a building known as "Seascapes"*.



Risdon Prison:

Martin Bryant's isolation cell in
the Prison's hospital.

After 17 visits to Martin's Risdon [isolation cell](#) by the convincing, benevolent legal counsel Mr. Avery, it is quite understandable that Martin with his intellect in the lowest 2 percent of the population yielded to psychiatric influences; Mr Avery conducted nothing more than 'progress-report' interviews in my opinion and so he went along with Avery and entered a "plea" of "Guilty". It followed automatically that no trial as such was required and Martin Bryant was convicted of all those monstrous charges with Damien Bugg QC and his assistant Perks Prosecuting and at the conclusion His Honour the Chief Justice Mr William Cox pronouncing sentence. To an ignorant public all was well - never

mind the volumes of flawed evidence employed; the fall-guy was incarcerated for the term of his natural life - no parole - and the "justice system" hacks had pleased their establishment peers. But hang on, witnesses had stated the accused had bought a (butane) cigarette lighter and he did admit to police that at Clare Street he actually had stored up firelighters "to light a fire" - of course... and "several" containers of petrol were found in the Volvo. So the accused must be guilty of burning the BMW and Seascapes cottage!

WRONG!

First and foremost Martin Bryant never ever confessed to any one of the 32 shooting murders, nor the murder of the Martins either in spite of media hyperbole to the contrary; except by way of a taped interview conducted by his lawyer John W Avery on 3rd and 11th October, 1996 and somehow published - in spite of them surely being subject to client/lawyer privilege - by *The Bulletin* on 4 May 2006.

Though I ask of you to consider this question:

"Does Mr Damian Bugg QC, the former Chief Magistrate and now Governor of Tasmania, William Cox and Mr Ray Groom expected the public to accept the absurd proposition that some how 165 days after the event, Martin Bryant was somehow supposed to improve upon his contemporaneous recollections of the event?"

The supposed confessions of Martin Bryant as contained in the alleged transcript of the audio taped 'Avery interviews' are so at odds with what actually occurred in the course of the whole of the massacre incident, Bryant's "admissions" would have in actuality damaged considerably the prosecution's case had they by some twist been admitted into evidence and tested before the Court.

Although it took 'hours of talking over 14 or 15 visits' by Mr. Avery to convince Martin Bryant to enter a plea of "Guilty", importantly the plea does not equate to a confession of guilt! With regard to the BMW, he expressed only in the vaguest possible terms a notion of holding up a male driver "Rick" in a BMW and politely telling the driver he wanted to take his car. When one unravels just who Rick or Mick is, then it becomes very clear the notion had

been implanted into Martin's mind, and was in fact fantasy masticated with facts and real people. It was as if EVERY STATEMENT Bryant recounted willingly to police about the BMW had been *put into his head* - and his recall of those recollections was so garbled as to be even to an unbiased or independent reader quite unconvincing as to any actual involvement. Nothing I have read convinces me that any of his recounts of the events approaches anything required by a jury verdict of being guilty 'beyond reasonable doubt'.

The Burning of the BMW

According to Martin's tale, there was a man "Rick", his wife and a small child in a BMW, and even although we are denied portions of the taped transcript the odour of concealment is evident; a weird vagueness cannot be concealed. It was to such an extent that the two Detective Inspectors could not hide their incredulity. Martin was vague by design, but *he was not* the architect of that vagueness. He agonised and searched for words that would make the pieces he blurted out all sound conceivable.



Critical forensic evidence destroyed: courtesy of an SOG. Early media reports suggest 'a hostage was burnt in the boot'; is this why the coroner's team took 23½ hrs to locate the 3rd body?

Martin tells his interrogators firstly that he hijacked the BMW at the corner of Palmers Lookout Road - which to his interrogators must have seemed at least believable, the accused having told them he'd visited Roger Lerner's place. But then to affect the hold-up and hijack Martin says he politely, *"asked them to get out of the car... [and] ... I put him in the boot because I had a gun."*

Okay, but what did the Crown's ruthless "killer" do with the female and child? Well Martin explained, *"I got, then his wife or girlfriend got into the Volvo with the child and I left, I drove off."* Remember this is the alleged killer whose murder and mayhem you have been reading of throughout this narrative; a killer who minutes before had cold-bloodedly gunned down a mother and her two small daughters on Jetty Road! This is the killer who shot two females in the [BMW](#) and dragged their bleeding bodies out of the car and then dumped them like garbage onto the roadway! This is the killer who told one of his victims, *'No one*

gets away from me'. Surely you must agree there's an inconsistency here.³

Astounded by Bryant's bizarre tale, Warren revisits the hijack:

Q. Can you remember what you said ahh, [to] this fellow?

A. Hey mate, can you get out of your car please, I'm gonna take your car. ⁴

Well, I guess - if you ask a silly question... Obviously Martin had not a clue as to what the reality of the BMW story was. After all how could he, if he wasn't there? Martin couldn't stick to the script, because the "playwright" was removed from the scene, and obviously had been poorly briefed on the finer details of exactly the sequence, and reality of what the gunman had been witnessed doing, hence their "performer" could not be convincing!

For Det Inspectors Warren and Paine, their confusion was certainly not to abate, when Martin without a pause, changed the hijack location from Palmers Lookout Road, to Fortescue Bay Road intersection - 8km away, and 3 km north of Seascope! Remember when the gunman returned to Seascope from the Tollbooth with Glen Pears in the boot, he stopped for some minutes at the entrance to Seascope.

After studying carefully all of the transcripts available, it is my firm opinion that from out of the questions from police and without their realisation, it is as if there were key-words triggering the fantasies implanted in the 13-year-old fantasy-like mind-set. For example: The word "drive" could fit this proposition, so note what happens when Det Insp Paine asked Martin:

Q. And where did you drive to then?

A. I drove full speed, it was about, I was going about 140 Ks up the road and went into Seascap. Just drove down there in the BMW.

WARREN

Q. Where, can you remember where you drove when you went into Seascap?

A. I remember skidding on some grass and, I had a heap of petrol, had some petrol with me, I put some petrol in the BMW. ⁵

The gunman had no time to spare in a very tight schedule to have driven the BMW north to the Fortescue Bay Road, and "rally" back to Seascap - even at "140Ks". I reiterate he simply did not have that time to spare. Also we know the driver of the BMW did not have "a heap of petrol" with him - two cans of petrol were left in Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo back at the Tollbooth! Forgotten? I really cannot speculate. But let us look a little closer at the 'several cans of petrol' supposedly left in the Volvo.

At page 160 of the Court Document, Mr Perks elaborates on what is claimed to have been recovered by crime scene investigating police for the Volvo abandoned on the western side of the carriageway on the pedestrian crossing at the northern extent of the Tollbooth traffic control lanes. Perks states that two petrol containers were recovered from the Volvo; a "...twenty five litre gasoline container containing twenty litres together with a second ten litre drum containing seven litres of petrol..." Perks goes on to explain that "Photograph 140 shows the smaller container of petrol in the rear seat," while "[photograph] 156 shows the front passenger's seat of the Volvo and the large container of petrol ...etc"

Now here a problem emerges. From the witness statements of three persons who arrived at the Tollbooth in a red Ford Corsair sedan, we can tell you that two persons had willingly and without duress or threat of arms entered the Volvo sedan driven by the gunman: Mrs Helene Salzmann had entered and sat for some time in the front passenger seat, while her husband Robert had entered and sat in the rear passenger compartment behind the gunman. I can also tell you from the same witness statements I can confirm that after Robert Salzmann alighted from the right rear passenger seat of the Volvo, the gunman retrieved two firearms from the left hand side of the same rear passenger compartment, where Mr Perks claims a 'ten litre drum' of petrol was sitting, and returning by the rear of the vehicle the gunman shot Robert Salzmann in the chest killing him instantly.

But while this took place, all the while, Mrs Helene Salzmann supposedly sat in the front passenger seat, somehow sharing the compartment with a '25lt gasoline container' and "**one of the packets of Little Lucifer fire starters and another part partly obscured underneath the glovebox area.**" Can you see the problems Mr Perks' statement of facts have created for the prosecution here? To consider my conclusions as to the bizarre behaviour of the Salzmann couple and their two companions, Rosemary Nixon and Russell "Jim" Pollard who still occupied the 'gold coloured BMW', you can find my detailed explanation at Chapter 20, titled "He's Out".

So if the gunman left behind the 27 litres of gasoline allegedly contained in two receptacles in the passengers' compartments of the Volvo sedan abandoned at the Tollbooth, as well as the packets of Little Lucifer firelighters, how did Martin as he claimed, splash 'heaps of this petrol' he brought with him for the purpose around the interior the BMW at Seascap and burn it? Like Martin drinking coffee at Forcett Shell, the prosecution yet again would have us believe the petrol could also be in two places at the one time - and then even survive the fire intact!

Then there was Det Insp Warren asking Martin to recall Warren visiting Martin in Royal Hobart Hospital's (RHH) ICU burns unit:

WARREN

Q. Do you, you've already said that you remembered me going to see you at the hospital?

A. Ohh yes. Mmm.
 Q. And that I told you that you were being charged with ...
 A. A murder count.
 Q. A murder.
 A. Yeah.
 Q. What recollection have you got of that?
 A. Must've been the hostage, the bloke in the BMW must've died.
 Q. That's what you think it is is it?
 A. Mmm.

Remember Martin had right from the outset denied emphatically having been onto the Historic Site on the 28th of April or having shot anyone that day. It is illogical to expect the name Kate Scott - the victim whose murder he had first been charged with - should have been retained by the intellectually impaired mind of Martin Bryant as a murder victim if he could with a clear conscience state over and over, 'I killed no one'.

Perhaps I should ensure the reader can consider the first exchange between Det. Insp. Warren and Martin Bryant referred to above which is on the record at pages 43 and 44 of the PROI that were incidentally concealed from the public and the Court Record - censored. You may be excused after considering this extract below; why on earth would Warren foolishly revisit the subject as is quoted above. For that earlier exchange in part went like this:

WARREN

Q. You remembered that, you remembered me talking with you at the hospital okay?

A. Yes.

Continuing shortly Warren asks:

Q. If you understand

A. Mmm. Was that, you, I think I saw you upstairs too. You came up with a man with a moustache in a suit and I said how are you and he turned around and he said, I'm not talking to you and I thought well what have I done and he said I'm just not talking to you.

Q. Well it wasn't me.

A. No it wasn't, it was another man, you, you were with him. You had a jacket on, a yellow suit. Have you got a yellow jacket?

Q. No. No, think it was someone else.

A. It was definitely you 'cos you had a badge on and the other man had a badge on too.

Q. No, no, I don't, I didn't have a uniform on in, then.

A. No, you didn't have a uniform on, just a suit, but it doesn't matter.

At this point Warren obviously decided to discreetly change tack immediately as he was only getting further into murky waters; this fact is confirmed by the sensor's scissors! So who indeed was the suited male sporting a similar police badge to that of Det Insp Warren, and who Bryant has here identified as having a moustache? He was adamant Warren had visited him displaying a police badge and apparently attired in a rather distinctive "yellow jacket".

But continuing, Warren presses for Martin's recollection of the name of Kate Scott, asking if that name now did "register" with him, Bryant answers:

"No. I mean I let the lady go into the Volvo, I didn't hurt her or anything. No I don't register, it doesn't register."

But as if acting out a script, as his recount of events unfolded, he suddenly was confronted by the realization the hostage *"...must've been trapped in the boot, the hostage."* Further on in his chronicle he volunteered, *"I don't know whether I lit the car up or not but there was an explosion. ... I don't recall [where I tipped the petrol?] because it was a vast explosion and I had my gun strapped around me. ... the AR15 there."*

So if we believe the Crown's case, then it all seems quite bizarre that anyone would accept that Martin Bryant should willingly admit to having hijacked a car he knew to be a "gold BMW", the occupants of which he thought wrongly to be a man, women and a child, then repeat the implausible conversation like; "Hey mate, can you get out please, 'cos I'm gonna take your car." Then for him to mix up the place where all this occurred? Locations and events which fail to latch-in with a plausible story and with the hostage locked in the boot, to then casually drive into Seascapes to take a Devonshire tea! Come on now...really...

After considering all the other evidence and upon re-reading that which surrounds this segment alone I found it inescapable not to conclude that a significant volume of the evidence when considered indicates heavy psychiatric involvement with the accused well before, during and after the fact, for what are now undeniable and convincing motives. Martin Bryant was subjected to no less than eight psychiatrists and a psychologist, up until his sentencing hearing; that is a deal of psychiatric attention in anyone's estimation. Dr Ian Sale gave closer attention to Martin during the siege and after his arrest and through his remand than one sees provided by a 'personal physician' to the Royals. Keeping these facts in mind let us return to the burning of the BMW...

From the Court Documents and in particular the PROI with Martin Bryant we find this reference to the burning of the BMW at p.244:

WARREN

Q. What do you mean, you must've played around with the petrol?

A. Set fire to the, to the car.

Q. Can you remember doing that? You say you must.

A. No I can't. Vaguely. Vaguely remember a flash and I must've been in the car when it went up 'cos I got burnt so. Mmm. Someone's whistling.

PAINE

Q. And you said to us earlier that you think that the hostage at that stage must've been in the car, that's, is that correct or?

A. In the boot.

Q. Must've still been in the boot?

A. Yes.

Q. Yeah.

A. Mmm.

As the effect of the barrage of accusations of wrongdoing sank in, without so much as counsel by his side, he was convinced by what had tumbled out of his mouth, like — *poured forth from a vessel* as it were, that he'd actually hijacked the car, but he still refused to concede any killing or injury of people other than "the man in the boot". Not unlike the volunteer on stage at some second-rate hypnotist show; but then it is evident some despair set in, when Det. Insp. Warren asks Martin how he felt about the man burnt to death in the boot of the BMW. Martin responds in his simplistic honesty: *"Pretty awful. Mmm."* ⁶

Several prominent in the railroading of Martin Bryant at every opportunity repeated a claim that Martin at no time showed remorse — here not only does exhibit simple remorse, but he expresses remorse for an act that police knew he did not commit! Police knew one of their

colleagues burnt the BMW and while ever they can convince Bryant to admit to burning the car, then it was helpful for their ego that he feel remorse for burning Pears to death in the boot. So again: "Did Glen Pears burn to death in the boot of the BMW?"

But what of this line of police questioning, there had to be a motive for it - a motive that could be summed up perhaps by echoing Martin's own realization of this awful act; a '*pretty awful* [motive]. Hmm'.

Martin Bryant's recollection of the 28th and 29th April 1996, from when he departed Clare Street until he was put into the ambulance at Seascapes was but a fragmented reality, mixed with extended periods of a total blanks, undispersed with snippets of surreal fantasies. But as I have stated, Martin demonstrated he had a surprisingly good memory as to many small incidents. As well, when in conversation concerning his past movements and his life in general and bearing in mind Martin's intellectual disability, he exhibited a pleasant disposition and a willingness to respond candidly to the Police questioning, even if showing a child-like naivety.



The DPP's "fuel-air bomb igniter":

WARNING! Personal use of this butane lighter to ignite a 'fuel-air explosive device' exposes the user to a health risk & a possible life-changing experience.

But the potency of fire upon people's psyche was always to be part of this evil brew that was Port Arthur for the survivors, the accused and public at large; remember only an oversight on the part of the planners when a ferry schedule changed to its winter timetable that weekend, otherwise the MV Bundeena would have been burnt to the waterline with a full compliment of visitors, staff and crew, subject to fire, gunshots and drowning!

So now we should consider all that surrounds the burning of the BMW. The vehicle hijacked at the Tollbooth was a tan or gold coloured 1980 model BMW 733i sedan, registered in the name Mr & Mrs Nixon carrying Tasmania plates of reg. DI-5858. Mr Nixon had purchased the car second-hand in 1991, while visiting Bermagui in NSW and it was owned jointly by Sidney Kenneth Nixon and his wife Mary Rose. On that Sunday, it had been loaned to their friends Robert and Helene Salzman who were accompanied by their friend Jim Pollard so they could visit Port Arthur; Mary Rose had accompanied them. When purchased the BMW was *as new*, and valued in 1996 at \$18,000. The Mr Nixon had maintained the vehicle meticulously.

The DPP does not inform the Court as to why the gunman abandoned Martin Bryant's yellow 1979 Volvo 240 GL sedan, reg. CG - 2835, near the Tollbooth on Jetty Rd.

The Volvo sustained bullet damage, but I can find no attempt by the DPP to explain to the Court how this occurred - little wonder when one reads the account as graphically described by witnesses at the time of the shooting of Robert and Helene Salzman, Jim Pollard and Rosemary Nixon! It is a segment in the massacre the prosecution has avoided like the plague.

There were in fact two windows evidencing bullet damage in the yellow Volvo abandoned at the tollbooth; the rear left-hand passenger side window and the quarter-window in the same door. I have explained this incident you may remember in the earlier Chapter 21, "He's Out".

Curiously though, there is no record either of Police ever questioning Martin as to why the Volvo was abandoned at the Tollbooth. Perhaps like the trail Martin laid with strange purchases along the way to Port Arthur that morning, the Volvo seems only to have played out a role, scripted to be recovered there like a prop in a stage play, so as to offer up its cargo of evidence. Here I'm of the opinion the Court document exposes a significant deception of what the Volvo was *supposed to have* surrendered up as evidence. Mr Perks for the DPP explains the

sequence of photographic evidence for his Honour, Justice Cox at page 160 of the Court Document transcript thus:

- Photograph 140 shows the smaller container of petrol in the rear seat.
- 150 shows the Daewoo shotgun in the boot of the car, together with one of the magazines.
- Photograph 151 is another view of the boot of the car which shows a home made target made of cardboard.
- 156 shows the front passenger's seat of the Volvo and the large container of petrol and alongside that, your Honour will see one of the packets of Little Lucifer fire starters and another part partly obscured underneath the glovebox area.
- Photograph 157 shows a loaded magazine in the glovebox.

At this point I would suggest the photographing of empirical evidence contained in the Volvo, as it was left abandoned by the gunman beside the tollbooth, ceased. You see if you check the Court Transcript document, immediately prior to the above believably sequential photographs, Mr Perks generalises as to what was left in the Volvo, telling the Court these items included, the previously mentioned Daewoo shotgun (p.158) and "...two [magazines](#) for the .308 FN rifle, one empty and one containing seventeen live rounds," (p.159), "One magazine for the colt AR15 rifle containing twelve live rounds and a cardboard box containing four hundred and thirty nine, point three o eight calibre cartridges." But where is the evidence of those FN FAL magazines?



AR-10x20 shot
magazine

Now as you can see Mr Perks has deliberately got a little ahead of himself for no other reason in my humble opinion, but to confuse; he was ahead of the photographic evidence you see, for following Photograph 157, Mr Perks lists these photographs:

- "736 is another view of the boot after the car had been removed to Police Headquarters. This time the magazine from the shotgun had been removed.
- "740 and 741 show the target that was removed from the boot. This target contained three bullet holes" [but importantly no supportive ballistic evidence in the form of a calibre determination is included - author]
- "742 is another view of the petrol container in the rear of the car. Alongside that is a cardboard box."

Page 161:

- "743 shows the contents of the cardboard box, as I've indicated, 439 live three O eight rounds.
- "751 shows three packets of Little Lucifer fire starters after the removal of the petrol container."

Page 162

- "755 shows the grey camera bag, 756 the contents of that bag including the six 'Seascape' keys and 757 a closer view of those keys.

Between photographs number 157 and 736 there are some 579 photographs; a considerable an inexplicable break in the sequence. Mr Perks even admits to this later sequence of some 7 reasonably sequential photographs being only captured, 'after the [Volvo] car had been removed to Police Headquarters'. If this admission had been made in a trial before a jury, it would have drawn a strident objection from the defence lawyer that I believe would ordinarily have been upheld by the Bench. The mind boggles as to what police were able to do to patch-up the prosecution case - *back at the ranch*, so to speak. As I have stated elsewhere in my work I believe the box of 439x7.62NATO (308W) rounds alone could well have added as padding, so too the 'six Seascape keys' inside the Volvo.

When studied, you will find like the two sets of S&W handcuffs and as good as any vaudeville magician, Mr Perks has made these items disappear!

As I have demonstrated, the FN FAL was only used as a 'prop', a 'throw-down' and as it was a "G" Series metric FN FAL, I'm very confident in stating police would not have had spare metric magazines, as the common (for Australia) SLR mag was not interchangeable. So the magazines photographed in the Volvo I'm certain were also police 'throw-downs', or 20-shot magazines to suit the Armalite AR-10 7.62 NATO rifle. As mentioned also, since Martin had not been able to recover his AR-10 from Terry Hill like the changed Ferry Schedule this caused those who ran the operation huge problems, which only ever would have been exposed during a trial by jury and an energetic and principled counsel. There is even more evidence these magazines were planted there in the Volvo - after it was abandoned. Let me explain:

At Page 162, Mr Perks then makes this extraordinary statement to His Honour: *"in all eleven .308 calibre fired cartridge cases were subsequently recovered from the vicinity of the tollbooth. All had been discharged in the FN self-loading rifle."* How could this be so? This is conjecture gone mad. I can find not a shred of evidence to suggest Sgt Gerard Dutton was able to provide for the Court with any ballistic or forensic evidence linking the FN FAL recovered from the gutter of the outbuilding at Seascope to any of the spent 7.62NATO (308W) cartridge cases, collected by police crime scene examiners at any of the 5 crime scenes where the DPP allege the FN FAL was discharged.

In essence, Mr Perks' has "verbalised" these two magazines, and he puts them in illogical even improbable locations of the Volvo. Neither was photographed: not in the boot, not in the rear seat compartment, not in the front seat compartment nor in the glove box and they were never physically produced and entered into evidence for the Court. You see the two FN FAL magazines, like the hand cuffs, did not exist!

Martin's passport #H024967 with its ID photo was definitely there when the Volvo was abandoned, because it was used by Const Hessman to have Aileen Kingston ID 'the gunman', even although she'd hardly seen him for more than a moment as Aileen for all the time the gunman was near the Tollbooth, had locked herself in the toilet. Recently though I have learned of two other items that were in the Volvo, but never mentioned in any of the official documentation I have studied:

- Two Historic Site admittance tickets on the dash near a grey wallet."

But now let us return to Seascope and examine more unconvincing, tails of conjecture. Mr. Perks told the Court, that *"after securing Mr. Pears inside the house it is the Crown case that Bryant returned to the BMW, splashed petrol liberally over the interior of the vehicle and set it alight."*

Mr Perks' statement demonstrates a total ignorance on his part regarding the outcome should a person attempt to ignite a motorcar with a disposable gas cigarette lighter, when its interior has been "liberally splashed with petrol"! You can't throw a gas lighter into the car. For Martin Bryant to have lit the BMW with his gas lighter he would not have come out of Seascope badly burnt, he would have come out burnt to a crisp, long blonde hair burnt-off right back past his ears and no eyebrows whatsoever remaining! If indeed he survived...

My inquiries among those professionals who recover burnt-out wrecks suggest that for very logical reasons the accelerants of choice in such criminal endeavours are almost always diesel or turps, but never petrol. But even so, how could Mr. Perks state this scenario as "fact"? I reiterate that Ian Matterson cited "several petrol containers" - presumably with their contents intact - still sitting there quietly, one in the front passenger compartment and the other in the rear compartment of the Volvo abandoned 4.2km away near the Tollbooth on Jetty Rd! Is the Prosecution suggesting *someone* returned them to the tollbooth refilled?

** This claim has come to light recently from a PAHSMA staff member working at the tollbooth on the day.

The Prosecution was at all times comfortable conjecturing as to what occurred regarding much that supports the Crown's Case, including the purchase of the cigarette lighter, containers of petrol being used as an accelerant in the BMW fire, but somehow the petrol remained in safe storage in the Volvo 4.2 km away. I would love to ask Mr Perks, *"Are you suggesting that with petrol liberally splashed about in the car's interior, Martin could have flicked his butane cigarette lighter and ignited what was then in reality a fuel-air bomb?"*

Remember a throw-away butane lighter's flame extinguishes the instant the thumb is removed from the trigger; I reiterate, it could not be thrown alight, into the car. No mention is made of Mr Matterson and his investigators recovering any fuel containers or the remains of Martin's cigarette lighter from the burnt-out BMW or indeed the Seascope environs either. So let's now look at the alleged explosion in the BMW.



S&W Mod.100 handcuffs (c.1967):

One thing is for certain - Damian Bugg QC & Mr Perks never saw empirical evidence which proved the existence of 2 sets of S&W handcuffs burnt in the Seascope fire. NEVER!

I believe that in a state of induced distorted memory recall, Martin in a vague, disjointed fashion retells his farcical tale: The fact of him just once arriving at Seascope on the 28 April was factual. He did only arrive there once, and there was no answer at the front or back door when he knocked first. At this point though his memory takes a fast-forward trip, for as he knocked on the door "around the back" of Seascope there was a "flash" he believed was a "vast explosion" of the BMW! Now there are some glaring errors which obviously convinced the DPP and Mr. Perks in particular that conjecture was their only hope. Let us see how conjecture and deception tie Mr Perks into knots!

"Once inside, using the two sets of handcuffs he had brought with him, he handcuffed Mr. Pears' wrists behind his back. The second pair of handcuffs was linked to the handcuff on the left wrist with the free cuff being closed and secured around some immovable object within the house." ⁷

So what is Mr Perks suggesting here? Is he saying the hostage was removed from the BMW's boot and taken inside Seascope Cottage, then for the first time handcuffed and immobilised, with Martin Bryant having gone back outside, moved the BMW to the grassy patch, somehow located a container of petrol (never produced by the prosecution), splashed the contents about the interior of the car, flicked his butane lighter, ignited the fuel-air bomb, then returned approximately fifty metres to the back door of Seascope, knocked loudly on the door so as to be let in by a Glenn Pears (supposedly handcuffed and "secured around some immovable object within the house") and all at the same instance that the car exploded?

1. This hypothesis is nothing less than childish nonsense! Sadly the Chief Justice His Honour William Cox (now the governor of Tasmania) accepted it as fact! Primed in such a fashion the explosion would have occurred at the time of ignition, not minutes later when Martin reached the cottage door. While Martin Bryant certainly did not have a defective memory, try as he might to sound convincing to his interrogators, Martin Bryant is quite unclear and confused as to the sequence of this segment of events.
2. If the gunman ever had removed Glen Pears from the boot of the BMW to be secured inside the cottage as is suggested by Mr Perks, before the BMW was shifted to the grass, primed liberally with petrol and ignited, why was Martin knocking on any door? Who had in the intervening minutes locked the door? Who did Martin expect to open the door for him - Glen Pears double handcuffed to an immovable object? The DPP's Case gets sillier by the minute! But I guess "Rick" or "Mick" the covert controller could well have been on hand to open the door for Martin.

But remember at one stage in his confused mind Martin Bryant even reasoned to police that - *"I must've been in the car when it went up 'cos I got burnt..."* - further exposing the complete unreliability of the accused Martin Bryant's contemporaneous evidence. Sgt Terry McCarthy's suggestion of Martin Bryant 'playing out a role' seems close to the mark. But before we go too far let me make a firm concluding statement about the alleged two sets of S&W handcuffs.

In the body of the court transcript, the alleged two sets of S&W handcuffs are mentioned about 16 times; 9 times in the body of the transcript twice in the PROI with Martin Bryant and five time in various references to reports and such.

First let us see what Martin Bryant has to say about these handcuffs. At page 73 of the court transcript Insp Paine asks Martin Bryant:

Q. Ohh. When, the hostage, did you, did he just get in or did you handcuff him or anything like that?

A. Umm, handcuffed him or anything, no. Ahh, what was that?

Q. Well do you own any handcuffs?

A. No, never, never owned handcuffs in my life.

In her statement provided to police on 4 June 1996 Petra Willmott stated, *"I have never seen handcuffs at Martin's house."*

Now, the DPP went to some lengths to introduce "handcuffs" into the case against Martin Bryant in their rhetoric. The police who interrogated Bryant as I mentioned also attempted to introduce handcuffs into the prosecution's case against Martin Bryant. But do you know, I don't believe that handcuffs have ever been established as experiential evidence in the case. Let me be clear on this point: **Handcuffs were never entered into evidence by the DPP in the case of the Crown v Martin Bryant.** How can I be so sure of my claim here? Simple really, not one photograph captured by forensic crime scene examiners was ever entered into evidence demonstrating they existed, nor was a single set of S&W handcuffs physically entered into evidence by the prosecution.

The two pairs of S&W handcuffs simply never did exist!

Now let us return to the alleged torching by Martin Bryant of the BMW car. Picture if you will, Martin Bryant suffering "Category 1 burns," from the fuel-air explosion at the BMW, returning into the Seascope Cottage, and tearing about the cottage and onto its out-building's roof, firing off 250 gunshots through the night, throwing furniture from the upper floor windows, never once complaining of the pain during his conversations with Sgt Terry McCarthy, but remaining there inside Seascope untreated for 16hrs and 46 minutes until Ambulance officers administered First Aid after he was arrested at 0840hrs next morning? Such a proposition is also nothing more than humbug.

Mr. Perks was forced to admit Martin Bryant's account of the BMW hijack and kidnap of Glen Pears, "was at total variance to the facts as we know them to be." It most certainly was at odds with the facts, but no more so than the Prosecution's synopsis! No, Mr. Perks never did tell us what those facts were, and I'm firmly of the opinion, he could not sustain his version of events, if witnesses who's statements he used to make the Prosecution's case were ever subjected to cross examination under oath.⁸

No where in the PROI did Martin Bryant recount the hijack of the BMW, its burning, and kidnap of the hostage Glen Pears, that a jury would accept as believable. The transcript repeatedly demonstrates a willingness on the part of the accused to co-operate, but nothing I have read in the psychiatric report written by Professor P. E. Mullen, is suggestive of Bryant suffering a failing memory. However this was the end result - his recount of this event just could not have occurred in the manner presented to the court.

Mr Perks alone claims that, *"...Bryant got out of the vehicle, removed Mr. Pears from the boot, and took him inside the main Seascope cottage...."*⁹

Another sober consideration must be examined here:

Was the hostage in fact ever removed from the boot of the BMW, before it was burned? Why was the wreck removed from the scene with such indecent haste? Why did it take the coroner's team so long to locate the third body? Why did the coroner not report the exact location at which the third body was found?

You see, the Coroner Mr. Matterson had control of all the crimes scenes until at 0840 hrs on Monday 29th April, when he was informed that Martin Bryant had been taken into custody, at which time he informed Insp Warren that his role as Coroner was now 'secondary'.

So let's examine a person who figured prominently at both of Seascope's fire scenes. Sergeant Andrew Mark Fogarty was a Team Leader with Tasmania Police SOG unit at that time, and he states he was "shift supervisor" on 28 April at Bellerive Police Station, on the north side of the Derwent River at Hobart.

Although the EMA report states the first SOG members were "proceeding" at 1557hrs, dispatched by Bell "Jet Ranger" to Taranna and once there briefed by Supt Barry Bennett - some 2 hours and twenty minutes after Mrs. Scurr's call was logged by Police, Mr Fogarty beat them all to Seascope.

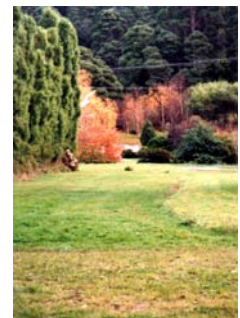
As is covered earlier, Sgt Andrew M. Fogarty offered a quite unconvincing account of his arrival at Paul Hyland's road block at the northern boundary of Seascope's property, at which time the car had been burning for some minutes at least.

Did the SOG Sergeant pre-empt the gunman's program, or did he have other police business on the Peninsula? You may come to accept the latter.

The BMW was moved off the pavers at the Cottage south past the outbuilding under construction and onto a grass covered, sodden area to the south of the outbuilding that stands also to the south of the main cottage. It is pure conjecture on the part of the prosecution to say Martin Bryant did even this much! A photograph of the burnt out car, shows the very deep wheel-tracks that cross the deep gutter and show clearly just how the car was stuck fast in the waterlogged ground there.

The conspirators at Seascope had 36 minutes to get the car well alight, before the two Uniform Police arrived, outside the entrance at about **1458 hrs** (2.58 pm), thus the perpetrator was concealed. So why didn't Det Insps Warren and Paine ask Martin Bryant: **Why did you burn the BMW?**

Consider: if Martin Bryant never drove the BMW, just as Barry Bennett suggested is his experience these days, would it not have been imperative that the perpetrators of this violent incident ensured no unhelpful forensic evidence was left behind in the BMW and so like the Video camera it should disappear from the evidence pool? But intellectually impaired Martin Bryant was not capable of such criminal cunning! The cottage itself would have proved a minefield for the DPP, had it been left standing so as forensic examiners could have combed an intact cottage at their pleasure. Did police press Martin for a reason as to why he allegedly burnt the cottage? I cannot find the



In the Seascope yard, looking west: At LH foreground, sodden area were the BMW was bogged & burned a quagmire even in the dry.

reference. After all he was adjudged sane, and a sane person would not burn himself out of his "stronghold," would he?



Bogged & burnt-out, the BMW looking SW.
Note: no frames were included on the PTV Tape showing the boot area.

Garry Whittle's debriefing notes show that at the time he first sighted the BMW, it "had smoke coming from it". Unfortunately he doesn't note the colour of this early smoke. I believe it surely would have been a contrasting mixture of white smoke from the ignition device, with darker smoke from the interior fittings that were beginning to combust. He also stated, "...later heard an explosion and could see fire at the rear of the car." At that stage it would have most definitely been mostly black smoke rising from the vehicle.

The 733i BMW, sedan has a metal fuel tank, slung under the rear passenger seat, with the fuel filler located on the drivers side (RH side), just forward of the taillight assembly. After considering the three police statements on the BMW, they are consistent and do I believe suggest



Burnt-out BMW looking west, note wheel track visible in L background

the seat of the fire was forward of the rear compartment. After the fire had consumed the flammable interior fittings, the rubber hoses connecting the long filler-pipe to the fuel tank would have been consumed allowing the flames access to the now heated and heavily vaporising bulk of the fuel in the tank, thus igniting it and causing a secondary, muffled, explosion.



29/04/96: Yellow arrow indicates deep wheel tracks. But the BMW is already gone! Was there evidence of a body having been burnt in the boot?

Garry Whittle terms it an "explosion" - a single event. While Hyland mentions hearing later, "small muffled explosions," rather than a single event. But Paul Hyland does say that when first observed burning, the rear portion of the BMW was alight, and both note the explosion/s occurred later. The event described as an "explosion" surely is

inconsistent to it occurring at the time of ignition of the interior, as would have been the case had it been turned into a fuel-air bomb by first liberally dousing the interior with petrol as Mr Bugg suggested was fact.

The Coroner Ian Matterson left Hobart for Port Arthur at 0500 hrs on the Monday morning and when requested to attend the Seascope Cottage scene at about 1135 hrs he arrived there for the first time, 3 hours after Bryant had been arrested. He spoke to Insp Kemp, tasked to inspect that crime scene. After speaking to Kemp near the still hot ruins, and choosing his words carefully I would suggest, he states he was taken to where the BMW wreck stood, and that while he was aware "a person" had been taken to Seascope in the boot of the vehicle, "there was no body inside the wreckage." Continuing, Matterson states, "At this stage no bodies had been recovered at this site." ¹⁰



Former Coroner: Mr Ian Matterson

Here I would make several observations. Mr Matterson does not indicate the amount of effort he or his officers made, in making their search for the body of Glen Pears. Also he specifically fails to mention in the EMA papers, if the locked boot lid was lifted at this time and if the boot interior was inspected. Remember that the cast alloy of the lock body on the boot-lid would almost surely have melted in this hot fire, and so it would have required a square or large screw-driver-type instrument to be inserted through the lock to trip the latch and open the lid. The lid incidentally would have required being propped open in some appropriate way, as the hold open device would have been made inoperative also by the fire. Doors (other than the

drivers side door, which appears have been left open at time of ignition), may initially have required the use of force to jemmy them open, and surely would have remained open if this had been carried out.

There is another point I would make. For anyone to have approached the burn-out wreck, would have required them to have at least been wearing long rubber boots, as the ground there was a saturated, boggy soak, so wet in fact that it would have seen anyone bog well over ankle deep in mud. This fact is proven by the depth of the wheel tracks, made by the bogged BMW still evident in 2001 and personal observation. The area is subject to a spring that surfaces in that area.

At 1435 hrs (2.35pm) on that Monday, Ian Matterson is again summoned to Seascap, as a "body had been found." Upon arrival Matterson learned that further body had been located, stating, *"I viewed a badly burnt head, torso and legs of one body in the south-west corner of the building and a smaller, but similarly burnt body half-way along the western side of the house."* Importantly the crime scene examiners still had not located the third body.¹¹

Mr Matterson departed the Historic Site around 1700 hrs (5.00pm) on Monday evening, and next morning, Tuesday the 30th of April, he presided of the Magistrates Court in Hobart. After lunch, he again drove to Seascap arriving there around 1450 hrs (2.50pm), to be advised, *"...the third body had been located inside the burnt-out house."*¹²

That was the extent of the Coroner's description as to where the third body was recovered from: just "inside the burn-out house". Why such a general statement? He goes into some detail as to where the other two bodies were found, so why not the third body?

However, Mr Nick Perks is not so cautious. He expressed no doubt as to the circumstances surround the discovery of the three bodies which he states occurred, *"...on the afternoon of the 29th of April a meticulous search of the burnt cottage and surrounding outbuildings was commenced resulting in the location within the ruins of the bodies of Mr. and Mrs. Martin and Mr. Pears."*¹³

Not only has Mr Perks mislead the court as to when the bodies were located, but also the circumstances are entirely at odds with the Coroner Mr Matterson's detailed account contained in the EMA Report! So for the Court, Mr Perks has just evaporated 24 hours and 25 minutes of searching for the third body: so much for his understanding of the adjective "meticulous".

In November 2002, in the Nathan Campus of Griffith University Queensland, the Australian and New Zealand Forensic Science Society Inc., held a presentation featuring a leading forensic investigator into the Port Arthur killings, Sgt Gerard Dutton of the Tasmania Police.

A witness who attended the presentation told me that during the course of that presentation the audience were shown photographs of just two bodies, in situ among the ruins of Seascap. Both bodies exhibited having been subjected to a very hot fire, and appeared reduced to skulls both being visible and the cadaver severely reduced in size and it caused the speaker to remark that DNA 'was not able to be collected' because of the severe state of deterioration of the cadavers. No handcuffs were visible in either photograph, and neither body was identified by the speaker. Why was the third body not shown in this presentation?

This goes a considerable way I would suggest, to explain why Mr Perks again uses such vague terms when he states that:

*"The results of DNA profiling carried out on a blood stain on the knife recovered from the prince bag Bryant left behind at the Broad Arrow Café indicates a high probability that Mr. Martin or Mr. Martin's blood was a contributor to the stain."*¹⁴

What a quaint statement. Exactly what is Mr Perks suggesting here? By what yardstick has Mr Perks measured this evidence, so as to arrive at a conclusion of no more than a "high probability" being exhibited in such a DNA test result? Why does my mind spring to the prosecution's claim of sound-deadening material being blood in the Holden sedan in the Lindy Chamberlain case?

Mr Perks simply chooses for us to trust him, it would appear. His suggestions do not approach to within a country mile of being beyond all reasonable doubt! If, and it's a very BIG IF, the blood found on the knife left inside the Prince sports bag recovered from inside the Broad Arrow Café was even highly "probable" to have been that of Mr Martin's blood or that of Martin Bryant's it goes not further than exemplifying I believe the Prosecution's cavalier attitude at their blurring of the facts. If that allegation is not enough of an insult to the average person's intelligence, Mr. Perks adds insult to injury by suggesting Martin's blood was a "contributor to the stain." That then begs the question, *"As there is no evidence of Martin Bryant exhibiting a wound consistent with having being cut by the hunting knife (part of Exhibit P2), subjected to DNA tests by police, from whom did the blood come Mr Perks suggest as 'contributing to that blood stain?'"*

If the forensic tests for DNA were so inconclusive regarding Martin Bryant alleged 'probability' as a 'contributor' to the stain, how could the prosecution even dare to raise the tests in evidence? Obviously Martin Bryant was not a contributor; otherwise Mr Perks would have delighted in telling us so!

At 0821 hrs, police statements tell us smoke was first seen coming from the Seascapes Cottage, and it is further stated that 15 SOG officers had been assembled for a special assault in no less than 3 specially fitted out vehicles - a claim I find quite unconvincing. However, it was officers from this group who arrested a badly burnt (on the back of his body and arms only) a now naked Martin Bryant, 14 minutes later at 0835 hrs.



Fire: From the Taranna road block, smoke from the Seascapes Cottage inferno can be seen on the skyline in the soft light of morning.



Nothing left to save & too hot: Firemen stand about as police supervise. Note 2 deep wheel tracks lead to BMW bogged & burnt out.

The ruins of Seascapes were too hot for crime scene examiners to commence their search for the bodies until after the media had been allowed onto the environs to photograph the site at 1230 hrs. So it took just approximately an hour and a half at most to locate the first 2 bodies. Then if the third body was found inside the burnt-out ruins of the cottage, why did it take officers a further 24 hours and 25 minutes for them to locate it? Could this delay have occurred, because the examiners did not locate a third body in the ruins, but that indeed a later more zealous inspection of the BMW located the remains there in the boot?

You see, information we gathered early in the investigation, makes it quite clear that the BMW, like the cottage itself, was set ablaze by an SOG officer using a pyrotechnic device. Are you now beginning to realise why it was so desperately important that no body be recovered burnt to death in the boot of the BMW? There was just one SOG officer whose statement as regards his times and circumstances of arrival at the northern road block outside Seascapes cannot be sustained. This SOG officer has by his statement deliberately concealed those facts, although it can not be denied when earnestly considered, the officer had to have been somewhere close-by Seascapes BEFORE the car was set alight. Remember, but for the two witnesses, Jim Laycock and Kiel Spruce, the movements of

Const Chris Iles would also have remained concealed, as since from time immemorial - when it's required - those "on the job" are so inclined to do.

Does the foregoing go someway to explaining why the forensic pathologist was prompted to report that although the State Forensic Pathologist and two forensic odontologists investigated the site, *"there was a perceived need to remove the bodies from the scene quickly and examination [at the crime scene] proved to be more hurried than ideal."*¹⁵ Consequently I'm prompted to ask firstly:



Seascope smoulders: BMW can be seen at LH, middle distance. Two fire engines in the driveway while 8-10 firemen & a lone policeman stand to right of the cottage ruins.

1. "From whom did this '*perceived need to remove the bodies from the scene quickly*', originate?" and
2. "What was the motivating factor for this perceived need, the location of the third body inside the BMW?"

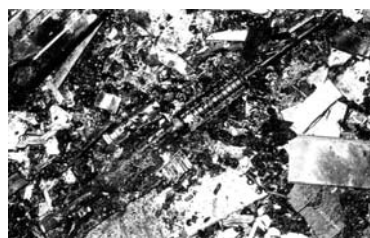
Still with the BMW and when Mr Perks presents the Prosecution's précis of events, he states the gunman *"...drove down the Seascope driveway and across a grassed area bordering the southernmost cottage, pulling up alongside a line of poplar trees,"* as per aerial photograph numbered 401.¹⁶

Here Mr Perks exposes just how absurd the Prosecution's synopsis is. Previously I mentioned the BMW could not move in any direction; it was bogged to the axle. From the aerial photographs we can scale off the measurement and accurately calculate that the BMW bogged its way for approximately 32 metres until it became stuck fast in the quagmire. From photographs taken on Monday 29 April just after [midday](#), we can see there are just two, deep footprints, well away from the front, left hand guard, of the BMW, as if someone has attempted to approach and been forced to retreat from the quagmire.

Seems Mr. Perks has forgotten he'd already told us (Court Doc. p.157), of the gunman transferring a *"Colt AR15 rifle, a quantity of ammunition, two sets of Smith and Wesson handcuffs and most probably at least one container of petrol."*¹⁷

If Mr. Perks is insists on his 'and most probably one container of petrol', I can see no evidence as to this being correct, as there were two containers left in the Volvo! However I note that Mr. Perks has most definitely identified the Colt as an AR15 rifle - not a Colt AR15 SP-1 [Carbine](#) such as was recovered from Seascope, a Freudian slip perhaps?

Also of importance, he forgot to mention a significant item that the gunman must have transferred to the BMW: the black duffle bag. Remember the gunman was witnessed and video-taped by James Balasko as placing 'a black bag' in the boot of the Volvo while it was parked near the seawall below the Broad Arrow Cafe! Please remember the important points made in this paragraph, as I will be referring to is again later.



Victim Twice Over: In the ashes of Seascope, Martin Bryant's Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine (not a rifle) with a 20 shot magazine, deliberately "blown-up", then placed with care & subjected to fire as well.

Picture if you will the gunman realising that in spite of his acceleration, the BMW slowed to halt, bogged to the axle. Upon opening the door, his predicament would be obvious; did he still have his AR15 rifle, FN-FAL spare ammunition etc and black duffle bag in the BMW with him? Or had he already deposited the gear in the cottage along with the hostage? Mr Perks chooses not the mention the black duffle bag, as remember the prosecution has a blue "Prince" sports bag to contend with that they know was sitting in the Café. Let's hear Mr Perks explain the scenario of Martin's arrival at Seascope Cottage:

"Your Honour, after bringing the BMW to a halt Bryant got out of the vehicle, removed Mr Pears from the boot, and took him inside the main Seascape cottage, the residence of Mr and Mrs Martin. Once inside, using the two sets of handcuffs he had brought with him, he handcuffed Mr Pears' wrists behind his back. The second pair of handcuffs were linked to the handcuff on the left wrist with the free cuff being closed and secured around move immovable object within the house."

Now apart from failing to explain how he alone was able to complete this difficult action alone, the scenario has caused Mr Perks some other problems. For starters there was a female hostage (Mrs Sally Martin being the only female hostage seen alive by uniform police that were to arrive shortly), inside the cottage when the gunman returned to Seascape. To aid her control there, the prosecution would have you believe when Martin Bryant departed Seascape and gone to the Historic Site at 1240 hrs., he'd locked all the doors of Seascape and taken the tagged keys with him. After all, if someone had called at Seascape while he was absent for the hour and twenty minutes, it would not have been helpful for such a caller to be able to enter the premises now would it? But here again their story has gone awry.

You see, the tagged Seascape door keys, essential for the gunman's quick and easy re-entry into Seascape Cottage upon his return, were left as a trail of evidence in the Volvo abandoned at the Tollbooth! So how did the lone gunman make his re-entry? Did he force a door? Even more bizarre is the fact that Martin's garbled recollections had him telling his police interrogators that he was 'nocking hard on the back door of Seascape for someone (like Mick or Rick?) to let him in, at the moment the fuel-air bomb - the BMW - exploded.

The BMW's boot-lid is released from within the driver's compartment, but would the gunman have been able to release the boot-lid safely with Glen Pears uncontrolled and lying in the boot at this stage according to Mr. Perks when he initially exited? The hostage by that time would have reached the conclusion that to survive the situation, he would have to eject from the boot like a rocket I would think. Perhaps "Rick" or Mick was standing over the release...

So the gunman alone supposedly transferred Glen Pears, and his two firearms, black duffle bag ammo and gear to inside the house, from the paved area, and alone double handcuffed Pears before he shifted the car and set fire to it and according to Martin's recollection, don't forget the hostage had to open the locked door of the cottage for him to re-enter.

If the gunman did unload the BMW on the paved area near the cottage, don't forget the driver (gunman) still had to have moved the car to where it was burnt-out and then extricated himself from the car as it sat there in the quagmire; but I see no evidence to support this having occurred. Remember, it was Mr. Perks who suggested someone was intending to let Martin Bryant in. Again I ask "someone"! Like who - "Rick" or "Mick" perhaps? Remember according to Mr Perks the hostage was fettered with two sets of handcuffs to some immovable object! Not to mention the contradictory time of death of Mrs Sally Martin who has yet to be seen running naked about the yard.

After inspecting carefully all of the photographs I have on file, no evidence of footprints can be seen near the rear of the BMW. It is undeniable: there is no physical evidence that anyone entered that area close to the boot of the BMW, at least until after the photographs had been taken by the media and aerial shots captured shortly after midday on Monday. I believe this to be weighty evidence that indeed the boot of the BMW had not been thoroughly searched perhaps the boot-lid not even lifted when those images were captured by media photographers some time after 1230 hrs on Monday. Why would they have bothered as the search for the bodies in the ruins could not be undertaken until the embers cooled down?

That is why I now firmly am of the conclusion that the third body was found eventually, not inside the house but inside the boot of the BMW, some time before 1430 hrs the next day - Tuesday 30 May. Here I must pause in the story of the BMW, and we shall return to it shortly.

Reinforcements that slipped by the VIMP

We now consider the first reinforcements to arrive at Seascap. Constables Pat Allen and Perry Caulfield who'd been in the Hobart traffic office when they were first alerted to a major incident at Port Arthur at 1335 hrs (1.35 pm). As he left, Pat Allen grabbed a hand-held radio, and they proceeded to the area in a marked [Traffic Vehicle](#).

Just beyond the Taranna Devil Park they came upon Const White of Sorell who was manning a road block at the Nubeena back road intersection, where the stopped spoke with him. Pat Allen noted a "number of persons standing on the Highway," near Const White's vehicle, who had obviously escaped the gunman's bullets and arrived there from the Port Arthur area.

Interestingly, Const White departed Sorell for Taranna on the Tasman Peninsula, a trip of 72 km after the first alert came over VKT. Now Sorrell is considerably closer to Taranna than Risdon where SOG, Sgt Fogarty was on duty; his trip to Seascap covered no less than 94 km. However, [Fogarty](#) states that as he drove down the Arthur Highway to Seascap he "requested" a road block be set up at Taranna. How could Sgt Fogarty have possibly responded to the first reactive radio traffic from Head Quarters referring to the Port Arthur shooting incident and by some miracle or other overtake Const White? Mr Fogarty must surely harbour a low opinion of the average person's intelligence.



Sgt Andrew Mark Fogarty:
the "Peter Brock" of
Tasmania Police.

Nevertheless we're told that as Allen and Caulfield reached the next road block manned by Const Paul Hyland, Const Pat Allen states he "*spoke with Sergeant A Fogarty and Constable P. Hyland,*" before they continued past Const Whittle's position at high speed to deliver Const Perry Caulfield to the Fox and Hounds. Here Pat Allen turned around and headed north again returning to join Const Garry Whittle and he reversed his vehicle up the highway, parking close to his colleague, and we shall return to them shortly.

Now we must regress for a moment and return to Bellerive. I'm not surprised by Const Paul Hyland's vagueness as to times, origins and details about his first assistance, SOG Andrew Fogarty who arrived at his position on the Arthur Highway at Oakwood and from his statement it would appear he intended by its text, to *delay* Fogarty's arrival. The explanation of "after a period of time," is about as imprecise as the Constable could be. However, both Hyland and Pat Allen clearly states that Fogarty was there at Hyland's road block position before he and his colleague Caulfield arrived to run the gauntlet past Seascap to the Fox and Hounds.

Sgt Andrew Fogarty claimed he was the "Bellerive Uniform shift Supervisor" at the Bellerive police station sited in the northern suburbs of Hobart when, precisely at **1.32 pm**, so he states, "he became aware," of an incident occurring at Port Arthur. This claim at the outset of his statement sets the tone and degree of deceit of the entire document. This claim cannot be credible. Remember the first incoming call from Port Arthur taken in the communication room at Police Headquarters, 7-8 km as the crow flies across the waters of the Derwent River in Hobart, was logged there at 1332 hrs. Consequently I suggest that we should look very closely



Monday media stroll:
Constable Pat Allen's
Police Traffic vehicle
parked near where his
colleague Const Whittle
crouched in the table
drain culvert outside
Seascap. The vehicle was
hit by 1 round through the
front spoiler panel; note
vehicle position has been
'chalked out'.

at the rest of the claims made by this Sgt SOG team-leader, his journey to Seascope and whether or not corroborative evidence exists in his support.

Andrew Fogarty's statement has stretched the truth past the limit. From the outset; how could he possibly have learned of the incident at the same time Mrs Wendy Scurr made **the first 000 call to Hobart Police HQ's radio room?** Did he have a "tap" on Peninsula phone lines, or like a few others of the players in the exercise is he a psychic? But let us stick with his make-believe just for the exercise.

From 1332 hrs, we can estimate it would take say around 3-5 minutes for Sgt. Fogarty to have left the office and commenced his journey. He had to drive several kilometres over narrow suburban streets to a round-about before taking-off at high speed up the extent of the 9 km of dual carriageway on the Tasman Highway. Then on over the two narrow causeways, filled with Sunday traffic, through the main shopping centre of Sorell, and then at the traffic lights turn right onto the sealed, but poorly aligned, narrow, and undulating Arthur Highway towards Seascope: a trip of some 94 km.

While late in the month of April of 1996, the tourist season was on the wane, as it was the first warm sunny day for weeks that Sunday, the highway was filled with tourists and locals taking advantage to get out and visit Port Arthur, Tasmania's most popular destination. So if Fogarty drove this route between 1.30pm and 3.00pm on that April day in 1996 even with sirens blaring and lights flashing, his journey would normally have taken between 1¼ – 1½hrs minimum. Consider also, where the SOG *Team Leader* was required to store his personnel "SOG kit"; helmet, boots, BPV, weapons, pyrotechnics and any other of his SOG paraphernalia? Remember at the time he says he was "shift supervisor"...

From his claimed time of alert (1332hrs), and Sgt Fogarty's arrival at Const Paul Hyland's roadblock 250m north of Seascope, where the Constable states he commenced his running log at **1415hrs**, Fogarty claims he followed an Ambulance down the highway, to this road block. As this timing puts him at Hyland's position before Const White who'd driven from Sorell Police Station, I would have to opinion that Mr Fogarty is simply telling fibs.

Fogarty also informs us that along the way, he was made aware that the suspect had changed cars, "commandeering a BMW sedan," and importantly that he now had taken "a male hostage in the boot of the vehicle." I ask you to be mindful of this admission as it becomes significant to the outcome of the BMW fire.



**Volunteer Tasman Peninsula
"Ambo" Colin Dell:**

Like most Peninsula Volunteer
Ambulance officers, he & wife
Robyn resigned after the
massacre at Port Arthur

Fogarty states that while en route, he requested a road block be established at the Denison Canal swing-bridge at Dunalley - originally a pivotal piece in the Tasman Peninsula's Incident Management Plan. That road bloke never happened. He also states he made a similar request for Taranna. This road bloke was established at the Nubeena back-road intersection and was in place a short time after Hyland passed at approximately 1409 hrs on his way to the Fox and Hounds. But very shortly after, the road block was established [Colin](#) and Robin Dell, the husband and wife ambulance team from Taranna were instructed to go to the Fox and Hounds to tend wounded, they had to take the Nubeena back road.

Without wishing to harp on the point, but again I remind the reader, because of the Port Arthur region's topography, the Tasman Peninsula especially from Copping through to Dunalley, and then from Murdunna on through Eaglehawk Neck to Port Arthur there were extensive black spots for radio communications with Hobart; mobile telephones simply were "not in range"

anywhere in the Port Arthur district. In fact the section of the Arthur Highway between the Fortescue Bay Road intersection, north of Seascap and Port Arthur, follows roughly the contour of the land beside the eastern shoreline of Long Bay, and rising from its western verge for that entire length, is a mountain range of considerable elevation that acts like a natural barrier against any mobile transceiver operation thereabouts.

It seems to me amazing that our Sgt Fogarty quite happily states his time of arrival at Seascap as approximating that which Paul Hyland noted as having commenced his Seascap "log" - 1415 hrs, remembering at the estimated time of 1400 hrs Paul Hyland had just come through Taranna from Nubeena.

To achieve this miracle Sgt Andrew Fogarty is stating he drove the 94km from Bellerive to Seascap in 43 minutes. Please do the math yourself!

This means that Sgt Fogarty is claiming he drove down the Arthur Highway at an AVERAGE speed of 131 km/hr, give or take a kilometre! That makes for an average speed of 81.41 mph. Seriously, I have driven this same route from Port Arthur to the Bellerive Police Station down the Arthur Highway, and yet we are expected to believe such errant nonsense?

If that is not hard enough to swallow, then picture if you will the scene, with the domestic and tourist traffic, all taking advantage of that first sunny Sunday afternoon for some time - sightseeing, and the Sergeant there, alone at the wheel of his standard 1996 Police vehicle, thundering along the twisty Arthur Hwy darting in and out among the traffic at in excess of 125km/hr, chatting away on his UHF radio, mike in hand, organizing a roadblock here (at Denison Canal) and a roadblock there (at Taranna), and even along the way becoming "aware that a vehicle was on fire in the grounds of 'Sea Scape'." No, this was not the mad hatters' tea party of "Wonderland" fame, but the deception these people would have us believe is reality, I would suggest is in the same league as Lewis Carroll's writings!

One surely is aware that in high speed emergencies executed under such circumstances over such an extended journey and upon poorly aligned, narrow uneven road surfaces, I would suggest you ask any experienced emergency service person from Policeman in the traffic division, ambulance driver, or fireman, and they will all tell you it demands of the driver a 100 percent concentration on the road, so as to keep one's vehicle upright and progressing toward the scene so as not to turn one emergency into two.

I find it outrageous that anyone could judge this police statement as having a grain of credibility.

But you may ask, "Why all this deception?" Simply because we have learned that Sergeant Fogarty, the SOG Team [Leader](#), was the first officer to arrive at Seascap, well before the uniformed officers. As I mentioned earlier, we have also been told that an SOG officer set the BMW alight with a phosphorus grenade and remember both Constables Hyland and Whittle saw the BMW already, on fire, with smoke coming from the vehicle, when they arrived there. The rabbit has been pulled from the hat - and would opinion the SOG officer has done so all on his own.



Fast moving: 1996 SOG team leader Sgt A M Fogarty.

If Sgt Fogarty did indeed arrive at Seascap long before the local uniformed police, which is the only sane conclusion I can reach, then consider this interesting piece of information.

In 1995 Sgt Michael Charles Dyson of Tasmania Police SOG, transferred to a covert department primarily responsible for anti-terrorist exercises that were commonly referred to as **Violent Incident Management Plans** or **VIMPs**. In the Mahoney Inquiry of 2000, examining the SOG shooting death of Joe Gilewicz on

the morning of 16 July 1991, witness to that shooting, "Mick" Dyson boasted of his first hand experience while in New Zealand in 1990 conducting *"three months officers training in the New Zealand Police College."*¹⁸

It was while there in New Zealand and at Aramoana on 13 November 1990, David Gray shot dead 13 people including Police Sgt Stewart Guthrie, while 3 others were injured. Sgt Guthrie was shot dead with his own service pistol. It is very clear from the reports of the day that an Australian SOG police sergeant numbered among those in *"an anti terrorist unit [that] was in the area helping to co-ordinate the scene."* New Zealand had no such designated squad of police at the time.¹⁹

In the case of the massacre at Port Arthur, I need to make three points here:

1. After the Aramoana debacle which saw one of their 'brothers' die, OH & S embedded in the region's powerful police unions would have demanded a repeat outcome be avoided at all costs to warrant cooperation in any future exercises.
2. This accounts for the substantial covert involvement of police, right from the VIMP through to and especially at and about the primary control centre of Seascope.
3. These facts demonstrate why a Tasmania Policeman issued the order to a uniformed colleague; *"Do not shoot - this has to happen."* As the gunman had already been extracted from Seascope moments before, does it not make sense that the male pursuing a naked Sally Martin around the environs of Seascope was most likely the controller himself - called "Rick" (or "Mick"?) - the former SOG who helped co-ordinate the scene at Aramoana?

In relation to Seascope, it is undoubtedly the VIMP, to which Forward Commander Supt. Bob Fielding at Taranna was referring to when he stated, *"...our formulated plans for the resolution of the incident ... I had signed off on most of those by about 7.00am."* - (see Jenny Fleming, "Forward Command at Port Arthur," *PASA Police Journal*, March 1997, p6).

Here I believe it is appropriate to ask: *"Did the plans referred to by Bob Fielding and which had him stating that he'd 'signed off on most of them by 7.00 am,' contain actions Barry Bennett was not prepared to sign off on?"* Indeed, *as it is all over now, what was contained in those VIM Plans that Fielding considered?*

But returning the 'minuteman', Sgt Fogarty, you know he is his own worst enemy, as he is determined to destroy any credibility he may ever have enjoyed, when he states:

*"At about 4.00 pm Senior Sergeant MORRISON arrived at my location and I gave him a detailed briefing regarding events which had occurred and the location of various uniform personnel I had placed."*²⁰

Why does Fogarty bother telling yet another bare-faced lie? You see, Richard McCreadie in his chronology of the Police response states, at 1557 hrs (i.e. 3:57pm, or 3 minutes to 4 o'clock) the first "SOG [was] tasked and proceeding", to Taranna aboard a helicopter and upon arriving there it was Supt Barry Bennett the OIC of the PFCP at Taranna who tells us himself that it was he who briefed these SOG officers.

Sgt Morrison did not proceed with this first section, but departed with the second contingent of SOG, at 1604 hrs by road and so Morrison could not have reached the PFCP at Taranna until approximately 1720hrs (5.20pm) and then he still had to go forward to the Seascope perimeter. It is patently obvious Sgt Fogarty is trying (unsuccessfully I should say) to protect his nether regions!²¹

I'm now firmly of the opinion, that in relation to the Police involvement in the siege at Seascope, this revelation in itself is proof of a conspiracy. How then was it remotely possible

for Sgt Andrew Mark Fogarty to be providing a "detailed briefing" to Snr Sgt J. S. Morrison who was yet to depart for the scene from Hobart by road?

Back in 2001, we also were made aware, that shortly after Const Pat Allen had joined Const Whittle pinned down by gunfire in the roadside culvert just short of the Seascope entrance, the constables observed the gunman pursuing a naked female around the grounds while a dog was howling and barking. The male perusing the naked female was never identified as having long blonde hair. As the gunman had already been withdrawn before police arrived in a black van, I'm forced to conclude this "gunman" had to have been the controller "Mick" or "Rick" from inside Seascope.

You surely can understandably now, why it is that Const Garry Whittle choses not to expand on this brief notation made in his debriefing notes at Taranna, at 11.25 pm that Sunday night. Although this same incident is recounted by his colleague Const Paul Hyland, he choses word that to the casual observer appear to undermine Whittle's clarity somewhat. But it is Sgt Fogarty himself who attempts to weaken both of his colleagues' statements, by stating almost casually, that Hyland had "told him" the person running was a "male" when in fact Hyland's statement makes no such claim as to gender.

When all is considered that we know about the Seascope segment these *little intrigues*, are very much clarified. For at the time, Allen with his hand-held radio sought permission from a Police Officer senior in rank to him for permission to shoot the gunman, saying words to the effect, *'I have the gunman in my sights: permission to shoot,'* and with the answer coming straight back over the radio, a direct order, repeated I would point out, for a second time emphatically, *"Do not shoot, this has to happen. I repeat do not shoot this has to happen"*.

Now, the unidentified naked female running and screaming around the yard, pursued by a male, had to be Sally Martin and this means Mrs. Martin had not been murdered in the forenoon that Sunday as was the DPP's Case. If the reader remains unconvinced, then I ask this question:

"If this distressed, naked female, being pursued about the precincts of the Seascope cottage was not Mrs Sally Martin, then who was it?"

The denial of permission to intervene and save that female I may add is sadly consistent with an article which stated: "Police...had the gunman in their sights several times inside the Seascope guest house, but the order to shoot never came." To explain this incident, Insp Hank Timmerman, the SOG Commander stated in the same article that, "our law precludes us from taking that course of action." It seems yet again that protocols and procedures signed off on in the VIMP had precedence over the lives of Sally Martin, David Martin and Glen Pears.

I find it contradictory that Supt Bob Fielding who relieved Barry Bennett of his command at Taranna should state, *"...the main objective was to negotiate the safe release of the hostages...that was the primary objective...to negotiate the release of the hostages."* The reality of the outcome runs entirely contrary to this statement by Supt Fielding and indeed he even contradicts his own statement at a later date as you will see shortly. ²²

In what could perhaps be described as an insincere manner, Fielding is interviewed for a Tasmania Police production when he made these extraordinary admissions when he stated that he was:-

"...very mindful of the fact that there was possibly 3 people in the house, ah er, I had to decide, ah er, were they alive ah er, if they were alive, should I allow them to be burnt alive or, or be consumed in the fire; did I send the SOG in."

*The immediate action plan that had been presented to me, presented me with a very difficult decision because their plan, because their estimate of casualties was in excess of 30 percent - which is a huge number of people, police officers to lose in an assault so I had to balance up the advice I was getting as to the likelihood of er the people, the hostages still being alive or risking the lives of further people to er effect an arrest and maybe rescue the hostages in a burning house."*²³



Supt Bob Fielding:
OIC of the 'Seascape
operation' from PFCP at
Taranna, shows his
satisfaction with the
outcome, after forcing
Martin Bryant from the
Seascape cottage.

It becomes painfully obvious from the nonsense contained in these statements and the reality at the coal-face that the wellbeing of hostages was compromised by the authors of the VIMP, among whom former SOG Michael Dyson was prominent.

"Rick" or "Mick" was to the "string-puller" or producer of the Seascape location 'shoot': "Act 7, scene 4" of the psychopolitical production, *the massacre at Port Arthur*. He was the "controller" up until the final moments of the last scene, when the star was left to play-out his role to the bitter final curtain - but against the odds another stuff-up: the star survived... When I sat and viewed for the first time the now infamous Police Training Video, it [staggered](#) me to hear these words from "Relief Forward Commander," Supt Bob Fielding:

"...I'm satisfied that we made the right decision in fact waiting and forcing him to come to us as opposed to vice versa."

Information I received, the source of which was a former Federal Policeman, made it clear that the request to shoot the gunman first denied was certainly repeated for a second time and the entire transmission was witnessed by SES volunteers monitoring the open police channel radio traffic, as they waited near the Fox and Hounds on the Arthur Highway to be ordered forward. Think what effect that had on their morale and respect for the Tasmania police service they were bound to assist. Those words above confirm to my ears just who it was who burnt Seascape!

This information also contained the allegation that a police audio tape containing this very incident did exist and that shortly after the massacre, that tape was re-played to federal police (SOG) officers during their debriefing session back in Canberra. I also learned that when the realisation sank in of what the federal officers had heard regarding police being denied permission to intervene on behalf of a female hostage under threat who was murdered there later, it directly led to two federal police officers resigning their position very shortly thereafter.

Further to this information, early in August of 2001 we learned from another source that federal police SOG officers had been mustered at short notice, and flown to Hobart on Friday evening of the 26th of April, 1996 — although for what purpose, we are only able to speculate. Of course it's possible this action simply proved to be just **another** fortuitous coincidence, but I doubt the reader would be convinced.

You see the narrator on the Police Training Video, tells us that other than the Victoria Police SOG who were flown into Hobart on a charter flight that Sunday evening, all others arrived on commercial flights on the morning of the 29th; but for what useful purpose?

I was informed by a very close friend of a serving Tasmania Police SOG then stationed up the east coast, and who played a primary role in the Seascape Cottage siege, that before he entered the SOG cordon around Seascape he received a direct order with words to the effect,

"You are not to shoot the blonde headed gunman under any circumstances." But the male pursuing Sally Martin was not blonde headed. Also and from so many different sources, the true position is clear: the gunman was not to be shot, and so the wellbeing of the hostages was secondary, as *'not to shoot...under any circumstances,'* left this marksman no latitude whatsoever.

If this rigid protocol - not to shoot the gunman - had not been set firmly in place it only stands to reason the *possibility* of "Rick" or "Mick" being accidentally shot and killed by some policeman or other, would have been heightened considerably to a strong *probability*.

So where was the audio recording equipment located that facilitated the recording of this radio traffic? Does the tape still exist? What was meant by, *"this has to happen"*? All my research tells me this order had to have been passed on to the uniformed Constable by the highest ranking Officer in the immediate area at the time, and if this is so, the order must have come from Sgt Andrew Mark Fogarty, for Supt Barry Bennet was yet to reach Taranna. Yet again it seems an unavoidable conclusion of the Sergeant being 'in the joke' so to speak.

1447 hrs (2.47 pm), and the Eastern (Police) District Superintendent, Barry Bennett and his CIB taskforce were "activated" and Bennett was then formerly OIC of the overall operations at the PFCP recorded as established just 5 minutes later in the business premises of the Devil Park, Taranna. This is in spite of Bennett not arriving there until around 1500 hrs (3.00 pm).

District Commander Barry Bennett tells us that because SOG Officers at *Seascope* operated on their secure radio network, they were isolated and without outside radio contact, even from the PFCP at Taranna.²⁴ But remember this was not the situation among ordinary Police whose radio operations were on the open analogue channel 6.

Although when at the Seascope cordon this analogue channel was incapable of even reaching out to the PFCP at Taranna just 6.6 km up the highway and certainly could not be monitored back in Hobart, just back near the Kodak Shop in Port Arthur, Const Whittle told us that he, *"went back to car and conversed with VKT."* I'm told by a former volunteer ambulance officer from the peninsula that sometimes radio contact was possible near by the Kodak Shop on the football oval. So perhaps Whittle was correct in his statement. But then again had a transponder been sited in the area that weekend to operate on the Sunday?²⁵

Returning now to Sergeant Fogarty; we have been informed that an SOG officer definitely set fire to the BMW. The ONLY "SOG" Officer that was on the ground at the outset was Sgt Andrew M. Fogarty. His recount of his movements that day amount to nothing more than a very amateurish attempt to conceal the reality in that regard. Remarkably, 12 minutes before Commissioner McCreadie wrote that "police arrived", Fogarty light-heartedly states, *"at about 2.00p.m. I become aware that a vehicle was on fire in the grounds..."*, as if he was still en route. In line of sight does not equate to en route. Among police it is clear, everything ran like poorly maintained clockwork, in their account of events it becomes obvious confusion reigned supreme. Time yet again has proven to be for Tasmania Police and others, the guardian of truth. I am forced by numerous facts exposed in the foregoing text to conclude that Mr Fogarty surely set the BMW alight.

But if considered carefully, it soon becomes evident as to why the burning of the BMW was so vaguely mentioned in police statements, given passing attention when police questioned the accused, and even avoided by the Court.

One must ponder: Martin Bryant was charged and convicted of the murder of Glen Pears, and with the deliberate burning of the BMW: it seems like Sally and David Martin these were also false charges, and his convictions for them is nothing less than a travesty of justice.

Now Constable Pat Allen's statement requires our scrutiny here. He firstly drove south past Seascope through both roadblocks to ferry Constable Caulfield to the Fox and Hounds, returning to a position short of the Seascope entrance where Garry Whittle lay, noting as he left the vehicle the time was 2.25 pm (1425 hrs), or just 10 minutes after Hyland had commenced his running log.

Rather strangely though there is a break in his recount of events here of almost 3 hours, for the next time mentioned is 1730hrs (5.30 pm), when Pat Allen states that he was informed there was, "*movement on the roof of one of the outer building at Seascope,*" and he climbed from out of his cover in the culvert and, "*saw movement on the roof of the building south of the main building.*" It was on the porch roof sited on the eastern side of that building, that the FN FAL was recovered by police on Monday afternoon. That porch would have been concealed and out of the line of sight from the culvert location where the Constables Garry Whittle and Pat Allen were located.

But importantly we should ask 'what did occur in those 3 hours that was too unimportant to note?' Though Pat Allen's physical movements in response to that radio message confirmed the existence of two suspects in the buildings at Seascope, as well as verifying their ability to monitor the Police radio frequency. For the quick response of a gunman in a different position firing a shot into the bumper bar of Garry Whittle's Police vehicle is surely confirmation enough.

The Ambulance Response

Not only did Mrs Scurr make the first "000" call, but we are told she also was one of the initial callers to the Ambulance Communication Centre (ACC) in Hobart. The first call notifying them of a shooting incident was logged at 1338 hrs. But it is noted that subsequently Mrs Scurr provided the ACC with "valuable information of the situation as she saw it," and this flow of was continued after she returned to the Café from an office phone there. ²⁶



Two Nubeena ambulance units were tasked immediately; one from Nubeena, crewed by Garry Alexander and Kay Fox, who entered past the Tollbooth first. After finding no injured and covering the deceased bodies, they drove down Jetty Rd to the Café.

The other Nubeena ambulance was crewed by husband and wife team, Colin and Robin Dell who had the ambulance at their home in [Taranna](#). They were instructed to approach the Fox and Hounds via the detour of the Nubeena back road, so as to avoid the shooting gallery outside Seascope and so they were probably yet to reach Nubeena (11 km from Port Arthur) at the time a Dunalley ambulance was about to pass by Seascope, 6.6 km from Port Arthur.

Crewed by volunteers:
A Peninsula ambulance makes a fast turn at Taranna to head via Nubeena toward Port Arthur. But how did the media arrive here in time to capture this footage?

This ambulance was driven by off-duty paramedic Jim Giffard, who was called out from his farm to join the Dunalley crew Jodie Branch and Roger Garth, to make the rush south to Port Arthur and arrived outside the Broad Arrow at just after 1400 hrs. This crew had failed to hear radio instructions for them to take the Nubeena back road route, and so were actually ahead of the closer crew as they sped directly southward down the highway past Seascope.

Now, before we progress further, let's look closer at a little more of *the gospel according to Fogarty*; his bizarre statement accounting for his arrival at Seascope: "*About 2.15pm I followed an ambulance along the Arthur Hwy and arrived at the location of Constable Hyland near Seascope...I stopped and the ambulance continued.*" I've been able to confirm that indeed 2 ambulances travelled south by this route past Seascope that afternoon, as is

confirmed also by Const Hyland (below). But in Fogarty's statement, he makes one reference to a single ambulance.

Const Hyland in addressing his "initial time" there at his road block clearly states that, *"...two ambulances had also driven past me heading south," before* Sgt Fogarty arrived at this road block. It is only then and in his next paragraph that he advises us of the arrival of Sgt A Fogarty, and that *"upon his [Fogarty's] arrival I commenced a log..."*, stating further that he remained at his position until he, *"left the scene at about 4.00 a.m. the next morning..."*

It is within this segment, statements given by just two policemen expose some worrying contradiction.

In examining the sequence of ambulance call-outs, the routes they took, their destinations, and arrivals at the Tollbooth, Historic Site, and the Fox and Hounds that afternoon, we are able to demonstrate a further anomaly within these police statements. Four road ambulances in all, responded and attended the wounded. Colin and Robin dell of Taranna were instructed to attend the Fox and Hounds, the rest made for the Broad Arrow Café; 21 persons in total were attended to.

Yes, 2 ambulances did pass through Hyland's road block that afternoon, north of Oakwood. But the first ambulance heading south through his road block on the Arthur Highway that afternoon, encountered two police vehicles at the northern roadblock. *"Off duty paramedic Jim Giffard was called from his farm [near Taranna] to join the Dunalley Crew."* ²⁷ This ambulance was the second to arrive at the Broad Arrow Café and upon arrival there the driver told Mrs Wendy Scurr, he got a, *"hell of a shock"* when he came to the rise just before the entrance to Seascapes, and was confronted by, *"two police vehicles blocking the road"*. Continuing, he told Mrs Scurr in words to the effect of, *'how the hell I squeezed between the vehicles and did not leave a side mirror behind, I'll never know...'* This was Jim Giffard and for him to have "squeezed" his ambulance between two police vehicles, Andrew Fogarty *had to have had his vehicle already there and in place at Paul Hyland's road block*. This was the first ambulance to pass through Hyland's road block. This being the reality, it is simply impossible for Sgt Fogarty to have *followed* the second ambulance into Hyland's road block! ²⁸

But Hyland has, even if we give him the benefit of the doubt, has been inadvertently enmeshed in the Fogarty deception, amplified when the SOG Sgt put the incident on the record. Hence I must ask this question of both officers:

"How could *two ambulances have driven past Hyland* as he stated, in *the initial period* when he alone manned his road block with just his vehicle across the road, if the first ambulance driver Jim Giffard, the only one to have gone past Seascapes was forced to squeeze his ambulance between two police vehicles at that road block?

These deceptions only developed at the same rate as the whole exercise continued toward its finality, and then on past the sentencing of Martin Bryant.

After all as has been said several times already, the BMW was already well alight *for some considerable time* before Fogarty's stated time of arrival in the area. So I won't beat about the bush with Sergeant Andrew Fogarty any more.

From out of his very own statement he has proven to be a totally discredited witness to the events surrounding the entire massacre at Port Arthur and the Seascapes siege segment of it. Obviously when read carefully, like his colleague Paul Hyland's statement, both would have caused the prosecution grave concern, had Martin Bryant stood trial before his peers. Neither policeman's evidence would have survived, if subjected to cross examination. It becomes painfully obvious the original strategy never accommodated a gunman surviving the house-fire.

To conclude this chapter, what purpose, or more correctly, whose purpose did all this nonsense and deceptions serve? This charade *must* have been acted out as part of a very elaborate and important program. Surely it doesn't require me to spell out the agenda it served. Equally you surely aren't of the opinion that all of these anomalies resulted from the actions of a couple of bumbling 'cops' or the impaired intellect of Martin Bryant? Even his mother Carleen has maintained to this day: *"My poor Martin. He couldn't have shot all those people down at Port Arthur. He didn't have the brains to do it."* ²⁹

No I firmly believe the evidence I have produced here stands tall among all the other grave anomalies the DPP employed to attempt to prove their case against one very insignificant member of Tasmania's society in 1996, intellectually impaired Martin Bryant. But it was staged for much bigger fish in the global pond than those immediately implicated! Yes fire was the criminal's eraser at Seascope, and the criminal was not Martin Bryant.

The police themselves suggest the probability of two gunmen, one of whom had black hair. I'm strongly of the belief there **was not two gunmen inside Seascope**; the gunman with the 'pockmarked face' was extracted from Seascope *immediately* upon his withdrawal to there from his highway ambush, and the only other gunman there and therefore the murderer of Sally Martin was "Rick" or "Mick" and not Martin Bryant. It had to be "Mick" or "Rick" the controller of the fall-guy "Jamie" who in all probability never fired a shot. So what became Mick or Rick? If he has a conscience, my understanding of the nature of logos ensures that those who have burdened themselves with such awful untruths will see their deceit tear at their mind in building waves which will eventually consume the physical person.

As all these snippets of information I have put on the record came to light in the various documents, statements, reports, and interviews during the course of our investigations, I believe together they confirm the massacre was most definitely not the spontaneous unlawful act of a lone gunman, but rather a sophisticated exercise, with long term, high level security planning and involvement which must have emanated from out of the federal government level and if not from out of that entity, then from out of what other powerful entity?

End Notes

¹ NA, "Crime costs Australia almost \$32 billion each year," Media Release, Aust. Institute of Criminology, 9apr03

² Assistant Comm Barry Bennett, Crime and operations, Tasmania Police Journal, Dec. 2001, pp. 17-21
http://www.pat.asn.au/uploaded/62/290039_04taspolicydec01.pdf.

³ PROI Court Doc, p.232

⁴ PROI Court Doc, p.234

⁵ PROI Court Doc, p.235

⁶ PROI Court Doc p.245

⁷ Matterson, Ian, "Coroner's Responsibilities at Port Arthur", EMA Report, p.91

⁸ Perks, N., Court Doc p.172

⁹ *ibid*, p.191

¹⁰ Matterson, I., "Coroner's Responsibilities at Port Arthur", EMA Report, p.93

¹¹ *ibid*, p.94

¹² *ibid id*

¹³ Perks, N., Court Doc. p.186

¹⁴ *ibid* , p.197

¹⁵ Lyons TJ, "Forensic Overview of the Port Arthur Tragedy," EMA Report, p.97

¹⁶ N Perks, Court Doc., p.171

¹⁷ N Perks, Court Doc., p.157

¹⁸ Mahoney Inquiry, day 40 @ 4124 & Day 6 @ 427; Journal of American Academy of Psychiatry & the Law, Vol 28, No.1, 2000

¹⁹ Internet article, *New Zealand News*, at www.crime.co.nz/c-files.asp?ID=7 , 02may01

²⁰ Sgt Andrew M. Fogarty, No 1413, Tasmania Police, Undated, "Statement to prove,"

²¹ R. McCreadie, EMA Report, p.6 20; Jenny Fleming, "*Forward Command at Port Arthur*", PASA Police Journal, March 1997.

²² *ibid* ; na "Police unable to shoot," *Sunday Herald Sun*.

²³ Supt Bob Fielding, Police Training Video

²⁴ Fleming J., *Port Arthur*, Police Journal of SA, March 1997, p.3

²⁵ Const Garry Thomas Whittle, 1171, Proof of Evidence statement, undated.

²⁶ Morgan P., O'Brien, A., & Lennox G., *The Ambulance Perspective*, EMA Report, p.31

²⁷ *Ibid*, p.30

²⁸ Interview with Mrs W. Scurr, May 2001.

²⁹ Julie-Anne Davies, "Making of a Monster", *The Bulletin*, 4 April 2006, p. 19

Exploding Ammunition: Trivia Evidence?

Chapter 24

Martin Bryant never experienced the right to a trial by jury. His cavalier legal counsel Mr Avery may well hold to the opinion that this was entirely Martin's own decision, though it's a conclusion I cannot support. His sentencing hearing was presided over by 60-year-old Chief Justice of Tasmania, William Cox.

Since 1993 William Cox had been Colonel Commandant of the Royal Artillery, Tasmania Defence Region, and earlier he was a member of the Army Reserve from 1954-1975. Although a Tasmanian, born on 1 April 1936, William Cox was educated at the Catholic, Xavier College in Melbourne. In December 1995, the Queen approved his appointment as Tasmania's Lieutenant-Governor, a position he held until he vacated his role as Chief Justice, and eventually he became Governor of Tasmania in 2004 in the wake of the controversial sacking after just 10 months in the office of the former UN Arms Inspector, Richard Butler after he'd received a golden 'hand-shake' of some \$650,000. ... just to go. So it was William Cox who officiated over Martin Bryant's sentencing hearing and it was he who accepted the Court Documents that were put on the public record of the bench he presided over.

Part of these Court Documents is that which is termed a "Statement of Fact": a detailed chronological reconstruction of events as they unfolded from Martin Bryant's early childhood until he was interrogated by police on 4 July 1996 according to the DPP. This record sums up the Case against the accused. But nothing the prosecution stated in this part of the Court Documents has ever been tested under oath and no defence Counsel has ever cross examined a single witness under oath, mentioned in that statement. As a consequence and after a close examination of this statement in the case of the **Queen v Martin Bryant** it is I fear, from beginning to end, a litany of blurred events that others may choose to call bare-faced "lies".

Here is an example of just one "fact", as recorded in the Court Document presented to Lt-Col (res) William Cox, Chief Justice for Tasmania, by Mr. Bugg QC, and his assistant Mr N. Perks. This statement of "fact" was further expanded upon by Sergeant Gerard Dutton, who was later described by Commissioner of Police Richard McCreadie as *"...the best ballistic expert in the nation - there's no doubt about that."* In an article published in the December edition of the *APJ* and at p.216, I would opinion that Sergeant Gerard Dutton chooses quite inappropriate language as he begins to explain the exploding ammunition at Seascope as "an item of trivia"!

Is "trivia" the material which is called "evidence" in the Courts? For it is recorded in the Court Documents at page 186/10-13 that Mr. Perks blurs His Honour's judgement when he states:

*"The fire at Seascope continued to blaze out of control for some considerable time, fire services were unable to approach because of the continuing danger created by exploding ammunition."*¹

So according to the Court this is a statement of "fact". According to 'the best ballistic expert in the nation,' it is trivia. I believe both these people are deserving of contempt:

Please consider these questions:

- Is Mr Perks suggesting 'exploding ammo' justified Supt Bob Fielding holding back the fire brigade from dousing the flames of Seascope and making any attempt whatsoever to save the lives of any of the three persons thought to be held as hostages in the cottage?
- Who before His Honour, Justice William Cox would have dared to call evidence Trivia?

I don't believe I'm being pedantic in using a word such as "inappropriate" at the very least to describe Mr. Dutton's poor word choice of "trivia evidence". At the same time Mr Perks suggestion that it justified holding back the fire brigade is a nonsense!

In the cause of the death of Mrs. Noelene ("Sally") Martin, Mr. Perks says, *"The autopsy revealed...a number of small fragments of lead shrapnel ... located in and around the left shoulder area and chest cavity..."* and he goes on to suggest the "fragments" indicated, *"a gun shot injury,"* but quickly adds, *"...although injury caused by exploding ammunition during the fire could not be ruled out as the cause of that."*² - My emphasis.

This is not trivia! I believe it is nothing less than misleading humbug! Here Mr. Perks quite seriously refuses to rule out the possibility that projectiles from "exploding ammunition" may have reached such velocity from out of unsupported cartridge cases to have penetrated clothes and flesh to the depth of a chest cavity and even *fragmented* in doing so? Mr Perks has grossly misled his honour and the Court and is deserving of nothing less than contempt.

Worse still, the defence Mr. Avery allowed proceedings to continue without so much as a single objection whatsoever?

Let me set the records straight: Ever since the advent of the *Safety Cartridge*, primers and smokeless powder, small arms ammunition when exposed to fire poses minuscule danger to life. There is every good reason as to why such ammunition was termed a *Safety Cartridge*.

Let me put it this way: if Firemen had rushed-in to control the fire at Seascope and with a slim hope of saving life, and even have been able to preserve some empirical evidence, as late as when Martin Bryant staggered unarmed from the cottage, aerosol cans of hair spray and insect spray etc, normally stored in the pantry and kitchens of the average Australian home, would have posed a greater hazard to life and limb, than the "thousands of [safety] cartridges" spread about.³

At the risk of boring the reader with an item of "trivia", please examine what one the world's most respected ballisticians of the twentieth century, Julian S. Hatcher, Maj-Gen, U.S. Army ret., has to say on the subject of "Small Arms Ammunition as a Fire or Explosion Hazard".

"As for any possible explosion hazard from small arms ammunition, even in large quantities, it can be said with confidence that there is no such danger."

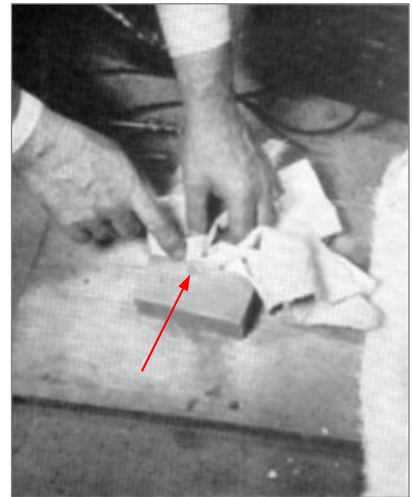
To reach his conclusion Julian Hatcher carried out extensive tests, and here is what he observed when he took a 30/06 cartridge for example and replicated it to have exploded, in a person's shirt, breast pocket. Hatcher used a bar of soft soap to replicate body tissue.

"This made a dent on the soap about a quarter of an inch deep. That would have been a mean bruise. We found the cartridge case had burst open and thrown small bits of brass around, and had left a smoky smudge about an inch long on the cloth. [The cloth had not ignited.] The only damage suffered by the cardboard box [there to

retained all of the cartridge components] was a slight mark where the bullet had struck." ⁴

If this is trivia, then what must we conclude of the rest of the material which Mr Perks and Damien Bugg QC presented to the Court called "evidence"? Or, to put it another way, does this mean in the Courts of Tasmania, the Prosecution can in our system of justice lie and or mislead under licence?

The projectile, which in Hatcher's [tests](#) was pushed out of the neck of the case, not only did not, but could not have fragmented as Perks suggested was possible, but in fact was only capable at most of causing a "mean bruise" even when in contact with the subjects flesh. I can only conclude Mr Perks "facts" simply reduces to a considerable degree the credibility of his whole synopsis of events he delivered in Stating Facts. If fragments were present in the remains of Mrs. Martin, then they had to have come from a projectile, fired from a firearm at high velocity: there is NO other explanation. Unless like the can of petrol Mr Perks stated was "probably" transferred into the BMW, the fragments "probably" didn't exist?



When Col. Hatcher duplicated his 30/06 test & discharged a .45 pistol round "lying on a cake of soap, the only effect was a slight dent on the soap, corresponding to a minor bruise of the flesh."

-- Hatcher's Notebook p.539

I can state categorically, that if fragments of a projectile were indeed recovered from the chest cavity of the deceased, it is my qualified conclusion that if Mrs. Sally Martin was shot, then she was shot either in the first instance, or in a secondary manner. These are the only rational conclusions one can reach.

So after considering this chapter and hearing Mr Perks ridiculous 'facts' and Mr Dutton's expert opinion: "Do you consider this evidence 'trivia'?"

End Notes

¹ Perks, N., Court Doc. P.186/10-13

² Perks, N., Court Doc. p.187/8-17

³ Perks, N., Court Doc., at p.186 & *APJ* at p.215

⁴ Julian S. Hatcher, *Hatcher's Notebook*, 1st print 1947, this 3rd ed 2nd print, 1966, The Stackpole Co. Harrisburg, Pa. U.S.A., at pp. 531 & 536.

Blow-ups: The Two Witnesses!

Chapter 25

In this chapter I would ask you to consider the documented examples of just two of many firearm “blow-ups” that came over the work-bench of my gunsmith shop. To my knowledge every “blow-up” that came over my work-bench was accidental, in as much none of the firearm owners had deliberately prepared a round to damage or demolish the firearms I inspected.

After you have given the evidence I present here due consideration, you should then be in a position to make an informed judgment as to the veracity of my conclusions on the matters and those allegation never tested under oath but simply presented to the court and entered onto the record as a statement of fact.

I must point out that I remain entirely unconvinced the specific Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, Ser #SP128807 was ever fired at any person during the massacre at Port Arthur or the siege at Seascapes on the 28-29 April 1996. It is my firm conclusion this particular Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, which police recovered from the ashes of Seascapes was in my qualified opinion deliberately blown up at some time before the firearm was brought to the Seascapes Cottage. But this chapter is included primarily for your consideration as irrefutable evidence, paralleling the event to which the Colt in question was subjected.

Included in the chapter are four photographs, each of which contain captions explaining the consequences of the “blow-up”, which is actually an *uncontrolled chemical reaction*.

Please also consider the written evidence explaining the events which caused the damage to these firearms pictured, the first of which occurred in December of 1984 and which has been taken from my notes recorded at the time.

I believe I have presented here, hard physical evidence in the form of several documented accidental events, which parallel what I believe was a deliberate planned event, alleged to have been accidental in as much as Mr Dutton claims resulted from a “faulty batch of [Norinco factory] ammunition”.

The damaged Colt AR15 SP-1 .223Rem Carbine was in my qualified opinion no more than a “prop”, placed carefully at the periphery of the cottage so that it would be subjected to less than destructive heat to enable police to recover, test and make reports as to its condition even although as a direct result of the extent of its damage precluded it from ever being linked forensically as the firearm which caused the deaths of 25 persons and the wounding of 14 others in the massacre at Port Arthur.

I will leave it to the reader to decide as to what extent these documented accidental events parallel what I allege was the deliberate damage to the Colt AR15 SP1 Carbine, recovered from the perimeter of the burnt-out ruin of Seascapes.

Now to the first photograph [Fig i](#) we see all of the recovered metal-work of a Sako Model L579 "Forester," turn-bolt action rifle, Ser/No. 98639 in the calibre 22/250 Remington. Prior to the blow-up event, the rifle was in original, A-1 condition.

The Report

When the barrel was pulled, it was barely "snug". After the barrelled action was clamped in the Barrel Vice and a Brownell's action-spanner snugged-up on the receiver, normally it would take a good stiff "yank" on the 3ft extension handle, to break the union between barrel and receiver. However in this instance, because of the blow-up, it was unnecessary to employ an extension to the 8" handle. I realised although the barrel was snug, the receiver could be unscrewed a quarter turn by the action-spanner handle alone, then with the spanner removed I was able to unscrew the action entirely without effort all the way by hand - unaided.

Upon examining and measuring the receiver's internal thread dimensions, it became obvious the receiver had been expanded by internal pressures to such an extent the barrel was overly sloppy in the thread.

The owner told me he'd obtained "telephone advice" from a friend (perhaps now a 'past friend'), so as to "use-up some old powder" that he had on hand, and so the owner had hand-loaded a small quantity of ammunition to supply an immediate need.

He fired the first cartridge only of the hand-loads. The cartridge was loaded with 30 grains of NY300 powder behind a 50gr projectile with a Remington 7½ primer. The 22/250 calibre is designed to operate at normal chamber pressures of around 52,400lbs with a proof load maximum in the vicinity of 60,000+ lbs. The round fired exceeded this pressure by many thousands of pounds -- **End report.**

NY-300 is designated as a "*Small Capacity Case - rifle powder*" and is no longer available in Australia. The powder NY-300 was developed originally for the diminutive 22 Hornet case, with a recommended maximum load of 9 grains behind a 45gr x .223" (not a .224") projectile.

The Hornet case if filled to maximum would hold 11.8grns, or 30% above a recommended load in that calibre/powder combination and that load would exceed safe maximum pressures to such an extent as to cause total primer pocket failure leaking gas badly. But! When 30gr of



Fig ii:
The "witness"

NY-300 was loaded into the 22/250 Remington case, the chamber pressure generated could well have exceeded 150% above a "proof load" chamber pressures for that calibre possibly reaching 130,000 to 160,000 lbs!

The photograph at left, [Fig ii](#) shows the remnant cartridge case, still in the chamber, of the barrel removed or "pulled" from the receiver. A quarter of its case head circumference including the extractor flange has been *consumed* which extends down the



Fig i: Mod., L579 Sako "Forester" turn-bolt rifle. From top L-R: mag follower; "W" spring; floor-plate/trigger guard; barrel with blown cartridge case still fused to chamber insitu; receiver; bolt stop (its fixing screws both sheared-off); trigger assembly. Below the receiver lies the turn-bolt body & below it the firing pin assembly. **Note:** indicates the assembly's **retaining lug** which almost sheared off in the blow-up. If this had occurred it would have caused life threatening injuries to the shooter. The rifle's walnut stock was broken into three pieces.



Fig iii:
The "accused"

length of the case (inside the chamber and so hidden) for approximately half its overall length and still with the case fused to the chamber wall as it was when delivered to the Gunshop. The next photograph [Fig iii](#), is of the Norinco .223 Rem case claimed by Gerard Dutton to have come from a 'batch' of faulty ammunition. Norinco do not manufacture their ammunition in numbered "batch" lots. I want to state clearly that the Dutton theory has no basis in fact. Sgt Gerard Dutton the highly trained forensic firearm examiner did not produce a shred of sound forensic evidence to support his scenario.

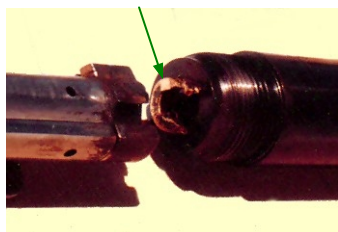


Fig iv: note the sheared off "pimple", blown away extractor and discoloured bolt-head.

The next photograph at left, [Fig iv](#) illustrates the bolt aligned in the battery or locked position as it would in the action body and you will note the extractor claw is missing, blown away at time of detonation. Compare this example to that of photograph left, [Fig iv](#) photograph at right of the blown-up cartridge case recovered by Sgt Gerard Dutton, from the AR15 SP-1 Carbine which the DPP claimed was wrecked by 'faulty ammunition' at Seascope. Note the evidence of extreme pressure that has caused brass from the case walls and head to partially fill-in the extractor groove, and also extrude into the unsupported margin **arrowed**, of the case normally remaining beyond the chamber mouth. Note the brass "pimple" extruded into the ejector recess, by the extremes pressure in both Fig iii and iv, **arrowed** and evident as a protrusion from the head of the 223Rem Norinco case in Fig iv, has been sheared-off by the lifting of the turn-bolt to open the action as is indicated by the shiny spot.

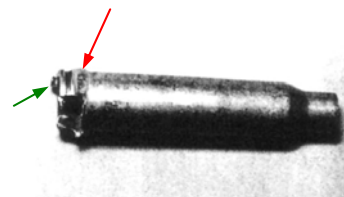


Fig v: The Norinco case (223Rem) from the Seascope blow-up of the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine. Extruded "pimple" remains in this instance.

You will note also in both cartridge cases (photographs Fig ii and Fig iii) there is a considerable amount of the case head or ejector flange missing, continuing right to the flash hole in the centre of the primer pocket. This brass has been eroded away by the extremely hot jet of escaping gas and torn out as gas takes the path offering the least resistance toward the extractor slot, an unsupported portion of the case head.

This erosive action works not unlike a steel fabricator's plasma cutter. The extractor along with the extractor spring and plunger have also been blown away by the blast of escaping superheated gas, the blast extent also witnessed by the now discoloured bolt-head in Fig iv. No remnants of the primer cup or its integral anvil were recovered. The spring loaded ejector plunger in the bolt face was also missing; its spring crushed.

Now returning to the first photo [Fig i](#), of the Mod L579 Sako turn-bolt rifle parts; you can see all recovered metal components of the rifle. Note the following from the top L:

- 1.) Magazine follower was distorted and - not worth repairing (NWR),
- 2.) Magazine "W" spring is distorted,
- 3.) Floor-plate trigger guard assembly is visibly distorted, while king-screw and tang-screw were both stripped and missing,
- 4.) Magazine housing has been expanded considerably, by escaping gas, and please note, the explosion split and smashed the walnut stock into three separate pieces.
- 5.) Bolt stop assembly was torn from the receiver and mounting screws sheared-off
- 6.) Trigger assembly was the only assembly to survive undamaged.
- 7.) Bolt body suffered relatively minor damage but was still NWR, and unusable unless subjected to an x-ray test.

Now to the firing pin assembly (FPA): The firing pin spring retaining collar, situated at the forward (left) extremity of the main spring in the photograph, acts like a piston within the bolt

body when subjected to the rapidly expanding volume of escaping gas, channelled directly to this "piston" via the firing pin hole.

Hence the escaping gas compressed the entire firing pin assembly past the full extent of its rearward travel. The kinetic energy generated in this compression being delivered to and restrained by the small firing-pin retaining lug, arrowed in the photograph. This firing-pin retaining lug was set-back .100" and in my judgement was close to shearing point. If that firing-pin retaining lug had sheared-off, it would have caused the shooter to suffer grievous bodily harm, most probably resulting in death, as the FPA would have become a lethal projectile, propelled rearwards at high velocity.

In our next photograph [Fig vi](#) we have a view looking right into the forward threaded receiver where the barrel is normally screwed home. Past the extent of the threaded receiver tube you can see at 6 o'clock the shiny metal surface of the 'lock-up' surface where one of the bolt-body's two locking lugs bears when in its battery position. You can see with the naked eye that the bearing surface has been dramatically set-back by the locking lugs impact at the time of the detonation a very visible and measured at .020".

Under normal usage this locking surface would survive unscathed without any appreciable wear for tens of thousands of rounds.

Seven days after this blow-up, when the owner brought the firearm to my Gunshop for inspection and report, he was suffering badly with tinnitus (ringing of the ears) and was noticeably hard-of-hearing.

He told me he had suffered a "bad headache for 3 days" as well. Both hands and his face had small superficial wounds that were now healed and he had earlier removed a wood splinter from his hand.

In other "blow-ups" I have been called upon to examine, one other in particular stands out and I should mention it here.

This second incident involved a Marlin model 336, lever rifle in 444 Marlin calibre. Again the owner had obtained phone advice from a "friend" for a *reduced load* using a non-recommended powder of a volume approximating one third of the maximum case capacity so as to achieve sub-sonic velocities.

In this instance the powder load was of a small volume in a large volume case, which normally dictates the powder would have been mixed with a "filler" material to expand the overall volume and ensure even distribution within the case, a practice incidentally, I would most strongly advise against, unless done with greatest of care and under experienced advice. In this incident, the shooter had loaded magazine tube with several other similarly hand loaded



Figure iii: Remains of a Marlin Mod 336 444 Marlin lever rifle blow-up.

rounds. He fired the first round from a prone position. All went well. He worked the lever elevating the next round from the magazine up and forward into the chamber, while at the same time the muzzle was held slightly lower than the breach. These actions spread the small charge of powder along the length of the case, from head to neck. When this second round was fired, the primer ignited the entire charge of powder from the flash hole to the projectile at the front of the case. Instead of burning progressively, the entire powder charge detonated.

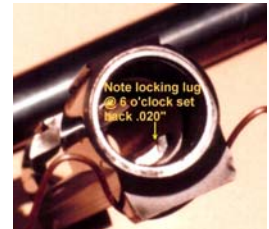


Fig vii: Sako receiver looking into the lower locking register for one of the 2 bolt lugs to lock the action. Note the setback .020"

Looking at the photograph of the Marlin model 336, you will note a 4 ½" section of the barrel from rear sight to breach has been torn away. The shell case above those pieces mimics their appearance. The receiver was blown into two pieces and the head of the bolt distorted, loosing the extractor and ejector. The locking block almost sheared off and if it had failed the bolt would not have been retained in the action, even although it failed. If the locking block had failed in the sequence of the event before the action failed, the shooter may well have suffered life threatening injuries. Scope mounting screws were stripped from the receiver, and along with scope sight blown away. The magazine tube (bottom right - above) was almost guillotined when it was torn from the receiver, and blown downward. Bits and pieces of metalwork and wood from the Model 336 Marlin were spread all over the paddock. The shooter survived, but his rifle did not. The wreckage he recovered and brought for my inspection you can see, was almost unrecognisable as having come from a relatively new Marlin 336; so bent, torn apart, twisted and distorted the bits and pieces were.

The owner (Anthony) told me he sought medical advice and was told the damage to his hearing was permanent. Such is the enormous energy generated under unique circumstances when in ignorance the careless hand-loader fails to adhere to the rules of reloading all safety cartridges. Firearm owners only ever experience a blow-up out of carelessness or inexperience on their part. I can firmly state faulty factory ammunition as being the cause of such events is so rare as to be extremely unlikely. Mr Dutton never told us if he bothered to determine what type of powder residue was left behind in the discharged and blown-up cartridge. This single oversight is very telling to this author.

In the case of the round that allegedly destroyed the Seascapes firearm, the Colt AR15 SP-1 Carbine, Ser #SP128807 recovered from the periphery of the Seascapes Cottage, I can state with confidence, Martin Bryant could not have prepared the round pictured at Fig iii and Fig v in this work so as to blow up the firearm. He was intellectually incapable of doing so, and secondly no evidence was produced to suggest Martin Bryant possessed the necessary componentry and reloading equipment or knowledge to do so.

Therefore I'm compelled to conclude that a single round was deliberately deloused and deliberately reloaded with a powder different to the original factory load, by a person or persons unknown, and that round was chambered in the Colt AR15 Carbine, the firearm discharged (very likely with a lanyard) and secreted at the periphery of the cottage. Episodes such as these leave tell-tale signatures, which to the qualified examiner are unmistakable and easily understood.

Unhelpful Casualties in "The War of Terror"

*"Errors like straws, upon the surface flow;
He who would search for pearls must dive below."*

John Dryden

Chapter 26

After the gunman departed in Martin Bryant's yellow Volvo up Jetty Road to the Tollbooth and at about 1350hrs, Wendy Scurr along with the Supervisor and acting manager that Sunday, together, Sue Burgess, and Information Officer Steven Howard [SteveHoward97](#) entered the Broad Arrow Café. You may remember in those initial moments Wendy realised her worst fears when she found Sue's daughter and Steven's young wife both deceased, lying side by side behind the Gift Shop counter where they were rostered to work that day; straight away Wendy took charge of the scene, and allotted Sue and Steven outside tasks, and both exited the Café.



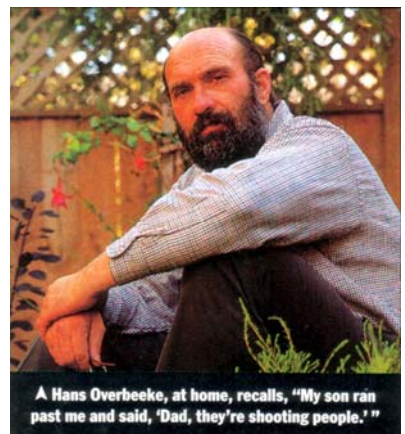
PAHSMA Information
Officer, Steven Howard



St John's Ambulance trained
First Aid Instructor,
Mrs Wendy Scurr

Mrs Scurr then commenced the most demanding First Aid task imaginable. In but a few minutes she had ascertained just 3 victims lay immobile, wounded but alive after the onslaught in the café. It was just a couple of minutes later she became aware of a certain male consoling a frantic, vociferous and badly wounded Carolyn Loughton "P1", who was lying towards the centre of the building. Here we will look closer at the movements of a person who stayed close to her, a person of interest: Johan "Hans" Georges [Overbeeke](#)

As more people filtered back to the Café environs to offer assistance or look for missing companions and loved ones, a Sydney orthopaedic surgeon Dr Bill Maguire and his wife Dorothy entered the Café. Although Bill had seen the horrors of battle injuries when he served as doctor with the Australian Army in Vietnam, this scene stunned him: ***"I never saw anything quite to equal what I saw when I went inside the Broad Arrow Café,"*** including a ***"pile of bodies – six or seven of them – at the door where they had attempted to get out."*** Here Dr Maguire is referring to the fire exit door with the inoperative, faulty, fire escape latch.



A Hans Overbeeke, at home, recalls, "My son ran past me and said, 'Dad, they're shooting people.'"

WHO magazine 13/05/96, p.36

The first volunteer ambulance crew to arrive were Garry Alexander and Kaye Fox. On Jetty Rd outside the café, they immediately set about examining those outside laying about the bus park, and triaged café manager Bridget Cook - one of the first. Shortly Garry entered the café dining room to be met by a scene of total devastation. *"There were three bodies stacked on top of each other ... they had been trying to get out the doorway,"* he said. It was at this malfunctioning fire escape door Mrs Scurr had earlier been forced to struggle three of the bodies free of that pile, so as to check those beneath for signs of life... *"Time was meaningless that day,"* Garry recalled. Shortly after, the two Nubeena GPs Pam and Steve Ireland arrived at the Café the first Police Rescue helicopter landed on the oval, close by. ¹



Into the Breach:
Drs Pam & Steve
Ireland of Nubeena
treated the wounded.
In the aftermath, the
couple were abandoned
by their own controlling
body & government
alike.

Later in the Café environs after Drs Pam and Steve Ireland[†] arrived, they were shortly joined by a retired GP who assisted in keeping survivors alive along with Paramedics. But Mrs. Scurr easily recalls the male she first observed beside Mrs Loughton as it was his rather strange footwear that stuck fast in her mind; *"long white Wellingtons"* (rubber boots of the type slaughtermen wear). Other witnesses have said they noticed a male companion with this person, but his own account makes no mention as to who this friend could have been. Neither son could have been his 'companion' as he tells us both were 'helping outside', although neither are mentioned in any of the witness statements that I have studied either.

Background: Overbeeke & sons

Records show Hans Overbeeke (pronounced 'over-baker') emigrated from Belgium aboard the *Zuiderkruisin* in 1961 at age 17 yrs, along with his parents and 3 siblings. In 1972 and aged 28 years Hans established *Stirling Heating & Cooling*, a modest small business he operated with his wife and partner Pauline, in Adelaide, South Australia. From around late 1996 and with the trading name changed to *Affordable Airconditioning*, the business was expanded considerably and moved to larger premises and a new location in the suburb of Frewville; this company expansion was impressive by any standard.



Zuiderkruisin

The company promotes itself as having over the last eleven years become, 'the largest residential Daikin dealer' in Australia, with claimed total sales over 2004/5, topping A\$40M.

Though somehow during this remarkable company expansion, Hans found time to complete his masters (M.D.Sc.) in 2003 at Sydney University and the Australian Institute of Building (NSW Chapter) selected Hans as the 'most outstanding graduate'. So now back to Port Arthur and the three Overbeeke males; Hans, Benjamin and Warren. ²



**The manager: Affordable
Airconditioning**

Some Quality Time

[†] Directly as a legacy of the post trauma, and 'psychological shock' the Ireland's 18 year marriage failed, with Steve moving to mainland. Then the radiating effects of the massacre touched Pam yet again in 2003, after her only son James returned from his employment near Alice Springs to be with his mother. Then on a Tuesday evening in September, he left his mother a text message; *"Sorry to do this to you, but it's the easiest way out. I'm in the shed. I love you Mum, James."* He was just 19-years-old. But the Tasman Peninsula still has a hold on Pam. Today with a partner she lives on a farm at the lovely Crescent Bay and practices under her maiden name; Dr Pam Fenerty.

Hans tells us he and his two sons “Ben” and Warren, then aged 20 and 17-yrs respectively, came to Tasmania from their Stirling home for a holiday. The three males had just completed a ‘five-day 75km Overland Track between Cradle Mt to Lake St Clair’ before they arrived at Port Arthur on the evening of Saturday April 27. Witnesses have said the party were seen taking overnight accommodation at the Backpackers Hostel on-site, although what transport they used to get to Port Arthur we cannot say. Also we are not informed if the party partook in that evening’s Ghosts Tour, although this would seem entirely likely.

But next day - Sunday 28th - and at about 1326hrs, **when the first muffled shots were discharged inside the Café**, Hans was reported to have stated he and both sons were *“200m away from the café.”* However his citation by the Australian Bravery Association tells us: *“Mr Overbeeke was in the car park with his two sons when he heard shots coming from the Broad Arrow café.”* Here an immediate problem arises, as the accounts are quite contradictory. But even if one account was correct (and neither of them are as I shall demonstrate), a further claim not only fails to clarify either account, but exacerbates the inaccuracies in both accounts; let me explain:

If one consults a map of the Port Arthur Historic Site (and I have also been there several time myself), it becomes obvious that ‘200 metres away’ from the Broad Arrow Café would place Mr Overbeeke and his sons far outside of the limits of the old upper and lower vehicle parks adjacent to the Broad Arrow Café beside Masons Cove! But favouring his 200m separation from the Café, the *Who* article further suggests, *“Immediately, he ordered the then bemused tourists in his vicinity to hide in bushes 250m away.”*

At this point Hans Overbeeke has entrapped himself in his own web of deceit. For acting as spokesman for an unnamed son, Hans is quoted in a caption under his photograph as stating: *“My son ran past me and said, ‘Dad, they’re shooting people.’”*³

So what are we told here? One of Overbeeke's two sons has just “run past” Hans who at the time claimed he was 200 metres from the Broad Arrow Café informing him people were being shot inside the Café. This indicates:

1. Hans and his two sons were most definitely not together in the car park as his citation clearly states. Nor were they,
2. ‘200 metres away from the café’ either as was reported and also,
3. Only one of his two sons is ever mentioned as interacting with Hans, but without him nominating which son he is referring too.

If Hans was 200m away from the Café when the first shots rang out and he “Immediately” began ordering people in his vicinity to hide in the bushes 250m away, then Hans had commenced issuing those orders before his son could possibly have run past him and alerted him to what was going on. Also his unnamed son would have to have been in earshot, when the first person, a *“...female with short grey hair came running out of the Café and she said, ‘There’s a man in there murdering people get out of her [sic] fast’”*, so as to have been alerted to the killings at the earliest possible time. The description of this female by witness John Godfrey and others is I believe Mrs Anne [Hillman](#).



Anne Hillman:
In charge of Ticket
Sales on that Sunday
in 1996

For up until this person's flight out of the Café's front door, people between the Café and the Information Centre were unaware there were people being shot and killed as a result of the “banging” or “thudding” they could hear, which many suggested appeared to have been coming from the Café roof. If Hans was as claimed 200m away from the Café during the initial minutes of the shooting, this separation alone would have accounted for a significant time lapse between when the first shots were fired until when his son ran past him

with the alert, "Dad they're shooting people"; that is unless Hans was expecting gunshots to ring out.⁴

But let's consider further claims regarding this person of interest. His Bravery Citation tells us:

"He and his sons immediately started to move people away from the café area to the ruins of the church and to patches of undergrowth where shelter was available."

Now really, this version of events is absurd. There were three males whom I will identify and several females that carried out this action: John Godfrey, Peter Stainthorpe (both Vietnam Veterans) and Ashley Law, a tour guide on the Site. Hans Overbeeke was not involved in this action. Surely Hans must hope people won't access and consider all of the witness statements and check the veracity of them. How could this person possibly be in two places at once? If Hans was 200m away when the first shots were discharged in the Café, then he surely would have been far outside the zone of voice influence over people between the Broad Arrow Café and the Information Centre who were even resisting the urging to move away to safety quickly, issued by at least Ashley Law a staff member and two Vietnam veterans, John Godfrey and Peter Stainthorpe the later standing there among them!

The other points I would make here is these: When the first shots were discharged inside the Broad Arrow Café, some 40 to 45 people (over half of them aged North American visitors), were standing about the Information Centre. Because of their war zone experience in Vietnam John Godfrey and Peter Stainthorpe smelt the burnt nitrocellulose powder from expended ammunition issuing forth from the Café entrance and realised a life-threatening shooting incident was in progress. They immediately began urging the crowd about them to move away quickly from the imminent danger. But it took the dramatic escape of the '*...female with short grey hair,*' to convey her graphic warning before even these visitors believed and began to move away to the west.

Now the various accounts in reports attributed to Hans Overbeeke cause further serious problems. You see, with regard to either he or his sons immediately moving people away from the café through a post'n-rail fence and across the open ground, 350m west to the church ruins is easily proven just nonsense.

The 'McLeod video' corroborates a signed statement to police by witness John Godfrey and his detailed submission to authorities on that phase of movement of people from the café area and the sequence of those events. The man in the slaughterman's white rubber boots does not feature in that tape. It's clear John Godfrey, Peter Stainthorpe and Ashley Law were the three males responsible for that phase when the three supervised visitors to move to the safety of the church ruins. As Mr Godfrey correctly stated, it was he and the other two men who moved conservatively, '20-30 aged North Americans' away from the Information Centre near the Café to the church ruins. The video evidence is unsupportive of Overbeeke's reported claims that people were ordered by him to take refuge in the bushes and then did so. One can conclude Mr Overbeeke was awarded a medal that rightly should have gone to other persons.

After the "gunman" departs

Recounting his version of events, Hans Overbeeke was reported as stating that 'his sons where helping outside' when he entered the Broad Arrow Café. Now I ask you to consider the disparity in the documented impact upon two people when they entered this slaughter-house.

Do you remember that quote (elsewhere in the text) made recently by Dr Bill Maguire - after nine years had passed? He was formerly an Australian Army doctor in the Vietnam War and he recounted the scene indelibly stamped upon his memory, when he first entered the Broad Arrow Café by stating:

"I never saw anything quite to equal what I saw when I went inside the Broad Arrow Café."

On the other hand, Hans Overbeeke is quoted as stating that when he entered the café, ***"It looked like a re-enactment, it didn't look real - but it was real enough."*** Does this not sound like a person almost disconnected from the carnage? We are further told he also noted matter-of-factly ***"...Most of them were shot in the head."*** Obviously he is confirming that he took a close look at the 20 or so bodies strewn around the café and gift shop, corroborating other witnesses' recollections of his actions there.

The Australian Bravery Association's medal citation tells us, **"Mr Overbeeke went to the café where he provided first aid to the injured..."** If Hans had been providing serious 'first aid' to any one of the 3 victims who remained alive in the Café then he would not have had time to make these observations. However Mrs Scurr and others remember him taking a close interest in the whole scene inside the Broad Arrow complex.

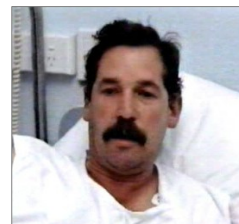
The *Who* magazine article tells us Hans Overbeeke - not his sons mind - carried out four specific actions; he (1.) ***"...found blankets to warm the shocked,*** (2.) ***made tea,*** (3.) ***manned the Broad Arrow's only phone and*** (4.) ***applied bandages to the wounded."***



Steven Howard

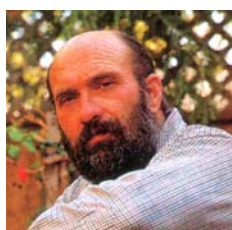
Let's deal with these claims individually:

1. **Blankets:** As I mentioned in the first paragraph of this article, when Mrs Scurr entered the café with her two colleagues she allotted them tasks. On this CD-ROM there's an article entitled *"My Experiences At Port Arthur On The 28TH April 1996,"* Mrs Wendy Scurr provides the following quote: *"I asked Sue [Burgess] and Steven [Howard] to go and help outside. Sue was manager and was needed. Steven went in search of blankets for me."* So Steven Howard went to the bulk store in the Information Centre and retrieved those blankets. More on the blankets shortly... Mr. Overbeeke does not state where he collected the blankets from that he alleges he distributed.



Peter Croswell - P15

2. **Made Tea:** Mentioned by a witness and confirmed by Mrs Scurr (who's attention was alerted by medical protocol) is a **"...man [who] kept bringing out cups of tea."** The man making this tea and taking out cups-full to uninjured survivors was in fact Peter Croswell, **"P15"**, who incidentally had suffered 3 separate gunshot wounds to his buttocks and was later conveyed to the RHH where he spent five days in care.⁵

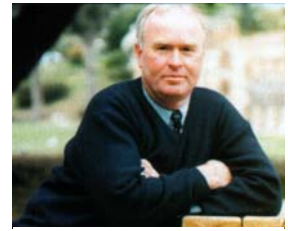


Phone monitor:
"Hans" Overbeeke

Manned the phone: When Hans gave an interview to the *WHO* magazine journalist and included his reference to *'minding the phone'*, he obviously did so without realizing the value of such information to an investigative writer. **Unmonitored**

communications in the whole scheme of this psychopolitical exercise by members of the public or staff be they foreign nationals or Australians, would have been an area of major concern. Isolation was a prime factor in choosing remote Port Arthur, possibly second only to the presence of large numbers of North American tourists. An innocent observation or description of the gunman perhaps in conflict with certain aspects of Martin Bryant such as age and height discrepancies for instance if channelled unfiltered to an independent media or such, surely would have ranked as a high priority to be intercepted by top brass.

There was just one public pay-phone on Site and as you can appreciate soon after the guns fell silent, many visitors began calling home. The phone soon became jammed full of coins, and as the key could not be found to empty it, the pay-phone was put out of commission.



The then PAHSMA CEO:
Craig Coombs

CEO Craig [Coombs](#) tells us though, there was a direct-phone situated in the Café, which management decided if made available to the public would keep the peace among distraught visitors who needed to communicate with loved ones. Here the plans of mice and men came undone.

The EMA papers tell us that this café phone was “manned” by, quote: “a visitor of great skill who later just disappeared into the night ... [he] acted as an operator just relaying messages on and off the Site.” So what are we being told here? ⁶

It is clear from official documentation and his reported claims we've gathered that Overbeeke acted as a “phone operator” or phone monitor; he was judge and jury as to all incoming and outgoing telegraphic traffic “off and on the Site”. Interestingly PAHSMA’s CEO was in charge of the whole Site until senior Police arrived, and he has not stated that he put this ‘visitor of great skill’ in charge due to some claimed former SES experience or other; it appears the visitor simply stepped into the role, or was he nominated by a superior there at the time?

So a queue was formed quickly, stretching right off the end of the Café verandah and prospective callers with pen and paper recorded their own relevant personal, details; name, address, contact phone number, along with the person’s contact name and details, destination phone number etc., and of course their short message. In other words ‘monitor’ Hans - not the caller - passed on or did not pass on as the case may be, the visitor's original message. So who would have retained all of the intelligence that Hans accumulated?

During the considerable period of time Hans Overbeeke acted as *phone monitor* and corroborated by video footage, we know that at least by 1456 hrs a strange black van with blacked-out windows - earlier observed at Seascapes - and bearing Commonwealth registration was parked right out front of the entrance to the Broad Arrow Café. This van remained there in the middle of the roadway for a further 2 hrs and 44 minutes until it departed at 1740hrs as attested to by the Tollbooth log. Now that is in the scheme of things is a considerable period of time! Its presence begs questions, like for instance:

- Which Commonwealth department was responsible for this van with the blacked-out windows?
- Who was the driver of the van?
- Did the driver carry any passengers in or out and/or what equipment was brought onto/or off the Historic Site in the van?
- With whom did the occupant/s of the black Commonwealth registered van converse for 2 hrs and 44 minutes?
- Did anyone from the 'black van' have any contact with Hans Overbeeke while there?

Even more importantly,

- Who authorised the use of this Commonwealth registered van and what was the purpose of the occupants’ 2 hrs 44 minute mission there?

3. **Bandages:** The entire scope of First Aid administered by Hans Overbeeke was confined to just one female survivor (P1) and the aid administered by him can be described as quite limited. Under the supervision of a St John's First Aid officer, Hans applied a pressure pad dressing in the form of a freshly laundered and folded 'tea towel', to stem the flow of blood. After inquiry and long research and apart from this instance, I have been unable to uncover any evidence to corroborate claims made regarding Hans Overbeeke applying First Aid to the injured - plural.

But what occupied the balance of the time Mr Overbeeke spent in and around the Broad Arrow Café as he claims he entered the premises after he saw the gunman depart up Jetty Road? Well we need to consider the observation of two other witnesses here.

- a. A visitor and trained nurse there that day, Jennifer Moors, was inside the Gift Shop, east of the dining area of the Café when the first shot rang out. Mrs. Moors sheltered with 4 others behind a hessian screen in the alcove at the faulty exit door. After the gunman had left the Broad Arrow Café, her niece Sarah Vanderpeer lifted the screen out past a body, so her auntie was able to extricate herself.

After checking the two young female staff members lying behind the counter for signs of life, Mrs Moors moved into the dining area. Within a short space of time there she observed, "Mr OVERBEKE (sic)... attending to a body," which she marked as table No.12 on the café diagram. Could this body have been that of either Andrew Mills or Anthony Nightingale? A point to keep in mind as this segment unfolds. Now three points should be noted here:

1. Her professional training obviously alerted Mrs Moors as a witness, that a breach of police protocol had occurred, and so she ensured she knew who it was that she had observed breaching that protocol.
2. Later, when providing her statement to police, Jennifer Moors demonstrates the degree of her concern over the incident by noting the person's name; 'Mr Overbeeke'.
3. As a trained nurse, importantly she uses the phrase "attending to a body" rather than perhaps 'checking a body for vital signs'.



*The man in the white
slaughterman's boots*

So what actually did occur in this one recorded event of 'attending to a body'? Was Mr Overbeeke actually searching the victim for ID for instance? Were there instances of Mr Overbeeke 'attended' to other bodies in the same manner that went unnoticed in the rush to save lives?

- b. In spite of the magnitude of the task of triaging, administering first aid, supervising colleagues and assisting three doctors, paramedics and Volunteer Ambulance officers present - Mrs Wendy Scurr distinctly remembers Mr. Overbeeke 'walking around the whole of the Café stepping around and over bodies', and in her words; "checking-out the whole scene" - his demeanour, actions and his footwear stood out as more than unusual. As well she noticed he hardly uttered a word. But this could not be put down to him suffering shock - as he tells us clearly the scene had little effect upon him.
- c. The first Police rescue Helicopter touched-down at about 1456hrs. Shortly before 1507hrs (when the second helicopter touched-down), Hans Overbeeke can be observed assisting to carry the first stretcher patient (P1) from the Café

down and onto the oval to the doorway of the first rescue helicopter. When the other stretcher bearers all leave, he remains being the last person to remove himself out of the cabin, close the door and walk away from the helicopter. But he doesn't return with the other helpers to the Café, instead he walks away on Jetty Road to the east out of frame.⁷

The "running man" video

Now to expand a little on the reported claim Hans Overbeeke made regarding *"...found blankets to warm the shocked...etc"*. As I have earlier confirmed, Steven Howard searched for and retrieved blankets and returned with them to the Café. I have not found any witness statement or viewed video evidence that is suggestive of anyone who could have been Mr. Overbeeke as having carried out this task.

Though it was some of these same blankets from the same bulk store that were captured on an amateur video (the Turner tape - of Horsham Vic.), in the arms of the so called "running man" who almost surely shows PAHSMA employee Mark Kirby running blankets down to the survivors near the buses.

A coach driver there on the day Ian McElwee, also searched for and retrieved blankets for survivors in and around the bus park. In her statement Lynne Beavis mentions retrieving blankets, though these came from storage on one of the other Coaches and not from the Site's bulk store. Reiterating, there exists no corroborating statements to support the reported claims attributed to Hans Overbeeke of *'finding blankets and passing them out to survivors'*.

From what I would suggest are early frames of the "running man" Turner video, captured from the eastern extremity of the Penitentiary wall (incidentally, from where Lynne Beavis and her sister Jean claim they ran to the Café), a male in a white top, dark trousers and striking white boots, darts from right of frame, out of the foyer of the Broad Arrow Café and in 3 strides is down the steps at the western end; here the continuity is shattered, edited by the handy work of the team at Nine network. In this edited version of the tape that went to air, a colossal subterfuge was perpetrated with dubbed gunshots ringing out, and studio captured voices apparently dubbed in which suggests, 'it's a shotgun' and 'see that man running there'. The tape is totally confusing and misleading to any unwary viewer! †



The "running man" video:
Made infamous by fraudster Joe Vialls who claimed it a "fake". It simply shows a staff member taking blankets to the wounded near the buses! The fraud was in the sound-track editing by Channel Nine.

But another clip of the same tape confirms Mr. Overbeeke spent a period of time leaning casually against the verandah post alone at the top of the steps at the entrance to the Broad Arrow Café as can be seen as a backdrop to the "running man". Neither of Hans Overbeeke's sons is visible in this footage though. Indeed the considerable amateur video tape footage we have on file captured that day around the Broad Arrow Café does not show anyone we can identify as either young man.

You should note the 'running man' video tape I refer to here was captured a considerable time after the shooter had departed the scene. Captured in the background of that video and I would suggest of equal interest is the male with white boots leaning, left hand on the verandah post in the first two frames of the series of still-frames lifted from the same amateur video tape. It was these frames "Joe" Vialls first circulated in September 1998, claiming Bryant's head was superimposed on the body in his attempt to promote the tape as a "forgery". Not surprisingly, the same ruse was attempted by an American who visited Tasmania on several occasions and after November of 2003 he came up with the same suggestions. He handed out as gifts to some of those he befriended of a baseball

† See chapter 4, Trojans & Viruses.

cap bearing the insignia "CIA". Although the caps were given in jest, it could well have been the only frank gesture made by him and was not lost on me or my colleagues, by the way. The video was indeed a forgery, but NOT in the manner described by Vialls or the American. In the foreground of these two still frames is a male member of the Historic Site staff (not Hans) carrying the blankets down to the buses.

I mentioned above the lasting impact the scene inside the café had upon the former military surgeon Dr Bill Maguire, an effect supported by many professional emergency workers experienced in aiding victims of motor vehicle accidents and the like. But what stands out as unusual regarding this member of the public Mr Overbeeke is exemplified when almost casually he tells us the wall to wall devastation inside the Café had little effect on him. He tells us that when his party returned to Hobart he didn't partake in trauma counselling although his sons, who he claims 'helped outside', were reported to have received trauma counselling back at Hobart. As if to excuse the *nil effect*, he is quoted as stating further, "*It affected me more to see the pictures in the paper.*"

If correctly reported, this statement raises even more questions about Hans as there were never any photographs of any of the victims or the wounded survivors captured at the crime scenes published by any media.

Or is Hans referring to the 35 thumbnail photographs that were lined up side by side in the pages of the *broad-sheet dailies* such as was published in the *Weekend Australian* on 4-5 May 1996? These thumbnail photos came into the public domain just a week before the *Who* article was published and sadly to say they even reminded me of the "kills" pilots in WW-II used to paint on the side of their fighters' fuselage, like 'kill trophies'...

But the controversy surrounding Johan Georges Overbeeke and his sons Benjamin and Warren has only heightened as time wore on. It took 18 months for the wheels of officialdom to grind out the list of those recommended for awards for acts of bravery during the massacre, and you may be unpleasantly surprised just how the award system was in my opinion, sullied.

Bravery; it has always been *fashionable*

The major daily newspapers kept on with the published articles as the public interest in so-called good-news-stories of Port Arthur were not allowed to evaporate; October 30, 1997 and the list of bravery awardees was published.

Out of the Port Arthur massacre incident 71 citations were awarded. For an "act of conspicuous courage", Robert John Elliott then of the Melbourne suburb of Vermont, was certainly deserving of the Star of Courage medal he received. In an attempt to intervene, Mr Elliott "P2" tried to grab the gunman in the café and immediately suffered extensive muscle damage in conjunction with a badly fractured left arm, as well as a wound to his head.

Nine individuals, 'for acts of bravery in hazardous circumstances,' were awarded the Medal of Bravery. Included in this group was mother of two, Mrs Lynne Beavis, another person of interest whom we shall consider in detail presently.

Thirty-five individuals were awarded a Group Citation for Bravery which read 'for a collective act of bravery considered worthy of recognition'; five of these recipients receiving the award posthumously.

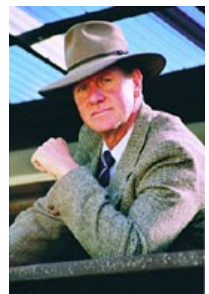
Some of the group citation recipients found the award experience so offensive they either have given their award into the trust of others, or simply refused to accept it at all. At least one person who answered the invitation made a very detailed submission to the Australian Honours Secretariat; his assistance to a considerable number of visitors in their senior years and the bravery of others he mentioned was simply ignored. In the case of Mrs Wendy Scurr, she has

entrusted the medal awarded her, to the St John's Ambulance Brigade, and today it rests behind glass in the Nation Headquarters in Canberra.

Mrs Beavis on the other hand was reported as stating, *"At the time [I] didn't want to receive the award; it didn't mean that much. ... But as time's gone on I guess it's important."*⁸

But it is among the twenty-six visitors listed as 'recommended for brave conduct,' that our Hans Overbeeke numbers and it was his receipt of this award that cemented an association of significance I believe, in the intrigue surrounding the whole of the terrorist exercise that was - the massacre at Port Arthur.

Hans Overbeeke's Citation of Bravery Certificate (CBC) entitled him to join the Australian Bravery Association. At the association's inaugural meeting of February 2000, Hans Overbeeke CBC stood for and was elected as the association's inaugural NT/SA, ABA State Vice President. Also of interest is the first national president elected at the same February 2000 meeting: Major John Thurgar SC MBE OAM RFD, of Bredbo, NSW. In light of the known heavy involvement of the security and intelligence 'family' during the Port Arthur incident, the Overbeeke-Thurgar connection in itself I believe, shouldn't be underestimated or relegated to a trivial status or just yet another coincidence. One question that some have raised is this: in light of Overbeeke's inaccurate claims as to his actions that day, apart from telephone monitoring skills, who would have dared to nominate Mr Overbeeke for such a high award for bravery? I'm sure if his nominator was identified, that could well prove of added interest.



John Thurgar SC
MBE OAM RFD

All "Skilled-up"

At age 17yrs John Thurgar, joined the Australian Army in 1967 as No.250334 and served firstly in New Guinea. He later saw 8 months active duty in Vietnam from February 1970 to late October 1970, with 1 SAS Sqn. So Mr Thurgar is SAS trained, as is our present GG.

Discharged in 1973, Thurgar joined the Army Reserve, completed officer training to then serve as an officer in 1 Commando Company (Sydney), 2 Commando Company (Melbourne) and the Reserve Staff Group in Canberra. Later in 1974 he joined the then Commonwealth Police, which later became the Australian Federal Police (AFP) in 1979, within the uniform and plainclothes branches.

In the AFP John Thurgar served four tours of duty with the UN Civilian Police on Cyprus at the rank of Chief Inspector and during those 4 tours he was awarded the Star of Courage (SC) for rescuing a Greek Cypriot farmer from an unmarked mine field. Many Tasmania Police also saw service at various times in Cyprus with this same UN deployment.

But it's his later skill resume within the AFP that that is of significance to this story; Mr Thurgar served in the Training, VIP Protection, Witness Protection, Counter Terrorist and General Duties Divisions.

Of these later acquired skills, I'm undecided as to which in particular could be suggested as of primary interest to the story and his subsequent links to Hans Overbeeke. But now we have to address the credibility of the allegations in reports attributed to Hans regarding the supposed actions by Benjamin and Warren that day.⁹

The sons of the father

As reports state Hans as claiming his sons were 'assisting people outside' the Café, how is it that neither son received even cursory recognition by authorities for what should have been acts of courage? Surely they should have at least received a mention...by some one.

Also, curiously neither son is mentioned in any document accessed by this author other than that of the WHO magazine.¹⁰ Why didn't the two teenagers at least receive a certificate of commendation from the Tasmania Police? These facts alone I believe are reason enough to search more diligently to see if any evidence exists supporting Hans' claims regarding Benjamin and/or Warren Overbeeke that may have been overlooked.

But the necessity for this search is heightened I believe, if for no other reason than the irrefutable evidence I have detailed above, which clearly demonstrates a significant degree of imprecision within the reported claims attributed to Hans Overbeeke when recounting his actions on the day, and that which I have been able to glean from those inaccurate reports.

Interestingly, as mentioned earlier, no signed statement was ever included among the hundreds of signed witness statements we obtained from authorities, which is attributable to Hans Overbeeke or indeed either of his sons; that in itself is quite odd. The Overbeeke trio almost slipped by my investigation, but for two witnesses. I've read and re-read the witness statements, and can find no reference to any action that could be attributed to anyone resembling Hans or either son, besides the single act of 'attending to a body', which comes to light in the signed statement of Jennifer Moors.



Ben Overbeeke

I find it even more bewildering when one considers Benjamin was then a blonde-haired 20-year-old of medium build; isn't it surely an irony, that a significant majority of eyewitnesses estimated the youthful gunman they saw in and about the Café - "the accused" - to be a blonde male 18-20 years-of-age. On the other hand the alleged perpetrator Martin Bryant was just 10 days short of his 29th birthday, and tall...

I'm perplexed by an inability to explain what role either son of Johans Overbeeke played out on that day. However after considerable investigation I have been able to establish that Benjamin Overbeeke is reputed to have committed suicide a while after his Port Arthur experience; I can but ask why?

There is yet another telling part to the Overbeeke story. As is mentioned elsewhere in the text, the Port Arthur Attorney-General's Discretionary Fund was raided by the Ministry and emptied of funds. But there were 207 claims lodged against this fund for 287 individuals. Claim number AD808/1/118 was lodged by Johan Overbeeke. The father tells us clearly in *The WHO* article his sons Benjamin and Warren were both right in the thick of this traumatic event, yet he has chosen not to lodge a compensation claim that would have surely seen benefit to his own flesh and blood? I'm firmly of the opinion this omission on the part of Hans was deliberate. Could it mean that just as the account provided of his claimed actions is easily proved a deceit, could it be that officially one or both sons were not visitors on the Historic Site that Sunday? Oh by the way, these compensation records have a "D" notation attached - 'Access Denied for 25 years'...should we really be surprised?

My Sister & I...

Nine days after the massacre, Lynne Suzanne Beavis stated, *"my sister, Jean ANDREWS and myself flew to Tasmania for a ten day holiday."* Please keep this opening statement by Mrs Beavis in mind as by her statement alone to police, the sisters' story unfolds. Of equal importance; no police statement from Jean (or Joan) Andrews is held in my files, if indeed one exists; or did the authorities choose not to release it?

Beavis tells us she was 40 years-of-age (b.08/03/56) in 1996 and that she resided in the delightful outer-eastern suburb of Melbourne, Mt Evelyn. Though from two articles, one in March 2002, the other 8 years after Port Arthur in August 2004, there seems to be a three year discrepancy, suggesting that she may well have been 45 years-of-age.

My inquiries show Lynne's sister Jean (a.k.a. Joan) Andrews in 2001 at least, resided with her husband in a Park St apartment in the inner-north Melbourne suburb of Moonee Ponds.



Lynne Beavis:
Commonwealth Bank
employee on a working
holidays that Sunday
28/04/96

In August of 2001, an incident occurred involving a public presentation by Wendy Scurr, Robin Cooper and Andrew MacGregor, as guests of the League of Rights in Melbourne. The three guests were scheduled to speak publicly at the Victoria Hotel in Little Collins St. As they arrived at the venue and at 'the eleventh hour', management cancelled the booking due to an anonymous threat of violence. Fortunately a community minded medical doctor offered the use of his rooms at Wantirna, an eastern suburb of Melbourne and so the meeting was transferred there with most of the people travelling out by car. When a colleague explained this incident later to Lynne's brother-in-law Neville Andrews, he retorted, "Oh, I live just around the corner from there." An odd claim when you consider Wantirna is about 35 km from Moonee Ponds...

In her opening passages, [Beavis](#) mentions in an indifferent style, an unsuccessful attempt at between 4.00-5.00p.m., on the Saturday afternoon of April 27, to secure a phone booking for accommodation for Jean and herself at Seascope, for that same evening.

When considered alongside her extensive list of outrageous claims within the rest of her statement, I can but conclude her statement is not credible. You see earlier she told us, she and Jean had been in Tasmania for **nine days** and the recommendation for Seascope had been made to her while in Melbourne, in fact before the sisters had departed. Tourists by necessity book accommodation in advance. I believe her claim is yet another furphy that of course cannot be checked out, but if she made the phone call, then be aware her claim suggests it was made just an hour or so before sundown on that Saturday. Further she alleges (but again it cannot be checked out) that her phone call went unanswered. As I have stated elsewhere in this work by that time on Saturday April 27, Seascope cottage would have had to have been under the full control of covert agents.

In the first weeks after the massacre Lynne Beavis was interviewed by Sarah Henderson, for ABC-TV's *7:30 Report*, in Melbourne. Her sister Jean on the other hand, fortuitously escaped the public eye entirely. Unlike Lynne, Jean even chose to avoid the two reunions attended by 50 or so survivors attended in Melbourne. But interestingly, at these Melbourne reunions, Mrs Beavis chose to establish a close relationship with the same survivor whom Mr Overbeeke gave very close attention to in the café remaining with the patient right until the "Squirrel" helicopter's door was latched. But as time has passed by the covert main players in this exercise have undergone a transformation almost like a metamorphosis. A number here at the Café have by their foibles been exposed under a truer, brighter light: Lynne Beavis, her sister Jean Andrews (Neville Andrews was not there on the day) Mr Overbeeke, Andrew Mills, Tony Kistan and Anthony Nightingale have all not escaped the lime light.

The Lynne Beavis portrayed by the media, exposes a contradiction that stands out like a sore thumb: introduced at every opportunity as a 'nurse' it was inferred she was what the public would understand to be a certified nursing sister:

"Lynne Beavis is a nurse who helped save shooting victims at Port Arthur in 1996. ... 'I was so scared but I am a nurse...'," she said.

Or this timid reference:

"A nurse from Melbourne, who did not want to be named,..."

Or this court report:

"A NURSE who said her life was ruined...etc," and we shall revisit this controversial article shortly. ¹¹

The claims as to her being a “nurse”, if considered singularly, Mrs Beavis may even try to dismiss them lightly, or suggest it was some misunderstanding on the journalists’ part. However, collectively these claims published of her being a “nurse” confirm a deliberate, misleading pattern over a considerable term.

But in her formal, signed, police statement - Lynne Beavis only ever refers to her primary skill once: “*I have a nursing background...*” I would point out a nursing “background” is not equivalent to ‘being a certificated nurse’, a conclusion further confirmed by her own recount of her alleged actions after the gunman had departed the car park near the Broad Arrow Café that day.

It took eight years and an extraordinary article by Christine Caulfield, a journalist from a Murdoch paper, to expose a true picture of Lynne Beavis’ occupation in which she’s described as an “*occupational health and safety nurse.*” Along with other revelations, this article brings into focus a truer picture of the role Lynne, her sister Jean (and for that matter later on Neville Andrews) and the part played in the whole of the exercise that was the massacre, even although Jean and Neville Andrews are not mentioned in the Caulfield article.

Beavis must have become an OH&S “nurse,” very soon after these positions were created in Victoria. For if we look at the requirements as laid down by the authorities for entrance as an OH&S nurse, we find that persons employed prior to 1980 in OH&S as a ‘nurse’ at either ASIA or MSIA level, saw the government of the day, ‘for a number of reasons,’ quash the need for the applicant to undertake any ‘extended tertiary study in nursing’. The Minister’s bureaucratic scribes claiming that this would be ‘inappropriate, for such people’; a rather simplistic excuse I would opine, as the many years of ever *decreasing* nationwide pool of certificated nurses to draw upon a more likely excuse. In the case of Lynne Beavis though, her actions are suggestive of her never having numbered among that shrinking pool of certified nurses.

When earnest consideration is accorded Lynne Beavis’ statements made on national television one is forced to conclude:

- Beavis had little knowledge of even basic first aid skills, and
- Demonstrated no practical hands-on nursing skill to treat sick and injured people.

So let us try to piece together some of the movements of Lynne and Jean on the day.

Beavis would have us believe Jean was there by her side; a claim that conveniently “pads” her account as the need arises. I believe this is no more than a ploy to account for movements over a significant period of time and for which neither have any independent corroboration.

If we consider the substance of the ABC-TV, *7:30 Report* interview with Sarah Henderson in ABC-TV’s Melbourne studios (probably conducted early in June 1996), her behaviour was indicative of a badly traumatized person. Nevertheless, so many of Beavis’ claims do not stand up to scrutiny. Her allegations are not corroborated by, or in harmony with accounts provided by a number of other credible witnesses.

Although as I suggest above, Lynne Beavis appeared badly traumatized, when it’s all said and done, it could well have been just an ‘academy award performance’ before the ABC’s cameras. By her presentation though, Beavis destroyed once and for all any preconceived notion the viewer may have held that Sarah Henderson was interviewing a trained nurse.

During the bulk of the interview, Sarah Henderson asks just 2 questions of Lynne Beavis producing a response of more than 750 words.

It’s fair to say that Lynne Beavis was accorded latitude, far in excess of the norm; she was never interrupted or manoeuvred through her story; it was her version of events, a version



Information Officer:
Paul Cooper

never scrutinized. She wasn't even asked to explain or expand on her claims of a single issue in the incident.

Speaking from long personal experience in dealing with electronic media interviews over the past 20 years I can but conclude the interview was either well directed and/or rehearsed.

When considered carefully alongside a number of other credible witness statements, the document Lynne Beavis supplied police, while cleverly constructed, in my opinion constitutes 5 pages of "theatre"; a vague, imprecise and generously 'padded', emotional account of her claimed movements, punctuated regularly by suggestions of corroborative support available from her sister. In her statement:

- "My sister" is used 13 times, (i.e. actions allegedly witnessed by Jean) while,
- "we" - in reference to joint actions by Lynne and Jean is employed no less than 48 times.

Almost suggestive of the notion; *'Don't question my movements lest you force me to call on my sister who'll corroborate my claims'* - a strategy as old as time. To put it another way, Jean was been given an alibi and in a backhanded way Lynne believes she has given herself an alibi.

It also is of considerable significance that in her signed statement she mentions by name a tour guide on the day, Paul [Cooper](#). For after studying this case closely, I would contend Paul Cooper is noted very deliberately by Mrs Beavis on those three occasions. I suggest this is so after considering the degree of inaccuracies of claims she makes, which expose the degree of importance she has placed in this 'name dropping' or 'padding'. You see, Mr Cooper was a tour guide also on the previous evening's (Saturday the 27th) Ghost Tour; the same tour said to have been taken by two mystery females - allegedly called 'Julie and Virginia' - who were guests at Seascope that same night. An aspect of the massacre covered in chapter 15.¹²

On the Sunday afternoon, it was the same Mr Cooper who came across a couple of mystery females he subsequently discovered were occupants of a "clone" yellow Volvo sedan they had parked in a restricted and concealed area, on Tramway St, near the Clougha. Were these mystery females in each case named Lynne and Jean? What better subterfuge could have been employed to confuse every person who heard the advice of the 'gunman is out!' and saw with their own eyes his yellow Volvo?.

If I'm correct, this does go some way to explain the glaring discrepancies and apparent inventiveness within the Beavis statement. You see, if Jean Andrews had been witnessed anywhere in the south western sector of the Historic Site, near the "clone" yellow Volvo, after the shooting, her presence there could be explained away by Lynne's claim in both her police statement and the *7:30 Report* interview, in which she infers Jean took survivors (south) "up" to tea rooms. However that doesn't explain how Lynne could be in two places at once. Can you see the importance for 'padding statements' if my conclusions are correct?

You see, during the minutes involving the frantic efforts to stabilize the seriously wounded as the ambulances rescue helicopters and paramedics arrived, the "clone" yellow Volvo disappeared off the Historic Site; this final manoeuvre even evaded detection by any of the staff. It happened this way:

John Godfrey and Peter Stainthorpe agreed with Ashley Law that he should have the large group of North America visitors move into the safety of the Government Cottage as he inspected the Parsonage deciding it was too open. Also involved in this operation were two other staff members; Vicky McLaughlin and Paul Cooper. While the two Vietnam Veterans were

north near the Church ruins on Church Road, they had planned to intervene should the gunman return down Church Road to the area of the Church. So both veterans had the tollbooth area under surveillance.

As they watched, they saw the gunman at the boot of Martin Bryant's Volvo, parked below the tollbooth, and then saw him disappear up past the Tollbooth carrying items to another vehicle. Then Ashley Law returned to tell his new-found friends, that to his surprise he'd found a male staff member hiding under a table in the Parsonage. It was at this point, Ian Kingston came out of the Parsonage and *'yelled at Ashley Law to go up to the Tollbooth and check on the wellbeing of Aileen Kingston who was working there'*. John Godfrey told me recently that when this instruction was issued, he immediately voiced his concern as it posed a definite risk to Ashley Law's wellbeing as neither of the veterans had seen the gunman leave the Tollbooth and so he suggested, 'Perhaps it would be a good idea if I was accompany you Ashley'.

But [Ashley Law](#) did approach to within 50m of the Tollbooth alone seeing, "a body with a small pack on their back lying face down on the Toll Road," and the Volvo parked with the driver's side door open. Realising to approach any nearer was "stupid", he ran straight back to the JMO cottage. Though shortly Ashley Law did go up to the Tollbooth in a vehicle with Geoff Meyers the manager of the Motor Inn and he noted *"in the 10 odd minutes I was away someone had placed a white plastic garbage bag over the head"* of that same deceased person on Jetty Road.



Information Officer
Ashley Law

It was right in amongst all of this activity that Ashley Law was central to yet another heart-stopping incident, involving the "clone" Volvo and this time a lone female driver. This second incident was witnessed by a number of people but we shall have Ashley Law provide his account:

"Between the church and the JMO's a yellow Volvo appeared behind us. People screamed, it was then realised it was somebody on site with an earlier model Volvo. I yelled to Vicky [McLaughlin] to stop the driver and tell them to get out - the reason being that if police arrived they may mistake the driver in the car [as the gunman]. Vicky was moving the people inside & Anne Hillman who was on duty in that building." ¹³

So, numbers of reliable, independent people witnessed the presence of this yellow "clone" Volvo, appearing at significant and different times and in restricted locations, which involved two females one of whom was absent on the last occasion. The other significant factor to consider is the obvious dramatic effect upon traumatised visitors and staff alike, because this yellow Volvo sedan was so like the gunman's yellow Volvo it caused the visitors to scream out with fear.

You must understand that contrary to her signed police statement, **Lynne Beavis and her sister Jean had definitely not flown to Tasmania for any ten day holiday**. Lynne Beavis was in fact working; she was on the job at the Broad Arrow Café and its precincts that day as is proven by the fact she received an undisclosed six-figure workers compensation settlement before the County Court in Melbourne in August 2004. The next question I believe we need an answer to is this: **"If Beavis was working while she and Jean Andrews were at the Port Arthur Historic Site that Sunday and as she was not delivering 'grief counselling' that afternoon or the evening, what was her job description there that day?"**

It is quite plain that Lynne Beavis was working closely with her sister Jean, and so I believe they cannot be separated. What ever they were doing, was a collaborative effort. So what role was Jean (or Joan) Andrews fulfilling? While Lynne also lodged a claim, D808/1/8, against

the Port Arthur Attorney-General's Discretionary Fund, strangely her sister Jean Andrews didn't.¹⁴

You see in 2004, we are told Mrs Beavis' job description was indeed that of a 'grief counsellor' after being recruited by the international company called Audiometrics of 814 Glenferrie Road, Prahran and hired to support Commonwealth Bank staff, a responsibility I should point out, expected of her in spite of the fact the article tells us she had "no formal training". We are also told she successfully sued the 'job agency' Audiometrics along with her employer the Commonwealth Bank, receiving "a secret six-figure payout" as she was repeatedly hospitalised suffering PTSD and herself at no time receiving 'critical-incident stress counselling'.¹⁵

In her police statement, three times Mrs Beavis claims both her and sister Jean kept to their planned itinerary, and flew out of Hobart at 2200hrs (9.00pm) back to Melbourne. Here several important details need emphasized:

To reach Hobart Airport and arrive in time to board their 9.00pm flight back to Melbourne, the sisters had to allow for the extended 2 hr road journey from Port Arthur as the direct route past Seascapes remained closed by police. But yet another incident at the Historic site that evening adds considerable weight to a further conclusion that Lynne and Jean must have departed the Historic Site for Hobart well over an hour before police gave the all clear and long before 1830hrs.

You see it was at that time, 1830hrs (6.30 pm), 3 shots rang out on the Site thought to have originated from the area beside the *Clougha*. This incident re-enforced the notion among many of the hundreds of visitors, staff (and not forgetting the one armed and two unarmed uniform female police at the scene), that the lone gunman had escaped the police cordon around Seascapes, returned to the Historic Site and discharged those 3 shots.

Examining all available material in the public domain, I can find no reference by Lynne Beavis to this most important and traumatic incident. Therefore I'm compelled to conclude the sisters must have departed the Historic Site before 1830 hrs.

Although in her statement Lynne tells us that after police and SES personnel began cordoning off the areas in the vicinity of the Café, "We then assembled in the top car park area [near the information centre] and I gave my details to Police before we left...,"

There are many other claims made by Mrs Beavis, which I also find of significance.

Remember Mrs Beavis is supposedly a "nurse" and she casually notes 'giving her details to police' before herself and Jean depart, though no time is provided. I can say with surety that Detective Hessmann must have been the recipient though, for the two young rookie Constables, Ali Dennis and Rhani Ahmed who'd arrived at 1730hrs, had to have been tasked to guard the Tollbooth and upper Jetty Road crime scenes; remember it was Ali Dennis who tells us that a 'fire engine came roaring down the highway' and they heard the driver yell out '*he's out, he's out, the police don't know where he is, he's shooting, he's coming this way*'.

The point here being for the Constables to have witnessed that event, they had to have been near the highway (around the tollbooth) and their witnessing this event certainly could not have happened down Jetty Road near the Café! The two female Constables were not anywhere to be seen near the Café either as the wounded were finally processed and in the care of ambulance officers, as attested to by Wendy Scurr.

Also, Beavis deliberately makes no mention as to what form of transport they arrived and departed the area by, nor where their vehicle was parked. Other visitors and staff were not

allowed to remove their vehicles from the car park. The sisters certainly did not muster with the rest of the visitors and staff at Port Arthur Motel, as likewise there is no mention of them walking there either. I'm left to wonder as to where, for how long and by whom were the sisters debriefed?

The Caulfield article claims Mrs Beavis was hired to 'support Commonwealth Bank staff in Victoria and Hobart traumatized in critical incidents such as armed robberies'; in the first place why the whole of Victoria, but just Hobart alone in Tasmania? Secondly, crime statistics show that in Victoria and Tasmania throughout those years, bank hold-ups and the like were inconsequential. Also, since when has the Commonwealth paid-out compensation to staff not only on holidays, but it would appear outside of her defined workplace area? The article claimed Mrs Beavis was flown to Hobart, after the event, 'to counsel up to 200 bank workers who had lost loved ones in the tragedy'. She may have made a return visit, but how could she possibly have counselled "200 bank workers"?

This claim was central to the plaintiff's case, that is, "the day after the mass shooting", Monday, 29 April 1996 (having returned to Melbourne from Hobart on the 9.00pm flight the evening before), Lynne Beavis was, "flown to Hobart to counsel up to 200 bank workers who had lost loved ones in the tragedy." The article goes on claim that directly because of her having to counsel allegedly the impossible figure of '200 bank workers', in conjunction with her having no formal training in trauma counselling that her life was ruined.

After amassing and examining carefully an extensive compilation of documents, the allegation of Lynne Beavis being flown back to Hobart on Monday 29th to carry out this quite extraordinarily extensive counselling program of "200 bank workers" is ludicrous! In my qualified opinion the number of "200" is just a little exaggerated.

But I do accept it entirely probable that Lynne Beavis did return to Hobart on a commercial flight early on Monday morning and then with a companion made their way to Port Arthur and thence to the Broad Arrow Café. The only vital piece of evidence missing from the admissions allegedly made in this article is the time and duration of Beavis' visit into the Café on 30 April.

The Caulfield article alleges her legal counsel, Mr Ross Sicilia, explained that in the days following the massacre Mrs Beavis 'was forced to accompany a bank worker to the morgue to identify a dead relative'. Yes, and the adjective used in the article is "forced" and by that word use and giving both the journalist and the subject the benefit of the doubt I take it they mean in the sense of being "obligated" to carry out this task. The article goes further in relation to this action by quoting legal counsel as stating:

"She had to walk into a room of dead people, all suffering gunshot wounds. A lot of these people were mutilated or disfigured by a high-powered rifle. We're talking about people who couldn't be recognised," Mr Sicilia said.¹⁶

By inference, the reader is being told the 'room [full] of dead people' Lynne Beavis was obligated to enter, were somehow on show in the morgue; this is grossly misleading.

There was just one room of dead people and that was the Broad Arrow Café dining room and adjoining Gift Shop. Now the press were being accorded unprecedented privileges, that was placing undue pressures on the Coroner Mr Ian Matterson who tells us, *"prior to 0800 I received a telephone call indicating there was a desire by a government Minister to allow a bus load of press personnel on site around 0900."*¹⁷

This call obviously outraged the Coroner... But importantly he tells us that when the press were bussed to the Motor Inn, briefed and then walked up Church Road to the Tollbooth, they had to follow a strictly laid-down path and were not allowed to approach the Broad arrow Café any closer than 300m.

We are told that while the Coroner's team were working below the Tollbooth on Jetty Road at about 1045 hrs the Coroner was informed that Dr Pam Ireland, the Nubeena GP had "sought permission to enter the site." At 1105 hrs his report goes on to inform us Pam Ireland arrived with Walter Mikac and was granted the only documented visit to any of the crime scenes there onto Jetty Road near the Tollbooth, to view the bodies of his wife and two daughters. But if Lynne Beavis accompanied a relative (?) into the Broad Arrow Café to identify the body of Anthony Nightingale, then that has escaped entirely all official records.¹⁸

Then there is Matterson's claim regarding the press bussed to the Motor Inn. Recently claims attributed to a photographer of *The Mercury*, Leigh Windburn, suggest the bus-load of press were driven past Seascapes the Fox and Hounds to where the white Corolla in which Zoe Hall had died and that was still parked, with 'its window shattered and a large burgundy bloodstain across the sheepskin car seat cover', in the entrance to the Port Arthur General Store. Then it is claimed the bus took the media the 100 yards or so to the Tollbooth. This account continues by claiming that here, 'some of the journalists by this stage were so traumatised, especially the women, that they didn't get off the bus'.¹⁹

This was most certainly not the only official line under challenge! For the claims made by the coroner Mr Matterson in the EMA papers are now in question when recent revelations are considered. Recent publications claim no fewer than four persons were in that party on Jetty Rd, with the additional persons being Keith Moulton, the father of Anette Mikac and Kaye Fox the volunteer ambulance officer from Nubeena so quickly on the scene the day before!²⁰

You see, not only had the "six Crime Scene and two ballistics personnel ... from New South Wales," not completed their work in the Broad Arrow Café by 2.00 pm (1300 hrs), they had almost probably not even arrived at Port Arthur by this time. Various documents including the Coroner's report in the EMA papers, tells us that N.S.W. police forensic investigators were tasked to investigate this Café crime scene and were flown into Hobart on commercial airlines early on Monday morning of the 29th. So is it possible that Beavis accompanied by a mystery "bank worker", did take an exclusive visit into the Café under these quite extraordinary circumstances on Monday 29th of April before NSW forensic police had begun their examination of that crime scene? As the Coroner fails to mention this entry into a crime scene by Beavis, and her entourage, does this not constitute tampering with evidence? Yet again the public have been deliberately misled, in this instance by Ms Beavis' legal counsel Mr Sicilia.²¹

If the covert *revisit* by Beavis to the Café with her companion/s, while the 8 NSW forensic officers were yet to carry out their investigation of this crime scene and if the purpose of her entering the dining room was to have a "bank worker" positively identify a deceased Commonwealth Bank employee and a "relative", then the subject of this adventure had to have been Anthony Nightingale, a loans officer with the Commonwealth Bank at Keysborough a suburb of Melbourne, who when gunfire erupted in the dining room had jumped to his feet and yelled out, "No, no, not here!", prompting the gunman to target him and shoot him dead. But who was the relative[§] of Anthony who accompanied Beavis back into the café on Monday 29th? Are they seriously suggesting the CBA flew this mystery relative and Beavis to Tasmania and drive down the Peninsula to identify the body? To my knowledge this was the only such excursion of compassion undertaken by anyone in this incident and all to identify just one among all of the 35 deceased on the very next day? Surely this episode is nothing less than a typically poor attempt by the "firm" to cover-up collateral casualties of a covert action that didn't go according to plan. The forensic evidence contained not only within but by the whole Broad Arrow Café complex was certainly that Monday under a concerted attack by various persons entrusted with the crime scene's security and integrity.

[§] Anthony Nightingale was the only Commonwealth Bank employee mentioned in any documents that I have accessed who was shot and killed inside the Broad Arrow Café. However, Anthony was not married & was buried with his parents in their grave in Fawkner Cemetery, Melbourne.

If we consult the Bugg Report we find the following astonishing admissions, only the time of commencement and conclusion have been omitted by its author:

"On the 30th April 1996 a carpenter employed by the Authority was required to paint out the windows of the Café building and secure the doors and windows (with the exception of the disabled persons entrance door) against unwanted entry. This was effected by nailing the doors and windows to their frames. At the time this was done the person concerned, who had heard of the suggestion that the door had not opened, checked the lock with the aid of a Police officer who was inside the building at the time. The Police officer operated the handle inside, whilst the carpenter examined the tongue of the door locking mechanism from the other side. The tongue moved slightly but would not retract sufficiently to enable the door to open." ²²

In effect, what has been put on the public record here is a brazen admission by the Director of Public Prosecutions for Tasmania, Damian Bugg QC, that he was very aware of a felony having been committed by Police and PAHSMA's maintenance man. Police should have been tasked to secure all crime scenes including the Broad Arrow Café to ensure their integrity was maintained. Instead Damian Bugg cannot hold some higher ground here in the hope of securing immunity. He has exhibited a gross indifference to police having willingly and knowingly participated in acts of tampering with and or even destroying vital evidence of a crime scene and has done naught about this unacceptable situation. So how would a further entourage traipsing through the dining room, doing who knows what, contribute further to this outrageous corruption!



Andrew Mills:
agent

It should also be pointed out, the 'carpenter employed by the Authority' was in fact Mr Peter Edwards. It was he who allegedly nailed-up the doors and windows of the Broad Arrow Café, although I would contend that the southern glass door with the faulty fire escape latch-set wasn't nailed up on Monday 29 April; this door must have been nailed-up at an earlier time. Though the obvious question remains; "Nailed up by whom and for what purpose"? Allegedly it was Mr Edwards who also blacked-out the windows. Edwards for a short time was promoted to the unlikely role of staff counsellor although PAHSMA was soon forced to remove him from that position. In the case of Mrs Wendy Scurr, she was informed by Edwards on at least one occasion that if she failed to attend counselling sessions in his office, then hope for any workers compensation would be diminished. Mrs Scurr then attended, but sat with her arms



L-R: Tony & Sarah Kistan

folded and refused to utter a word. When challenged as being uncooperative, Mrs Scurr explained that she wouldn't be saying a word to him, as after the previous visit and within the hour, other staff called her and repeated exactly what had been said to him in confidence and he was told in no uncertain term where he could go. Edwards left the employ of PAHSMA at the Site not too long after the massacre and took-up a position in the clerical area of security at Risdon Prison. Now let us return to the Beavis matter.

When all the information collected is considered I'm forced to conclude that Lynne Beavis has links with at least 3 persons who died in the Café:

1. Anthony Nightingale seated alone at table 8 and facing towards the servery.
2. Mr Tony Kistan and Mr Andrew Mills both from Sydney and seated at table 12.

After Andrew MacGregor received information from 'retired security force members' relatively early in this investigation, he publicly named Anthony Nightingale and homosexual Andrew Bruce Mills, as both ASIO agents in the employ of the Federal Government at the time of their untimely demise. While Nightingale was unaccompanied at table 8, the court documents tell us Mr Mills was seated at table 12 and in the company of [Sarah](#) and Tony Kistan. As already

detailed by me in Chapter 14, Tony Kistan until at least 1982, is remembered by his son as 'always a political activist' in South Africa opposing the apartheid policies of the Botha Government.

What this tells us is that Kistan was heavily involved with the communist ANC in South Africa, and in 1982 he fled that country along with his family, opting to settle in Sydney, where Tony gained employment with the Salvation Army. In 1982 a parcel bomb had killed Ruth First, the first wife of the late Joe Slovo, the exiled Lithuanian Jew, KGB Colonel and leader of the ANC, before the Kistan family had left for Australia. The public record demonstrates Nelson Mandela hotly resented Cape-Coloureds involved in the ANC; when parcel bombs started arriving in the mail, a healthy reason to emigrate I should think.

Thirty-nine-year-old Andrew [Mills](#) was formerly from the inner Sydney suburb of Summer Hill, and he moved to Tasmania and chose to live at Port Arthur in March of 1996 supposedly to enjoy the 'quiet life' - just 2 weeks before the massacre. It would appear that a supposed relative - Charles Thomas Bruce Mills - lodged a claim - AD808/1/105 - against the Tasmanian Government's insurance fund. Mills was an executive officer employed by the chemical firm of CIBA and was reputed to be involved in an education scheme called 'Landmark'. While a resident of Summer Hill, he is reputed to have organised the 'Summer Hill Parade'.



"Partners" in 1996:
Andrew Mills & David
Capper

His [partner](#) David Capper, also formerly of Summer Hill and a noted friend of the Kistans, came to reside with Andrew in Port Arthur. At that time Capper was employed in Hobart and was at the time of the massacre working at the Clarence Hotel.

A former friend Ms Sandra Groom of Summer Hill was reported to have stated that Andrew Mills planned to open a guest house on the Peninsula and so that is why he chose to reside there. But Mills had for a significant time been a 'close friend' of Tony Kistan and was seated with Tony and his wife Sarah when the shooting commenced in the Broad Arrow Cafe.

Aged 44 years, Anthony Nightingale was witnessed rising to his feet and crying out "No no, not here," but nowhere in any of the eye witness statements that I have examined does anyone actually name Nightingale as the person who rose to his feet and cried out "No no, not here." Crazy as it may seem, it was the DPP who named Anthony Nightingale as that person! This surely was a Freudian slip. For in doing so, Bugg let the cat out of the bag! If witnesses didn't inform Damien Bugg QC who uttered these words, then how did he know the person's identity?

Nightingale was seated alone, but the DPP's ... dare I say gaffe ... tells me that a colleague or close friend and witness to the shooting must have informed the DPP, for how else would Bugg have known who uttered those words? It becomes obvious because of the sensitive nature of such a witness' purpose there surely would dictate their employer would have desired little or no attention. It seems an irony that a search of "justice" has only opened-up a can of worms.

So Bugg makes another blunder - so what? Perhaps, like the gunshot recorded while "Jamie" spoke to the police negotiator, and Mrs Beavis' court appearance this could be described as a fortuitous coincidence - for the public good at least in these instances.

Then there is the small article (330 words) to consider, that was published in the periodical *WHO* magazine. The narrative tells us that the gunman had 'left in his car,' when Beavis began to run for the café; so far so good. But then Lynne, referred to again "as a nurse", is quoted as stating, "As I was running, we made eye contact and I could see his gun sticking out the window." Now just a moment! The article has just informed us that the gunman had departed in his car; that is past tense. How then could Lynne Beavis claim she and the gunman had eye contact as she and Jean (or Joan) ran from their cover at the SE end of the penitentiary ruins

towards the Café? What all of this means is that to begin with between 225 and 260 metres minimum separated Beavis from the gunman's car! I would contend this claim attributed to Beavis is a physical impossibility. Oh, and the gun she saw out of the Volvo's window; the gunman was in the driver's seat on the opposite side of the vehicle to Lynne. Words fail me...

As if to punish the reader's intelligence, Beavis is reported as stating further, **"As I walked towards the café, the doors and windows kind of exploded with people."**

1. In the first instance, in her statement to police, and even when she was making her outrageous claim of "eye-contact" above, she states she was "running" not walking.
2. There were 4 exterior doors in total at the Broad Arrow Café;
 - The rear door; hidden from her view,
 - The western door; no one exited that door from the dining room and
 - The exterior (fire exit) door on the southern or front wall of the Gift Shop the lock of which was inoperable.
 - The front entrance door to the foyer was the only door in Beavis' line of sight.

Then there is the reported claim of people exploding out of windows:

1. Just one window on the western side, also hidden from Beavis' line of sight, which exhibited bullet damage and we know this damage occurred moments before Wendy Scurr made her initial "000" call logged at 1.32 pm.

There's not an instance recorded of any person "exploding" through a window and why would they be exploding through windows when the gunman had already departed up Jetty Road? ²³

If the foregoing has not caused enough problems for any credibility Lynne Beavis ever enjoyed, then consider this ruse: At the time the shooting began, she tells us her immediate thoughts were, *"...that kids were standing on the bluff at the rear of the cafeteria and throwing pine cones onto the roof..."*

Upon hearing these "thuds" Beavis claims that they both ran from the western extent of the Penitentiary ruins to the eastern limits of the ruins before she was alerted by others visitors that the "thuds" were actually gunshots. Why would anyone have run 150m to the eastern end of the ruins because pine cones were being tossed on the Café roof by kids? Lynne and Jean may not have been expecting gunshot in the Café, nevertheless, her stated reactions tells me both were expecting gunshots!

After accepting a warning from other visitors, we're told the sisters moved further away (into the ruins) to the shelter of "a small brick wall" - an internal wall of the Penitentiary ruins - and so the Broad Arrow was out of sight to them.

Here a remarkable incident occurs: as the gunman ceased this first killing phase in the Café, he reloaded before exiting the Café foyer, then stepped out and paused on the entrance steps. At this point and in Lynne's own words, he ***"fired one shot which appeared to come on (sic) our general direction."*** This is at odds with other eyewitnesses, one of whom stated, once the gunman was *"...down off the balcony of the Café ... one or two of the shots he fired in a south eastern direction. He then turned and started shooting towards the Penitentiary."* ²⁴

On the first visit to Lynne's home by Victoria Police, they showed her a manila folder containing 30 coloured photographs of males. Not forgetting Beavis was at no time closer to the gunman than approximately 225m from the Broad Arrow Café steps - nevertheless from the photo board Lynne Beavis identified the gunman as a photo captioned "number 5".

How could this be so? Well this can be easily understood when one realises the "police photo board" had 30 coloured photos on it, 29 of which were just 'mug-shots', but importantly **one photo alone**, not a mug shot, but a half-length photograph presented **the only blonde, long-**

haired young male on the board and Numbered No.5! This blonde male was even wearing clothes similar to or the same as that worn by the gunman on the day!

This action on the part of police has been confirmed as consistent throughout there inquires by other witnesses, and you must understand such evidence is quite inadmissible in a Court of law, so police must have been aware that there was no likelihood of any trial by jury for the accused and the 'mug boards' were nothing more than aids to convince witnesses the perpetrator was Martin Bryant.

While peering from behind their refuge at the eastern end of the Penitentiary ruins, Lynne and her sister (if indeed she was with her) could look directly up the straight of Jetty Road, towards the Tollbooth. So, unlike many hiding behind the Café and round about in the bush, I believe Beavis and her sister were tasked to be at the eastern end of the ruins at the appointed hour so as to be in the vantage point there to observe the Jetty/Café precincts at the cessation of that segment of the operation. She knew exactly when the gunman had at least departed the immediate area.

Now Mrs Beavis states, *"I looked over the wall again and saw a yellow coloured Volvo sedan drive out of the top car-park and head towards the toll-gate. This vehicle had a surfboard on the roof. I recognised the driver as being the same person who had been standing on the verandah with the gun."*

This is a truly remarkable feat. For the Volvo was passing across her field of view, right to left and so she would only have barely been able to see the driver if at all, sitting farthest away from her and visible across the interior through the vehicles passenger side window with his face in partial shadow. Remember this second identification by Beavis was like wise accomplished from a quarter of a kilometre away!

Among the hundreds of witness statements I can find no reference directly to Lynne Beavis or her sister or to actions that I can identify as being those of either of them - that is other than it being my qualified opinion, both these sisters were involved with the "clone" yellow Volvo sedan there that day.

Remember the two females questioned by Paul Cooper near the Clougha cottage? The fact didn't escape this writer's attention that of all the staff on site that Sunday, Paul Cooper alone is named by Lynne Beavis no less than on four occasions in her statement to police.

The absence of a reference to Beavis by anyone doesn't fit with the claims she and others make, in her signed statement, reports and interviews. I wonder who nominated Lynne Beavis as worthy of the Bravery Medal issued, "for acts of bravery in hazardous circumstances". In part her citation reads:

"...Ms Beavis, a nurse, administered first aid and assisted the traumatised tourists and relatives of the dead even though she could still hear a gun discharging and did not know if the gunman would return. When doctors and ambulance officers arrived she continued to assist them with the injured." - My emphasis.

Many of her claims in the police statement and Beavis' citation (as is also the case with Hans Overbeeke), are pure fabrication and fantasy. Close examination of witness statements, interviews and the non-existence of corroborative evidence to those claims demonstrate clearly the extent to which the ABA and the citations for both these individuals entirely misrepresent the facts regarding of their actions on the day.

One of the most telling realities, which expose the fraud of Lynne Beavis, is confirmed in her own account: Let's retrace the path Lynne Beavis (and her sister Jean) supposedly took as she ran headlong from her refuge at the eastern extent of the Penitentiary ruins, to the foyer of the Broad Arrow Café. In the *7:30 Report* interview, Sarah Henderson suggests:

SH: You obviously have been a very brave woman in what you have done.

LB: People tell me that. But ... I didn't feel brave and I still don't think I feel brave. ... I was scared then ... I'm still scared now. ... I just felt that I couldn't live with myself if somebody had died while I was cowering ...behind a wall when I could have done something for them. - My emphasis.



Broad Arrow precincts: The path Lynne Beavis took to the Café is indicated by red arrows, past the guard house - (yellow arrow).

In her statement to Police Beavis states: *"The persons were laying [sic] on the ground behind the first bus. I have a nursing background and I felt that I should help those in need of medical assistance and decided that I would go to them."* So Lynne Beavis is telling us she was very aware that 'persons were lying on the ground,' near the bus closest to her.

But she deliberately chose NOT to 'go to them'! Her movements were as follows: along the seawall, across the bridge and over the creek, west around and beside the oval, with its picket fence at her left-hand side, through the lower bus park at her right hand side, right past the tiny guardhouse, past a camper van on her left, across Jetty Road and up to the Café entrance.

Lynne with her "nursing background" ignored entirely the 4 wounded and/or dying people she says she was aware of lying there on the ground in and about the buses. Beavis almost had to trip over Bridget Cook who was first triaged by the first ambulance officers Garry Alexander and Kaye Fox when they arrived at the Broad Arrow; she lay near the little guard house, with category 2 wounds to both thighs. Bridget Cook by herself stemmed the bleeding with the apron she wore, as she proudly recounted to Mrs Scurr - her colleague and First Aid instructor - who attended to Bridget's wounds again after emerging from the Broad Arrow. Lynne Beavis falsely claims it was her who assisted Bridget Cook. Ian McElwee assisted Bridget first.

Beavis repeats the claim that she entered the Broad Arrow Café on 3 occasions; but in her own words, *"I couldn't really help these people and I left the cafeteria for the third time"*. Beavis rendered no First Aid assistance to any of the survivors in the Broad Arrow Café. On two of these three visits Beavis just retrieved "cloths". Lynne Beavis on one of her three trips inside claimed, having come from the kitchen from the café dining room and "overheard" a staff member making a phone call in the office; she returned to interrupt a "Cheryl Scurl" to tell her, 'No, the gunman wasn't driving a BMW, but a yellow Volvo'. Three point here: Beavis is almost surely referring not to a female named "Scurl", but to Mrs Scurr, even although Mrs Scurr cannot recall having seen and/or spoken to Mrs Beavis inside the Café that afternoon. As well, I know of no one inside the Broad Arrow Café administering First Aid to the injured who would have been aware of the vehicle swap at the tollbooth while they were processing the wounded! I also find it curiously convenient she should be reinforcing the yellow Volvo as the vehicle...remembering the clone yellow Volvo.

It is my qualified opinion after consideration of all the evidence, from her refuge in the ruins, when Lynne Beavis realised the massacre operation had gone to plan "B" and was going down inside the café, she knew her Commonwealth employed colleague, Anthony Nightingale (a junior officer I should opinion) and Andrew Bruce Mills (formerly from Sydney), were literally in

the wrong place at the wrong time, there at 'ground zero'; did protocols dictate she enter and check-out who exactly was left alive?

Can you imagine the shock and confusion if a field team had lost two of its officers? Upon entering the front door and finding two (or three) agents shot



to death, is surely no wonder, through tears and with a shaking voice on national ABC television she later stated: *"...[I] now look at it and think, I wish I never went into ... that cafeteria"*?

Nevertheless surely by her own free will, and subservient to no apparent protocol or obligation we are told of, she did go in and out 3 times - so she tells us, and then it would appear she was obligated to revisit the room full of dead bodies on Monday. An obvious proposition comes to mind here: The 'obligation' which was in force on Monday which 'forced' her to enter the room of dead people seems entirely logical to have existed and to be in place on the Sunday

- after all Ms Beavis was working wasn't she?



Lynne Beavis BM

Some may believe it quite unfair of me to criticise any of the people for their actions or inaction there on that day of mayhem. But does that mean we should ignore and by that ignorance condone certain people allegedly doing the bidding of covert forces so as those same people are then honoured while truth itself becomes victim because of their willing participation?

I would suggest any rational decent person should be appalled even nauseated by the above revelations alone. But in spite of all the foregoing, on March 10, 1997 at Government House in Melbourne, Lynne Beavis was awarded a Bravery [Medal](#) and her sister (like Hans Overbeeke) a Citation for Brave Conduct. These are outcomes, which diminish immensely the credibility and standing of the whole of our nation's bravery award system, and are a slap in the face for every decent minded person, survivor, and those who were deliberately denied awards, such as Peter Stainthorpe and John Godfrey.



Turning the pages:

L: Lynne Beavis attends Ms Loughton at her daughter's televised funeral service



Sarah Loughton
aged 15 years

But have you ever heard of journalists passing-up a photo opportunity of two brave sisters over one? Well a photograph of Lynne Beavis alone features in the *WHO* article covering the medal award ceremony in March of 1997, but it would appear Jean a.k.a. Joan is camera shy, as she was supposedly there also.

Now a further association fostered by Mrs Beavis requires recount here: From when Hans Overbeeke first entered the dining room of the Café, he became the constant companion of "P1", Carolyn Loughton, and was videoed as last to leave her side at the helicopter doorway. Mrs Loughton exhibited a propensity to anger and outspokenness from those first moments after the shooting. This attitude was evident in the media coverage of events where ever Mrs Loughton spoke in public on the matters. Carolyn lost her lovely 15-year-old daughter [Sarah](#) in the café and understandably as any mother would, she searched for answers. But as soon as Carolyn was discharged from RHH on 8 May and returned to her home in an outer eastern suburb of Melbourne, I was not surprised to learn that none other than Mrs Lynne Beavis became somewhat of a regular companion; Beavis was there providing the [closest support](#) possible to Ms Loughton at the service for daughter Sarah.

It has been alleged this close association was the cause for a trusted friend's isolation; Overbeeke supervised her after the shooting, could the powers-that-be have seen a need for

Beavis to take over this role back in Melbourne? Wildcards can prove a disaster in such circumstances.

Little wonder so many who gave of their best during this awful terrorist attack and are worthy of the highest awards we could give, have been forced to confine and share the knowledge of their brave acts with closest friends, loved ones or perhaps God Almighty, alone.

I mentioned previously, Robert Elliott; he was awarded the Star of Courage, the second highest civilian medal for bravery in our system of awards and he rightly deserved that award. But the order in which recipients are listed on the ABA list, only amplifies the insult I speak of. Hans Overbeeke is listed at No.2, Lynne Beavis at No.4, Jean Andrews at No.19, but what of Robert Elliott? His name appears way down at No. 21!

As if to deflect curious eyes away from identities and true relationships, Lynne Beavis and her sister **Jean Elizabeth Andrews**, both are listed in a manner among the citations that can be described as nothing short of illusory. At No. 4 it reads:

- “Ms Beavis and her sister...etc.” But importantly her sister Jean is not named nor is it pointed out that Jean is a fellow bravery award recipient listed **15 places below** her sister at number 19!
- Here “Ms Andrews” is listed and yes she had a “sister” accompanying her that day, but again no mention of her “sister” Beavis receiving a medal for bravery or even that it came from out of the same incident. But, of the 120 words contained in Jean’s citation of her supposed “conduct considered worthy”, at best it could be reduced to one short sentence, but still only legitimised by the word of one witness, her sister Lynne Beavis, who stated, “my sister started shepherding people up to the tea rooms.” ²⁵

I'm sure most fair-minded Australians would surely see these examples of the side-show that, like a caravan tagged along after the awful massacre at Port Arthur, the Bravery Medal/citations, the 'special case' of the workers' compensation writ settlement as nothing less than an affront to every survivor and the memory of everyone who died there that day. I can but conclude Lynne Beavis really has put a whole new meaning on that phrase of being “on a working holiday”.

The primary injury sustained among survivors of the massacre - not physically injured - but in some cases just associated with the Port Arthur Historic Site, was Post Traumatic Stress Disorder (PTSD). However, when those employed by PAHSMA - a Tasmania Government business operation - attempted to claim workers compensation, to their utter disbelief this particular injury had been removed as a 'claimable injury' from the Worker's Compensation Act in November 1995! Hence the entire staff and indeed all the volunteers in ambulance SES and the like who went to the assistance of victims were denied the ability to lodge a claim for this devastating injury. However, this was not the case with Lynne Beavis you understand. Someone decided it was prudent to oil a 'squeaky wheel', or was retirement seen as an option: Beavis lodged her claim in Victoria, and note also again I remind you that she was employed by the Commonwealth and won her claim in spite of the statute of limitations enacted for this massacre by the Tasmanian Ministry which had long run out.

Tasmania's (In)justice system

Thomas Jefferson described the Judiciary, as the “*the germ of destruction of our nation.*” He wrote of America, but he could well have written with Tasmania and Australia in his mind.

Tasmania has for many years and to a great extent been dependant on the tourist dollar. That weekend in April 1996 halted if only temporarily, the tourists going to Tasmania. The effect was drastic. While Howard gloated over his success in forcing an all-states agreement on May 10 for implementing the confiscatory firearm laws Tasmania's Premier Rundle rushed across Bass Strait to Melbourne to beg mainland tourists to return to a 'safe' Tasmania. While there Tony Rundle met with the Victoria Police Commissioner Neil [Comrie](#), to pour out the gratitude to the troops. Possibly because the Victorian SOGs were having a quiet day, Victorian Police Commissioner Comrie lined up his 'sons of god', those veterans of the trans-Bass Strait campaign who were flown to Hobart and sworn in as Tasmanian Constables on the evening of the 28 April before they were dashed into the night to Taranna and on into the line of the siege of the Seascope cottage. Then Premier Tony Rundle extended the right hand of gratitude to these [SOGs](#).



L: Victoria Police Comm. Comrie & at R, Tasmania Premier Tony Rundle



Premier Rundle awards the hand of gratitude to Victoria's "Sons Of God" - veterans of the Seascope tragedy

But the ultimate insult to Port Arthur victims seeking redress from their employer - the State Government - for the hurt they suffered there that day, was played out by the Rundle Ministry two years after the massacre, when they raided and emptied a reported, '320 trust accounts, charitable funds, and special purpose accounts,' in late May of 1998.

The report tells us some \$12.7 million earmarked for distribution among people with special needs was plundered by the Ministry in that raid. Ironically, much of the money had been donated by the public and some even held in a Port Arthur massacre staff recovery fund - all gone.

For the PAHSMA employees working on site that day, the pathway towards a just compensation settlement was simply impassable. For those whose claims were associated with the Broad Arrow Café location, the issue of the faulty lock on the controversial Gift Shop fire escape door after no less that four government sponsored and failed enquiries only ever quarantined them from justice. So it wasn't until late March of 2000, that 14 writs in total were lodged for damages. The rest simply gave up in disgust...

But just before the statutes of limitations expired, and by 18 August 1999, four of those claimants in total had had their writs settled. Only the writ issued by Steven Howard then remained outstanding. However the outcome can only be described as appalling. To example their situation, ongoing medical bills for Mrs Scurr alone were running at a reported \$80,000 per anum - to May of 1999. So how were these people expected to recover a life destroyed by PTSD with settlements reported as ranging between \$5,000 and \$95,000? Remember the Tasmania Ministry's pre-emptive removal of PTSD as a legitimate medical condition for worker's compensation?

Though in the case of Lynne Beavis the statutes of limitations apparently did not apply...

To redirect litigation toward governments, litigants were confronted by a legal minefield called "Tasmanian Justice". Some I have interviewed told me they had by 1998 accumulated legal debts of around \$20,000 and a Hobart-based-lawyer advised Mrs Scurr, *"If you try to take this matter to Court, you will lose your home."* In these peoples' cases, the price of justice was just too much to bear. The Melbourne based law firm Slater and Gordon, before the County Court in Melbourne in August 2004 (and 8 years after the massacre), won for their client Mrs Lynne Beavis, a "secret six figure payout". But when Mr Graeme Scurr approached the firm and appealed for them to litigate on behalf of his wife Wendy, he was refused point blank. ²⁶

In recent days I learned first hand from another Tasmanian who having read with disgust *The Mercury* newspaper's article of the Melbourne nurse who'd secured an undisclosed "six figure settlement" as a result of the trauma suffered from her experiences with the massacre at Port Arthur. From his own enquiries he'd discovered her identity. He told me that not only had he personally been denied an award for his actions in the face of adversity that day, but as a survivor he suffered a brooding contempt for the outrageously inadequate settlements many of his friends and acquaintances had suffered at the hands of the Tasmania authorities. So within days of the article's appearance he phoned Slater and Gordon to protest the iniquity of the Beavis settlement, only to be assured in part; 'Oh, but hers was a very special case'. It certainly was in the eyes of the County Court of Melbourne, for it appears that the identification of this one victim (of 'friendly fire') inside the Café equated in the eyes of the court to 200 counselling sessions...at least.

So what happened in the case of the untold numbers of visitors in similar circumstances? At the time, Tasmania was restricted to a maximum settlement of up to \$20,000 for each Victim Of Crime (VOC) claim. The Commonwealth could not be budged to assist: supported by Howard's well practiced whinging justifications, the Federal Ministers took on the image of the original Scrooge. My inquiries show as a rule survivors received a pittance from Tasmania, which in most cases did not cover even their medical expenses!

Understandable when one is aware of these facts: by the State's VOC legislation, Bryant was compelled to pay a \$50 fine for each conviction: 72 convictions totalled \$3,600 in fines paid by Bryant in the first instance into consolidated revenue.

First came the public appeal which was said to have raised approximately A\$3.5m, and its disbursement went something like this: there were some 142 Victorians who numbered among the 300 or so people meaning when divided equally the appellants would receive approximately A\$11,666.00 each. Some A\$3m was appropriated by the Tasmanian State Parliament via the Criminal Injury Compensation fund. By malicious political manoeuvring the Ministers of Her Majesty's Tasmanian Government oversaw precedential legislation enacted allowing *The State* to confiscate Martin Bryant's estate, which added a further A\$1.3m to their coffers to make a total of A\$7.8m for disbursement. When divided equally, this would theoretically give each of the 300 people some A\$26,000, though in reality a quite different story emerges. In the case of Ron Neander, his wife Gwen was among those shot and killed in the gift shop; the various settlements claimed to have been received by Ron Neander have since been published:

The Port Arthur Appeal	\$15,000 plus funeral expenses allowance
Tas Criminal Injury Compensation Act	\$20,000 maximum
Confiscation of Martin Bryant's Assets	<u>\$12,000</u>
Total	<u>\$47,000</u> ²⁷

While victims were not faring well in the compensation stakes, Tasmanian Premier, **Tony Rundle**, estimated (accurately I would suggest) it had **cost his administration \$30 million in dealing with the tragedy**, a figure you might keep in mind when considering the whole of the international entities' implicated in this psychopolitical campaign. Of course a Premier crying poor is common place in the Australian Commonwealth system of government and so the State bureaucracies surely could not be expected to miss out on Federal assistance!

In addition to the Commonwealth's support, Canberra announced \$10 million would be appropriated immediately, 'for facilities in the [Tasman Peninsula] area,' while the State Government reportedly provided **\$30 million for unspecified assistance**; obviously buildings, bitumen, and big shrubs took priority over real flesh and blood people who were hurting. Money was appropriated for *everything under the sun*, except the victims who were left to suffer, and so sadly many families saw loved ones choose suicide as the preferred option...

In the aftermath, the 2,250 people of Tasman Peninsula community were forced to face head-on a sole-destroying attitude, metered out by uncaring ministries of not only state and federal governments, but even by the uncaring attitude delivered by the board of directors of PAHSMA. This was the Tasman Peninsula's single biggest employer - and in the case of those there on the day of the massacre - their very own employer. One author has exemplified this indifferent attitude on the part of the Historic Site's board, by recounting a personal experience when the then chairman of the board Michael Mazengarb reluctantly faced questioning by the community recovery committee. The recount had him claiming, *'The site doesn't belong to you people down here, it doesn't belong to Tasmanians, it belongs to Australians'*. Of course the Port Arthur Historic Site was a Tasmania Government enterprise.²⁸

From the same document above, we learn that the A\$2.5m appropriated by Federal Parliament to be expended on 'community recovery', was completely expended upon the very controversial A\$4.5m Visitor's Centre constructed in a redevelopment of the Site to cater for the projected increase in tourist numbers visiting the Site.

Had the accused stuck to his plea of 'Not guilty' and succeeded in engaging (costly) but impartial legal counsel interstate, it was probable this whole subterfuge would have been exposed. Politicians were in an obvious panic when Martin insisted he was 'Not guilty'. So as to deprive the accused of necessary funds to engage his necessary legal representation outside of Tasmania (can you imagine the possibility of accused ever proving his innocence by engaging Tasmanian legal counsel?), the Ministry introduced a Bill on 3 October 1996 for a first reading which when passed and enacted set a worrying precedent: the legislation allowed the "judiciary" to confiscate Bryant's reported \$1.5 million worth of assets and disperse the funds as supplementary to the donations collected from a sympathetic public to victims and their families.

This action by the Ministry even included the residue of his 'third-party' settlement, secured for him by Perpetual Trustees as a result of serious injuries he sustained in a car accident near Copping 4 years earlier. This third-party settlement was awarded after he suffered **'bilateral fractures through both his first and second cervical vertebrae'**, when the Mazda 121 sedan driven by Miss Harvey on the Arthur Highway 6 km west of Copping crashed on 20 October, 1992. This *coincidental accident* ensured a later accused actually had assets that a seemingly benevolent Ministry could be seen to conveniently confiscate and re-distribute among the very people they were at the same time depriving of even the basic support on the Tasman Peninsula!

But who benefited from those Government hand-outs that were forthcoming? Well, consider just two bizarre windfalls:

1. A quarry owner near Nubeena allegedly received no less than \$35,000 'for envisaged loss of business' after the massacre, while
2. A farmer operating 'nocturnal wildlife tours' near Dunalley - as a side line - allegedly for the same reasons received a payout of \$146,000!

My point being, neither individual was directly affected by the massacre in any way whatsoever, nor were either party at Port Arthur or the Historic Site that day. Even the self-confessed anti-gun activists Dennis Olsen (and wife) Mary of Washington State, were 'looked after' with their health and mental situation monitored closely for a considerable time by our federal agents, after they'd returned home to the United States.

It also should be noted that while the people effected by the massacre at Port Arthur were subjected to a Tasmanian statute of limitations to any claim for damages of 3 years (to 1999) it would seem to this author that Mrs Beavis' claim was given some special status, as her settlement did not occur until about 9 August 2004, or 5 years outside this statute!²⁹

When is a pastor not a parson?

Over the past half century I have gotten to know a significant number of 'men of the cloth'. Of all these men none could be classed monetarily "wealthy" or having exhibited extravagance, although to a man I suppose they would argue to have riches far beyond what gold could ever buy. My point being, almost all of them were frugal by necessity. They were not known to trip about to satisfy any selfish curiosity.



"The Parson":
Neville Andrews

But when it comes to "the Parson", he spared no expense in such endeavours. An extended trip to Tasmania and the Tasman peninsula in particular, was undertaken in 2003 visiting and interviewing a considerable number of survivors, witnesses and their families. But please understand, Neville [Andrews](#) never did imply that he provided any grief counselling while on his sojourns.

To appreciate the Parson's role in all of this, the reader should consider the entire chapter "I think it fair to warn you" by Andrew MacGregor, which explains the circumstances surrounding their introduction and meeting, as well as his associates and their roles. Now Neville's business card is really quite vague:

Independent Pentecostal Church: Pastor Neville Andrews, ph 0438 138 077.

No church address, no church secretary, no contact number, nothing.

I suggest you enter the church name into any internet search engine and try to expand your knowledge of the organisation, but please don't hold out that *Google will come through*. Like the extent of his business card information, it will be almost a nil result. But my card at least via a rather distinctive scrawl, confirms his private phone and Moonee Ponds residential address.

It was after my colleagues and I had mentioned in our public presentations our findings of a probable Victorian connection between the alleged "female visitors" to Seascope, a "clone" Volvo and Victoria rather than Sydney as their origin, that "the Parson" appeared first on my radar as a suspicious 'blip'.

You see shortly after those revelations he phoned me on three occasions and he seemed very desperate to speak with me face to face. I suggested, "What's the urgency? You can interview me for a lot less expense by phone; fire away!" But you know, he was quite insistent and eventually I relented and arranged that he should call me upon him reaching the city limits, so as I could explain where we would meet. A mutually acceptable time was made, and I specifically told him I was not prepared for him to come to my home.

But he was an hour and a half late; no phone call to let me know, just straight to my home. As he introduced himself at the front door, he was quite intent on getting a foot in the door, but I asked him to go and wait in his car and then I escorted him in my car to a local coffee shop. Once there in the outdoors, he rambled on about nothing in particular just pumping me for anything that would be helpful as to the extent of our latest up-to-date findings. He did a lot of scribbling. But I deliberately gave him little of substance. Even a local acquaintance - a former City Councillor - interrupted our conversation insisting we both pose for a snapshot and I was fortunate to secure a copy for the record. It was a really wacky interview and when he'd driven off - literally as the sun was setting - I was left to ponder why on earth he'd bothered?

His first contact with writers on the massacre subject came when he introduced himself to Noel McDonald who then lived near the city of Geelong in Victoria. After ten minutes of phone conversation, the dubious nature of his enquiry caused Noel to terminate the call and hastened to call Andrew MacGregor who recounts the circumstances in his work, *Deceit & Terrorism* -

the massacre at Port Arthur, in the Chapter entitled; "*I think it's fair to warn you*". In each case and out of the blue, he was unable to hide his desperation to obtain copies of all of the work McDonald and McGregor had completed in this investigation; but for whom or what purpose?

At the time Neville Andrews was expending all of his energies visiting selected survivors and such about Tasmania and attempting to secure what ever our investigation had uncovered and recorded in our writings, I should point out that Lynne Beavis - sister to Jean Andrews - was yet to have her writ against the Commonwealth, and Audiometrics settled before the County Court of Victoria. I was quite unaware at the time of Neville's visit that Lynne Beavis had served a writ for a claim and of course her substantial settlement was quite some way off at the time. I suppose it could well have proven unhelpful to her settlement claim, if the allegations I have raised here had come into the public domain *before* the matter was concluded.

End Notes

¹ Julie McCrossin, ABC Radio National, "Life Matters" 17aug05; Bronwen Gora, "Too busy to feel", *The Sunday Tasman*, 5may96, p.11.

² The National Archives, file series No. A2478/18, Canberra; <http://www.affordair.com.au/>

³ Julie Beun-Chown, "Nightmare in Broad Daylight", *Who*, 13may96

⁴ Signed Witness Statement by John Godfrey; Eyewitness, Mrs. Wendy E. Scurr

⁵ Sgt G. Dutton, Dr. T. Lyons, Sgt. S Roach (Syd) & Sgt J Dickinson (Syd), WBR – Port Arthur Shooting Vol3, No 4, at p.42.

⁶ Beun-Chown, "Nightmare in Broad Daylight," *WHO*, 13may96, p.36;

<http://www.braverydecorations.com/> Australian Bravery Assoc's Citations of Bravery Medal Recipients; Craig Coombs, CEO PAHSMA, EMA Report, p.40

⁷ Signed Witness Statement – Jennifer Moors; Interview, Mrs W. E. Scurr; Ray Martin, Nine's *A Current Affair*.

⁸ n.a., "Port Arthur massacre – 1996", *WHO* magazine, 4mar02, p.28.

⁹ Various Internet Postings including: Australian Army White Water Assoc; Gallipoli Battlefield ANZAC DAY Tour; Australian Army History Unit and other sources.

¹⁰ Beun-Chown, "Nightmare in Broad Daylight," *WHO*, 13may96, pp.34-38

¹¹ <http://www.foxediting.com/Lazydog1.html>, 30/01/2005 9:50:06 am; D.D. McNicoll, Bruce Montgomery, Chip Le Grand & Kimina Lyall, "Savagery erupts in afternoon of terror," *The Australian*, p1; Christine Caulfield, "Payout for Port Arthur massacre nurse" *The Courier Mail*, 10aug04.

¹² PAHSMA Ghost Tour Roster, 4/4/96 – 1/5/96.

¹³ Ashley Law, tour guide, witness statement, p.4.

¹⁴ <http://search.archives.tas.gov.au/>

¹⁵ Christine Caulfield, most Murdoch company-owned newspapers inc. the *Courier Mail* 10aug04.

¹⁶ *ibid*

¹⁷ Ian Matterson, LLB, Magistrate Hobart, *Coroner's Responsibilities at port Arthur*, EMA papers p.92

¹⁸ *Ibid*, p.93

¹⁹ Carol Altmann, *After Port Arthur*, chapter 6, p.105

²⁰ *ibid*, chapter 2, p.30

²¹ *Ibid*, p.94; the Police Training Video

²² Damian Bugg, QC, "An Inquiry into the Door at The Broad Arrow Café & Related Matters", p.17

²³ n.a., "Port Arthur massacre – 1996", *WHO* magazine, 4mar02, p.28

²⁴ John Michael RIVIERE, witness signed statement to police

²⁵ ABA's Web Site posting, <http://www.braverydecorations.com/>

²⁶ Matthew Rogers, "\$12.7m raid on Tassie charities" *The Mercury*, 17Nov98; Michael Paine, "Survivors face compo crunch," *Sat. Mercury*, 20mar99; Catherine Anderson, "Massacre grievances" *Sat. Mercury*, 17Apr99.

²⁷ Carol Altmann, *After Port Arthur*, chapter 4, p.68

²⁸ Tumarkin, Maria. *Journal of Australian Studies*, 3jan01

²⁹ Andrew Darby, "The Fight for Compensation," *The Age*, 22apr2001; Christine Caulfield, "Big compo for Port Arthur massacre nurse" *The Mercury*, 10aug04.

The Video Overboard Affair



This material is claimed to be
Crown Copyright:
i.e. it's owned by "We the People" for
whom Commissioner Richard McCreadie is
a servant...

Chapter 27

As this re-write and update progressed through 2004 yet another piece of the Port Arthur jig-saw snapped together for the public to ponder.

A front page story of *The Weekend Australian*, August 28-29, 2004 declared: "Massacre video bought for 10c," and so the story of the Police Training Video was broken to the public. Its disclosure sparked an immediate reaction of outrage and indignation from Comm. Richard McCreadie of Tasmania Police. So commenced what I have since christened, "the video overboard affair".¹

One important consideration should be mentioned at the outset of the chapter is the possibility of the circumstance surrounding the passage of the video into the public domain was no accident.

Decent police - and no doubt there are many serving Tasmania Police who are just that, decent honest cops - may well have decided it should be leaked to the public. But there yet again could equally have been an ulterior motive for the villains of the establishment to have it leaked the material, sack a few fall-guys and weather the public storm in the knowledge that when the calm returned, the population would have been further detached from the canker and apathy would flourish. So it is up to you to ensure the latter motive - if it should be true - fails.



John Howard:
"Now honestly..."

Coincidentally on the Sunday evening of that same August weekend, the much promoted and unavoidable polling day was announced by John Winston Howard for the next Federal Election - 9 October. Simultaneously, Latham and Howard agreed the issue central to that election was to be "truth and honesty in government," with the question arguably attracting most attention being what in 2000 the media had dubbed, the 'Children Overboard Affair' - hence the chapter title, surely an irony.

However, understandably the 'truth and honesty' issue in the election campaign was abandoned before it could take root, just as both attributes became the first victims as the various police jurisdictions became involved in four of the eastern states to recover the *video overboard*.



Olga Scully

But this segment of our story begins all the way back to the day of the massacre though its "escape" from police custody occurred back in March of 2004. Then, six days after the story was broken by *The Weekend Australian*, and on 3 September, *The Mercury*, a Murdoch owned newspaper, identified the buyer of the 10c video as Mrs [Olga Scully](#) of Launceston, echoing the interview conducted by the ABC-TV of Mrs Scully the night before. It came to light that Mrs Scully had purchased the video tape for 10 cents on

one of her irregular calls at the Hobart Tip Shop, where she purchased numbers of discarded video tapes for the cassettes and tapes.

Tasmania is a parochial society, and so it's not unusual that Mrs Scully was acquainted with a number of the people who survived the attack at Port Arthur back in 1996.

"Thinking it might be of interest, she passed it on to former Port Arthur worker Wendy Scurr," and after Mrs Scurr received the video in late March she watched the first segment, not knowing there were 2 further tracks on the tape. Mrs Scurr told me that she and a friend who visited watched it in all innocence yet again close to the anniversary of the tragedy and they left the tape running after the second track while they chatted and made tea. It was only then, that the third track began and they return to watch, that the surprised viewers as they sat wondering what the third track would show.

"We just sat there totally shocked and disgusted and angry," Mrs Scurr was reported to have said later. ²

It was sometime in late March, I also received 2 video tapes through the mail; over a period of a few days neither of which had anything to indicate the senders' identity, and the first tape was simply labelled, in pencil "PA #4". The only thing I can confirm is that neither tape was sent to me by Mr or Mrs Scurr.

Over the days ahead it became obvious to Graeme Scurr, that his wife's health had begun to deteriorate, to such an extent that he was forced to have her attend her doctor, who hospitalised her around the 25th May.

Mr Scurr operated at the time a modest wool buying business, in the midlands, and as if that didn't take all of his time to operate successfully, but during this period, both Wendy and her husband Graeme were beset with family obligations which further distracted any attempt to deal with the video tape matter; their immediate attention to those more urgent family matters was a priority they could not ignore.

Then on 31 May 2004, Mr Graeme Scurr wrote to the Hon David Llewellyn MHA Minister for Health and Human Services, Minister for Police and Public Safety, explaining the circumstances that had brought about a critical decline in his wife's health. In the text, he likening the video to a "loaded gun" that had been left unsecured by a negligent Tasmania Police. Coincidentally earlier in January 2004 in the Hobart Magistrates Court, when convicting a 38-year-old father Robert Wilton, Magistrate Sam Mollard said in his opinion it was a *"basic obvious precaution to store a gun safe in a place where it can't be seen,"* ³

In closing, and with his memory of the Ministry's indifference over his wife's plight ever since the massacre 8 years earlier, his patience evaporated over this tape debacle; Graeme Scurr advised the Minister that this time he was determined to gain "satisfaction" so as he could ensure his wife would receive adequate treatment to correct her sudden deterioration. David Llewellyn deliberately chose to ignore Mr Scurr's appeals, simply passing the buck to his 'silicon-suited chief'.

However without so much as a call from Llewellyn, whom incidentally Mr Scurr knew well from his school days, Insp Ross Paine of Tasmania Police called at the couple's Kempton residence, to serve two letters on Mr Scurr.

Both letters he served were dated 30 August and from their content it is obvious certain senior police were now calling in their favours. Llewellyn may have been passing on the componentry, but clearly it was Comm. Richard McCreadie making up the "ammunition," for still others to "fire".

Acting on instructions from McCreadie, the new DPP, Tim J. Ellis stated he was instituting proceedings to "recover the Tasmania Police video concerning the Port Arthur shootings," claiming that "any unauthorised copying of the video constitutes a breach of the Crown's copyright by virtue of Section 101 of the *Copyright Act 1968*," a questionable claim, seeing as how "the people" of Tasmania (just as is the case in other states of the Commonwealth), are the Crown whom Ellis serves ... an incidental reality to these autocratic signatories. Upon sound legal advice the claim is allegedly fallacious. Nevertheless, in the last paragraph, the DPP threatened: *"If you fail to comply with these requirements proceedings will be instituted against you without further notice in respect of the breach of the Crown's copyright in the video"*.

I must point out that T.J. Ellis also knew the Scurr family well, with Wendy even travelling to school in the same bus as Tim Ellis did; Tim was an only child of the driver of the same school bus no less! The point being, the DPP would have been aware Mrs Scurr was the last person who'd wantonly breach the law not to mention her poor state of health at the time.

On the other hand, Richard McCreadie's letter served on Mr Scurr at this meeting, delivered a quite extraordinary message; the text confirmed Insp Ross Paine as the courier and the anticipated "surrender" of all copies of the Video Tape was the purpose of the letter. Apart from rather strange grammar in the first paragraph, the second and final paragraph stated:

"I would like to confirm my undertaking that if you surrender all of this material forthwith then I will secure it in such a way that it will be retained for any lawful purpose that you would seek to have it put in the future. In this process I guarantee that whatever you provide will be retained as far as possible in the condition in which you surrender it."

In light of past experiences, one must immediately ask the question: **"Did any one verify the quality of sound and vision of the tapes at time of surrender and before witnesses?"** I fear not. For remember the conveniently damaged video tape of the PROI in the case of the **Crown v Martin Bryant**? Remember Comm. John Johnson had assigned Richard McCreadie as the officer in charge of the whole Port Arthur investigation. It was McCreadie's officers whose damaged video sound tapes were struck out of the Court Documents in Martin Bryant's hearing, and here he expected the public to believe 'the leopard has changed its spots'?

So the Crown (We the people) was denied from hearing the (illegally obtained) Bryant interview in its entirety. Oh and the bearer of this letter, Insp Ross Paine; remember he was one of the two primary officers in that interview. You'll also remember this is the same Ross Paine who headed up the allegedly illegal police break-in at his Clare Street property on the Sunday evening of the 28th of April 1996. But back to the video story...

Mr Scurr surrendered a single copy he'd acquired especially for that purpose. He further informed Paine the original video tape 'was in safe keeping' pending a satisfactory outcome to the situation. But despite reports in *The Mercury* to the contrary, he informed Insp Paine that if police so desired, he was prepared to waive all "patient privilege" so as police could collect the original video tape from Mrs Scurr's Hobart doctor, who'd been charged with its safekeeping as evidence. I'm still unsure as to whether or not police have ever bothered to collect the original *escaped* video tape from that doctor.

On the 23 June, Mr Scurr wrote a second letter, reminding David Llewellyn of his previous correspondence and informing him, of the realisation, that in spite of the not inconsequential cost and disruption to him in carrying on his livelihood, he was forced to convey his wife to the mainland to receive specialist treatment from a leading doctor there, commencing on June 26.

The Minister David Llewellyn did reply this time, acknowledging receipt of both letters. In this correspondence, Mr Scurr left the Minister in no doubt, that if Llewellyn chose not to resolve the matter forthwith, then he intended to pursue the matter publicly, hence the article published by the *Weekend Australian*, which appeared on 28th August.

On Monday 30 August, parliamentary leader of the Greens Party, Peg Putt MHA, was reported as accusing police of 'failing to keep the video tape under lock and key' and also 'failing to retrieve them when notified the tapes were in public hands'. In the report, Ms Putt even went so far as to suggest the 'images' (there was just one image), published by the *Weekend Australian* was 'beyond the bounds of human decency'. This investigator can only scoff at the clamour for high moral ground by these contemptible Tasmanian Politicians, when they have rejected repeated calls by people from across the land for at the least, a coronial inquiry to be held. However the buck-passing was underway and senior Tasmania Police were in damage control. ⁴

Since Port Arthur, "Jack" Johnston had received promotion to Deputy Police Comm. and if he was reported accurately in *The Mercury* of 29 August 2004, then on several points the truth was treated with absolute contempt. For I'm very aware that at no time did Mr Scurr refuse to hand over the original copy, as very simply he did not have the tape to hand it over. Mr Scurr was also not obliged to reveal the identity of the person who bought the tape for 10c at a Tip Shop, and at their first meeting, Mr Scurr informed Insp Ross Paine, where the original tape was, and who to contact to effect recovery; Johnston was well aware of that fact, and the Scurrs had no equipment to copy video tapes.

Dept Comm. Johnston also was reported as claiming that 'whoever made the tape within the department has used some inappropriate licence'. A claim I believe which has no basis in fact. Much of the footage was put to air by a national television carrier as *Port Arthur the Inside Story*, so who provided that tape footage? Did that copy fall off the back of a tip-shop-truck also? If Tasmania Police produced the tape in question - as the credits suggest - then that fact alone raises some very serious questions:

1. Who knew to place a camera crew on the opposite shore to Seascope on Long Bay, at the appointed hour that would end the siege, and so capture video images of a seriously burned Martin Bryant emerging from the rear door of Seascope Cottage, stagger a short distance away from the fire, rip-off his burning clothes to be then formally arrested by Constable Paul Hawkins, an SOG Policeman? From that location only the easterly aspect of the Cottage was in line of sight!
2. As the relief police forward commander at Taranna, Supt. Bob Fielding is featured on the Police Training video admitting to forcing Martin Bryant to come to police (by burning the cottage), instead of vice versa, then under what circumstances was the camera allowed to be manned on the opposite shoreline?
3. Who authorised this footage to remain the so-called 'exclusive property' of the Nine Network and what arrangements were made for the Nine Network to gain that material? Did Nine supply the camera crew?

But let's back up a little to the early developments in the saga: It was Mr Scurr who'd written twice to the minister, not ever receiving so much as an acknowledgment, for the first letter. Until the Minister received the second letter there was no movement from his department. After all, Llewellyn had been alerted to the tapes' existence in May, but directly because of his procrastination and senior Tasmania police who demonstrated a reluctance to even retrieve the original "10c Video", the matter was only set to escalate. These facts are cause for concern that the release of the video into the public domain may well have been deliberate on the part of parties in the Ministry or indeed Tasmania Police, a position actually conveyed in a conversation to a journalist at the time by the Deputy Commissioner Jack Johnston. Mr

Johnston was one of three senior police whose contracts were not renewed in the months to come.

During all of this time, the Minister, David Llewellyn, and just two of his colleagues in the Parliament, Peg Putt MHA and the Liberal shadow minister expressed outrage at the video's "escape", and even professed a concern directed towards other survivors having possible access to it. Crime Victims Support Association president Noel McNamara then became involved and was reported as stating, *"Whoever did this (discarded the video) should be kicked straight out of the force and charges should be laid on them because they have re-traumatised people."*⁵



*We're moving on:
"A \$30 million
tourism development
planned for Port
Arthur will include
60 five-star villas
set among drystone
walls and gardens."*

The Port Arthur Historic Site's CEO, Stephen Large joined in, when he reportedly stated that 'news that the footage was in the public domain could harm the historic site's recovery from the massacre,' a rather quaint position I should think.

Further he was reported as stating he was, 'concerned for staff that were on duty when gunmen ... went on his murderous rampage'; a position difficult to accept as genuine when one considers the overall disgraceful treatment staff received there that day from everyone in authority from Minister Groom, the Police and the executive of PAHSMA ongoing for ten years now!

"We're obviously disappointed this has happened now," Mr Large said. "It (the massacre) was eight years ago and a lot of us have moved on but these things aren't helpful." I wonder why the balance of people other than those he termed "a lot of us", apparently have not been able to move on, and I wonder what that number is likely to be? No doubt among the 'lot who've moved on' at Port Arthur, are the likes of Barry Jones, (chairman of the board) and Greg Farrell (both at left), Steven Large and of course the *muted staff* that guide the tourist about to swell the coffers of this "premier", government enterprise tourist attraction. But Mr Large won't be too concerned at all about the tourists that will converge on the Historic Site to celebrate what I'm caused to describe as a "kitsch concert" there on Friday 28 April 2006 - 10 years on; even the gun-grabbing John Winston Howard will be there to bond with the newly elected ALP Premier, Lennon and to gloat and promote his wonderful disarmament of the citizens of Australia... but not the 'Middle Eastern' crime gangs of Sydney of course! Barry Jones is slated to take a prominent role in their "10th Anniversary", as is Keith Moulton.

Continuing he is quoted as stating, "Obviously some close to the massacre will not be very happy at all but we have learned to cope with it, as long as not too much is made of it (the video's release)."⁶

By Tuesday, 31st of August 2004, the Mercury claimed inside knowledge that officially there were just five copies in all in existence. In their article while they reported that *"Richard McCreadie said he was concerned that copies of the tape had been made,"* his very next sentence exposes where this reported concern stemmed from, when he warned the public that, 'making or distributing copies was an offence that could be prosecuted under the Copyright Act'.

In the same report McCreadie announced the establishment of a 'hotline for victims', undoubtedly a sham if there was just five copies out there. For you should be aware images very much more graphic than are contained on this tape have already been shown publicly at various venues by the police themselves! There was the public viewing at Griffith University in Brisbane on 23 Nov 2002, reputedly a fund raiser for scholarships no less and at that showing

the cadavers subjected to the inferno of Seascope were screened openly. No rider for the shocked audience either I believe. Then there is the case of "potential police recruits" being taken to police headquarters in Hobart to view the material. What hypocrites!

But as I stated, from the media reports McCreadie believed just five copies had been made and accounted for, to date. A newspaper report dated 31 August confirmed the tape had come from Hobart Resource Tip Shop, a claim that was "doubted" by Comm. McCreadie in the same newspaper the very next day!⁷

In the earlier report, an employee of the Resource Tip Shop - Iona Johnson - suggested that while it was impossible to confirm the tape was purchased there, 'Tasmania Police did regularly use that service', an admission that was to prove costly for her, as we shall see shortly. So whether or not the video tape was dumped on purpose by one among a growing number of outraged, honest, police officers, within the Tasmania Police itself is a question I cannot throw any light upon.⁸

Southern Cross Television's channel 10 out of Hobart contacted me on the Friday 27th as their news journalist had learned that I had a copy of the controversial footage from an un-named source. I admitted that not only had I viewed the tape, but that indeed I had a hard copy of the tape.



The Daily Advertiser
2.9.04

Wagga's affiliate of Tasmania's SCTV-10, Prime Network, had Holly Hearne interview me at their Koorlingal studios on Monday 30 August with the results aired on that evening's news in Tasmania and the Riverina. Then things began to happen...

Wednesday 1 September saw Paul Enever of Wagga's regional newspaper, [*The Daily Advertiser*](#), conduct an interview that broke the story in country New South Wales. From the resultant article, crime manager of Wagga police Act Insp Rod Smith was quoted as stating, *"We've had no correspondence with Tasmania police and Wagga Area Command has no involvement with what happened in Tasmania eight years ago."*

Continuing, he was also quoted as stating, *"We're unsure of what he [Mr Beattie] has in his possession, but if he has evidence that hasn't been disclosed to the Tasmanian coroner, he should present it to the relevant authorities."* Someone had forgotten to mention to Act Insp Smith, there never was a coronial inquiry...⁹

Somewhere among all of this, Channel 7 Melbourne's flag-ship current affairs show, *Today Tonight* conducted two interviews with Mrs Wendy Scurr, and another key witness covering events that occurred inside the Broad Arrow Café. Some of that interview went to air in Tasmania, and the affiliates of Southern Cross on the mainland, except Prime in the Riverina, which does not carry Seven's current affairs show.

Late on Tuesday evening of 7 September 2004, I arrived home to learn two detectives from Wagga Police had visited my home that day, making inquiries about recovering all copies of the video tape I had shown the press. They left their contact details and promised to return.

Also that same evening, I learned that none other than Insp Ross Paine of Tasmania Police had phoned Mr Andrew MacGregor, inquiring into whether he had any copies of their escaped video tape - but Andrew had already forwarded his copy of the tape to a friend in Queensland; no further inquiries with Andrew have been made to date it seems.

After considerable thought on the matter, I decided to take the advice offered by Act Supt Rod Smith as mentioned above, and so on Wednesday 8 September, at 1000hrs the two detectives arrived at my door, introducing themselves as Act Insp Rod Smith, and Det Sgt Mark Feeney. The [handover](#) of my video tape proceeded, but only after they had read and accepted an open letter addressed to Commissioner for New South Wales Police, Ken Moroney and. ¹⁰



L-R: Act Insp Rod Smith, the author
& Det Sgt Mark Feeney of NSW
Police

In that open letter to Com. Ken Moroney, I informed him that after studying the police training video, I believed it confirmed criminal acts possibly also involving officers of New South Wales police in matters that had been improperly inquired into, as no coronial inquiry had been conducted into the "deaths of the six, persons then residing in the State of New South Wales, listed as follows:-

1. Zoe Anne Hall, 28 yrs, then of Kangaroo Point,
2. Glenn Roy Pears, 35 yrs, then of Sydney,
3. Russell James "Jim" Pollard, 72 yrs, then of Brunswick Heads,
4. Mr Tony Kistan, 51 yrs, then of Summerhill
5. Mr Robert Salzmman, 58 yrs, then of Ocean Shores
6. Helene Salzmman, 50 yrs, then of Ocean Shores."

Both Smith and Feeney read the letter thoroughly at least until they came to the particular section quoted above. [The letter](#) conveyed 13 serious allegations requiring urgent investigation after 8 years of joint investigation on the part of former policeman Andrew MacGregor and myself.

Rod Smith lead me to believe the video tape that I was handing him, would be 'forwarded ...with all due care and haste,' as I had instructed, directly to Comm. Moroney at Darlinghurst, "The relevant authority."

Oh how foolishly trusting I was: that night Prime-TV news told of a different outcome. Next morning, I personally confirmed by phone with the "crime manager" Act Insp Rod Smith, that the tape was indeed "on its way," - SOUTH, directly to Richard McCreadie Commissioner of Tasmania Police, via Smith's command structure. I had been duped.

So yes, I can confirm Mr Smith is indeed *managing crime in Wagga very well* - or so it would seem.



Print media reported that although the meeting of Wednesday 8 September was "agreed upon" I was quoted as insisting the visit by police to my home was a "raid" - which in fact it was. The only reason no was warrant served, is because the police knew full well there was no basis in law to support McCreadie's outrageous claims and no Magistrate at that time locally would have dared to issue a warrant. The letter of [demand](#) I was served claimed, "copying of the original video constitutes a breach of the Crown's copyright by virtue of Sections 86 and 101 of the Copyright Act 1968 ... [and that] ...Section 116 of the Copyright Act provides that

infringing copies are to be treated as the property of the copyright owner." ¹¹

I have no doubt whatsoever if these allegations had ever been tested before an impartial court on the mainland (if that now is ever possible), they would be proven to have no basis in law, though in the hillbilly state of Tasmania that may have proved quite difficult to achieve.



Fire the Eraser: Tip Shop workers sift through the ashes & contemplate their future

One must understand that *The Weekend Australian* had captured and published at least 5 photographs of this material, and Southern Cross Television has a full copy of the tape as I understand it, as have various television stations both in Tasmania, northern and Riverina NSW.

They have published some of that footage, as did Channel 7's *Today Tonight* program. Why have these companies not received similar police attention? It's simple really; they are big companies served by professional legal departments and no law has been breached! Bullies are only ever game to tackle the small people.

A Melbourne-based television journalist confirmed to me Tasmania Police approached his superiors making similar demands, which caused their legal department to tell them to 'go away and to stop annoying us'. After all, the release of the information contained on the tape was in the public interest.

As I write this account a rather ominous piece of news came to hand from Tasmania. The Resource Tip Shop which saw a staff member interviewed by a Mercury journalist and confirmed as the place from where Mrs Scully bought the original tape for 10c, is situated about 5km south of Hobart on McRobies Gully tip site. At 11.30 pm, Saturday 11 September, the Tasmania Fire Service was alerted to [a fire](#) in the Resource Tip Shop; the premises were raised to the ground. A spokesman for the fire crews at the scene confirmed via an electronic news service, that 'the fire had been deliberately lit'. The same spokesman also 'ruled out' the wood heater which provided heat for staff as the cause of the fire.

A small note in *The Mercury* (13sep04) reported the blaze caused damage estimated at \$30,000 - \$40,000. The site manager, Ms Deirdre Hargraves was also reported to have stated that "last week one of the co-operative's trucks, which had been parked in a nearby street, had its windows smashed", just another coincidence I suppose. I'd not hold my breath though, if you think the CIB will catch the torch... Operated first at Glenorchy tip in 1993, the operations is run by the Resource Work Co-operative Society Ltd, a non-profit organisation, which uses the money raised from sale of goods to pay workers' wages. So perhaps the victim toll at Port Arthur is still rising, and I wonder if the Commissioner so quick to wield his legal "big stick" far and wide will see that these disadvantaged people receive compassion and assistance close to home?



Still practicing: Seascope MkII?

Arson is a not so uncommon tool used by criminals in Tassie, for a variety of criminal reasons - even as a warning to their entire ruthless demeanour. Seascope examples arson well done; it seems the 'sons of god' need [practice](#) to hone the arson skills! So the "torch" appears from time to time, when the nefarious habits of criminals are exposed to an extent that they feel threatened. It seems an irony that Hobart CIB was involved from the outset to investigate a fire, the cause of which was also reported by *The Mercury* as "unknown".

This deliberate act coincidentally fits with an otherwise odd visit by police to the Scurr residence at 2215 hrs on Friday 10 September - the day prior to the Tip Shop fire. It just so happens that Mrs Scurr had called me and we were in conversation at the very time the two police officers knocked on the door.

Mrs Scurr had been absent attending to family obligations for some time, and her car was still absent from its usual spot outside the home. It would have appeared to most, that Mrs Scurr was still absent, although she had actually returned to her home at about 1230 hrs that day.

Both police seemed, in the words of Mrs Scurr, flustered or taken aback when she answered their knock. You see her doctor had warned senior police not to question Wendy, because of her health. But it would appear the spokesman this time did some quick thinking, saying they were making inquiries into a supposed disappearance of one David Gow. Acting upon information received they alleged Gow had visited the Scurr premises earlier that day, driving a blue Mitsubishi vehicle. Both Wendy and her husband told the police no such visit had taken place, and that in fact they had never known anyone called David Gow, whereupon the police left. I'm caused to wonder if Mr Gow was really ever - missing or indeed found.

Also of note is the fact that acting on instructions directly issued by Richard McCreadie, police also visited the home of Vicki McLaughlin on the Tasman Peninsula after Mr Scurr told them that the couple had the only other copy of the tape he knew of. The couple were not at home at the time of the unannounced visit. However, the McLaughlin's have installed at the premises recording security equipment, and when they did return, it showed police on their property videoing all the vehicles and environs. I wonder if the SOG will need to be deployed to capture the last of their "escapee" video tapes.



Shattered and cast adrift: collateral damage of the massacre at Port Arthur & a "Video Overboard affair".

Now to the Tape itself, and to what the Police Training Video actually reveals: all the revelations are raised at various points throughout this work and they reveal in my opinion many acts of criminality, felonies and the like. In fact and not surprisingly, the video features in the main the people who I would describe as "their people" - the people who by their circumstances of career, employment and obligations were and are easily controlled.

My copy of the tape had three distinct sections or tracks. The first could be described simply as a promotional video of Tasmania Police - for prospective recruits perhaps. The second, while mimicking much of the content contained in the third track, does not show any graphic footage containing explicit images of the crime scenes; it's a sanitized version. However, the third track not only contains all of the second track footage, but graphic pictures from 5 of the 7 crime scenes with all but 5 of the victims' bodies in situ. Strangely or in truth not so strangely, there is no footage whatsoever of the inside of the boot of the burnt-out wreckage of the BMW; no cadavers at the Seascapes crime scene at all. Remember 2 of the 3 cadavers recovered at Seascapes have been shown publicly in Brisbane, so why are they missing from this police record? But as well as the visually overt content, the tape also has on record extraordinary verbal admissions by senior Tasmania Police and footage also of bureaucrats. As the saying goes, 'a picture is worth a thousand words', but when in some instances we get to consider words and images, what a bonus!

There was further fall-out due to this saga. On 26 October, 2004 a newspaper article announced that a new impersonal industrial tool was employed so as [contracts](#) of three senior officers of Tasmania Police were not to be renewed; a case of "Richard's Revenge"?

Luppo Prins, Bob Fielding and another 56-year-old Commander are all to go - quietly - into retirement. Described to me by a long time Hobart resident as a 'good straight cop', Commander Syd McClymont, confirmed he would finish work in August of 2005. While Luppo Prins was to finish at the end of March 2005, Bob Fielding who wasn't prepared to comment is to finish up in July 2005. The article went on to confirm that Luppo Prins has always been highly respected by his colleagues and the junior ranks, and inferred he was hurt by not even being accorded the opportunity to announce his move, and so retire in dignity. The political move has understandably been reported as causing "unrest within police ranks." When questioned as to whether or not any of the three officers had requested contract extensions,

which were subsequently turned down by the organisation, Comm. Richard McCreadie replied: "No." The article went on to state, Mr. McCreadie "would make no further comment." ¹²

This whole affair has emphasised and laid to rest any doubts that for anyone to dare to write about the massacre at Port Arthur is most definitely not condoned by the establishment, and the "D" in my experience seems to stand for DON'T!

Meanwhile I must remind the reader of the urgent letter to the Commissioner for New South Wales Police Ken Maroney, for there has still been no resolution to the matters I raised. When I learned on 9th of September that Act Insp Rod Smith had not sent the Video to his Commissioner, I decided immediately that I should meet with my local State Member for Wagga Wagga, Daryl Maguire MP. During our meeting I asked that he intervene on my behalf which he did by correspondence shortly. But in this instance, to the naked eye the slow wheels of officialdom seemed to be motionless.

You see, the first reply to my open letter of 9.9.04 was dated 17.3.05; New South Wales Police had procrastinated for 27 weeks! Though it was fortunate my State MP at least he didn't write, warning me off!

In all fairness to Daryl Maguire MP, he gave me a good hearing on the 9th September and it is only when you consider the fact that I never did receive any form of acknowledgment whatsoever from Comm. Ken Moroney to whom I'd addressed my correspondence, that fact alone conveys a strong message. Instead the reply came directly from New South Wales Forensic Services Group's Act Director, Carlene York.



Now this caused me to look a little closer as to what exactly was going on here. Supt Carlene Anne York appeared in the 2005 Australia Day Honours list receiving the Australian Police Medal (APM). Shortly after receiving her award, she was promoted to Acting Inspector and posted to NSW Police Service's Strategy and Review division. ¹³ But then another promotion and shift and she now holds no less than two positions; Director, Biometrics Institute and Commander, Criminal Identification Specialist Branch, NSW Police Forensic Services Group. ¹⁴ Perhaps all of

this activity surrounding Ms York may go some way to explain the date on her letter to me and the well worn folds on the paper indicating it had certainly done the rounds of the "In" and "Out" trays of Macquarie St and more I should think. This I believe can be explained by the fact the letter is dated 2 February 2005 which means it had suffered a 42 day delay in delivery. I can but wonder why. I gave the matter much thought, and concluded it would be a waste of time to pursue the matter at that stage; but obviously the charges I had made had caused more than a few senior officers of the New South Wales Police at least some considerable concern. Their silence on the matters raised was deafening!

Then on 5 April (another 20 days - or 209 days in all since I served my letter on police), correspondence arrived from the NSW Ombudsman, supposedly addressing my "complaint about Police". But I had never sought assistance or intervention by the ombudsman, so why was he writing to me? Obviously, Commander Carlene York was not alone in seeking support in her decision to reject further investigation of my allegations and to endorse a swift end to the matter. Perhaps some reader may wish to restart the inquiry? I believe from the careful words used by both writers they have acted upon quite



senior advice and the subjects raised caused possibly a dose of apprehension among senior police.

The hollow outcome does confirm to this writer more than ever we deserve nothing less than an open judicial or coronial inquiry into the 35 deaths and the two counts of arson there in the Tasman Peninsula that occurred on the 28-29th April 1996. We are waiting Mr Commissioner Moroney...

Now I ask you to consider the following short summary of other strange coincidences that raise further questions to those already covered in the narrative. For instance, I can confirm that in April of 1996 at least Dr. G.R.H. Kelsall was senior lecturer of Forensic Pathology at the Clinical School, University of Tasmania. But in the year 2000, a cursory check of the Telstra's White Pages and state land title records revealed that as Acting State Forensic Pathologist for Tasmania (he assisted T.J. Lyons the State Forensic Pathologist for the Port Arthur investigation), Dr. George Robert Henry Kelsall and his wife Valerie Ita, are recorded as residing on the Tasman Highway, Port Arthur in 1996, on property having a common boundary with Seascope's northern extent.

So the Kelsall's and the Martin's of Seascope were next door neighbours. Is this just another example of one of life's coincidences to add the long list of *phenomena* which sustain the mystery enveloping the entire shooting massacre at Port Arthur?

Then there was the phone conversation made by ABC reporter Alison Smith. I believe it can be argued successfully, the DPP did not establish that the male person Alison Smith spoke to at about 2.10pm when she phoned Seascope and who told her, "...you can call me Jamie," was in truth Martin Bryant acting as Jamie.

Did police ever ask Alison Smith to listen to the voice of Martin Bryant on the negotiator tapes and so identify Jamie's voice and the person she spoke to that afternoon? There is no evidence to suggest that this check was ever carried out.

I do know that an eye witness has told us emphatically, that as he lay in the Café wounded, he not only kept a visual contact with the gunman for most of the 7-8 minutes he shot his way around the room, but that also the gunman spoke to him. This witness recently for the first time listened to the voice of Jamie on the Police training video, and immediately he stated quite adamantly: 'that is not the voice of the gunman I heard speaking inside the Broad Arrow Café'.

Then, leaving aside the hostages, there is a key person who figured prominently in the Seascope Siege who is demonstrated as not one of the hostages; the male person who was referred to by "Jamie" as "Rick".

Remember this Violent Incident Management Plan (VIMP) was drawn up inside a quite small, specialised, covert department, housed within Tasmania Police whose sole charter was to address anti-terrorist operational plans. The one person we know who was a principle officer of that small, covert department was the only permanent (former) SOG in the Tasmania Police, Sergt Michael Dyson. So from out of the mouth of Martin Bryant - then caused to use the name "Jamie" - this male he then knew as "Rick" was their "main man."

This fact emerges when one considers this section of the transcript of Sgt Terry McCarthy's conversation with Jamie - a.k.a. Martin Bryant, that I was able to transcribe myself from the *A Current Affair* video tape. I must add that importantly the Court received into evidence a different version! (see p.572 on the CD-Rom) which is at page 31 of the Seascope transcript, but my own transcription reads as follows:

McCarthy: Jamie?

Jamie: Yes. Hello. How are you?

McCarthy: I'm very well thanks Jamie. Yourself?

Jamie: Well, I'm well up to now. The past few 20 seconds. What I've actually found out maaan, is that one of your boys is right outside, northeast I'd say, with an infra-red scope. Would you just ask him to move on?

McCarthy: Right, we'll do that, we'll do that now.

Jamie: Cause he's going to shoot, he's trying to shoot, he's going to shoot your main man.

McCarthy: No, I can guarantee.

Jamie: I'll blow this, umm these you know, you know what's going to happen.

McCarthy: I don't want to see anyone hurt, alright,

Jamie: You just move him on.

McCarthy: Okay, I'm organising that now. I can also assure you that it's not our intention to hurt you or see anybody else hurt, okay.

Jamie: Really...

Note: Here, Jamie does not say: "...he's going to shoot me," instead he has been primed to express a certainty that Police SOGs were about to shoot "their main man," and his words are very explicit on that point.

Also, long after the siege, and when Police finally got to interview the accused on 4 July 1996 - or some *66 days after his arrest* - the police interrogators, Inspectors Warren and Paine, certainly played down the importance of Rick. How can this be so? After all Rick (or was it "Mick"?) was mentioned no less than **30 times in the telephone negotiations between Sgt Terry McCarthy and "Jamie"** while in the Courts Documents, and during the police record of interview (PROI) "Rick" is first mentioned at Page 249, **only once by police and once alone in the answer to that question by Martin Bryant!**

But beginning at p.3, of the transcript of the phone conversation between "Jamie" and Sgt Terry McCarthy, strangely it was **McCarthy who introduces this male "Rick" into the conversation, not Martin Bryant!** How could that be so?

But Sgt McCarthy immediately is suggesting that Rick is the hostage in the imagination of the mind out of which "Jamie" was invented. Who put the name of "Rick" or was it "Mick" before McCarthy - was it Dr Ian Sale? Remember Sale was there with the negotiators. This was the name promoted as being the man kidnapped by "Jamie" at Fortescue Bay road turn off you may remember.

So what I'm suggesting here is this: the negotiator works with a support team in a room next door, both parties being separated by glass. These other colleagues next door have full access to both sides of the conversation, but no voice contact with the offender. They use message boards on which they post suggestions, answers etc., that may assist in a resolution - well that's the theory I suppose. So did one of these colleagues perhaps Dr Ian Sale, display a message suggesting McCarthy introduce (the trigger) "Rick" or "Mick"?

Now regarding the mystery male "Rick", simply Martin Bryant's intellectual and comprehensive capabilities preclude him from being able to concoct the identity for a start, and then attribute such sophisticated compilation of subject matter that is discussed between himself and Sgt McCarthy concerning "Mick" and especially his not so imaginary wife and child. If it is Mick, then at that time he did have a wife and child - now divorced.

So these people were not imaginary, they had simply been put into an imaginary landscape...as it were. 'By whom?' you may well ask; by a very close psychiatrist perhaps? Martin Bryant had

never achieved much in his life, up until his travels it was ... dull? But then came Port Arthur and Seascope, and as he readily recounted to John Avery:

JA: "...Remember you said that it was..."

MB: "Exciting"

JA: "Exciting and ..."

MB: "Thrilling"

And to sum up his new-found experiences he continued:

MB: "Yes, it was truly exciting, really exciting ... the most exciting thing I'd ever done in my life which was something different..."

AND IT WAS! This experience for intellectually impaired Martin beat any trip to the best *virtual reality games parlour!* He was cast in a role at Seascope and in his mind he was in command of an operation just like a movie star; he was an "Arnie Schwarzenegger"; he wasn't killing anyone and just as Sgt Terry McCarthy was compelled to conclude, "*it was as though he was acting out a role.*"¹⁵

"Jamie" spins a tale that "Mick" (or Rick) supposedly "wants" to catch a 7 o'clock flight back in Melbourne and attempts to extract a commitment by McCarthy for a helicopter ride to Adelaide via Melbourne where Jamie suggests, "*I mean you could drop Rick off...*"

Just moments before 3.45pm and at p.25 of the transcript of their conversations, McCarthy demonstrates obvious confusion, but Jamie's mind-set engenders a similar memory problem which forces him to ask McCarthy,

Jamie: "What was your name, Rick was it or..."

McCarthy: Terry.

Jamie: "Terry that's right. Terry I'll write that down now."

At page 23 of the transcript, "Jamie" volunteers that Rick is 34 years of age. Bryant also introduces into the conversation that Rick has parents living at Lauderdale, and that he wants to phone them. Mick was certainly about 34 at the time and he did then have parents at Lauderdale. Now how does that rate on the scale of coincidence!

While McCarthy quite logically repeatedly informs Bryant: "you're making the decisions" and that clearly was not the case. But obviously McCarthy or a colleague was quite absorbed by this male "Rick" "Mick", as he continually reintroduces him into their conversation. Then at p.27 McCarthy asks Bryant:

McCarthy: Right. What about his [Rick's] wife. Do you know anything about his wife?

From this question we eventually learn that Rick's wife is highly educated with a university degree, when in a totally disjointed way Jamie states, "*I know how high up in things she is. Yeah... the intelligence and everything university and everything. ...she's passed that [university] and she's got full time work ... In work, higher than what you are...*", referring here to the Police Sergeant, Terry McCarthy.

Rick is conveying via his medium Jamie that his wife is, "*In work, higher than what you are...*" It's almost as if there is a bit of 'on the job' rivalry raising its head here! Far be it from me to stretch a long bow and speculate, but we have already examined a very important individual to the scheme of this operation and certainly a key man in the exercise, and his name even rhymes: is Rick really Mick? For even the demeanours are alike.

It would seem reasonable to suggest that McCarthy is nearly driven mad through much of the transcript as he repeatedly and persistently attempts to extract the surname of Rick from Bryant. Finally his persistence is rewarded with more disinformation as Jamie blurts out that Rick is a lawyer - a ploy that Bryant could not have conceived alone, which would seem

logically was said to convince the negotiator, that Rick was in fact Glen Pears, who he most definitely wasn't? Again I must emphasize such ploys are beyond Bryant's intellect.

Then this facade is extended way past any believable concoction on the part of Martin Bryant, in a long discourse involving lengthy almost pointless talk about helicopters, when suddenly Martin Bryant poses the question:

Jamie: "Yeah. While I'm on the phone um Ricks wondering how did the ABC actually lay get in touch with me." - My emphasis

To which even McCarthy can't disguise his astonishment when he exclaims:

McCarthy: Rick was Rick wondering that?

Now here the deception is laid bare. For if this Rick was indeed a hostage, double handcuffed to an immovable object inside Seascope why on earth would Rick logically have been suggesting *wonderment* to his captor, the gunman in control, trying to work out how an ABC journalist came to phone Seascope when in his predicament his prioritising of how to stay alive would most definitely not include wondering how Alison Smith had known to call Seascope.

No doubt you have realised by now, that I'm suggesting a form of mind control in operation here. Well perhaps you should consider this document, and then dismiss such a suggestion as far fetched:

A declassified CIA document^[8] "Hypnotic Experimentation and Research, 10 February 1954" describes a simulation of relevance to the creation of unsuspecting assassins: "Miss [whited out] was instructed (having previously expressed a fear of firearms in any fashion) that she would use every method at her disposal to awaken Miss [whited out] (now in a deep hypnotic sleep). Failing this, she would pick up a pistol nearby and fire it at Miss [whited out]. She was instructed that her rage would be so great that she would not hesitate to "kill" [whited out] for failing to awaken. Miss [whited out] carried out these suggestions to the letter including firing the (unloaded) gun at [whited out] and then proceeded to fall into a deep sleep. Both were awakened and expressed complete amnesia for the entire sequence. Miss [whited out] was again handed the gun, which she refused (in an awakened state) to pick up or accept from the operator. She expressed absolute denial that the foregoing sequence had happened." BB 36, 37

^[8] CIA MORI ID 190691, p. 1. This is a declassified CIA document. To verify this statement, use FOIA request as listed at the end of the 10-page summary. You should receive the CDs within a month of your request. Look up the MORI ID number listed. www.WantToKnow.info

Now to the "coughs": A sound wave form signature, recorded concurrently with the voice of Jamie a.k.a. Martin Bryant, noted in the transcript of the Jamie Tape as "COUGH" is irrefutable evidence, that Jamie (who was talking concurrently on the portable telephone) did not fire that particular gunshot. It is I believe proof of a conspiracy. So who was this other shooter? Could it have been Rick?

Not one shred of ballistic or forensic evidence was presented to the Court linking either the AR15 or the FN FAL firearms to Martin Bryant, or to them ever having been used on the 28 April 1996 to murder or attempt to murder persons in the Broad arrow Café, the car and bus-park, Jetty Road, the Tollbooth, Port Arthur General Store or Arthur Highway at the entrance to Seascope and in the cottage itself. So where are the firearms that were used at these crime scenes?

At least two gunmen were observed simultaneously at Seascope by Police and an SOG officer, a fact overheard and passed on by volunteer workers at a Police road block, and confirmed yet

again by one of the two female Police first brought to the Historical Site by helicopter. These statements all add enormous weight to the ramifications of the "cough" sound wave form status as a shot. Was blond-headed Martin Bryant either one of these shooters at Seascap? I'm now firmly of the opinion he played a part at seascap, that of acting out a role under someone's psychiatric influence and I will demonstrate shortly more on this point.

There were 20 sounds recorded in the Court Documents as "COUGH," "Cough" and "cough", only one of which has survived on tape. Examined and evaluated I have no reason to doubt it is a gunshot. No police fired any shots in the Seascap siege. Martin was on the telephone and paid no attention to the gunshot. Who fired this shot and was this shot among 19 others similarly noted in the transcript of the audio tape?

So how did Martin Bryant become involved, for if that question is answered the horrid psychopolitical exercise would be exposed. What is the identity of the felons other than Rick, known to have partaken in detaining hostages, one of whom - a female - was still alive when Police first arrived outside Seascap? How did Martin Bryant handcuff Glen Pears single-handedly and control Sally Martin (who was still alive when Police arrived at Seascap) all at the same time? Remember the gunman was never seen to have a handgun either. So how were these co-conspirators extracted from Seascap before first light would have given away their presence? Were these agents extracted before first light, by a Blackhawk helicopter or perhaps an AH-6 "Little Bird" helicopter like the flight which was witnessed in flight near Sorell shortly after the Port Arthur massacre? After all witnesses described it as like being in Beirut or Vietnam there were so many of these helicopters flying about all night.

A Tasmanian manufactured AAA-SAR ·223Rem Carbine was collected by Police from "the hallway" of Martin Bryant's residence at Claire Street New Town on May 3rd. We are now aware that Police entered the premises of Martin Bryant in Clare Street on the evening of 28 April without a warrant.

Accompanied by Ian Sale, Police did not find anything untoward on that first adventure, other than some ammunition wrappers. How is it possible, that when they re-visited Clare St, various gun-cases, cleaning gear, cases of ammunition and the AAA-SAR Carbine were all strewn about the hallway as if waiting to be collected! The DPP tells us at p.59, that Bryant's Clare Street home was security alarmed. How did Police negate this monitored alarm system even in their first unwarranted entrance?

Now returning to the cache of firearms that Police chose not to identify individually that they claimed were there inside Seascap. Bugg refers to these firearms in the court document as "other weapons" (at p.52), while Sergeant Gerard Dutton terms them "various other firearms" and they are mentioned by "Jamie" in disbelieving tones as, quote "...all these other guns are here and everythink." Whose firearms were they? But please consider the fact that **no where in the Court Documents will you find the number of firearms recovered from the ruins of Seascap on the records.**

For this information, we must turn to a newspaper report which tells us that Mr Glenn Martin, the son of Sally and David Martin formerly of Seascap was reported to have said:

"...there was no truth in reports that guns used in the massacre may have belonged to him or were stored in the Seascap Cottage owned by his parents. ...he was appalled by reports that he had an arsenal of 43 guns stored in his parents' pretty cottage..."

Forty three firearms plus three makes a total of 46 firearms, many thousands of rounds (described as "s...t loads" by Geoff Easton), plus containers of petrol...can you imagine all of this packed into the very distinctive yellow Volvo with its surfboard on the roof pulling in for coffee and refuelling at Taranna **and no one noticed?** Where did these firearms come from? The fact

is that the cost alone, of buying those 46 firearms was outside of the ability of Martin Bryant living on his tightly controlled and Public Trustee Company administered budget!

- It has, during the course of this investigation, become clearer that as the Colt AR15 SP-1 recovered from Seascope is not the weapon purchased by Martin Bryant from Terry Hill, then does it not appear there is at least one other Colt, most likely a Colt AR15 SP-1 Rifle still out there some where. Awaiting a further "mission"? Little wonder the Police did not ask Martin too many probing questions, as just like the golden rule for Barrister's at law — 'never ask a question you don't already know the answer to' — Martin's answers could have blown the whole case up in the DPP's face!
- We now know, the Tasmania Police had "not planned" to carry out "chemical tests" on the victim's clothes "due to cost and time" and so the DPP had had no corroborative evidence to link either the Colt AR15-SP1, or indeed the FN FAL rifle to ANY of those persons murdered at the 6 crime scenes.
- Concerning the weapons allegedly deployed there, no forensic evidence, no chemical residue, no DNA, and no fingerprints were submitted into evidence? Is the DPP really suggesting that intellectually impaired Martin Bryant with a mental age of 11 years was so "sharp" as to plan, and carry out these killings at no less than 6 crime scenes, and then know how to hide all of the crucial forensic evidence so well excepting a bloodied knife he is alleged to have forgetfully left in the Cafe?

Remember, it was the SOG's as I said before, who deliberately and knowingly destroyed an untold amount of evidence when they burned the Seascope cottage and the BMW sedan. Am I being facetious in asking, "Would Tasmania Police benefit with an injection of new blood of the intellectual calibre of Martin Bryant?"

- On page 19 from the witness' sworn statements, is mentioned the discovery by an SOG officer of a firearm, "on the grass to the north of the cottage", after Bryant was arrested. Under what circumstances was this firearm abandoned there, who owned the firearm and what are its details? The Crown never suggested Martin Bryant had access to this area or that he placed the weapon there. Nor did they question him as to being the owner of that firearm. Why? Earlier I raised the suggestion that it may have been inadvertently dropped from one of the mystery helicopters mentioned by witnesses as flying over the scene repeatedly during the night. This is a relevant suggestion in light of the fact that "SAC-PAV [was] in action" at Port Arthur, as is claimed in their own documentation on the Web at: www.sac-pav.gov.au/action/portarthur.html

In their own words, they are quite clear that, "The PSCC was involved in the [Port Arthur] incident very early, dealing with requests for advice and assistance," and that front line assistance is said to have been supplied by three entities, the first entity listed is "The Defence Force." The question therefore which begs an answer is this. Various documentation of the event informs us clearly that no helicopters were available in Tasmania which had clearance for night flying, so did the Defence Force make available to the PSCC (and so then SAC-PAV) Blackhawk helicopters reported to have been seen in the Hobart area that weekend? If the military did so, what part did the helicopters and their personnel play in the Seascope siege?

It is fair to say the above questions if answered would expose a whole raft of deficiencies in the Court's findings in all of these matters. It is bad enough if now these anomalies alone remain unanswered. However in the case of the gift shop door there are considerable deceptions for the public to unravel. Early in the report compiled by Damien Bugg QC, he states that, *"the lock fitted to the door was one which provided the choice of having the outside handle deadlocked or able to be opened and, independently of that operation, the interior handle deadlocked or able to be opened."* What prevented Damien Bugg QC from simply stating the

929 Exterior Escape Deadlatch

Outside: Opened by handle when unlocked. Key locks or unlocks exterior handle but does not retract the bolt.
Inside: Opened by handle at all times. Turnknob locks or unlocks exterior handle.



details of lock fitted? Was he unable to read and discern such a simple matter for himself and state, 'the lock-set fitted to this door was a #929 Lockwood Exterior Escape Deadlatch'?

Mr. Bugg continues that he was, *"satisfied that there is sufficient evidence to establish that the door locking mechanism on the subject door had started to malfunction at some time prior to the shootings on the 28th April 1996."* and further that the, *"handle on the inside of the door appeared to not open the door even though unlocked. [But that] by the 28th April it appears, that the intermittent malfunction had become permanent."*

Clearly the door lock was malfunctioning and this malfunction prevented 5 visitors and 2 staff from making the only option of escape open to them at the time from the gift shop to reach possible sanctuary from the shooter's bullets via this exterior escape door and it directly and unquestionably did contribute to the deaths of those 7 people.

In his report regarding the fire exit door to the Broad Arrow Café, the then DPP, Mr Damian Bugg QC, stated that the Port Arthur Historic Site employee who was nailing all the doors and windows shut and painting out the window glazing and with the assistance of a policeman, both of them tested the door lock, and found it to be inoperative. I wonder how peacefully these two individuals sleep at night.

The questions here are; why did the New South Wales Police permit the interference with a murder scene of the acts of nailing the particular door which was involved with the death of about six persons? Why did the New South Wales Police not make any report into the matter of the fire exit door that couldn't be opened? And was this particular door nailed shut prior to the arrival of the New South Wales forensic Team?

These facts alone tell us that the door was inoperative, but Mr. Bugg then states, *"I am satisfied from the interviews I have had that the inference can be drawn that Nicole Burgess and, probably also Elizabeth Howard, knew by the 28th April 1996 that the doorway at the south eastern front of the Broad Arrow Cafe did not open from the inside out due to a malfunction."*

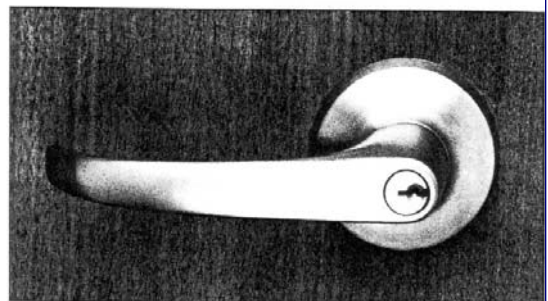
I must point out, both of these lovely young women died there knowing their only route of escape was barred by an inoperative door lock. If the foregoing is not bad enough, then consider that on 30th April 1996, *"a carpenter employed by the Authority,"* was instructed to "secure" the door and windows by, *"nailing the doors and windows to their frames."*! This account is contradictory to other statements in the DPP's own report. This constitutes deliberate and wilful interference with a crime scene on the part of some individual; the point is who instructed this individual?

But it gets worse: over the signature of senior locksmith from the firm Jacksons Security of 123 Murray Street, Hobart, we find he clearly adjudicates the type of latch function when he states:

"The lock's internal rose rules out the possibility of the handle having another

930 Series Locksets

The 930 Series of Key-in-Lever Locksets features a conventional design lever handle. These locksets are produced from high purity zinc alloy and are available in a comprehensive range of functions and attractive finishes.



function except [fire escape](#)".

After scrutinising both reports by Commissioner Doyle and that of Damien Bugg QC with regard to the Gift Shop door, I can say with confidence Commissioner Doyle was objective, while the DPP was Judge, Jury and Executioner and he most definitely harboured a conflict of interests.



Ray Groom: Embarrassed & struggling to contain his anger Groom stridently defends blatant felonies! The Minister claimed "that door" was not a factor in the deaths of any of the 5 people pulled up & shot dead in that alcove and against it.

Ray Groom in terms that leave a cold shiver to run down my back, and on [national television](#) no less stated, "*Cause of the murders, was not a door ... ah, I don't believe that, that door issue, is a principle factor in the matter.*" Ray Groom is not only less than convincing, but his statement is totally at odds with the DPP, and Commissioner Doyle both of whom are quoted above. It was I believe at least improper of him even to make comment, but in law I believe it would be called by another term; but then, the cliché reads, 'he who pays the piper calls the tune'. (Source, the Bugg Report). This is the same Minister who's twisted principles were exposed, when he assured a Site staff-member, 'Don't worry, Mrs xxxxxxx, I have the b.....d handcuffed to the bed and lying on his burns'.

The grave injustice concerning the gift shop door is further heightened, if that is possible, by Commissioner Doyle (ref 8.12 at p.58-62 of the Doyle Report), where he stated, "*certain evidence given at the Bryant Trial is either incorrect, or not factual!*" This is after all only stating the obvious, and that has been my position since reading the Court Documents from day one. It requires me to also point out, that in June 1997 Special Commissioner Max Doyle was deliberating upon findings of inquiry into "matters affecting the Port Arthur Historic Site and other associated matters", seven months after Bugg had presented his deplorable discourse before Justice Cox that is termed "fact" in the Court Documents.

It is interesting to note that in a letter over the signature of Ray Groom, dated 20 November 1996, and addressed to Mr Steven Howard - the PAHSMA employee whose wife was murdered behind the counter in the gift shop - where he states and I quote:

"Preliminary work on dismantling the café will commence on December 2, 1996 with work scheduled to be complete before Christmas..."

What indecent haste! The grave and serious matters of "that door" had not even been dealt with yet! You will note also the sanitised term Ray Groom uses here; it could hardly be termed "dismantled". Let's call it for what it was: The Broad Arrow Café was partially "demolished", that is a much more accurate term. For if the structure had been "dismantled," then the survivors and staff members who lost loved ones and workmates behind "that door", fitted with its *fire escape latch set* may not have felt so betrayed, if it was not so in-your-face obvious, the structure had to be demolished and as much of the distinguishing features such as that door-way ripped out and destroyed for ever. Unless of course, the structure was in truth carefully dismantled, with the door latch being deliberately targeted and deliberately damaged so as to destroy its integrity as material evidence, then I would accept "dismantled". I wonder where this latch set is today. If this should prove to be a more accurate conclusion, could it not be that someone tampered yet again with evidence? I wonder if anyone ever owned up to dropping a beam upon it - accidentally of course.

So many allied events beg further inquiry; the list is quite extensive. But, I must say they are quite beyond this writer's charter of matters pertinent to the title of the publication. I feel almost overwhelmed, when I contemplate even just a few anomalies not covered here. Many

* Delivered face to face at a small meeting with the Minister at Taranna in early May of 1996.

of PAHSMA's staff members were outraged by the cover-up, so on 24 October 1997, the new Commissioner of Police visited the Historic Site. He made prior arrangements for management to organise "an informal gathering of staff," near the fountain. Here it had been arranged for Aileen Kingston to accept on behalf of the staff a citation, "for the help [they] gave Police on and after the 28th April 1996." One is prompted to ask Richard McCreadie, "Who are the police you believe staff were able to help?" McCreadie had at his disposal a boasted 471 Tasmania police - 2 unarmed police women fresh from the academy plus a former SOG armed with a pistol were all he sent, for 6 long hours. Surely the ratio was tipped in favour for McCreadie's team of 3 to receive a generous measure of help from the 500 or so people on the Historic Site that day...

Not so surprisingly, in his speech Richard McCreadie urged the staff to "forget April 28" as "it is time to get on with life," a diagnosis incidentally that is entirely at odds with mental health professionals, but understandably in harmony with all in authority - even including the government appointed health insurance medico; they all have much to conceal and a lot to lose when their collusions are exposed to the light of day.¹⁶

My hope is that in time and with patient research those who are investigating this event with an open mind, and no hidden agenda, will assemble their material for all Australians to consider and then demand of authority an open Coronal Inquiry for starters. Nothing less will suffice.

Until the people of Australia are shaken by reality and throw off the blight of indifference, ignorance and even embarrassment (as has been demonstrated in recent days by the video overboard affair) and somehow come to realise that the Port Arthur massacre which involved 7 crime scenes, was never conceived, planned and accomplished by the mind and physical actions of Martin Bryant acting alone. These and at least 6 other mass shooting murders go right to the foundation of our very existence, our freedoms and our heritage. Port Arthur created the trauma that moved across a nation, it was the tool for cultivating the psychic condition of the masses to accept the horrific law changes that are now enacted, and it was the necessary "excuse" that ensured acceptance also of implementing national firearm prohibitions and confiscations already written by Daryl Smeaton by November of 1995, and imposed them upon a nation that then had no firearm problem. Yes, the chicken did come before the egg.

Finally at this stage I must mention very briefly the compensation of victims.

Documents before the County Court in Melbourne show that on August 9 2004 "a [45-year-old] nurse who said her life was ruined after counselling victims of the Port Arthur Massacre ... won a secret six-figure payout after suing her employers." Her lawyer Mr Ross Sicilia of the law firm Slater and Gordon was reported to have said, *"more than 2000 people affected by the tragedy, including 690 emergency workers, received critical-incident stress counselling,"* after the massacre. The plaintive launched her action against job agency Audiometrics and the Commonwealth Bank and settled for an undisclosed amount.¹⁷

Her employer had flown the nurse to Hobart to counsel up to 200 bank workers who the article claimed "had lost loved ones in the tragedy". This I find a quite extraordinary claim that surely is spurious. In the article, Mr Sicilia is quoted as stating that during her time Tasmania carrying out her tasks, *"She had to walk into a room of dead people, all suffering gunshot wounds. A lot of these people were mutilated or disfigured by a high-powered rifle. We're talking about people who couldn't be recognised."* This I find quite unbelievable. For a start, the bodies were all transported to the Hobart morgue, and if indeed some of those the nurse counselled had her accompany them to identify one or even several bodies, then she would have been escorted to a viewing room with just the body or bodies there to be identified. There is no way this nurse was among the carnage like that which Mrs Wendy Scurr and her colleagues and

volunteers had to endure for many hours as the victims were triaged, treated and shipped-out! This is a ludicrous situation, which emphasises the gross injustice of the treatment of the PAHSMA staff such as Vicky McLaughlin, Wendy Scurr, Steven Howard, and many others besides.¹⁸

End Notes

¹ Carol Altmann, "Port Arthur massacre video for 10c", *The Weekend Australian*, 28aug04, pp. 1-3

² Mark Baker, "Gruesome video of Port Arthur victims is bought for 10c – Massacre tape uproar," *The Examiner*, p.1, 29aug04

³ Gavin Lower, "Sorry dad bites bullet", *The Mercury*, 8jan04.

⁴ Claire Konkes, "Please explain calls as horror video fury grows," *The Mercury*, 30aug04.

⁵ na, "Call for sacking over Port Arthur video", *The Age*, 28aug04.

⁶ *Ibid*; John Caples, "\$30m plan a boost for Port Arthur," <http://www.examiner.com.au/story.asp?id=328136>, 04feb06

⁷ Wade, Rohan, "Video furore grows: Police concerned after copies made of chilling footage," *The Mercury*, 30aug04; Wade, "Snag to Video swoop," *The Mercury*, 01sep04.

⁸ *ibid*, 01sep04.

⁹ Paul Enever, "Massacre On Tape," *The Daily Advertiser*, 2sep04, pp. 1-2.

¹⁰ Enever, "Man surrenders Port Arthur video," *The Daily Advertiser*, 9sep04, p.3; Mark Miller, Snr legal officer Legal Services, Tasmania Police #MMSO, 6sep04.

¹¹ Enever, "Massacre On Tape," *The Daily Advertiser*, 2sep04, pp.1-2.

¹² Ellen Whinnett

¹³ www.lawsociety.com.au/page.asp?PartID=4778; *The Daily Telegraph*, January 26, 2005

¹⁴ <http://www.biomet.org/bi/>.

¹⁵ Interview between Martin Bryant, John Avery & James Hannon, Risdon Prison, Fri 11.10.96; Channel Nine's ACA, "Port Arthur the Inside Story"

¹⁶ PAHSMA memorandum 15.10.97

¹⁷ Caulfield, Christine, "Big compo for Port Arthur Massacre Nurse", *The Mercury* 10aug04.

¹⁸ *Ibid*, Caulfield, 10aug04, at:
http://news.com.au/common/story_page/0,4057,10397400%255E3462,00.html

Did Joe Vialls ever play fullback for Jerusalem?

...an unauthorised, brief, biography

Chapter 28

On the 16th November 2003, in an e-mail posted by Jeff Rense at <http://www.rense.com/> correspondent D. Michael posed this question:

“Who is Joe Vialls? Is he consummate researcher, investigator and expert? Or is he agent provocateur, magician, and master of disinformation?”

Michael Mazur shot back an arrow - ditto: *“Jeff, who is D. Michael?”* And the score was fifteen all. What agenda is exposed when someone uses a “question” to answer a question? After a year and a half, this unauthorized, brief, biography may provide some of the answers.

As I've already related, it was in 1998, I joined forces with Andrew [MacGregor](#) - to investigate the Port Arthur massacre, and during that year Joe Vialls, promoted as a lone, independent investigator with self-promoted experience, attracted a good deal of attention nation-wide with his writings on the massacre, especially in the area of the Broad Arrow Café. His writing technique was suggestive of journalistic training. My initial inquiries to West Australia confirmed that among those who took the trouble to meet the man face to face, they made observations that confirmed to me a past clouded in intrigue. Joe even replied to my inquiries, and accepted my modest donation. But his arrogant, dismissive remarks showed an indifference to the very subject he claimed to be exposing for the public good. This demeanour I found very concerning.



Andrew
MacGregor

Australians on the eastern seaboard knew nothing of “Joe” Vialls until long after 1996. His first article published by *The Strategy* newspaper of May 1997, erroneously promoted a 'fake video', which at the time was claimed to have been handed to a journalist by a Tasmania Policeman. For Australians, and by this article, “Joe” had arrived! Soon, logging on to 'surf the Web', produced hits and links to “Joe Vialls” popping up like mushrooms after warm autumn rain.

These articles confirmed an ability to gather obscure photographs, maps, diagrams and include them in his now familiar eye-catching, breaking-news articles on the Web, sometimes within hours of the event - that to the unwary - marks him as a remarkable, armchair internet journalist. One generous, even respected commentator slates “Joe” at N^o5 in the world...

On the Web his articles have usually been attributed to “Joe” - Joe Vialls. In excess of 112 articles attributed to him were at one time posted on the Web. Some 19 articles dealing with the Port Arthur massacre alone, have been accredited to “Joe Vialls”. But there also have appeared a variety of pseudonyms: Joe Vialls, O.J. Vialls, Joe Vialis, Joe Vallis, and Joe Viallis; could “Joe” and Agent Fescado be one and the same also? For a considerable time now his Web-postings link him directly to his residential address in Perth, Western Australia, with his bank, account details and number all displayed. His direct appeals for cheques and cash in “almost any banknotes” are linked to a dedicated - ‘*Joe Vialls Donation Page*’.

"Joe" has always claimed English ancestry and along with his wife and family is reported as having *returned* to Perth in 1988, and the family moved into Merlyn Drive of Carine, a suburb just north of Perth's CBD. From the transitive "returned" an initial Perth arrival remains a mystery.

In March 1990 though, "Joe" was introduced to the readership of *The West Australian* newspaper, as a *victim of government*, allegedly injured in the 1980's by covert, government sponsored mind games, but the readership had to wait a further nine months to learn, as CEO of a failed engine technology developer, he played a central role in the company's failed takeover bid for *The Daily News*.

On 31 March of that year, *The West Australian* published a full two-page article in their Feature, "BIG Weekend", headlined "MIND GAMES". For West Australians, "Joe" Vialls certainly *had arrived* there. Introduced by Mark Thornton, in the broadsheet's astonishing 2-page feature story, the introduction of "Joe Vialls" - exclusively to West Australians - was big, bold, and most definitely *not* low key, by any measure. The narrative focused on information provided in the main by the subject himself with some scant corroborative evidence possibly provided by means other than face to face interviews, of the two English based psychologists. "Joe" persistently pleaded his case of being, 'hypnotised unknowingly at some time and very strong post-hypnotic suggestions made which [in 1990 were allegedly] still affecting his life'.

The quite bizarre claims made throughout the narrative of "Mind Games", even had journalist Mark Thornton at times in his writings, almost unable to hide a degree of scepticism. "Eminent psychologist" Prof., Lionel Haward (now deceased) was quoted as defending Joe's theories. But the veracity of the professor's advice was destroyed, by the publishing of this very article! For Thornton explains that the good professor himself advised "Joe" to vanish to Australia so as to allow the furore (which "Joe" claims he actually instigated), to blow over.

One would have to conclude though that "BIG Weekend" article's revelations run contrary to all of the professor's professional advice; it could hardly be claimed "Joe" really wanted to - "vanish". So to what purpose and whose agenda did this propaganda serve?

To reiterate, Mark Thornton reported Professor Lionel Harward earnestly advising "Joe" to **"disappear to Australia and let the whole thing rest."** But Joe made the massive shift, possibly from Alderburgh in England, to Perth, but "Joe" ignored entirely an integral part of the professor's sober advice.

Until late 1997 at most, I took "Joe" Vialls at face value. I thought he was no more than just another lone champion in Australia, supposedly working to expose the intrigues surrounding the Port Arthur massacre, and to have an innocent Martin Bryant's conviction overturned. But it was "Joe's" unwarranted, dismissive persona ubiquitous in his replies to my letters, which indicated something was amiss; so I decided to take a closer look at Joe Vialls.

His earliest letters to me (23 May 1998) bore no indication of "family" arms. However by 5 May 1999, his letters sported the arms (at right) with a diagonal red belt bearing three diamonds on a white shield, a cross right upper and knight's helmet overall (no crown). However just as is the case with much that "Joe" circulated, his heraldry changed! In 2003 this form (at left) was posted on the Internet. But I wonder what crown he was beholden to?



"Joe" Vialls' hypothesis of Port Arthur massacre is quite flawed. While he lavishes his writing with his clever 'padding' to promote numerous premises as fact, his conclusions are in the main supported by his own brand of unexplained "hard scientific evidence". Error is one thing - misinformation is nothing less than propaganda in anyone's

language. When genuinely concerned people read misinformation history shows it produces an unpleasant, psychological legacy; they become confused, turn away permanently, ever before they consider different perspectives by other investigators reaching provable conclusions.

My study of "Joe" included reading the multitude of copyrighted articles covering a host of subject matter posted on various Web sites, newspaper articles, letters to the editor, magazines, periodicals, E-mails and primary administrative records.

Joe also introduced himself to an enquiring readership globally via *Nexus* magazine, through his published article entitled "The Magic Cruise Missile" in their April/May 1993 edition. This debut was followed by three further *Nexus* articles (April-Sept 1994) in Volumes 215, 216 & 217, entitled "The Terrorist Factory" (very much later, posted on the Web).

Joe claimed the latter's text was lifted from a book manuscript, entitled "Mike-Alpha-Delta-3" (an acronym for "MAD-3"), a work obviously more than just an idea, long before his Perth interview of March of 1990. In the *Nexus* articles "Joe" claims the manuscript had earlier been submitted to publishers Collins in Sydney (Australia), and although first appraisals looked promising, they rejected the project. Here I shall make three points:

1. "Joe" Vialls would have the reader believe the story line in Mark Thornton's "Mind Games" article is a factual, 20-year-account of his life.
2. "Joe" Vialls would have readers believe that the narrative of "The Terrorist Factory" is a fictional work based on fact.
3. After reading both narratives, one is forced to conclude they mirror one another.

To dismiss "Joe," Vialls with some disparaging label would be very silly. He may well have a strange disposition veiled with intrigues, but as late as November 1998, he was obviously causing some who interacted with him concern as to his mental condition, for at that time he circulated a copy of a letter addressed to him, *reformatted* with a heading to read: "For Publication". The letter appeared to have originated from out of the Office of Health Review in Perth, in which the complaints officer Stephanie Boyd wrote to "Mr J Vialls" in part:

*"When we spoke in April you indicated you were seeking as an outcome to have any reference to mental illness removed from your record ... there is no mention or diagnosis of a mental health problem in the notes."*¹

Our subject who simply signs himself "Joe" is a very clever writer, a very clever story teller. But such writers inevitably stamp their work with a unique and obvious, hallmark.



Otho Jewell a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls,
1990 – Photo by Tony Ashby

If you search the Web, as well as his own published work not one photograph of "[Joe](#)" will turn up. Only Perth's West Australian captured 2, and the 1990 photograph (at left) was captured by Tony Ashby. From Mark Thornton's article though we learn, "Joe" Vialls returned to Perth with his wife and two children in 1988." His 1988 "return", is corroborated in letters by "Joe" and he also writes of an earlier visit.² In the plethora of Web and periodical newspaper articles such as published in *The Strategy* and *Nexus*, he volunteers no more than a fragmented account of his past, but first we shall deal with his name.

"Joe Vialls" snail-mail address: 45 Merlin Drive, Carine, 6020 W.A., Australia.

"Joe" widely advertises his above contact residential address with Carine 6020, a suburb just north of Perth's CBD. Official documentation dated at February 26, 1990, show the following persons reside at the above address, though "Joe" is no more than an alias:

- Otho Jewell Vialls (male),
- Marilyn Ann Vialls (spouse),

Current public documentation, show a further two persons reside at the above residence:

- Hannah Alexandra (female - aged 27 yrs) and,
- Toby Charles (male aged about 25 yrs).³

Some early background to the name

Otho Jewell, a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls, has always inferred English roots. A family history search demonstrates the name of "Vialls" in its various forms appearing rather late in English records with the first Otho Vialls born in 1814, while listings in our subject's form of "Vialls" proved uncommon, the reoccurring given names are unique.

VIALLS Family Tree

Descendants of Otho Vialls⁴

1	Otho Vialls		
	+Jane		
..... 2	Otho Vialls	1814 -	b: September 1814 in Fulford, Yorkshire, Eng.
.....	+Helen Maria Jewell - m: 9 January 1869 St Pauls, Chichester, Sussex, Eng.		
..... 3	Otho Jewell Vialls	1870 -	b: Abt. 1870
.....	+Mary Jane Anslow 1876 -	b: 1876 in Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
.....		m: 1897 Elham, Kent, Eng.	
..... 4	Otho Vialls	b: January 1900 in Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
.....		Census: 31 March 1901 Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
..... 4	Alice Vialls	1898 - b: 1898 in Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
.....		Census: 31 March 1901 Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
..... 4	Marione Vialls	1901 - b: 1901 in Belfast, Ireland.	
.....		Census: 31 March 1901 in Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
..... 4	Helen Jewell Vialls	1903 - b: 1903 in Elham, Eng.	
.....		Census: 31 March 1901 Folkstone, Kent, Eng.	
..... 2	Benjamin Vialls	b: January 1816 in <u>France</u> .	
.....		Ch: 28 January 1816 Elham, Eng.	
.....	+Fanny Flockton -	m: 21 February 1831 Melbourn, Cambridge, Eng.	
..... 3	Anna Evelina	- Ch: 1834, Melbourn, Cambridge Eng. FHL #990296 1558-1851.	

In considering the above English records we can but ask: ***"Are not these the ancestral family of our subject?"*** My search of records also indicated just six further males named "Otho" in all English records who may well be descendants of Benjamin and Fanny Flockton - but I cannot confirm a direct relationship. It is from among a different line of surely the same family that the 1871 census shows an Otho Vialls aged 56yrs - also born in France but then a "British subject" - along with his wife Emma aged 41yrs, were "Master" and "Matron" of a Nottingham "workhouse" and in charge of in excess of 350 people; young, old, male and female but all from among the district's poor. The notorious "workhouse" of the period along with its usual tyrant master and helpers that was so well portrayed in the stage-play "Oliver". Research proves the surname in its various forms is more prevalent on the Continent. Therefore in English family history, it is significant that Benjamin's birth (Jan 1816) and the above workhouse master Otho (b. c1815), were both recorded as being once French citizens.

England's 1881 census shows the male #2 Benjamin (by then aged 65 years), residing in Melbourne, Cambridge (Eng), giving his employment as an "actuary [in a] savings bank". Twenty years later the next census of 31 March 1901, it would appear possible that Benjamin was deceased. However if he were alive he could well have been out of the country at the time, but remember he would have been by then 85-years of age. The Otho Jewell Vialls above (#3 - born Folkstone, Kent, 1870), as #275424, served in the Nottinghamshire Yeomanry, Sherwood Rangers from 1914-1920, and as a Regimental Quarter Master Sergt, he was 'mentioned in dispatches' and awarded Meritorious Service Medals and Territorial Forces Efficiency Medals; it would appear possible that he is our subject's grandfather? ⁵

Otho Jewell - a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls

In his inimitable style, "Joe" himself gave his "official" name - **Otho Jewell** - an ever so slight "spin" when he wrote his 1994 *Nexus* article, "The Terrorist Factory", a now familiar 'in-your-face' introduction to his main character around which the yarn is entwined. Dumped before the reader, the first two words of the very first sentence reads, "Otto Jewell"! This article was later posted on the Internet. ⁶

When one compares the narrative in the *West Australian* "Mind Games" article published of March 31, 1990, with this *Nexus* article published in 1994 - bearing in mind it was drawn from a manuscript completed I would suggest some time before March 31, of 1990 - the dates and detail of most events referred to in the works are in harmony.

Though much of our subject, Otho Jewell a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls' life before his return to Australia, has by necessity been drawn from Web-posted-articles, letters, statements, claims, quotations, newspaper articles and some original documentation in the main attributed to "Joe Vialls" himself. If Otho Jewell Vialls had been frank with his readership as to his *bona fides* from earliest published writings under the nom de plume "Joe Vialls", the questions raised on the Jeff Rense Web Site and need for this unauthorised biography may not have arisen.

The earliest recounts "Joe" provides us of his life are quite fragmented so "possibly" and "probably" appear often, in part because of paradoxes created by the sourced articles. It is therefore appropriate that you are able to at least consider the relevance of some activities of the his fictional character Otto Jewell, and then compare these (fictional) claims with the (factual?) assertions and reports about Otho Jewell Vialls, by the author "Joe Vialls".

After the reported death of Otho Jewell Vialls on 17 July 2005, current records of the Metropolitan Cemeteries Board of Western Australia[†] show his birth year as I'd previously estimated correctly as 1942/3. During the 1950s and 'as a teenager' he claims he attended secondary schooling in Germany, but for reasons best known to "Joe," he chooses not to reveal the circumstance surrounding his scholastic Germanic adventure, and to what level and or even the location or name of the school.

Though the earliest employment Joe mentions is with the Royal Air Force (RAF); there's nought about any earlier employment, so it's possible that he joined the RAF around 1959/60. If he entered the RAF before 1964 he could have entered either as a "boy entrant" or as an "Aircraft Apprentice". His references to RAF service are deliberately vague. Ordinarily an ex-serviceman is proud of early career moves, especially with the military services, but "Joe" Vialls is definitely an exception to this rule. After all, a squadron designation and service

[†] Pinnaroo Valley Memorial Park, application number #PC00003945

duration could surely not be claimed to be "classified" information. But in "The Terrorist Factory" his thinly veiled character Otto attained 27 years-of-age in 1970, which is in accord with Joe's claimed 1950's secondary schooling in Germany I should point out.

My Web search of accessible RAF records of previous service between the years 1960-1975 proved fruitless; no person with the surname "Vialls" was found.

Today America imposes its will, albeit the agenda of another lesser nation in the area, on the Arab states boarding the Persian Gulf and Gulf of Oman, but from the Suez Crisis, and at least until 1971, England alone imposed its 'colonial' military presence over this strategic part of the Middle East. In 1961 the RAF even assisted Kuwait in military actions against Iraq. But in 1970 Iran was their prime concern. At that time records show the RAF's 845 squadron was flying Wessex helicopters off HMS *Bulwark* in the Gulf, but of RAF land-based squadrons thereabouts, I can only confirm their "complete withdrawal" occurred in December of 1971.

In a letter to the editor of the *West Australian*, "Joe" states that early on the morning of 20 February 1970, he was flying in the lead machine, of a group of five RAF Wessex helicopters which had lifted-off from a RAF land base at Sharjah, on the Persian Gulf, and further that the flight subsequently "*carried out one of the most thorough searches in the history of air-sea rescue.*" But another article claims "Joe" as a "flight engineer with the RAF - not a pilot".⁷

In another instance Joe promotes an early rather vague RAF association, when in an article by "Joe Vialls" dated March 2002, the author tells us "*In the early sixties we were sent out to find the [crash site](#) of an English Electric Lightning Mach 2 fighter, which went in vertically at nearly 400 miles per hour during an aerobatics display [in Britain].*" My search confirmed a collision did occur between two F3 British Electric Lightning jets, during a Farnborough Air Show. One limped back to base and landed safely while the other piloted by Flt Lt Cooke crashed. Cooke was so badly injured he never flew again. His aeroplane was captured on film, in a nose-down vertical attitude about to plow into the ground, near the little village pub at Wattisham, with the ejected pilot and seat-chute visible near the aircraft; at the time a widely circulated photograph. But, let's be specific about this crash. It occurred not roughly 'in the early sixties' but *in* the first year of that decade 1960; surely an easy year to remember in RAF serviceman's career. As to any involvement by "Joe" in wreckage recovery, I cannot confirm nor refute the claim.⁸



Imminent Impact: This extraordinary photograph captured moments before impact of the crash of an F3 Lightning at Wattisham which had earlier participated in the Farnborough Air Show c1960

Now let's consider what his doppelganger Otto Jewell tells us. Fictitiously speaking of course, Otto flew in the left-hand pilot's seat of a helicopter's cockpit, thence to a port door-mounted heavy machine gun as he flew over Oman, also "back in 1970". Narrator "Joe" goes on to relate how Otto completed a conversion course on a Northrop F5F jet fighter; a not inconsequential achievement I should say. So apparently flight engineer "Joe" is relaxed about his plot to have Otto Jewell convert - under mind control - in a jiffy from rotary-winged aircraft to the pilot of a fixed-wing jet fighter; a quantum leap - especially for a flight engineer!



The Northrop F5E4

In 1997, "Joe" explains, "*In 1992 ... I first decided to investigate WPC [Yvonne] Fletcher's murder the most serious obstacle I encountered was the British media...*" Now

here "Joe" creates a conundrum; supposedly Joe Vialls and his family returned to Perth, Western Australia in 1988, and he has just told us it wasn't until 1992 - 4 years later - that he ***decided to begin*** investigating the murder of WPC Fletcher who was shot dead in St James Square, London eight years earlier, in April 1984. Interestingly, he would also have us believe, by repeated inference that he was personally and intimately involved - at that time - with this 1984 assassination; he tells us he was as close as possible to 'ground zero'. Though strangely, the bane of his life - the Fletcher murder - is not raised even in passing in his 1990 interview with *The West Australian* entitled "Mind Games". Even although Joe's alter ego Otto Jewell, as The Terrorist Factory mind-controlled gunman, supposedly shot WPC Fletcher. Then, after 11 years and having fled to Perth, Western Australia (to vanish?), and by a most unconvincing, undated, alleged copy-facsimile, "Joe" expected to convince his readers that a Joe Layburn was flying to Perth, to sort out the evidence described by the author of the facsimile - Richard Belfield of Fulcrum Productions - as 'elusive and contradictory'. Simply "Joe's" supportive documents fail the initial credibility test. I'm unconvinced as to its authenticity. But I must point out, this situation almost mirrors his 2001 *Sorry Day* project to have Martin Bryant released; again his documented evidence was fragmented and not credible.⁹

Of course, his *discovery* by the media in 1994 would have had nothing at all to do with Mark Thornton's 2-page article in the BIG Weekend feature of *The West Australian* of March of 1990, "Mind Games", now would it? But as to this alleged UK media interference, in searching the U.K. media archives I can present no evidence to substantiate his claims.

For any reader of Joe Vialls' Australian writings it quickly became apparent, the shooting murder of WPC Yvonne Fletcher was promoted at least as dominating his thinking for as many as twenty years, as references to the assassination pop-up repeatedly and even in the very first lines of his first published writings on the Port Arthur massacre. Now it may be prudent to consider more of the allegations raised in the "Mind Games" article of 1990. In his latest Web posting (2005), and by displaying two letters on alleged company letterheads, "Joe" attempts to authenticate his close association with the American Hughes Corporation; a company he tells us hired him in 1983.¹⁰

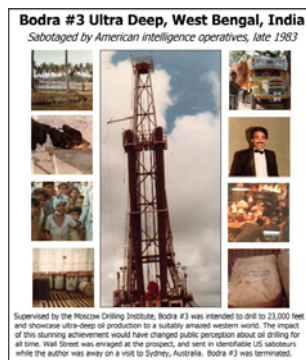
A subsidiary of Hughes Corp, Hughes Tool Company Ltd (by 1987, Baker Hughes) was a major supplier to the oil drilling industry of their multi-cutter drill bits (patented early last century), as well as invert drilling fluids supply and associated specialist advice.

It is interesting that Joe chooses not to share with us the circumstances by which he allegedly gained the necessary knowledge and experience, so as in 1983 to be recognised as a "specialist in drilling fluids technology". For in that year he claims Hughes Tools Company hired him to provide expertise to the Indian Oil and Natural Gas Corporation (IONGC), drilling in their West Bengal project, which he tells us required the company's "classified" (?) invert fluid system to be used in IONGC's 'very deep oil well' there, claimed by Joe to have been scheduled to drill to 23,000 feet, and the Thornton article never mentions the name of the oil well.

"Joe" makes no mention of any oilfield operational experience prior to the Bodra #3 well in West Bengal, and as a flight engineer in the RAF, he surely was never called upon to employ "drilling fluids technology"! But in his own recounts, and after just 4 years (by 1986), he's done with oilfield operations - according to Mark Thornton's article, although how he squeezes all this "experience" in and beats any Houdini trick I'm aware of! But I must concede there's a claim at least of an advisory role carried on after *returning* to Western Australia in 1988 but no mention as to any company name; coincidentally the same year (and in July) that saw 167 oilmen die in a conflagration of Piper Alpha, the Occidental Petroleum (Caledonia) Company's oil rig in the North Sea.

But drawing upon his very own claims in his own articles lets get it right; "Joe" Vialls tells us he accumulated just 4 years in oil. Is it therefore not reasonable to *downsize* Joe's oft-repeated, almost mandatory introduction, of '30 years experience in military and oilfield operations' to a realistically revised 27 years - at least?

Four years in oil and say 23 or so years in the RAF? But in considering the above, are

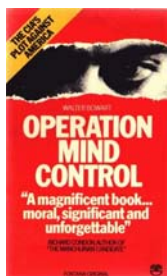


"Joe's" claimed Bodra #3 oil rig

his claims of accumulated experience at all accurate - or even possible in a single life-time? If he joined the RAF in say 1959 aged 17 yrs - and he's left the RAF and was employed by Hughes Tool Co. by 1983 as "an expert". That accounts for 24 years RAF service by age, say 41 years. Five years later he flees to Perth in W.A. and his photograph features in "Mind Games" in March 1990. This means "Joe", sorry Otho Jewell Vialls has by 2005 hit say about 63 years-of-age.

We are told that whilst in India on his Bodra #3 adventure, the make-believe Otto Jewell (also employed by the Hughes Tools Co.), stayed at the Oberoi Grand Hotel in Calcutta, just as "Joe" claims he himself did. While there, so the story goes, Otto was 'zapped' by CIA agents so that Otto took on a totally hypnotically-induced mind-controlled state, then to jet out at the controls of his Northrop to England and his appointment as an assassin from inside Enserch House, on St James Square, London. Here a problem emerges in expert "Joe's" theory.

Now we shouldn't be surprised, when Mark Thornton writes that after Joe had effectively repaired the allegedly 'carefully sabotaged well,' in West Bengal, (before his return to England) and during the early months of 1984, he felt that he was working under immense pressure, until after returning to Calcutta and while sitting in the Oberoi Grand's coffee shop, he claimed to have experienced "a blank period in his memory," of two hours. Thornton goes on to explain that support for Joe's theories was obtained from English psychologists Raymond Seal, and (the now deceased) Prof. Lionel Harward, although importantly the latter makes the point that Joe's mind control claims were only ever *prima facie*.



In an attempt to garner further support for "Joe's" *prima facie* claim of suffering badly from mind control, he corresponded with author Walter Bowart. Thornton Explains that in 1989 (by which time the Vialls family were already returned to a new home in Perth), Joe discovered a Walter Bowart book entitled *Operation Mind Control*, and further that the narrative confirmed many of "Joe's" theories and claims of being an unwitting victim of mind control, claims which are central to the *West Australian's* article, and his novel manuscript, *Mike-Alpha-Delta-3*. In fact Mr Bowart contradicts Joe's notions, real or imaginary, of a mind controlled assassin having murdered Yvonne Fletcher, when Bowart writes: **"...mind control [is] not needed to make a killer,"** qualifying this statement with the experience of an alleged, unnamed assassin who claims it is essential though for covert operatives to be *debriefed* using mind control, as while **"They'd all kill, but ... [without mind controlled debriefing] ... they might not be able to keep the secret."** ¹¹

Here Bowart has destroyed any notion that WPC Yvonne Fletcher was assassinated by a covert agent *under mind control* as claimed by "Joe". Equally, when considered beside articles such as the *Terrorist Factory* the case can be successfully argued it is now possible to point more confidently towards the probable assassin who pulled the trigger. It's a ploy ages old to use the plausible story line in a novel to bury a historical truth. Is this why Joe proclaimed to the world his *prima facie* case of mind control experience in the first instance?

If the facts exposed thus far are not concerning enough, Joe was further reported to have claimed Walter Bowart had communicated with him and when our subject had attempted to procure a copy of the book, *"Strangely ... Bowart's book had sold out [and] he was not able to find any copies of it for sale."* In a style I would suggest more befitting our subject, it is further claimed his psychologist *"Professor Haward searched England for [the book] without success until he eventually found a copy in the library of an obscure private girls' school."*

This claim is simply outrageous, as the quotation three paragraphs above, came from *Nexus* magazine published five years after "Joe's" absurd interview went to print. Duncan Roads the *Nexus* editor makes no reference either of experiencing difficulty in obtaining a copy of Bowart's work, an excerpt of which entitled "Interview with an Assassin," was published in the April-May 1995 issue of *Nexus*, at p.39. In the Thornton article "Joe" was reported to have mentioned an initial print run of 100,000 of Bowart's book.

Operation Mind Control by Walter Bowart, was first published in the USA by Dell Publishing Co Inc in January 1978, and later in Great Britain by Fontana/Collins also in that same year, but importantly eight years before Joe's eminent therapist was forced to run a copy of the book to earth '*in the library of an obscure private girls' school*'. The dates also suggest "Joe" surely was conducting his drag-net among the vast array of bookshops in Perth - Western Australia. So what of the claimed scarcity of the book? My inquiries show that while out of print, and 27 years after its release, new copies of *Operation Mind Control* are still obtainable 15 years after "Joe's" quest and not even hidden in some obscure private girl's school either!

Coincidentally Joe mentions that Collins (of Sydney Aust.) was the same firm who turned down his approach to have "Mike-Alpha-Delta-3" manuscript published. But another thought has come to mind; by 1989 Joe had already settled in Carine, so I find it ludicrous that we are expected to believe he was still consulting with his U.K. psychologists. Come on!

You should also be aware Joe openly brags; ***"many years ago I was involved with counter terrorism in the UK, and on rare occasions I liaised with the British SAS and MI5..."*** He went on to explain this allowed ***"...all units involved ... have a drink together in a pub..."*** So when did the powers-that-be begin seconding flight engineers out of the RAF into anti-terrorist units? I wonder which 'service' was primary.¹²

In Mark Thornton's article we are told, over 1983-4, in West Bengal and working for Hughes Tool Company, our subject "reversed the careful sabotage" to the oilwell, claimed to have been the work of the CIA, and saved IONGC's Bodra #3 oil well from being blown off face of the earth and the local village along with it. But can anyone explain what he means by "careful" sabotage? Our subject then goes on to claim, he worked under increasing pressure in early 1984, and in June of 1984, he returned to England on "scheduled leave".

But by 2004 and for reasons best known to Joe, he re-wrote his account of the *super hero* who 'reversed the careful sabotage' of the Bodra #3 well. Yes twenty-one years on, it would appear that saving the well, the village and its people was just a good story.

For in 2004 the story was now exclusively for West Australian consumption, as the World-Wide-Web targets a global readership. Not only does he put an entirely different twist on the outcome of the sabotage, but he also gives very different reasons for it, alleging circumstances surrounding the American CIA sabotage stating, ***"after bribing a handful of corrupt central government officials, US intelligence sent in professional American saboteurs, who managed to wreck the drilling project while the author was away on a visit to Sydney in Australia."*** - my emphasis... No mention either of his hypnotic mind control experience.

So "Joe" is telling us now he was away from Bodra #3 in Sydney - an earlier visit to Sydney in Australia in 1983 - but still not legitimising his use of the term "returning" to Perth. Remember his scheduled "leave" in June was still to come, so if his visit to Sydney wasn't for pleasure, it must have been for business; but what business? ¹³

In Mark Thornton's feature article, he chooses also to suppress the circumstances under which he left the employ of Hughes Tools about June of 1984; was he summarily dismissed?

However "Joe" is reported as claiming he was soon "offered lucrative jobs," taking a position with Drilling Fluids Consultants (DFC), of Holland. But did he remain in England, close to the North Sea oilfield served out of Aberdeen? While with DFC, and in January of 1986 - eighteen months after leaving Hughes - Joe claims to have been twice summoned to meet with his superior. On the second occasion, this involved a 'long journey to Aberdeen in Scotland'. While driving there, Vialls claims he had what Mark Thornton described as "his mysterious car accident." Psychologist Raymond Seal reportedly claimed his patient, *"must have been in a hypnotic trance, when he began the manoeuvre [realising] what he was doing only after the car was already spinning out of control at 120km/h."* Now we can add, 'expert defensive driver' to his resume! Yes Joe (or was it Otto?), survived and under circumstances unexplained, with a "neck brace" fitted, he resumed his journey. This raises many questions; how could the 120km/h spin been 'out of control' if the car didn't roll or crash? But for "Joe" to have required a neck brace, is suggestive of the vehicle coming to an abrupt stop - crashing. Was the neck brace supplied by a hospital visit? Doctors are not reputed to carry such aids at the surgery - again suggestive of a crash or ambulance call-out. ¹⁴

Vialls claims psychologist Raymond Seal was consulted first by him in 1986. We are told he then sought assistance from the Medical Foundation for the care of Torture Victims (MFCTV), a claim repeated in June 1998, in the article #FT113, entitled "The Wavies" and published by *ForteanTimes*. MFCTV's patron today is none other than the comedian/actor, Michael Palin, and they would neither deny nor confirm if anyone named Joe Vialls sought and or received assistance from them in the 1980s. ¹⁵



Helen Bamber in uniform
c1945/6, but what is
the uniform?

However it would appear Mark Thornton had no such problem, as Joe allegedly was advised by the Foundation's then administrator Helen Bamber that both he and his wife *"had much to fear from the US,"* and that neither of them should work for any American company or their subsidiaries in the future. The article goes on to claim Mrs Bamber strongly advised her client to steer well clear of Disneyland, during their escape to Australia. Though it confirms "Joe" Vialls, wife Marilyn and their two children came from England via America to Perth, Australia in 1988, and intended to visit Disneyland in transit. Some years later, the Port Arthur massacre fall-guy Martin Bryant, also expressed an antipathy toward Disneyland to police you may remember. But why did Vialls family not come direct, via Singapore?

Some background of MFCTV's director is warranted here: Born around 1927 of Jewish parents, the family escaped from their home in Poland before the outbreak of WW-II seeking refuge in England, where she lives today in north London. Aged 19, Helen was in uniform (possibly British and sporting a peculiar shoulder patch), and somehow she was among personnel of the allied forces who went into Belson concentration camp some months after Camp No.1 was burnt by the military so as to destroy the typhus fever germs and other disease that was raging at that time (ed. Note; due to Churchill's orders refusing the Red Cross request for humanitarian aid to be air-dropped to this and other camps). Amnesty International was set up in 1961 the same year Helen Bamber joined them, playing a key role in exposing the

collaboration of doctors with regimes engaged in torture, campaigning on behalf of health workers who were their victims.[§]

A most interesting Bamber interview was published in the Spring 2004 edition of the Jewish quarterly magazine, *Jewish Renaissance*, a magazine which includes the worthy statment in its charter; "a mission to raise the profile and esteem of Jewish culture." On this occasion Helen Bamber is interviewed by psychologist/journalist Golda Zafer-Smith; to 'find out how the Human Rights Activist came to devote her life to helping the oppressed'.



(see <http://www.jewishrenaissance.org.uk/>).



University of Dundee 2001: Helen Bamber

Despite Helen Bamber having no apparent formal training in psychology, it was no impediment to her establishing in 1985, the MFCTV who are claimed to have treated, "20,000 victims from over 90 countries ... [who are] survivors of repression and torture," perhaps "Joe" among them. You may have noticed, MFCTV was founded just in the nick of time to treat our subject "Joe". In 1997, Helen Bamber was awarded the OBE, "for her lifelong work to eradicate the practice of torture" and in 2000, the University of Dundee conferred her with "an honorary degree." But remember, her 'life-long work' only formally commenced in 1985 - just twenty years ago! ¹⁶

Alas though, when one considers America's adventures in their preposterous "war on terror" and outrageous detention practices in recent times at facilities directly or indirectly connected to them such as Iraq, Afghanistan, Uzbekistan, Guantánamo Bay (Cuba), Cairo and Morocco, one could say it was most fortuitous indeed that Helen Bamber should have established her foundation at that time; she'll never be short of patients in what obviously is an American sponsored growth industry of terror.

Now we should examine briefly Joe's intense and ongoing interest in the Fletcher assassination. Joe Vialls' early writings on the Port Arthur massacre were obviously primarily directed towards Australian readers, and they displayed many references throughout to the shooting murder in 1984 of WPC Yvonne [Fletcher](#) in London. In fact the incident featured in the very first sentence of his first published Port Arthur article of May 1997. "Joe" continually claims the Fletcher gunman took the shots from the "heavily guarded American-Israeli building" allegedly housing his employer at the time, the Hughes Tool Company.



WCP Yvonne Fletcher

In one instance "Joe" repeatedly levels harsh criticism at the UK based documentary maker *Dispatches* and especially the published co-author Lester Coleman, but never his partner Donald Goddard; as if they dare to write contrary to the 'gospel according to Joe'. It is possible that claims made in this particular *Dispatches* documentary were not entirely correct, but nevertheless, *Dispatches* did lay the blame for the murder of Yvonne Fletcher, right at the feet of elements of British and American intelligence. They concluded the murder of this unarmed female "Bobby" ignited a trans-Atlantic campaign to set-up Libya as *the* rogue Arab State for the Reagan era and far beyond.

Remember "Joe" Vialls claimed while employed by Hughes Tool Company, he'd returned home to England on 'scheduled leave' in June 1984, and further, that "shortly after"

[§] Source: http://fass.kingston.ac.uk/research/centres/Helen_Bamber/about/index.shtml

he commenced a lucrative position with DFC, based in Holland. But now "Joe" tells us he can be in two places at once - and he chooses to conceal the purpose of this visit to Sydney mentioned earlier and in a recent article attributed to Joe Vialls, he writes:

"I was directly involved with Hughes Corporation at 8 St. James Square, during the critical period 2 April 1984 to 24 January 1985." - My emphasis.¹⁷

You can see by his carefully chosen words, "Joe" wants the reader to believe by inference at least, and that during this nine month period he had 'direct involvement ... at 8 St James Square'. Posted with his latest updated article of in excess of 7000 words on the Fletcher case, are allegedly genuine copies of two business letters on company letterheads he uses to buttress this claim. While one letter is just legible its text is blatantly unconvincing in many respects, while the other letter is illegible - just like many photographs Joe posts in his articles, and any attempt to expand the latter destroys all clarity; a deliberate strategy?

In 1984, and prior to Joe's scheduled leave in June, he was working under increasing pressure on the Bodra #3 very deep oilwell in West Bengal. But in the first of these two letters he infers at least that on March 27, 1984 rather than residing in West Bengal he supposedly is in residence at the Holiday Inn, Singapore; but no room number, unit number nor a street address. Unless of course it could be considered credible to dispatch a letter from the Oberoi Grand, Calcutta giving the Holiday Inn, Singapore as your address? Conversely, while Joe has told us of his crucial supervisory role on the drilling platform using "classified" drilling fluid, in the next breath he would have us believe he could flit-off to Singapore (or Sydney) even although he's about to return to England on "scheduled leave"? Why all the contradictions?

Joe would also have us believe the purpose of this rather odd business letter addressed to "O.J. Vialls" (Otho Jewell Vialls) at Holiday Inn, Singapore, was in reply to a letter he'd written dated Tuesday, 27 March 1984, requesting an airline ticket from Frank T. Albert. But obviously Joe's request had been addressed to Frank's office in Singapore, not St James Square London, and to whom he claims to have been "directly involved" and responsible to!

Now the alleged author of the reply letter, dated 2 April 1984 - Frank T. Albert - is also shown as a Group Vice President of the firm's Far East Operations based in Singapore. So how was it that Joe supposedly at this time, no closer to Singapore than the Oberoi Grand in Calcutta, had written to Frank Albert in the first instance, giving his address as c/o Holiday Inn, Singapore? Why did he not address his request to St James Square, London?

Also we are expected to believe that Frank T. Albert was unable to meet Joe as he would be *"...enroute to Australia on April 8, 1984,"* presumably a date Joe had suggested he would meet him to collect the air ticket - but where was he intending to meet Frank Albert? The vagaries of the letter only compounds the doubtful quality of claims our subject makes with regard to his return to England on scheduled leave in June of 1984, and for that matter his latest outrageous claims of 'direct involvement at 8 St James Square' in London from 2 April, 1984. The publishing of these letters I would opinion, only ever throws doubt upon any involvement by "Joe" in the West Bengal drilling operation in the first instance.

It is impossible for our subject to be in two places at once. It is just rubbish for him to suggest "direct" involvement with Hughes Tool Company at 8 St James Square commencing on 2 April 1984, when as is clearly stated in 1990, he was at that time in West Bengal, and not returning to England on 'scheduled leave' until June of that year! But I suppose he could blame it all upon hypnotic mind control games.

In addition to this substantial anomaly, remember that in the 1990 interview by *The West Australian*, Joe was clearly reported as having stated, that *shortly after* his return to

Britain in June 1984, and from among several offers, he accepted a lucrative position with DFC of Holland. But the above claim has him still in the employ of either Hughes Tools Company, on the 24th of January 1985, and also this date can in no way be construed as falling "shortly after" June of 1984 either! ¹⁸

Digressing a little here, and with the advantage of hindsight, it would be difficult not to agree that the 1998 PanAm 103 (Lockerbie) bombing was used to reinforce the public's nurtured-mindset established by the earlier 1984 murder of Yvonne Fletcher. Understandably British people's outrage was heightened by PanAm 103, but effectively nationals on the other side of the Atlantic who's loved ones died in the tragedy were likewise enraged.



PanAm Flight 103: the crash sight at Tundergath

PanAm Flight [103](#), involving a Boeing 747 - "Maid of the Seas" - originating out of Heathrow bound for America which was brought down as it passed over the Scottish Borders' township of Lockerbie on December 21, 1998, killing all 259 passengers and crew, and a further 11 residents of the village, who were struck by falling wreckage.

As a further aside, from a trusted and reliable eyewitness heavily involved in that aftermath, I have learned first hand that in the first hours of the catastrophe, a quite extensive area of the crash site was quickly "sealed-off" by people dressed in noticeably look-alike apparel who all displayed 'unmistakeable, American accents'. Unless you had a 'green pass' I was told, these people simply refused your passage, even when the necessary ID of a senior rescue service person was produced.

In January 2000, Joe posted an article entitled, "*Setting Up" Libya for the Lockerbie Bombing*". But I cannot find evidence to support any position that would suggest a controversy having arisen among the mainstream media as a result of any claim attributable to Joe published previous to his January 2000 article. With regard to Lockerbie however, unlike the his article covering the multiple shootings massacres of Columbine (USA), and especially the Erfurt shooting massacre (Germany), and Bali bombing (Indonesia) where Joe's exclusive articles were posted on the Web within hours of the event, it took him almost 2 years to post the January 2000 article on this much politicised aeroplane bombing.

In his PanAm Flight 103 article and amongst his now expected disparaging remarks directed toward the key whistleblower Lester Coleman, Joe makes this claim: *"Not one of the personnel I have so far contacted at Fort Bragg, North Carolina, remembers liaising with or receiving intelligence from, Lester Coleman..."* Please consider this: ***"How is it, that Otho Jewell a.k.a. Joe Vialls, ex-serviceman disability pensioner, strapped for cash, former RAF flight engineer, living all the way down under in Carine, Perth, Western Australia, has such renown, such globally distributed friends in key positions in the intelligence community, so that when he calls-up Fort Bragg (USA), he easily penetrates security and asks the right person such sensitive questions?"***

Lester Coleman, I should point out, was an agent of the Defence Intelligence Agency or DIA. The DIA has been described as 'the most discrete intelligence agency in the world'. I also understand the DIA employs a reputed 57,000 people, on a budget five times that of the CIA and it doesn't operate out of Fort Bragg either.

The DIA supposedly is based in two centres; Arlington Hall in Virginia, and Bolling Airforce Base, near Washington, D.C. Now, intelligence organisations reputedly have an ongoing jealous rivalry, which is the root cause of occasional *faux pas*. Deliberately addressing this fact, the DIA reputedly chooses not to fraternise at all with any outside intelligence

people; not even the CIA. So I would confidently suggest the DIA would not talk with people in Fort Bragg either. Why did Joe bother to make inquiries there, unless perhaps he foreknew the answer and that answer was helpful to a story he was attempting to reinforce.

In his now familiar style of story telling, Joe has again sown subtle seeds of doubt and irrelevancies into the minds of his readers on the subject of Lockerbie by simply casting equally subtle aspersions upon a key whistleblower and his prime target - Lester Coleman - so as to promote his own cosseted conclusions. In doing so it raises this question: *"If Joe Vialls is correct in his conclusions about PanAm 103, then why was this key whistleblower Lester Coleman set-up by his former employers the DIA, involving a DIA/FBI (not the CIA note), engineered "sting", had him arrested, charged, convicted and gaoled for committing a single fraud because he'd obeyed to the letter his controller's instructions to apply for a passport in an assumed name?"* Coleman was immediately gaoled.

Coleman's imprisonment is difficult to fathom until one realises he was about to travel to Holland and present his testimony on the PanAm 103 bombing under oath and before the Scottish Court established at *Kamp Zeist Airbase*, in Holland, where two Libyans stood accused of the bombing. Mr Coleman occupies a cold American gaol cell; at no time has Joe suggested any willingness to tell his story under oath before a court of law in the public interest ... and Otho Jewell a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls still resides - *free* - in Western Australia.

As the Lockerbie PanAm Flight 103 is far beyond the scope of this work, I'd strongly suggest the reader consider the many Internet articles on this subject, though don't be surprised not to find Joe's theories in relation to it hardly are picked-up-on by any of the authors.

With regard to the Port Arthur massacre, many people wrongly believe Joe Vialls was the first author to be published; he was not the first. Vialls' initial article appeared in the May 1997 issue of *The Strategy*, some six months after several articles and *Suddenly One Sunday* by Mike Bingham, were published.

In the numerous articles attributed to "Joe" and in correspondence over his distinctive signature he proclaims his expertise in a vast array of fields. Though not in a single article does he produce convincing, corroborative evidence in support these claims, apart from a fictional story based on fact and a duplicate interview with a media he openly spurns. So it is not surprising that a reader recently suggested, ***"To read Joe Vialls is to confront an intellectual tsunami! The question emerges - are you enlightened or infected...?"***¹⁹

With regard to his references to the intelligence entities, the familiar manner Joe uses to describe almost inconsequential domestic issues among the major bodies and the Israeli body in particular, are suggestive of intimate, or even a first-hand experience.

His written work has attracted a variety of criticism from an array of writers and readers ranging from "brilliant" to "speculative", "fawning and fatuous". But I would opinion his writings are suggestive of person who cannot take betrayal lying down. Understandable, when you consider the diverse descriptive profile in the mass of articles attributed to him Joe is variously described as:

1. a former RAF Wessex helicopter flight engineer,
2. a military marksman, who's been shot and wounded twice,
3. formerly an RAF ground staff,
4. Oil-pollution spokesman for the Democrats (a political party of Aust.),
5. an ex-British private security expert,
6. a veteran British military analyst,

7. an aeronautical engineer,
8. former member of the Society of Licensed Aeronautical Engineers (London),²⁰
9. has held a high level security clearance with NATO,
10. a former member of the NATO armed forces,
11. GM of (Perth Based) HMR Engine Co Pty Ltd (1990),
12. Perth based specialist in drilling fluids technology,
13. Carine based business consultant,
14. an Australian-based freelance journalist with over 30 years direct experience in international military and oilfield operations,
15. a former petroleum engineer,
16. Internet journalist and former (?) MI6 agent,
17. an Australian journalist and military authority,
18. a former combat veteran living on a miniscule disability pension,
19. an expatriate US military analyst based in Australia, and even
20. Joe Vialls, the Australia-based Media Disinformation investigator...

With regard to his membership of the "Society of Licensed Aeronautical Engineers - London," and after considerable research and inquiry I cannot locate any documentation confirming that this organisation has ever existed. Also, to this rather impressive profile I'm compelled to note one glaring omission of the one profession he demonstrates clearly to have been schooled in; the craft of journalism.

In a letter Joe writes of having to 'push every button available' and call-in 'a few favours from some heavy friends' so Australia's federal Bureau of Criminal Intelligence (BCI), would reverse a decision impacting adversely upon a family member. In this instance he also bragged of ticking-off other high placed friends in ASIO. But how in a recently adopted country, could such friendships have been nurtured by associations in any of his former vocations of oil-drilling and/or RAF service? Oh ... I forgot; perhaps from his drinking companions in London.²¹

But a host of inconsistencies are to come. In a letter (dated 1998), to this author, and promoting himself as almost IT illiterate, he wrote; "***Circulate*** [this letter] ***far and wide, and lobby for something called a "flatbed scanner" and software called "Aldos Photoshop"*** etc..." It left the distinct impression that the operation of a PC for Joe was a *fresh* experience. But his clever inference in this instance is nothing more than a deliberate deception.

For on page one of TWA "Mind Games" article (31.3.90), is featured a large photograph (see above) of the person advised to flee to Australia and keep his head down, with a caption that reads: - "**Joe Vialls: unwitting victim of hypnotic trance**". I would point out that the subject is seated, hands on the keyboard of a lay-down tower, 486 PC with its now dated 5¼" floppy drive, a 15" monitor sitting on top, and a printer to the right. In March of 1990, the 486 PC was surely the very latest PC in Australia and available just months earlier...

So Joe surely could not still be a novice with computers 8 years on, when he wrote in a manner suggestive of a lack of IT knowledge? Oh, and this photo wasn't captured in any office of the *West Australian* newspaper either, for hanging on the wall you will note behind his PC is a photograph of what appears to be a large American-form off-shore oil platform, but why not a photo of Bodra #3 derrick in West Bengal, such as he posted in his August 25th 2004 article?

From at least 1997, Joe has claimed repeatedly to be of limited means, which in itself carries no shame. But self promotion as a former combat veteran living on a miniscule disability pension and on "zero cash" and begging alms is something else; especially when from the outset in Australia at least the process included promises never kept. Is it credible to present as a lone investigator, single-handedly operating an extensive internet operation, the

logistics of which alone far outstrip the image deliberately projected by him of a cash-strapped IT illiterate with a canny finger on the pulse of global intelligence and multinational intrigue from every corner of the world? Am I being to unkind using the term global beggar?

Recent articles have an eye-catching active "link" (below left) to a dedicated "donation page" at the bottom of which he laments his diminishing circumstances. In recent times "Joe" Vialls has complained the "paid service charged to [his] credit card" - home page <http://geocities.com/vialls/> - was abruptly shut-down and two days later, he was "suddenly banned by PayPal". Along with this ban, he claims donations from Americans all went west without explanation; the degree of Joe's expressed indignation would seem to suggest his loss was not insignificant. I wonder if formerly his average monthly take from this exercise ever affected receipt of his disability pension.

Did these international donors constitute the "anonymous sponsorship" he referred to over the past four or five years, which financed subsequent print runs of his *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur* that have gone on sale? For in Australia as I understand his promises, donations were being accrued to finance and launch a court action that would overturn Martin Bryant's conviction for the murders at Port Arthur in 1996 and see him freed and or a Royal Commission.

So it very appropriate to ask Mr Vialls, what the total amount of donation monies is presently held to run this action on behalf of the people of Australia in relation to the matter. Also when is the action in the case of Martin Bryant v the Crown, slated to precede Mr Vialls?

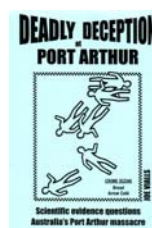
Also imbedded in the appeals for monies in Australia at least, there have been claims that donations will also enable him to proceed with his "ongoing investigation"; now while the Bryant retrial seems to have slipped from his agenda. Or have I missed "Joe" publishing any credible or new evidence in the past seven years or so on the Port Arthur massacre?

While we are on "money" I would also suggest few people are aware of just how Joe's first booklet on Port Arthur was published. The narrative and photos were compiled from his articles published earlier by *The Strategy*. The layout, printing and distribution in September 1997 was carried out by Mr Eddie Novak who was himself then definitely of limited means and confined to a wheelchair.

Every report on this web site is researched, analysed and written solely by me on a tiny disability pension that buys less each week. If you are better off, please help by making a donation towards costs at the link below.

C'mon-down!.. and keep on donating...

This little red-covered book was entitled, *Port Arthur - The Mysteries of the Massacre*. Published in 1997, the 39-page A5 publication was distributed privately by Eddie Novak of Carrajung, Victoria, with the text and photos drawn from *The Strategy* newspaper's presentation, by permission. I wonder if Eddie Novak ever recouped his costs.



In the latter half of 1999 "Joe" Vialls began distributing an A5 'perfect-bound' paperback entitled, *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur*, the 2nd print of which contained 104 pages. Later the third print appeared with 4 pages of a different set-out added. During those early days of his association with *The Strategy*, came regular advertisements with a late edition sporting an editorial advice to readers that the little blue book was "recommended reading"; but the publication is now long past the 3rd print run. Since as early as 1999, an "anonymous sponsorship" has assisted in defraying printing cost to such an extent so as to enable him sell his books for just \$10 posted.

I have been sent hard evidence of several significant donations that have been made directly to Joe by private, senior citizens. In two cases I'm aware of he allegedly suggested by

inference that these donations would be put towards a retrial of Martin Bryant or a Royal Commission into the Port Arthur massacre. After all, Joe claims to have ***“large tracts of sensitive and classified information [that is] computer cross-referenced to equally classified scientific data,”*** which he says he will only table before a legal forum he chooses not to detail. After six or seven years to consider such promises, I can forgive the donors from suggesting a whiff of fraud here.

I'm aware of at least three separate occasions on which Joe was invited by sponsors, who offered to fly him from Perth to Launceston (Tas.) and Inverell (NSW), so as he could deliver his hard scientific backed synopsis on Port Arthur massacre publicly, and have a chance to debate the subject with one of our number. But Joe Vialls refused point blank; and his lame excuses? He's a heavy smoker, unable to endure a few hours of in-flight no smoking, but in an unguarded moment the claimed former *flight engineer* blurted out that he 'hated flying'. A quaint statement when one is made aware that he did make the claim that he was the pilot who flew Ian Smith out during the Rhodesian emergency all those years ago...

Now to a recent episode that requires some explanation, as it unfolded in the board rooms, banks and stock exchanges of Australia, bearing in mind Otho Jewell a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls, told us he "returned" to Australia in 1989 and 9 years on feigns to this author his novus status as regards operating a PC, even although Newspapers and journalists in particular were among the first to turn to the PC word processor.

Prior to 1990, West Australian Newspapers Ltd (WAN) published the only metropolitan morning newspaper in Perth, ***The West Australian***, in addition to several regional newspapers.

Community Newspapers published a number of free suburban newspapers in W.A. as well as holding *all* of the issued shares in Daily News Pty Ltd, publisher of Perth's only evening newspaper, the troubled *Daily News*.

Late in 1989 - the after Otho Jewell a.k.a. "Joe" Vialls, had returned to Perth - WAN expressed an interest in purchasing all issued shares of United Media, which meant if successful, they would effectively wholly own, and control the *Daily News*, which historically had been returning hefty losses to its shareholders.

On Christmas Eve, December 1989, the Trade Practices Commission (TPC) was informed by liquidator Ross Norgard, a principle of the accounting firm Aurther Andersen & Co, that the Daily News Pty Ltd's masthead and library had been sold to HMR Engine Co Pty Ltd, who intended to relaunch the newspaper, in a slimmed-down operation by March 1991.²²

HMR Engine Co Pty Ltd was reported as a "Perth based company" listed on the "second board" of the Hobart (Tasmania) stock exchange. A business consultant was reportedly preparing a business plan for the stockholders of HMR Engine.

Now for a surprise; this "Carine consultant" was also managing director of HMR Engine Pty Ltd, and reported as none other than Joe Vialls (not Otho Jewell Vialls) and in the midst of all this company turmoil, curiously, HMR's managing director was accorded wide exposure in *The West Australian's* lead feature article "MIND GAMES," as a man who *"would be extremely susceptible to clandestine hypnosis and post-hypnotic suggestions of the kinds he has described."*²³

The Daily News had run up overwhelming debts of A\$18m, and the electronic media (TV) was squeezing evening newspapers to death - world wide; WAN knew the paper was

beyond rescue but its collapse had a curious twist; WAN held a stacked hand and didn't want any part of any evening newspaper.

It would surely be ludicrous to suggest the likes of West Australian Newspapers would bother involving themselves in any scheme or intrigue to bolster share prices in an obscure, and failing engine technology company, by financing its new CEO, and a "dummy" bid of \$350,000 for the masthead and library of a newspaper that would if the bid was successful make the *Daily News* in reality a reborn "opposition". I don't believe they did so.

But other questions do hang heavy in the air, like: ***"How on earth was Joe Vialls with his claimed former oil drilling fluids technology expertise, expected to prepare a "feasibility report" for a failed newspaper's revival that would convince investors he could stage a rescue of the failing newspaper, without a strong background in either journalism, newspapers, publishing or all three professions?"*** Unless of course, his propulsion into global Web-journalism, evidences a former craft his modesty influenced him to conceal. This is contrary I may add, to the "Joe" I've researched and his predictable audacious persona...

Covert intelligence agents and propaganda gurus with obligations to foreign nations I'm sure don't usually sit about on street corners feeding the pigeons. It stands to reason such people actually have to adopt at least partially overt livelihoods, as a shelter for their covert function. It is well recorded through history that the craft of "journalism" has been used by governments from time to time as a cover for their *agent provocateurs*. I'm reminded of an article by Len Boselovic [*Post-Gazette* - 28feb03] that tells us George Soros and his Open Society Institute distribute no less than US\$500m annually, to promote his global agenda of a new order; I wonder if the odd amateur Internet-scribe benefits from such philanthropy?

So I ask you to consider another twist in this story: as controversy mounted and the debate hotted-up concerning the 9/11 attack in 2001 on the Pentagon in Washington, among the host of Internet postings on the subject there was one article that really caught my eye. The article was dated 31.7.03, and its authorship was attributed to Dick Eastman. Dick Eastman is accredited on various sites as being a 'newsgroup activist and economist,' giving his address as; 223S, 64th Ave. Kakima, Washington, 98908 - (USA).

But in the midst of Eastman's 2003 article Dick makes this bold statement: ***"Internet journalist and former (?) MI6 agent Joe Vialls says he found this on a video cassette...etc"***-end quote. ²⁴

In August 2003, "GS" e-mailed query, with the subject line "MI6", asking Joe Vialls just one question; ***"Would you mind telling me of your association past or present as an agent of MI6?"*** A naïve approach in any estimation as no agent either past or presently serving, would dare answer in the positive. "Joe" responded ***"On an equally ridiculous note, would you mind telling me of your association past or present as an agent of the Mossad?"*** ²⁵

Only by the time of writing, this lone e-mail query had evolved within the text of a letter, into allegations that suggested the original e-mail query was made by a 'ten a penny... agent provocateur' (Andrew MacGregor) having posted on the Internet a "link" supposedly having been forwarded out of concern to our 'lone investigator' Joe. However for the many thousands who by now have listened intently to Andrew MacGregor's public presentations on Port Arthur's massacre (and I've heard about 8 of them), and considered his explanations and conclusions to all that surrounds this appalling event, I would simply ask Otho Vialls: ***"Why do you choose to be hold-up in Carine begging alms, and NEVER present your theories to any of public, face to face, as Andrew MacGregor has done in 5 States of Australia?"***



Vauxhall Cross: home to Otho Jewell
Vialls' non-existent MI6

"Joe" uses inappropriate and defamatory language directed toward various parties including this author, and goes on to state, ***"Put simply there is no such entity as MI6 outside of Hollywood, and no British source would dream of using such a meaningless 'James Bond' term."*** He also clearly reaffirms his knowledge on the subject by writing the entity is actually, *"the British Secret Intelligence Service (SIS), which works the south bank of the Thames, [and] is generally considered subordinate to the CIA and the Mossad..."*

In this instance "Joe" has shown himself to be *classing* the intelligence community, and simultaneously, inferring his placement not among *certain* lower class families in the intelligence community! In his writings, Joe (quite rightly) expresses contempt for the people involved in the assassination of Yvonne Fletcher. But in the post-hypnotic-blocked mind it's entirely understandable that some latent desire is manifest to ensure we're *drawn away* from MI6 and the CIA as ever being his "bride", so I guess that leaves the "Mossies" conspicuously at the top of the heap.

Interestingly though in the same document Joe assures his correspondent, quote: ***"But none of us would socialise with 'those SIS crazies' on the South Bank at all."***²⁶

So we can take it that Joe is sharing here his vast "experience" (or is it expertise) in matters concerning the real "spooks" as he attempts to distance himself from MI6. You see Joe's position of "no such entity as MI6" is deceptive at best, for in a letter dated 23.05.1998, he writes: ***"MI6 got caught with their hands in a Swiss till pulling that stunt back in nineteen sixty-something, and so far as I know have not been stupid enough to repeat the exercise since then."***

As late as 7.3.2004, the copyrighted date on another of his published articles Joe is of two minds when the text reads:

"Members of the SIS (MI6) at the Foreign Office were demonstrably certain that Yvonne Fletcher was not killed by Libyans located in the Embassy..."

Let me make it crystal clear: the law courts of Britain confirm the existence of MI6. On 12th April 1999, "Richard J. C. Tomlinson a former MI6 officer" who'd been stationed in Geneva, Switzerland, made a sworn statement which he used before a English Court in an action associated with the case of the death of the Princess of Wales on a Paris street.

A quick search and you can confirm for yourself, MI6 today operates under a new act of the British Parliament called *The Intelligence Services Act 1994*, which defines MI6's role among other things, as 'providing information relating to the actions or intentions of persons outside the British Islands ... [in relation to] the interests of national security, with particular reference to defence and foreign policies' ... etc.

This is the same MI6 that has been roundly criticised recently along with Tony Blair and the serving Ministers of Her Majesty's Government by former ambassador to Uzbekistan, Craig Murray, as a result of their indefensible implication as closet-accessories to American sponsored gross, and on-going torture in Uzbek prisons, when he said; ***"You won't find MI6 in any country where you can't buy a 'Cappuccino'."***²⁷

Whether you choose to refer to Britain's international intelligence agency as MI6 or SIS is in the long run academic, but for Joe Vials to argue contrary positions regarding the entity's existence or non-existence to promote his own agenda - what ever that may be - must surely in the minds of sane people demolish any shred of credibility he ever accumulated regarding his version of events at Port Arthur in April of 1996. But with regard to the entity commonly referred to as MI6 Joe insists ***"no British source would dream of using such a meaningless 'James Bond' term."***

From my school days I learned the primary skill employed by cheats is the "display", and it surely hasn't changed; that artful ability to project with confidence a story that holds a target's interest despite the substance of the claims contained in a story being lies. For the "con" to succeed, the fraudster requires a sound knowledge of human nature; often people accept a false claim at face value, as they don't bother to check the source, or do the math themselves. A recent article was posted at <http://geocities.com/roboplanes/757.html> bearing the provocative title: ***"French Claim About Pentagon Jet is a Sick Joke - Captain Charles Burlingame's widow is unlikely to appreciate the humor,"*** and the author was "Joe Vials, March 2002" and is a case in point.

Joe proclaims his expertise in physics, and ballistics, yet exhibits ignorance in both areas. Bearing in mind a considerable amount of key evidence in the Port Arthur massacre case involved firearms used to murder 33 of 35 people, and wound (all) 21 others; you can appreciate ballistics playing a critical role in making a report of substance in this instance. For the reader to understand how irrelevant the writings of Joe Vials are with regard to this case, carefully consider the following two examples of his competency in those areas of physics.

Case one is drawn from the text of a letter over the signature of "Joe" dated 11 October 1997, in which he is explaining to a correspondent and eyewitness to the massacre, the dynamics of sound, in this instance a gunshot. In this example he's referring to the gunshots inside the Cafe, heard by many witnesses, many of whom at the time were outside and adjacent to the Broad Arrow Café, and referred to by them as "thuds". In an attempt to explain how these witnesses had mistakenly heard many more gunshots than the 29 shots central to the hypothesis promoted as fact, both by "Joe" Vials and the Prosecutor Mr Damien Bugg QC, our physics master Joe segregates these thuds into "sound pressure waves" and "muzzle blasts" - effectively attempting to halve the number of discharges, in a sneaky attempt to convince the witness she'd been fooled by "physics". But you see Joe only fooled himself, when he wrote, quote:

"The Mach 3 wave is so awesome that special forces would never normally fire such a weapon [as an AR-15, .223Rem] in an enclosed area on account of the pressure wave's known ability to cause injury." - My emphasis

Sorry Otho, but the speed of sound at sea level (as is the case at Port Arthur) at 15 degrees Celsius, (approximately the temperature on that day), is 1225K/Hr (761 M.P.H.) or 340m/sec. To put it simply, it is simply impossible to propel - even an "awesome" sound - and even using the theories of physics according to "Joe" at three times the speed of sound itself - "Mach 3".

In a shameful, patronising attempt to deceive a badly traumatised witness, Joe has succeeded in ignoring the keystone of physics law in relation to the speed of sound; effectively, he claims to have discovered how to propel sound at 3 times the speed the laws of physics dictate as possible!

Case two is Joe Vials' article entitled, "French Claim About Pentagon Jet is a Sick Joke etc.", in which the author states in part, quote:

"...we are about to take a short though very simple crash course in the dynamics of flight. Not for us the overly complicated scientific equations and accredited "experts" who manage to confuse everyone apart from their own students," - end quote.

Clearly Joe Vialls is consistent; propaganda requires him to ignore long established and proven laws of physics, to preach the gospel of physics according to "Joe", just as he does in the book, *Deadly Deception at Port Arthur* - and so there is indeed in the book *deadly deception* - from cover to cover. But consider a raw sample of his grasp of the laws of physics, in this case, when he states, quote:

"In the simplest terms ... the energy produced by any object hitting another object, is the product of the first object's mass [weight] multiplied by its velocity [speed]." - end quote.

This statement by Joe is yet again simply a falsity, though it demonstrates an entire ignorance of the primary laws of physics. Two points before we proceed:

Joe has confused "weight" and "mass" as being one and the same in this equation; simply Joe, weight is not mass; weight is the effect of gravitative force on an object as expressed by a unit of measure, while "mass is the *quantity* of matter in a body." - Websters Dictionary, 1899, p.899.

Joe's *simple* formula is *simply* wrong! Let us consult the standard reference book still used by ballisticians, gunsmiths, historians and the like today in America, bearing in mind, this formula works for aeroplanes, rockets just as it does for any other projectile or bullet. So to the problem as is explained in *Hatcher's Notebook*, by Julian S. Hatcher Maj Gen US Army Rtd. at page 588, quote:

"Given the velocity of a bullet at any point, and the bullet weight in grains, to find the energy of the bullet in foot-pounds at that point.

"Formula: Energy in foot-pounds = $\frac{1}{2} mv^2 = \frac{1}{2} \frac{wv^2}{g} = \frac{wv^2}{2g}$ where w is the bullet weight in pounds

and g is the value of acceleration of gravity, 32.16 f.s. per second.

"As there are 7,000 grains in a pound avoirdupois, the bullet weight in grains must be divided by 7,000 to bring it to pounds, and must also be divided by gravity to bring it to mass instead of weight.

"The formula thus becomes $\frac{wv^2}{2gx7000}$. And, as $2 \times 32.16 \times 7,000 = 450,240$, the formula simplifies

down to bullet weight in grains times velocity squared divided by 450,240 or simplified $\frac{wv^2}{450,240}$.

"If multiplication instead of division is preferred, it will be found that 1 divided by 450,240 = 0.000002221, so in this case the formula becomes, Energy into foot-pounds = $0.000002221 wv^2$."

"Joe" projects himself as an intellectual whiz kid but uses flippant, meaningless "duck speak" to continually pad his writings, but in this instance, Joe has been really caught out. The falsities introduced into his assessment of the crash of Flight 1862, which floundered into the 12 story apartment block in the Amsterdam suburb of Bijlmer in October 1992, and into which

he deployed his false conclusions to support a hypothesis regarding the 9/11 incident at the Pentagon 9 years and 4 months later, has achieved for him at least three interesting outcomes:

1. Used as "padding" in his 9/11 Pentagon "investigation" his grasp of physics exposed by his writing on the 1992 Bijlmer crash has destroyed any credibility he ever accrued among his readership regarding matters in which physics are involved, and
2. He has by these conclusions destroyed any credibility attributed to him by Australians, as to his conclusions made on any of the matters with regard to the Port Arthur massacre investigation, that also involved ballistics and or physics.

But it was an article published in Issue 113 of the *ForteanTimes*, a UK published periodical promoted as dealing with the 'World of Strange Phenomena'. Accessible at time of writing at: <http://www.shoah.free-online.co.uk/801/now/wavies.html> the article really should cause any thinking person's alarm bells to jangle:

"In a statement to **Lobster** editor Robyn Ramsay, Vialls now believes he was programmed to kill WPC Yvonne Fletcher outside the Libyan People's Bureau in London, 1984.

"According to Ramsay, Vialls says he fired on the policewoman from the office of the Hughes Tool Company, a firm long linked to the CIA."

The above article you will note is suggesting it was "Vialls" himself who did the deed; an assassin? And, most definitely in this instance the author is not attributing the act of murder to Vialls' alter ego "Otto Jewell" from out of his novel transcript of "Mike-Alpha-Delta-3", posted on the net as "The Terrorist Factory"! Such a revelation may cause most rational people a heightened concern as to an apparent evaporating credibility at least or even a character reappraisal when it comes to considering just how it was that writing under the pseudonym of "Joe" Vialls from Perth in Western Australia, he got right so many of the finer details about the massacre at Port Arthur on 28 April 1996. Details such as:

1. Identifying exactly the two primary firearms used inside the Board Arrow Café: first the **Colt AR-15 .223Rem assault rifle** in *The Strategy* of May 1997, then 12 months later in May of 1998, he added the **Armalite AR-10 .308W rifle**; a full seven months before Gerard Dutton's article was published detailing the firearms police and the DPP wrongly claimed were used in the shootings and six years before Andrew MacGregor and I had photographic evidence before us that sorted out all this misinformation and confirmed claims made by witnesses - Dennis Gabbedy and Graham Collyer - of the presence on the floor of the Broad Arrow Café of a substantial quantity of unfired 308W rounds and also 308W spent casings. For it wasn't until in 2005, that a very reliable witness acting on his own volition searched out an illustration of the .223 rifle he identified as the make and model rifle he saw fired in the café by the gunman. Also,
2. when Wendy Scurr confronted "Joe" Vialls with a detailed description of the gunman, furnished to police by the witness Graham Collyer, who stated that "He looked like he might have had a lot of acne. A pitted face," Vialls responded in an instance: "No. Chicken pox." Confirmation I believe that he personally knew the gunman and that person's history...

It has also been brought to this author's notice, that Vialls has allegedly bragged of possessing 'spent cartridges' collected from off the floor of the Café which prompts me to ask, "Is it drawing too long a bow, to suggest that "Joe" collected those casings from off the floor of the Broad Arrow Cafe personally?"

Lobster, edited by Robin Ramsay, is promoted as "the Journal of parapolitics" - ('umbrella' politics?), and a recent search of their archives yielded five hits on "Joe Vialls":

- two dealing with the Fletcher murder (Issues 29 & 30 -1995),
- one debating the pros and cons of *Nexus* and *Open Eye*, both of which have promoted the views of Joe Vialls (also Issue 30 - 1995),
- another containing an allegedly 'speculative' article by the 'former petroleum engineer' (Issue 27 - 1994), and
- yet one on mysterious deaths of 25 British scientists, (Issue 28 - 1994).²⁸

The latter, rakes over the same issues Joe Vialls raised four years earlier during Mark Thornton's "Mind Games" interview published by the *West Australian* in 1990.

Israel Shamir is a widely posted Internet author, and recently he made some interesting observations concerning some Internet writers, all of whom he contends are possibly working to the same agenda. Bearing in mind Israel Shamir's roots, I would ask you to carefully consider the ethnicity of those whom he considers he's exposed as frauds, when he writes: ***"In my view, there is no difference between Barry Chamish and Henry Makow on one side and David Icke and Gordon Thomas and Joe Vialis, on the other side - all of them are fantasy writers inventing Illuminatis, Grey Aliens and Israeli agents conquering America."*** Could we not include Australia in Israel Shamir's equation here? For he goes on to write: ***"Theoretically, Icke and Vialis are 'on our side', but as a matter of fact, their vision of the world is so far from reality that it can cause similar effect to the one described by Rowan. People who are excited by Vialis often send me Chamish, too. As for me, I have no interest in them all, Jews or anti-Jews."*** Now this assessment may shock some, but Israel Shamir wrote it, and I believe the reader should have a chance to consider his opinion. Another long-time author of the Web, Dave McGowan, in a recent e-mail circulated Newsletter, describes our subject Joe as "an easily-discredited disinformation-peddler." So indeed; "Who is Joe Vialls?"

Conclusion

Perth (Australia) is conveniently isolated; distance and the outback void of the Nullarbor Plain, separate Perth from the major national populations of the eastern states. It's logical that with our subject residing in Perth, the situation could be likened to a boxer having a reach advantage; he can stay there jabbing at his opponents while existing for the term of the fight - just out of reach.

Using the alias of "Joe" Vialls, Otho Jewell Vialls has unquestionably been the leading, regular feature writer for the "one colour" alternate, monthly newspaper in Australia - *The Strategy* - from May issue of 1997, on through to issues right up to the first quarter of 2005. He's maintained his position with the newspaper in spite of it being demonstrated to the paper's editor why his synopsis of events at Port Arthur in April of 1996 are a mixture of some facts padded with distortion and error, or as one observer commented to me recently, with a liberal helping of "baking soda" to ensure the story "rises" so as to titillate the undiscerning among his readership. In *The Strategy* newspaper "Joe" received staunch support for years from a fellow columnist, Jonathon Graham in his regular column "Phoenix Rising", no longer published.

Joe also received unwavering support from as early as 17 April 1997 in promoting his flawed synopsis of Port Arthur massacre by a former RAAF WO (Tech), Mr Tony Pitt of Maryborough in Queensland. Beginning around 1989 Mr Pitt (like Ray Platt of *The Strategy*),

began publishing a one colour periodical newspaper, a project which he's continued up to the present under various banners, all of which proclaim them as among freedom's little helpers, though in recent years Mr Pitt has changed the format to include some colour.



Kaminski

But apart from him motoring across to Perth and meetings with Joe, a close association between them is very evident at time of writing at <http://www.wealth4freedom.com/free>; Joe wrote the article and Tony Pitt published it. But you should note not published on Pitt's own web site or in his newspaper, and remember like Ray Platt, editor of *The Strategy*, Tony Pitt is quite reluctant to publish any articles about Port Arthur, which expose documented, provable, evidence, contrary to those promoted by Joe Vialls.

So is our subject really Otho Jewell Vialls? Well I believe I have been able to establish a family line that supports the probable existence of an Otho Jewell Vialls who in all probability is indeed the subject of this unauthorised biography. However as to authenticating any of the multitude of claims as to the subject's former RAF service as to being a flight engineer, a former member of NATO armed forces, marksman, and or specialist in drilling fluids technology in West Bengal - while in the employ of Hughes Tool Company - I'm have not been able to categorically confirm any of those claims.



2002: Ari Ben-Menashe

Joe claimed that he and his family "returned" to Perth having up and left their home on the other side of the globe in merry old England. He further claims that all his assets were "frozen" in the U.K., but by whom, and for what reason he chooses not to say. His *sea change* to Perth was supposedly forced upon him so as to escape an inferred threat from the CIA. Within months of arrival Joe was hired for his expertise - not in invert drilling fluid technology, or RAF engineering expertise - but expertise in managerial, consultancy, (and experience?) in newspaper publishing?



1991: Ari Ben Menashe, or Otho Jewell Vialls?

Who would deny Joe exhibits an extraordinary ability to produce repeated, extensive articles of many thousands of words, and far and above other journalists on the Web, "Joe Vialls" alone has all the trappings in those articles, much of which global news services never get to publish; diagrams, detailed maps, photographs etc. But Joe does the research, writing, layout and publishes, *all on his lonesome*. Does he work alone - well he tells us he does, and emphasises the point by begging for donations. Does he really suffer some physical disability resulting from RAF service? Or was it counter terrorism? It seems logical though, that when those of the covert intelligence services reach their used-by-date, their chief would make some sort of "pension" arrangement surely?

John Kaminski the prolific and thought provoking Internet commentator recently wrote: **"Searching for the truth is ugly, frightening and dangerous – and the only worthwhile choice."** - skylax@comcast.net

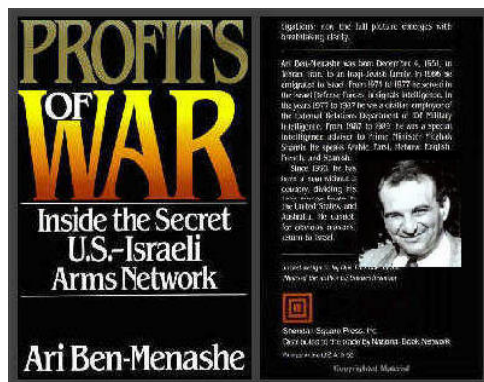
So if I should meet with a seemingly coincidental "accident" in the coming weeks, I trust a friend will forward chapter 2 along for publication. You see, in the eyes of Joe I'm the one whose name he cannot even spell, and proudly I number among "the gang of three," that person "in tow" as "Joe" puts it so cleverly, and he who has accompanied the "ten a penny" former Victoria policeman, and "agent provocateur... MacGregor..." and Mrs Scurr on public speaking tours around the nation. Yes, even Port Arthur survivor Mrs Scurr doesn't escape his vitriolic, offensive labelling. Though there is a class of mankind I find more disgusting than the covert assassin mentioned in this work; they're the ones who are *past it*, the ones who've been

put out to pasture, and while still collecting their blood-money, they beg for alms from a community among whom their masters once selected the [targets](#).

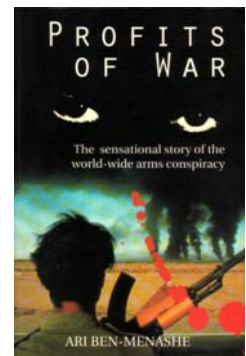
In the final analysis, mind games, the thread that weaves throughout this narrative from beginning to end have been used to *bend* the core beliefs of nations of people since time immemorial. Variations of these mind games which produce a form of personal slave-like-control have been shown by various reports as the subject of experimentation, development, and deployment, by the covert arm of governments of major and minor powers for many years. These covert entities serving a hidden hand of a "government" not elected by the people, have I believe deployed the Reesian theory of War at will among our nations' citizens (and abroad), at least since the early quarter of the twentieth century. But surely by now, you have come to realise the mind games in this narrative have until now been played upon you. I hope and pray this work has gone some way to right the balance.

But could we hope that Otho, a.k.a. "Joe" would revisit the free advice line, as he did to another Australian correspondent back in 1997? In that instance he made the remarkable advisory connection to another man of mystery who like our subject also expressed a desire to reside beside 'the most beautiful harbour in the world', of Sydney Australia, when he recommended accepting the counsel of Ari Ben-Menashe. "Joe wrote, ***"Before you probe any further, minimum defensive equipment should include a sawn-off M60 in a very large shoulder holster. Ari Ben Menashe might be able to direct you to the cheapest arms bazaar."*** I'm reminded of that age-old proverb which goes, "many a true word is spoken in jest".

Again quoting Kaminski who recently wrote: ***"Love is contagious, you know. And the revolution for a decent world begins in your own heart."***



The front & back cover of the American version of Ari Ben-Menashe's book. You will note as the author lived in Perth, Australia, discretion demanded his photo only appear on the US edition; it was NOT for Aussie eyes!



Cover of the Australian print

I wholeheartedly agree John; so what gene is it in the hearts of some among us that has them blurring the facts at every opportunity, every twist and turn, and in the case of Port Arthur, Dunblane, Oklahoma City bombing, Erfurt shooting massacre, Columbine, Waco and such events of mass trauma for we ordinary folk and some of the survivors too? But these people network to promote crass, in-your-face distortions, while out of their Internet reader's gaze, they make constant, malicious attacks upon those who have for 20 years or more been struggling against the tide, to make this world a little more decent...

Such horrid people challenge the charge to; *love thy neighbour as thy self*, don't they? A friend recently quipped, "The definition of paranoid is to be fully informed", and while I'm not so brave to be without out a deal of concern at what may be a spin-off from my research and writing, I'd rather be fearful and right, than fearless, very wrong and in truth so bloody scared as to be forced to keep my findings closeted. RIP "Joe" ... but Joe who?

**** Profits of War, by Ari Ben-Menashe, Allen & Unwin -1992 see above.**

Well, since writing this article and posting it on the Web, there has been a further interesting and explosive development. At http://judicial-inc.biz/Vialls_Ben_Menashe.htm and entitled "Was Joe Vialls Really Ari Ben-Menashe?" you can now consider this subject seriously and reach your own conclusions. Here you will discover compelling information that leaves me compelled to suggest we can now add yet another pseudonym to "Joe" and Otho Jewell Vialls; that of Ari Ben-Menashe.



L-R: Ari Ben-Menashe - Zimbabwe 2002; Ari Ben-Menashe - USA 1989;
"Joe" - Otho Jewell Vialls - Perth, 1990

1: [Ari Zimbabwe02](#) 2: [Vialls Menashe](#) & 3: [Vialls_Otho1990](#)

As you may remember elsewhere in this work I have credited none other than "Joe" Vialls as motivating me to begin investigating the massacre at Port Arthur in earnest. When I contacted him to offer my assistance, he was at first very cautious. Then it was his uncalled for arrogance, and dismissive demeanour exhibited in his letters to hand, in reply to my carefully considered suggestions and information volunteered, which suggested to me this person somehow had involvement and knowledge of the massacre, far in excess of a person that had been casually attracted to unravelling the case while rooted, even immovable and residing in a cottage in suburban Carine, of Perth, Western Australia: about as far away from Port Arthur as one can get without leaving the country. It was an inevitable development for me to eventually look closer at the man we had gotten to know as Joe Vialls...

"Treachery, though at first very cautious, in the end betrays itself."

- Livy

Editor's Important Note:

It is claimed by various news media that Ari Ben-Menashe resided (in 2002) in Canada, where at that time he was a principle in a "political consultancy" and "lobbyist" company called Dickens and Madson.²⁹ He was the prime witness in the 2002 controversy that involved the SBS presentation covering the alleged attempt by Ari Ben-Menashe to trick Morgan Tsvangirai, Welshman Ncube and Renson Gasela by filming them as they allegedly plotted President Mugabe's assassination. This was subject to a controversial trial of the three above in Zimbabwe in 2002.

At the time Ben-Menashe claimed he was residing in Canada, and the Zimbabwe Information Centre News, using a report by Brian Hutchinson in Montreal quotes Ben-Menashe as stating, ***"I had been to Canada many times in the past,"*** while talking over his cellphone, somewhere in Montreal; ***"I liked it. I had lots of friends there."*** The same news service tells us Ben-Menashe's partner is one Alexandra Henri Legault, originally from Maine in America and Legault's wife, Francis Legault, was then the company's financial director.

Legault, is also reported to have come to Canada from Maine in 1982 and was introduced in 1993 to Ari Ben Menashe by and immigration lawyer, Richard Kurland whom Ari hired in June 1998. As an employee he was paid US\$8,000 per month plus expenses; but his job

description had naught to do with immigration it seems. Though it was these associates who from December, 1994, had run a company they formed, Carlington Sales Canada Corporation. Many articles can be found on the net filled with allegations involving the partners in various ways concerning alleged defrauding of considerable sums of money in deals in food stuffs and the like. But I would suggest you the reader do some searching in this regard, as it involves massive intrigue outside the charter of this investigation. Save to say this:

Since writings were complete for this publication, further investigation and questioning of witnesses directly concerned with the massacre at Port Arthur has occurred to confirm the revelations that have been published on the Internet which you may consider by clicking on this <http://www.shootersnews.addr.com/snpagangof3.htm> in reference to the crucial role fulfilled by the subject of this chapter.

End Notes

¹ Complaints officer, Office of Health Review, 469 Wellington St Perth, WA. 13nov98

² Mark Thornton, "Mind Games," Features *The West Australian*, 31mar90, p.1

³ Western Australia Electoral Roll 1991 & 2004

⁴ 1881 Census UK; Free births, deaths & marriages of England; English census, 31.3.1901.

⁵ *Ibid*; <http://www.nationalarchives.gov.uk>

⁶ Joe Vials, "The Terrorist Factory," *Nexus*, April-May '94, p.11

⁷ Joe Vials, "Coming to terms with 'Sydney' sinking, *The West Aust., Big Weekend*, 11dec93, p.5

⁸ Joe Vials, "French Claim About Pentagon is a Sick Joke,"

<http://geocities.com/roboplanes/757.html?20055> ,

March 2002.

⁹ *The Strategy*, May issue, 1997; various files(inc #Fulcrom1.jpg & Fulcrom2.jpg) @ <http://vials.homestead.com/>

¹⁰ Thornton, "Mind Games", Feature – BIG Weekend, *The West Australian*, 31mar90, p.2

<http://www.vials.com/zionist/yvonnefletcher.html>

¹¹ Walter Bowart, "Interview with an Assassin," *Nexus* magazine, April/May 1995, p.39.

¹² Letter over signature of "Joe", dated 7.11.2003

¹³ Thornton "Mind Games" *The West Aust* - BIG Weekend 31mar90, p.1 Joe Vials, "Russia Proves 'Peak-Oil' is a Scam", 25aug04

¹⁴ Thornton, "Mind Games", Feature – BIG Weekend, *The West Australian*, 31mar90, p.1

¹⁵ <http://www.torturecare.org.uk>; <http://www.shoah.free-online.co.uk/801/NWO/wavies.html> ;

Thornton, "Mind Games", Feature – BIG Weekend, *The West Australian*, 31mar90, p.2

¹⁶ University of Dundee, Discovery Lecture 16apr01 @ <http://www.dundee.ac.uk/pressreleases> ; BBC London, Helen Bamber: Profile, 26jun02 @

http://www.bbc.co.uk/bbcfour/documentaries/profile/helen_bamber.shtml

¹⁷ Joe Vials, "Zionist Murder Unarmed Police Woman" @

<http://www.vials.com/zionist/yvonnefletcher.html> 7jun04

¹⁸ *ibid* , Thornton, "Mind Games" *TWA*, 31mar90, Feature, p1

¹⁹ posting #260204 @ http://www.qikrux.com/qikrux_diary.htm posting #260204, 3.01.05

²⁰ <http://geocities.com/mknemisis/airbus.html>

²¹ Letter over signature "Joe" dated 14oct99.

²² Various original documents including from www.oecd.org 1996

²³ Thornton, "Mind Games", Feature – BIG Weekend, *The West Australian*, 31mar90, p.2;
<http://www.delisted.com.au>, 18apr05

²⁴ Dick Eastman, "Decoys and the Pentagon Attack", <http://physics911.ca/modules/wfsection/article.php?articleid=7> 31jul03

²⁵ E-mail to joevialls@yahoo.com, Sat, 16aug03 @ 9:01 PM; Reply - Sun, 17aug03, 7:12 AM.

²⁶ Letter over signature "Joe", dated 7nov03, p.2

²⁷ Evan Williams, *Foreign Correspondent*, ABC-TV, 29mar05

²⁸ <http://www.lobster-magazine.co.uk/>.

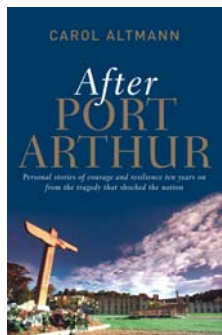
²⁹ na, "Zimbabwe plot video 'a smear'," *The Guardian*, 14feb02

10 Years On: A "Gun Control" Glitch

Chapter 29 - Update

As the re-write and revision of the 6th edition of *A Gunsmith's Notebook on Port Arthur* was put to bed on the 28th March 2006, I sat back in anticipation of a short respite before the need to distribute and satisfy the interests of the many good people in this country and abroad, desirous of knowing our findings as to what occurred in all that surrounds the 1996 psychopolitical massacre at Port Arthur. My anticipated rest was cut short - even before it began!

Wendy Scurr first told me that she had been contacted by a writer Carol Altmann, back around June of 2004 with the intention of interviewing her for inclusion of her recollections of the incident and the aftermath in a book she had been commissioned to write for Allen & Unwin. The book was to be launched ten years on after the massacre. I spoke by phone with Altmann and made an offer of assistance to clarify and expand upon the findings we had made and to answer queries that may have arisen out of my conclusions. I also offered to furnish her with copies of original documentation. That never happened.



As time went by I conversed by e-mail, and this year first on January 29, to wish her 'all the very best' for her book launch as the projected dates set to release the books firmed.

Eventually via web-postings from Allen & Unwin the release date was set for 6 April 2006 with a preliminary launch to be made at Port Arthur Historic Site and later on the next evening of the 6th at Fullers bookshop, in Collins Street, Hobart. In an insensitive but quite revealing move, the VIP chosen to launch her published work was none other than the Governor of Tasmania, Sir William Cox; one and the same when, as the Chief Justice for Tasmania, he presided over the obnoxious sentencing hearing for Martin Bryant.¹

Some background of Altmann is in order here. Born into a 'robust' family of seven in Warrnambool in 1965, and aged about 26 years, in 1991 she began work as a journalist with Messenger newspapers rising to chief-of-staff. For a time she worked for the Adelaide *Advertiser* and until 1997 was their state political reporter. After an upset in her life she moved to Hobart 'to start afresh' as bureau chief for *The Australian* newspaper. During her sojourn there and in April of 2003, an article titled "Compassion for forgotten killer," was published in the *Weekend Australian* authored by her. The narrative was claimed to have come directly from a former Risdon Prison inmate simply referred to by her as "Rob".²

Altmann quotes the former inmate as saying of Martin Bryant: 'He doesn't seem like an evil bloke ... there are a lot of very vicious people out there who will rob your house, bash you up, rape your wife, steal off your grandmother, they would do anything - I just can't put Martin Bryant in that category'. The inmate further is reported to have said, '*I think he deserves compassion - "hate the sin, love the sinner," if you will...*'³

It is claimed that it was due to this article published while in Hobart that she was engaged by Allen & Unwin to write the book, *After Port Arthur* and 'so began a six-month trawl of records, transcripts and story clippings before conducting her first interview for the book'. She also made contact with the author, the late Margaret Scott, who provided Altmann with a considerable amount of background information and is said to have 'an



Media Fraud

At left is a computer-generated fraud, first published by *The Mercury* 28.4.03, it was used enthusiastically by many editors to reinforce or re-demonize the media legend of 'moronic Martin Bryant'. During the media's month-long '10th Anniversary' campaign it appeared in no less than 5 publications, many of which including the erroneous *Mercury* claim of the original having been lifted from a frame of the Sentencing hearing video. It is a fraud. But that didn't stop Allen & Unwin from publishing it in the Carol Altmann's book along with the erroneous caption at the last page of the centre collage of glossy photographs, facing page 55.

entrée to some victims', who were understandably wary of intrusions into their lives yet again by journalists.

But in studying the text of the book several undeniable facts immerge: A number of very interesting claims are made in passing which appear nowhere in official documents, while still other claims made by those she interviewed are contrary to documented evidence.

From the outset of this project I was somewhat uneasy as to how the subject matter would be treated: my unease has proved well founded.

But let's back up a little here, I was enjoying a sleep-in on a Wednesday morning (29 March) as the extended 'daylight saving' ensured the sun hadn't painted its brush strokes over my bedroom window. My delayed hearing was just registering the 7 o'clock ABC news as just starting, when the bed-side phone erupted into life and an unfamiliar voice instructed me to, *'Go'an turn your tele to Nine - Martin Bryant is the feature ... I'll call you back after'*, and the phone when dead. So began perhaps the most disgusting episode of the massacre excepting for the massacre itself! It was on again. The presses had been churning out the magazines as we slept and they were on the shelves to sell - many before their time as it was three days before April fool's day.

The media had yet again embarked on a propaganda circus of quite staggering proportions! Two goals were in their program this time around:

1. Martin Bryant was to be re-demonized and the legend rebuilt,
2. Two investigative writers and a survivor were to be discredited.

Altmann skilfully demeans her targets while ignoring established fact. Why?

After all, the book is promoted to a purpose opposite to that which it conveys in one chapter at least. So why put down and breach the trust of the very people who've made the book possible? Even a cadet journalist would have caught sight of the fact that Mrs Scurr wasn't just "tired" in those photographs! Altmann was very aware of the situation the Scurrs were enduring at the time and so it is no oversight on her part...

You see at the time Altmann was interviewing and photographing Mrs Scurr, Mrs. Scurr had just returned home to Kempton after an emergency spell in a clinic so as to arrest a sudden decline in her overall health as a result of her and former colleagues from Port Arthur, inadvertently having been taken back into the slaughter house that was the Broad Arrow Café, courtesy of the police training video 'for police eyes only'!

Altmann tells us she viewed the Police Training Video, *'watched through splayed fingers'* no less! And, in support of this fact Altmann obliges at page 93 where she confirms the radiating effects of this insidious, destructive PTSD, acknowledging Graeme Scurr's brush with cancer and thanks to God his full recovery... Proof of the accuracy of my synopsis here is clearly visible in the two photographs published in Altmann's book in the centre colour collage containing the fraudulent, digitally-altered photo of Martin Bryant first published by



The Reality:

19th Nov 1996, from the pages of *The Mercury*, an accurate B&W sketch of the real Martin Bryant, sporting the Avery suggested short hair cut & wearing an expensive, pale blue linen suit, white open-necked business shirt, with a crew-necked sweat-shirt beneath.

The Mercury on 28th April 2003. Even the caption is identical the second time around! In a disgusting rant, the media have seen fit to publish this monstrous fraud time and again in various articles over the past weeks even although the fraud is easily [exposed](#).

Altmann was even handed a scoop by Wendy Scurr, an experience journalists rarely enjoy in a lifetime; she tripped over that story! And still she can't hide her patronising demeanour. Altmann's observations are nothing less than one should expect from a journalist with an agenda. Having had the pleasure of the company of Graeme and Wendy Scurr for a considerable period of time in recent years I can but conclude Altmann is a very poor judge of people's character. One can but wonder just how such a light-weight Ms would handle such an ordeal and even survive - let alone retain steadfastly core beliefs as well. Both Wendy and Graeme Scurr are of the old stock and it has been one of life's great pleasures for me to count them among those I have shared a meal table with.

This time around, the primary target was undoubtedly Martin Bryant. The same "gun control" people began the demonizing campaign of the accused on the 3rd of May in 1996 and several editors were a gnat's whisker away from being forced to defend their prejudices in court that time. But they are at it again and we shall get to consider their grossly misleading handiwork shortly. Their desperate campaign of digitally altered photographs and falsities was conceived and launched in the hope of those whose interest is waning (understandable after 10 years), could be convinced that saving the life of a perhaps innocent intellectually impaired thirty-nine-year-old is not worth their efforts...

Carol Altmann deploys subtle put-downs and tenuous links under the sub heading of 'Conspiracy theories' against those whom she charges with "spruiking from the stump". ⁴

She manages somehow to claim my work parallels that of the fraudster "Joe" Vialls! Clearly she is behind the times: the public records show "Joe" Vialls died on 17 July 2005 and the controversy surrounding '*the man who never was*' has been dealt with by me thoroughly as early as May of 2005! I shall say it again: Vialls was a fraud.

But Altmann goes right to the bottom of the barrel in a futile attempt to, by her tenuous link (that we should dare to challenge the establishment lies and present our findings for public consideration), and brands Wendy Scurr, Andrew MacGregor and I as connected to 'racist groups' and even being anti-Semitic. It is very clear, Altmann is clutching at straws. Made especially apparent when in her words, the forging of this supposed link is 'not surprising', considering that "Bryant himself was anti-Semitic"! ⁵

The reader could be forgiven for asking "Are we to take Carol Altmann seriously?" A Case in point: just 4 days ago a report about the man who's stated repeatedly:-

"I loath guns."

"PRIME Minister John Howard will be presented the prestigious B'nai B'rith international Presidential Gold Medal for his "outstanding" support of Israel and the Jewish people at a ceremony in Washington on Tuesday, May 16." The article goes on to explain, "B'nai B'rith Australia/New Zealand president James Altman said: "In a world where many countries are demonising Israel, which is leading to antisemitism in those countries, John Howard and his government have been a beacon of light against that trend."" - End quote. ⁶

My point being: Is the present B'nai B'rith Australia/New Zealand president - James Altman - by any chance of the same family as the author Carol?

Also one fact about this *10-years-on* propaganda campaign needs to be made here:

It was the Allen & Unwin publication *After Port Arthur*, authored by Carol Altmann that was the starter-motor that enlivened this month long "gun-control" campaign in 2006.

Who exactly is at the helm of the campaign though is for the reader to speculate - I'm not prepared to get into theorising about those conspiracies. But who would be game to claim the literally *cart-loads* of published articles - spewed out onto the newsagent's shelves over a matter of several days were somehow 'just another coincidence' of a energetic media and

not the result of a good old fashioned conspiracy? Though this media propaganda circus is not all bad news; far from it!

After observing closely the "gun control" network, the demeanour and rhetoric of their comrades for in excess of 32 years, I can state with some authority I believe, that only a reckless soul would dare defend Carol Altmann against a charge of being very comfortable in the midst of the "gun control" network mob. Chapter 13 titled "Biting the bullet: Gun Law Reform," from the outset conveys the NCGC line of attacking law-abiding citizens carrying on lawful business. While at the same time proudly recounting the actions of the ACA media team who flew to Hobart and consciously engaged in a conspiracy to illegally obtain 'two military-style semi-automatic weapons plus ammunition' to then somehow legitimise their criminality by demonstrating the ease of becoming criminals. How can Ms Altmann promote such premeditated criminal actions as being the yardstick of a law-abiding society and a credible work? Although I must agree it certainly feeds her now exposed real agenda. But the question remains: why did the Minister of the Crown, Dr Frank Madill (upon whose desk they dumped their ill-gotten arms) fail to act and simply call his police and have the offenders arrested! The principles of people who conduct such theatre are indefensible. While the author dares to make the case that firearm related deaths have fallen since 1991 because of Howard's confiscations and prohibitions called 'uniform gun laws' - which they aren't - then why does she ignore the streets of Sydney today which have taken on a character more befitting the Capone-era when mob hits in the alleys of Chicago were the daily norm.

Typical of a "gun control" network's foot soldier and in Chapter 13, Altmann boasts AIC statistics to justify her case. But to make a point, she uses the argument that 'particularly in the category of suicide (deaths),' firearm related deaths fell 47 percent between 1991 and 2001, which ironically includes the often claimed 'worst firearm massacre in the world' at Port Arthur. You see even including the massacre of 35, that year's firearm related deaths figure in Australia had dropped considerably! If that is not a conundrum of consequence, then has she bothered to consider the DOZEN or so suicides that have occurred since the massacre among the peninsula families not involving firearms? No doubt those families' tragedy and pain has not been lessened one iota because a means other than a firearm was chosen by a tormented person as the solution to end their problems in life! It seems to me the author's agenda has gotten in the way of reality as even she relates so well at Chapter 7 when dealing with this very heartbreaking experienced by the medical practitioners of the local district ...

The majority of articles that have appeared since their "D-day" of 29 March 2006, have been extracts from Altmann's book, or edited versions of her work all published as a huge national promotion, of *the book*; almost a 'down-under'-sized Harry Potter book launch!

The book's official launch was confusing to say the least; web postings contradicted information direct from inquiries to the publisher. This confusion spilled over into McCreadie's "plods". On Wednesday the 5th, Altmann launched her book at the Port Arthur Historic Site, a quiet affair by all accounts for Carol and her female partner. But it seems someone in Tasmania Police was expecting big trouble at the city launch of a local author's novel, when no less that 15 police guarded the bemused guests!



I'll bet Mrs Scurr was staggered, considering Tasmania Police could spare just a lone policeman to secure the one hundred acre site of a massacre reported to be the worst such crime in the world, until reinforcements of two unarmed female constables arrived much later, a situation that continued for 6 hours! But on Thursday evening *After Port Arthur* was officially unveiled in Hobart by a tentative Governor who was "reluctant" to accept the invitation, while just three indifferent, uniformed police, were observed to stroll past on street patrol...

The campaign had a 'false-start', as it were, launched by the up-market women's magazine [Madison](#), which to their credit, front-paged the article with the heading - *The Port Arthur Conspiracy, Did Martin Bryant Act Alone?* Their April edition was delivered to newsagents a full week early.

The lead article, "Port Arthur a decade on" was authored by Alan J. Whiticker. I would have expected better from a former teacher from Sydney who is credited with authoring at least two other titles in an Australian crime series - I hope he doesn't feel inclined to expand on this effort as his article is plagued with errors. The magazine had journalists interview and write two embedded complimentary articles; the first with Ron Neander and a second with Mrs. Wendy Scurr. Both these were published without a by-line, a pity really, as the lass who interviewed Wendy Scurr did a reasonably balanced article, despite several errors that I would suggest had been added to weaken her statements and amplify the "theorist" label inevitably tagged on all who challenge the authorities account of the day. But Wendy's interview certainly put into print for the first time many concerning unanswered anomalies and it evidenced a courageous editor who published. Perhaps the magazine's readership was judged as better informed than the expected readership of *the book* that I believe will fail its intended purpose.

Then during Nine's *Today Show* on the 29th March, Garry Linnell*, the magazine's chief editor launched the Bulletin's major contribution. In this case author Julie-Anne Davies has treated her subject evenly and I believe reporting accurately her subject's stories as presented to her, a refreshing change from the "norm" at this time, and a credit to her editor. Unlike Robert Wainwright of the *Sydney Morning Herald*, Julie-Anne not only has Mrs Carleen Bryant, actually living where she does, but presented a word picture of Martin Bryant, that the hoi polloi of journalism find demeaning. Carleen has always been the forgotten victim in all of this. But the Bulletin article makes several telling points:

"My Poor Martin," Carleen says. 'He couldn't have shot all those people down at Port Arthur. He didn't have the brains to do it.'" Not a lot of "conspiracy theory" here; just an honest assessment by a mother about her son she had raised. Also his mother observes, *'[Martin] had beautiful shampooed hair. The guy who did it had dark greasy hair and pocked skin. My Martin had lovely soft baby skin'*. Then there is the corroborative evidence of Avery's persuasive 17 visits to Martin's cell: Davies writes, *'One of the deepest regrets is agreeing to the request from [John Avery] to persuade her son to plead guilty. It worked'*. An unnamed doctor who consulted with Bryant in his Risdon Prison Hospital cell, it reported to have claimed recently that Martin is *'an overweight shambolic wreck ... If the community wanted a severe punishment for Mr Bryant, then they have it. What he has now is far worse than the death penalty'*, say his doctor. The Bulletin has done the community a service in my opinion for again putting these few known facts before the public.⁷

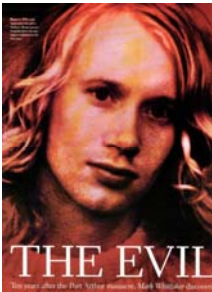
So we as a society - and more especially those like the then sadistic attorney general Ray Groom† - have not moved on at all I would suggest in 2006: for Bryant's present treatment is not a bit improved upon that meted out by the sadistic warders of a 19th century Bentham creation, the Port Arthur Separate Prison. The only thing missing at Risdon it seems is the cat-o-nine-tails and "screws" in slippers...

In her article Davies has also skilfully extracted some quite revealing admissions from some of these major players; like Prof Mullen, and psychologist John Joblin. In the case of Joblin he reiterates the possibility of "autistic withdrawal" in which case the assessment of the psychological state of Bryant's mind, "should be revised"; pardon? Has this leading psychologist admitted Martin Bryant is autistic? For a person to suffer withdrawals from autism, would not the person have to suffer from the condition in the first instance? What Joblin has told us is this: Martin Bryant was not fit to plead - and the "State" could not tolerate that situation!



* Published in *The Bulletin*, 4 May 99, Garry Linnell was credited with an article titled "Inside the Gothic world of Martin Bryant", the content of which demonstrates he had access to much of the same Avery material back then.

† In May of 1996, and in a conversation with Peninsula survivors of the massacre, while Martin Bryant was in the RHH burns unit with category 1 injuries, Ray Groom assured these people with words to the effect, *'don't worry, I'm making sure the bastard suffers, because I've got him lying on his burns and handcuffed to the bed.'*



Weekend Australian
1-2 April 2006:
another 'digital
masterpiece' from
the 'back-room boys'
of the media.

Then there was the interview with Tony Rundle (the then Liberal Premier) and of course the deceptive synopsis from the Tasman Peninsula's local eccentric Roger Larnar. Bryant simply never drove from the Larnar's on Palmer's Lookout road to the Historic Site; instead Martin is witnessed as driving straight past the Historic Site entrance through Port Arthur and down into Seascape *for the first time that day*. Considered carefully though, even her interview of Maria Stacey (former wife of Ian Kingston) is quite helpful; the carefully chosen words quoted, are as if a blind has been lifted in one of Port Arthur's darkened cottage, illuminating the bones concealed by authorities that will come back to haunt every single plotter of that terrible day.

The Bulletin also published several of a young Martin Bryant's school reports and on the web-site transcripts of what should have been three 'privileged conversations' between Martin and his legal counsel John Avery. While Avery is entitled to hold with his opinion that he did not breach his client's confidence, by releasing these transcripts, why am I reminded of examples of Avery's principles in dealings with another client at the time, Terry Hill? With regard to this latest Avery controversy I shall deal with the developments of this affair latter in this chapter. [‡]

However read on their own, these transcripts would to the layperson seem damning. However, when all matters surrounding the pre hearing period are carefully considered, they are I believe a treasure trove of corroborative material supporting all of our findings and so collectively the transcripts and papers wound the conspirators' fabricated version of the story. I congratulate the Bulletin for publishing. As a consequence, many aspects of the psychopolitical campaign have been accorded publicity, necessary so as to bring the truth of events into the light of day!

Then the contribution by the *Australian Women's Weekly* appeared: an extract lifted directly from out of Carol Altmann's book and part of the story of the Nubeena medical practitioners Pam and Steve Ireland. Through the eyes of Pam (she now goes by her maiden name Fenerty), we hear some of the story; a disturbing walk in the aftermath among the ordinary folk of the Tasman Peninsula which deeply affected her family.

The day for April fools' pranks produced a rash of 'lift-out' supplements to the weekend newspapers: among them *The Weekend Australian*, *Sunday Telegraph* and *Sunday Herald Sun*. I jarred my way through the article by Robert Wainwright. Even the first journalists' reports on this complex incident, exposed a weakness common to all of these articles: inaccuracy. The SMH didn't escape this failing. But the characteristic is balanced I believe by frank recollected morsels the journalists reproduce from survivors and families of the victims of that day and for that alone we should be thankful that while freedom of speech maybe quite ill, it's not altogether dead; so more pieces of the story continue to come out. Featured among almost every publication is Keith Moulton, as apparently the "gun control" camp didn't count on Walter not taking to the media this time around. From among several of these publications for example, Keith Moulton makes some claims quite at odds with that of the coroner, Ian Matterson. Moulton's claims should at least be considered carefully.

Moulton you may remember was the father of Nanette Mikac, who along with her two little daughters was so callously executed by the gunman on Jetty Road. This terrible act became the rallying point for the NCGC's "gun control" campaign. Walter Mikac has been reported as not speaking with the media this time around, no doubt a disappointment to the NCGC moles. ⁸

[‡] See Template for Terrorism at Port Arthur, by Harry Peck on this disk at p.6.

A first point to consider is made by Moulton who clearly states that some time after 6.00 pm (1800hrs), he was *"stopped at a road block set up on the road to Port Arthur. Nobody was being allowed through, for fear the gunman was still at large,"* so far so good. This at least is corroborating the fact that the 100 acre site was not yet secured by police who thought the gunman was still at large. But the next day, Monday 29th April, he claims Pam Ireland arranged for *'Keith and Walter [Mikac] to be let through the thick police cordon that surrounded the site'*. Then, *'with Steve and Pam Ireland supporting Walter, Keith was joined by volunteer ambulance officer Kaye Fox,'* these five persons walked past police lines to the bodies of Nanette Mikac and her two daughters on Jetty Road. This is entirely at odds with Mr Matterson's official EME Report who stated just Walter Mikac and Pam Ireland breached the police line of the still-sealed crime scene.

The *Weekend Australian* lift out "Magazine" produced a feature article by Mark Whittaker, "THE EVIL WITHIN" and they're up to its old tricks again. The full-page digitally altered face with poked-marked acne face and neck overshadows even the 'padding' in this article which misrepresents totally Martin Bryant. Nothing Whittaker can write will redeem this fraud, save to suggest the message contained in the title "[The Evil Within](#)", could well be pointed 'within' i.e. perhaps toward the author or editor? Their agenda was launched on May 3 1996 and it continues unabated. Take a look at the deliberate tampering to change his appearance by clicking on the link. Only desperation and guilt - ten years on - forces a publisher to tamper with photographs so as to alter a convicted felon's appearance to be almost compatible with the eyewitnesses' description of the gunman. At right, is [the original](#) photograph of Martin Bryant from among those coloured photos stolen from the kitchen table of his Clare Street home on the evening of the 28th of April. You will note The Australian's digital treatment to make his skin appear blotchy or pockmarked and the saturation of the reds are highlighted and the dark tones to emphasise the heading of - evil. Is that professional journalism or just prostituting a malicious ability?

Although I would have to concede, important information can be gleaned out of the story from tit-bits mentioned almost unintentionally by the writer in passing. For example, the admissions on the part of Rod Quarry, reported as Risdon 'prison's head of security,' as to the treatment of the prisoner Martin Bryant, confirms as I've mentioned earlier that the authorities in 2006 have regressed to those who guarded the unfortunate convicts occupying the cells of Port Arthur, now just crumbling ruins of that horror.

Quarry boasts that Martin Bryant is denied mail by a sleight of hand carried off by prison staff: it's put in his "property". As Martin is serving a 'whole of life term' he brags, Martin will be dead when he gets it. A little like placing birdseed just beyond the reach of a caged canary and no better that Guantanamo Bay!

But a scrap that we should thank Mark Whittaker for is Rod Quarry's account of Martin Bryant's appearances on the 19th



**The Chief Justice
William Cox**

November 1996 attending his sentencing in the Supreme Court at Hobart, before Chief Justice, Mr. William [Cox](#). In Madison's interview with the survivor Ron Neander and in reference to this above hearing Neander, is quoted: *"Bryant is still very much in my mind. He was so offensive in court. He had a big smirk and as he was leaving he was taken past us - the victims - and he gave us a little wave."* What a pity I'm unable to show Ron the 'smirk' on the face of the Minister of the Crown on his way to a briefing on the fruits of his scheming that had ripened that Sunday afternoon, or the 'smirk' on the senior policeman as he admitted to the burning of Seascope... But what about Ron Neander's claimed "little wave"?



Martin Bryant 25.4.96: From one of a number of original photographs stolen from the kitchen table after an illegal entry to Bryant's Clare Street home on the evening of 28 April 1996.

Rod Quarry corroborates the accuracy of the Mercury's sketch artist with Martin sporting John Avery's suggested short hair-cut, and dressed in a light-blue linen suit, white shirt over

a white skivvy. This account destroys the Mercury's fraud of 2003, repeated in Carol Altmann's book - the last photograph of the centre collage. As to Neander recalling Martin giving any offensive "little wave" as he left the court to begin his whole-of-life prison term, that is simply impossible. You see Martin Bryant was handcuffed behind his back. Come to think of it, why shouldn't Martin have given a snigger growing in disgust as each of the 72 charges were read out - if those charges were false?

That same mad weekend, at least two more dailies that I am aware of ran with this propaganda. *The Sunday Telegraph* ran a two page article in their 'news in review' section. With the headline in question form, "Still Asking WHY" emblazoned across - yes you guessed it, a black and white form of the Allen and Unwin choice for the Altmann book; the digitally altered 'mad' photo as appears earlier in this chapter. Their target was of course Martin and yet again they used Keith Moulton to fire the bullets aided by the images of the Mikac family. The text was simply a cut and paste of Altmann's work.

To cap off the April fools weekend, *Brisbane's Sunday Mail*, a Murdock rag, just had to join the yapping hounds with a "Sunday Extra" rash of articles. They included a full page on the growth industry: black market firearms and ammunition, an industry that has grown directly from out of the "gun control" culture established by the NCGC and Howard. But in the rush to set the lead page, someone forgot to implant the digitally altered photograph! This time the full original stolen photo, unaltered, was there for all readers to consider. Captured just days before the massacre by his girlfriend Petra Wilmott it depicts accurately the innocent countenance of a fair-skinned young man with his *'beautiful shampooed blonde hair and soft baby skin'* without a blemish and his clear blue eyes, something the editor of *The Australian* apparently can't stand! For this photo is not the face of the gunman as described by many of the eye witnesses who were up close and personal to him that day.

But there still was a window of opportunity for the "gun control" propaganda campaign to escape collision with the traditional religious aspect of the Easter Festival.

The Weekend of the 8th and 9th of April saw the media I believe, go past the limits of Port Arthur 10 years on: but they still provide more 'free to air' intelligence.

The Sun-Herald published a two-page article in the Sunday Extra feature by Sarah Price. It was refreshing in that for a change, the material collected for the article was original. Interviews with three who where there on the day provide recollections which expose some interesting points. Even if in the case of Ian Kingston he insists he stood in the Broad Arrow Café's dining room as the bullets flew about and yelled out "Fire", a claim uncorroborated by a single witness statement. Kingston also confirms he, *'stopped working at Port Arthur in November that same year'*, a rather strange way of putting it I would opinion.

He and wife Maria divorced and both have remarried. Kingston now operates an earthmoving business. While Maria Stacey (her now married name) remained at Port Arthur and was promoted to the position of 'director of tourism' for the Site. Stacey confirms that at least one workers' compensation claim remains outstanding - ten years on...

The single factor that is repeated throughout all of the media stories which had the greatest harmful impact upon every survivor and person there on the day is the lack of support after the incident; from John Howard down through the Ministers of the Tasmania Government they all must share the burden of guilt in this negligence.

But crime does pay: Stephen Large is quietly proud of the 20 percent increase in tourism to the Peninsula since 1996. The article goes on to inform the readers that although Sarah Kistan found it difficult at first she has forgiven the gunman and moved on. In the intervening 10 years, Sarah has somehow found the resources to put her two boys through university. Nesan is now employed - like their late father Tony before him - with the Salvation Army, only he is a pastor at Auburn in Sydney's west. On the other hand Adrian, a sports consultant, with his expectant wife and son is about to make a move to Moree in northern NSW where he will work with indigenous children.

But Sarah tells us she won't be spending April 28 at Port Arthur this year... no she will be *'surrounded by family in her native South Africa, part of a three-month trip she started in a few weeks ago in the United States'*. *"Visiting America was my husband's wish," she says. "He loved travelling. We did Europe, so he wanted to go to America. One of my sons said 'why don't you do it?'"*¹⁰

Then the bizarre manifested itself, as if the foregoing has not already nudged into that class. The Mercury's *Sunday Tasmanian* just had to top all the foregoing stories:

Using the term loosely, "journalist," Kelvin Healey by-lined an article sensationally head-lined, **"Port Arthur massacre F-111 plan"**; Wow! It came straight from the horses' mouths.

I'm not sure what is lurking in the drinking water at Kelvin's place, but someone really should check it out! What absolute bunkum this fellow has written! The fact is the conspirators had so well prepared for their siege at Seascapes, that they already had all the gear flown in to Hobart in preparation which included the BFST (the 'big f.....g shiny truck) with communication gear, heat sensing equipment and the 'robot that wouldn't reach'; the "Echidna". So why on earth would Ray Groom and his buddies have to consider overflying Seascapes with a supersonic [F-111](#) jet? But hang on, Fielding tells a different story to this; he forced the gunman to come to the SOGs! Anyhow, such details would never have filtered down to the black-uniformed 'grunts at the front'; Jim Morrison and his mates with their sand-papered trigger fingers, running on pure adrenalin in the 'tense scene of battle-zone chaos'... After all, I'm learned from a reliable source that back in 1991 the then police negotiator only learned of Joe Gilewicz being 'taken out' when he heard the sniper's shot through his handpiece. Not much forward information flow there...

But Kelvin has exceeded even Harry Potter's fertile schoolboy imagination, when he wrote that these jack-booted "sons of god" of the *territorial army*, togged out in black cover-alls, bullet proof vests and what-not, somehow, *'could feel searing heat from the blazing Seascapes cottage,... and going up in the inferno the exploding roar of a deadly stockpile of ammunition'*. A colleague, Act Sgt Craig Harwood of Victoria Police, seems to indicate this is all bunkum and that like Topsy, Jim Morrison's recollections of events there have over ten years, expanded I believe. The 'F-111' claim was volunteered by a former SOG of McCreadie's 'best' and his Victorian colleague and the problem is these individuals actually believe their boasts and these same robotics would have the hide to call my findings "conspiracy theories"? So let's deal with a few more of their outrageous claims:

- *"...the [SOG] group team had their fingers on their triggers and guns focused on the killer."*

This claim is just so infantile; the writer and the informer should be occupying a padded cell. Picture if you will, the "suspect" (that should have been all that was known by anyone at the time Martin stumbled from the inferno with his clothes alight), exited the south-eastern side of the cottage while smoke and flames enveloped the building. My point being the SOG team was spread around in a cordon, in pairs, some assembled near the entrance so very few of them would have been in line of sight even with "fingers" on their "triggers"! Personally I have only ever managed to use one trigger finger on one trigger at a time...unless of course they use two firearms at once - now this is getting silly.

- *"Our thoughts were with a hostage rescue..."*



An RAAF F-111c: media reports have **Jim Morrison** claiming those in charge of the Seascapes siege, considered deploying an F11 against intellectually impaired Martin Bryant, criminal mastermind with his IQ of an 11-year-old as well as the 3 hostages whom police were unsure were alive or dead, until Bryant was arrested.



Retired, L-R: Jim Morrison (former Tas Police SOG) & Michael Hayes (former Vic Police SOG) survivors of the 'battle-zone chaos' created by intellectually impaired Martin Bryant, mastermind of the oft repeated, 'world's worst individual shooting massacre' of the 20th century... & they believe it!

When the whole of the siege operation is considered, the hostages were accorded appalling consideration from the outset. The female hostage Sally Martin may well have been saved if uniformed police first on the scene had not been refused permission (by their colleague Mark Fogarty) to shoot the dark haired male pursuing her around the yard. But that would never have done, as the cat would have been out of the bag; Martin Bryant was not acting alone. But the dark haired male could well have been the "controller"! Oh dear.

- Jim Morrison reportedly told Kelvin, *"The killer's failure to catch a ferry before the massacre probably saved more than 100 lives"*. Continuing the report states, *"Mr Morrison said it was important the public realised the death toll could have been worse. He confirmed that shortly before the massacre began at the Broad Arrow Cafe, Bryant tried to catch a ferry, which carried 128 people, to the Isle of the Dead."*

This scenario so far corroborates the actions of senior police officers who tasked both Tasmania Police marine division's seagoing launches. But then Morrison shoots himself in the foot! As Kelvin writes:

- *"Bryant tried to catch a ferry, which carried 128 people, to the Isle of the Dead. But he was not allowed on because he parked his car illegally nearby."*

There is not a shred of evidence that supports this last gaff. It may be too simple for Morrison, Michael Hayes and indeed Kelvin Healey, but the Bundeena's schedule had changed to the winter timetable and so the gunman had to go to 'plan B'. Or, can Morrison or Hayes explain why both police launches were tasked, then just as quickly returned to base? Perhaps if Morrison bothered to ask his former colleague "Mick" (he was inside the cottage for majority of the siege), he could explain the whole segment in words of one syllable. Then there is this little gem from former Victorian SOG Michael Hayes:

- *"If he had just cracked a twig..." Michael said, explaining the tension of the moment. "For a millisecond everyone focused on Bryant..."*¹¹

Could Michael have a short term memory disorder? As it seems he's forgotten that just moments before the pair are reported to have told us of *'the exploding roar of a deadly stockpile of ammunition' in that 'battle zone of chaos'* which could well have drowned out the odd cracking twig you would think! Surely their contribution qualifies to be accurately called *"Flemington confetti"*. Bet you are as relieved as I am that they are now retired trigger-pullers...

The *Sunday Herald-Sun* ran a further three associated articles of survivors' interviewed who'd lost their loved ones there. Interestingly one without a by-line confirmed that the sister of the late Nanette Mikac, Mrs Hibbert along with her father Keith Moulton *'have played key roles in organising the 10-year anniversary service at Port Arthur'*.¹²

I would have to be naive to consider this is the last of this campaign as these insensitive people will undoubtedly be on the street corner to catch and pass the gossip at every opportunity so as to please the masters of their mortgage and their minds. I wish no harm to the Carol Altmann's of this world with their trendy same-sex partners of the 'new age', but as they are not about to go away, they must realise neither are the likes of this author. Murder will out, and I believe when it does the blood and gore is going to splatter widely, and those who have willingly prostituted their "craft" may have blood on their hands that will not wash away and not surprisingly, that day is yet a day closer than yesterday.

The articles continued for in excess of the full month of April 2006 and the media were forced to change their focus when three gold-miners at Beaconsfield in the Northern Tasmania were trapped by a rock fall caused by a seismic event. The Beaconsfield tragedy deepened when the body of one of the miners was recovered; but the story eclipsed Port Arthur's '10 year anniversary' as the days turned into weeks - two weeks in fact and both survivors walked from the mine cage and into the light of day. The television media had ever senior news reader on site for two weeks! They turned street leading to the mine site into *Winnebago Way*...

So for the duration of the Port Arthur's 'anniversary' not one word that has appeared in print during this propaganda campaign directly assisted a single soul on the Tasman Peninsula or the survivors spread across this nation and for that my heart is heavy. Their daily battles go unnoticed by the very people so engrossed in their own selfish agendas. It took even more grief to force organisers to cancel their "concert" when tragedy struck down yet another local family who's roots to the Peninsula go back to the very first settlement of Whiteman there: Patric Johnson, 59 yrs, his son Jason 36 yrs and step-grandson Josh Colgrave, 16 yrs, were all drowned at sea on Sunday, 23rd of April - what a very heavy price to pay for tranquillity.

But the money tyrants gathered with the evil spirit that pervades and destroys the beauty that Tasmania once evoked in the minds of those who loved the place and now the unpleasant sounds that will soon accompany the silence of the place, as *construction* is soon to pervade the bush about Port Arthur; the accommodation of tourists is priority one for Barry Jones and the directors of PAHSMA.

THE AVERY AFFAIR

Beginning on 30th of March - and in the wake of a controversial article and web-posted documents published by *The Bulletin*, 57-year-old John Avery came under the spotlight of the Tasmania Law Society, attention only reported by a few newspapers among the national media's "stable". It becomes obvious some in the establishment were making the bullets - as usual, while they had another Hobart lawyer via the press, as it were shoot arrows at their target in the public domain. In early reports, it was claimed among various documents Avery wished to release were some "20 hours of interview tapes he believes would shed further light on why Bryant committed his crime"; 'oh how I would love to read them!', commented an acquaintance with an excellent legal mind. But this slant soon was to lose its importance - or so it would seem to the public.

But in reality the main thrust of even the earliest attack was directed at the publisher - until Mr Avery went on the defensive allegedly suggesting it wasn't he who'd given the tapes to the Bulletin in the first place. I'm moved to opinion that I would find it difficult to accept that Mr Avery could have been so foolish as to hand over the transcripts in the first place way back in May of 1999, when the material in those tapes was first published in a Bulletin article authored by Gary Linnell.

For instance, Greg Barns finds it hard to believe, *"there are matters in the files that would help victims find closure."* But equally, has Mr Barns in the past ten years and out of concern for 'victims to find closure' ever bothered to put pen to paper to demand a coronial inquest? The article goes on to suggest Barns (to his credit I believe), said that the actions of John Avery in already releasing for publication in *The Bulletin*, what amounted to 'details of confidential client-lawyer discussions' had, *"established a very dangerous precedent,"* although as I would point out this surely is a presumption of guilt on the part Barns. As I would suggest Avery almost surely was not the source of the material to *The Bulletin*. Though in essence the Barns attack was more directly giving *The Bulletin* editor Gary Linnell a good serve. ¹³

Barns published a strident attack on the Bulletin and the actions of Avery on the Internet, where it reads, *"If a lawyer or any other professional (one informed individual told me that a psychiatrist in the case might have handed the interview transcripts to The Bulletin) involved in Mr. Bryant's case gave the transcripts to The Bulletin, then they have acted with scant regard for human rights or ethics. And ditto The Bulletin for publishing them."* I just wonder if an envelope inadvertently you understand, fell off the desk of a Melbourne-based psychiatrist? Such a source would make more sense to this author at any rate.



Happier days:
John W Avery

Even the website www.crikey.com.au was drawn into the search for the source of this leak and I found Mr Barns' web article made some interesting connections to emphasise the madness of our space on earth in the present climate of deliberately generated "state

trauma" and its never-ending "war on terror" when he commented: *"Since 9/11 governments in the US, UK and Australia have used the pre-text of fighting a war on terrorism to curtail lawyer-client privilege."* So does it not follow that Mr Avery's desires, alleged actions and the Bulletin's ethics are right on track with the establishment? Well that's how it seems to this author. ¹⁴

But as the days went by, matters worsened for New Town's maverick criminal lawyer and as Monday the 1st of May was nearing its full extent, a 'midnight session' in the chambers of Justice Alan Blow was held, but as the article tells us, **"the court is releasing no details about why the hearing was held, who initiated it, or the outcome"**. I'm reminded of an event two thousand years ago and a crucifixion was the outcome of that mid-night council then - so watch out John! Just how secretive can you get! The article went on to tell us that the **'Tasmanian Law Society would only confirm Mr Avery had ceased practising and his legal partnership at Moonah had been dissolved'**. Mr Avery had been practicing law in Hobart's northern suburbs since 1976, when he founded the partnership of Avery and McMullen, with Max McMullen. In the shadow of his most infamous case and in 1997, Phillip Keal joined with Avery to form Avery Keal then later Rob Blissenden from Lowrie, Blissenden, Howarth and Tauber joined the partnership. It was on the 3rd of May that Mr Blissenden confirmed that the law firm is continuing to practice law- but without John Avery. The few articles that appeared were all scant on detail; understandable I suppose, as one Hobart source suggested Mr Avery seems to have adopted the demeanour of the native *"Tassie Devil"* - a very secretive nocturnal marsupial I believe. ¹⁵



17.05.2006: *The Mercury's* front page.

By the 9th of May, an executive officer of the Tasmanian Law Society, Martyn Hagan while unable to comment 'on the nature of the complaint' was able to confirm the Law Society was indeed 'investigating a complaint against barrister John Avery'. This article went on to confirm that John Avery *'had his licence to practise law suspended and had his partnership in his 30-year-old law firm dissolved.'* As I suggested earlier, if concern for the victims has ever been demonstrated as a great priority among any of Tasmania's legal fraternity, then it has escaped this writer's attention, so that is not I believe a credible motivation for this arbitrary action. Are there some among the establishment though who did a little panic? It is clear the massacre victims as usual are furthest from the thoughts of the establishment heavyweights and Justice, Tasmania style. Avery broke the code of silence that was imposed, he stepped outside of "the square" and it seems the establishment has undoubtedly administered the punishment; swiftly and harshly. I wonder if John has already come to understand the reality of his new predicament. Perhaps John may take-up crayons.



New Town Art Collector:
John Avery at his former
Avery & Partners desk. But
does Avery's knowledge of
the entire case - like the
crayon - remain under client-
lawyer "privilege"?

It seems an irony that one of the small fish in the 'Tassie pond' was "beached" on the same day as legendary fishing show host Rex Hunt renowned for his "fish kissing", who likewise suffered a bad day that day as alluded to on *The Mercury* front page. The

16th of May 2006 was a black letter day for John W Avery and the head lines read: **"Top lawyer struck off: Avery blasted for 'heinous' client thefts"**.

Ever get the feeling though, someone is not telling you the whole story? Well the Avery fall from grace is certainly a case in point. You will remember that this latest "Avery Affair" was only ever ignited by John Avery when he made his latest gaff; that of resurrecting the notion of him writing a book on Martin Bryant as insinuated in *The Bulletin* recently. The story was reinforced by a photo of Avery sitting behind his now defunct legal desk, [gloating](#) over the large (an probably valuable?) crayon sketch which Martin allegedly presented to him around the time the intellectually impaired young man had a brain storm to change his plea to "Guilty" after 6-months of meditation in Risdon, assisted by John Avery and various psychiatrists, all achieved in time for the sentencing hearing to be brought forward.

Now the reaction to Avery's book idea coupled with the Bulletin's publication of the alleged transcript of taped interviews between Avery and Martin Bryant and the legal opinions that the tapes are subject to the *strict client-lawyer privilege*, you may remember caused Hobart lawyer Greg Barns to open the attack on 12.04.2006 against Mr Avery. Barns first posted an article on the internet as referenced above. Now the attack by Barns was as intimated primarily directed at the Bulletin's editor Gary Linnell and the improper reigniting of the Port Arthur massacre story in the name of journalism and not altogether directed at John Avery alone. However, the attack was ignited and someone near the 'top of the pile' must have realised the helm was causing the whole affair to head in a most dangerous direction; straight at the "rocks" of the massacre at Port Arthur.

So it is not surprising to this author at least that a helpful soul was scheduled to be discovered at about this point to change course; May Day arrived, enter a partner in Avery's firm, Rob Blissenden and the secret 'mid-night hearing' in chambers behind closed doors and so the "*MV Avery*" was saved from running aground on "massacre rocks"! The elite could not afford to have the massacre at Port Arthur in the headlines by way of a desperate, lose cannon! You see they re-set the heading for "embezzlement harbour" and a safe anchorage for the conspirators of the terrorist operation that was the massacre at Port Arthur. Their collective sighs of relief were almost audible - even from this far away. You may also remember Rob Blissenden only came to Avery's firm in the shadow of Port Arthur and the shameful Martin Bryant conviction. A good time for a sea change I suppose, but in light of recent developments some could argue a fortuitous change.



Tim Ellis the present
Tasmania DPP who
succeeded Damian
Bugg QC.

So on May day, 1.05.06 (the night of the 'in chambers' hearing), the law firm's partner - Rob Blissenden - supplied to the Court evidence proving Avery's guilt of this embezzlement of monies, which consisted of "*ledger cards, bank deposit slips, an accountant's report and entries from a book found in a "normally locked" cabinet in Mr Avery's office [which again] were presented as evidence to the Supreme Court yesterday,*" *The Mercury* reported. I find the timing of this discovery of evidence from a "normally locked" cabinet, just too coincidental in the scheme of things and perhaps a more accurate term would be again "convenient", especially for the law society reported to be continuing to pursue John Avery with a criminal investigation probably to be conducted by Tasmania's DPP, Tim [Ellis](#).

So it was on the 17th of May 2006, *The Mercury* reported that the high profile John Avery of the 30-year-old law firm, Avery Partners of New Town "was struck off the Roll of Legal Practitioners ... for conduct Chief Justice Peter Underwood said was "heinous in the extreme".

In my estimation though, not the same degree of 'heinousness' you understand, as the skulduggery these people have been a party to which resulted in a *whole of life imprisonment* sentence now being served out by an innocent Martin Bryant!

The article went on to inform readers "*The Law Society of Tasmania -- which made the application to strip Mr Avery of his right to practise law -- has referred the matter to the Director of Public Prosecutions,*" which I believe confirms my commentary on the affair and that important change in direction to save the establishment cronies from going aground on the "massacre rocks." Sure the Court heard how the lawyer had misappropriated \$44,493.50 from client trust funds, and even used some of these monies to pay off personal loans of secondary consideration I would opinion. But I'm confident in suggesting that a perusal of the transcript of his trial would show 3 phrases were never uttered in the hearing: "Martin Bryant", "Port Arthur" and "client privilege". But the Law Society of Tasmania has shown the true purpose of the court action: as stated earlier, Avery's crime was that he broke the code of silence among the elite of the Tasmania establishment complicit in the terrorist operation that was the massacre. So it doesn't change Avery's new found status, and so I stand by my opinions on his current position as stated above. ¹⁶

Meanwhile Messrs Wendy Scurr, Andrew MacGregor and I given disparaging labels by the most recent journalist-come-author (dare I suggest because we challenge the establishment line) and I wear mine with pride. If the reader intends to rescue a copy of Altmann's book from the recycling bin or a \$2 entrance table at the Big K store, then you will find at page

99 we are referred to as “...spruiking from the stump to deliver [our] version of the truth behind Port Arthur.”



On the invitation of the Mayor of Paddy's River the author practices his "stump spruiking". April 2006

Though it is to journalists such as Carol Altmann I do owe a vote of thanks as so many seemingly insignificant statements were exposed in the printed word for all to see. I'm proud to wear her label bestowed on me, as being guilty of speaking to the ordinary people who congregate in halls and venues other than the theatres of academia is I believe an honour. So I'm a "[Stump Spruiker](#)", so what. I speak to groups small and large and by the way Carol, I'll speak to who ever is intelligent enough to express an interest to listen and consider my findings on the matter. I rather feel Altman on the other hand will not see publication of too much of her work in book-form and stump spruiking for her is definitely out. I do however find it offensive when labelled just

as was the Melbourne-based celebrated cartoonist Michael Lunig was recently, as 'anti-Semitic'. That rant is made only more offensive in degree by the attempt to legitimise it among tiny minds using some stupidly suggested tenuous link with "Joe" Vialls and Martin Bryant (the later held in the solitary confinement of Risdon prison and having never received visitors other than his tortured mother and all written correspondence stored with his "personal effects" that he would only ever see after death) I find quite scurrilous.

In the case of the "Joe" link (?), this has occurred simply because he has written on the same subject as me! It really is laughable, but at the same time Altmann never did criticize Vialls directly and specifically - rather telling if believe. Carol may just have to be very careful not to fall into that same 'label trap' I should think if one uses the same parameters in her case, especially when one examines the preferred subject matter of her articles and writings (even available on audio tape no less).

It seems that every time these tyrants, criminals and journalists-of-letters open their mouths, it is only to change feet. I say keep up the good work guys and gals! Murder will out.

End Notes

¹ Carol Altmann, e-mail 30jan06 9:51 AM, Subject, re: Book launch; Fullers Bookshop, Events.

² David Sly, "Redressing the scares of Port Arthur", *Independent Weekly* 19apr06, <http://independentweekly.com.au/>, Allen & Unwin book launch etc

³ Carol Altmann, "Compassion for forgotten killer," *The Weekend Australian*, p12

⁴ Carol Altmann, *After Port Arthur*, pub Allen & Unwin, 2006, pp.99 & 101

⁵ *ibid*, p.101

⁶ Gedaliah Afterman, "PM to receive B'nai B'rith's top honour", 8may06, <http://www.ajm.com.au/news/news.asp?pgID=533>

⁷ Julie-Anne Davies, "Making of a Monster", *The Bulletin*, 4apr06, pp17-27

⁸ Sarah Price, "The remains of the day," *The Sun-Herald*, 9apr06, pp.55-58

⁹ Carol Altmann, "APA", pp.28-30; Robert Wainwright, "Remembering Port Arthur", *SMH's goodweekend*, p.25.

¹⁰ Sarah Price, "The remains of the day," *The Sun-Herald*, 9apr06, pp.55-58

¹¹ Kevin Healey, "He was in our sights", *Sunday Herald-Sun*, 09apr06

¹² Kelvin Healey, "Port Arthur massacre F-111 plan", the *Sunday Tasmanian*, 09apr06

¹³ Matthew Denholm, "Bryant's lawyer attacked," *The Australian*, 30mar06

¹⁴ Greg Barns, "Memo to The Bulletin: Martin Bryant has rights too", The Institute of Public Affairs 12apr06, http://www.henrythornton.com/article.asp?article_id=3962

¹⁵ na, ABC News-online, 6.19pm, 3may06; Alison Ribbon, "Bryant lawyer quits in mystery", *The Mercury*, 03may06.

¹⁶ Philippa Duncan, "Top lawyer struck off: Avery blasted for 'heinous' client thefts", *The Mercury*, 17may06

Summary

The Scot, Lord Shaw once wrote:

"In the darkness of secrecy, sinister interest and evil in every shape have full swing, where there is no publicity there is no justice, publicity is the very soul of justice. It is the keenest spur to exertion and the surest of all guards against improbity. It keeps the judge himself while trying, under trial. The security of securities is publicity."

Until Ministers Howard, Ruddock and Downer et al, led this country into the 'coalition of the willing' Iraqi adventure, for you to utter the words "the massacre at Port Arthur" and dare to suggest it was a "conspiracy" while among unfamiliar company caused you to immediately realise your position was *politically incorrect*. Next came the rebuke and then they would avoid you for the duration...

To do so in the company of members of parliament was undeniably...

"Strictly Verboden"!

Even with PAHSMA staff today, *standing orders* maintain a concealment of the controversy in their brochure: Do not mention the "M" word! ¹

In FAQ the internet posting asks: "Will staff tell us about the massacre?"

A: "Our staff are always keen to help visitors with inquiries, but this is one area about which they prefer not to be asked. ... Rather than ask, please read the plaque at the Memorial Garden or pick up a brochure at the Visitor Centre...." End quote

After all, brochures are dumb propaganda and like bronze plaques unchallengeable...

But after considering the forgoing narrative, who'd deny a host of officials have veiled this event in secrecy? Who would scoff at a suggestion that there was from the 28th April deployed in this nation, *"sinister interest and evil in every shape"*? So, the Port Arthur massacre must be given *publicity*.



Mrs Carleen Bryant: 'Martin, you couldn't possibly have done all that they say you did down there [at Port Arthur] that day?'

Martin: "It must have been a police set-up."

From a conversation during a 15 minute unsupervised visit to Risdon Prison, November 1998.

Did you know the word conspiracy derives from the Latin "*spirare - to breath or blow together*"?

Some conspiracies are conducted to bring about an outcome of good things, even the public good. Yes it's true; I have conspired with Andrew MacGregor and Mrs Wendy Scurr in this work for the public good. But also, when considered, even the smallest segment of this event those who desperately try to keep the anomalies and discussion of the massacre in "darkness", or published en-masse of propaganda which only confuses every reader ... would they dare to deny they — *breathed, planned or plotted together*, at some time before and even after the event? As well, the Port Arthur incident is swamped by fortuitous coincidences far in excess of any believable ratio one could say was approaching normal; they are overwhelmingly extensive. But what of one important outcome, a significant reason for this psychopolitical exercise - the synthesis or prohibition and confiscation of firearms in the name of "gun control"?

It has been my experience when addressing public meetings on the subject that generally most people, even those who at the time generally supported the catch-cry of "uniform gun laws", now have come to realise the folly of that position. Consider the writings of Mrs Wendy Scurr who wrote:

"After 11½ hours I was able to return home. My first words to my husband Graeme were, '*You'll have to teach me how to use our rifles.*' I have never had the need to learn to shoot but my attitude has certainly changed now. Our rifles are all that allows me to stay home alone now; they are my 'minders'.

"I would love to have a revolver to take with me when I leave the sanctuary of my home, but I cannot obtain one," because of the law.

"Much to the surprise of the general public," she explains, "A lot of staff and I'm sure many of the visitors feel as I do."

"A lot of people [who want to ban firearms] may have had a much different attitude if they'd been there and experienced the hopelessness without security and nothing with which to defend ourselves, or our loved ones." End quote.

And so in keeping with the above advise from Lord Shaw, I make no apology for the suggestions, questions and conclusions I make in the forgoing narrative, as it does give the matters — PUBLICITY!

In the process of writing about this matter, I learned that like the Victorian Police, who had their *special area* for exercises in Gippsland's remote Wonangatta Valley, so too since before 1968, the Tasmanian Police used the Tasman Peninsula as their exercise grounds; they regularly camped on the Nubeena Football Oval and conducted their accreditation and refresher exercises around the rugged terrain of the Tasman Peninsula.

Tasmania Police were not only a familiar sight around Port Arthur, but the Tasman Peninsula was a very familiar terrain to all of them. In fact, on the afternoon of 28 April 1996, Graeme Scurr on his farm near Nubeena responded to a query from his son as to the sudden proliferation of helicopters in the skies over their district at the time by saying, *"Oh it's probably just another one of their blasted exercises..."*

Garry Alexander the volunteer Ambulance officer from Nubeena was even to comment, *"If it's a training set-up and they haven't told someone, gee I'll go crook."* His annoyance of this probability perhaps even vindicated by Director of Tasmanian SES, Joe Paul who in 1997 wrote, *"Several exercises have been conducted since 1995 that have been designed to assess the emergency services response capability to an event on the Tasman Peninsula, which includes Port Arthur."* ²

Finally though the April 28 1996 shootings, rekindled the brutal history of Port Arthur, but it is much more than the fate of 35 innocent lives or the hurt, physical injury and trauma to so many, still ongoing, suffered by their loved ones and every one of the survivors, even as traumatic and disturbing as that may be. Several documents claim 2,000 were counselled after the event, and my own interviews on the Peninsula confirm the whole of the districts' community of 2,250 has suffered ongoing, adverse health effects. Many have been forced to move far away to regain some measure of normality in their lives.

The Director of Public Prosecutions in charge of prosecuting the case against Martin Bryant mentioned throughout this work - Damian Bugg QC - was Tasmanian born and he completed all of his education in Hobart and on through to attaining his law degree at University there. Bugg was admitted to the Bar of the Supreme Court of Tasmania in 1969. In the Hobart law firm Dobson Mitchell and Allport, he was their senior litigation partner, and was appointed DPP for Tasmania in July 1986. In 1987 he established and chaired the Electronic Recording Committee responsible for implementing video recorded police interviews - like the (faulty) edited version of video-taped record of interview used against Martin Bryant. In 1988 he established and chaired the Forensic Science Services Committee and it is claimed, *"[He] has written and spoken about victims' rights, pre-trial disclosure, committals and procedural reform."* ³

But after all of such credentials this work raises very many concerning allegations as to the shroud of evil secrecy, which conceals and envelops much of the occurrences before, during and after the massacre as well as various judicial manoeuvres. Then please consider this statement by Mr. Damien Bugg QC long after the Howard led Federal Ministry appointed him to the newly created position of Federal DPP in August of 1999.

"... I think it is rather sad that people who are ill-informed about the circumstances of this matter seem prepared to make comments about such a significant social tragedy that have no basis in fact."

- Damien Bugg QC; SMH, 22.02.2001

In the 2005 Australia Day Awards Damian Bugg was appointed among 5 in the state as Members of the Order of Australia, 'for a career dedicated to law enforcement, particularly in the role of director of public prosecutions at state and federal levels'.

It may matter little to the ignorant and even less to the "dumb-downed mob", but sadly, if we ordinary people allow such treachery and arrogant disregard for justice that I have exposed here to be ignored, history shows such a degree of treachery will destroy *all of the classes of humanity* in the long run.

For at Port Arthur, treachery in the form of a substantial conspiracy was most certainly in evidence throughout. Certain senior police officers and their colleagues were unquestionably culpable; their delay alone of nearly a full working-day in duration, to

provide adequate security to as many as five hundred people on the Historic Site that day is gross culpability in anyone's judgement.

So in concluding my small contribution to a review and publicity of this dreadful affair, I cannot help but be appalled by the further and continuing lies, half-truths, deceit, injustice and seemingly indifference, perpetrated not only against the incarcerated, the survivors, and Tasmanian people, but upon our whole nation of people.

There once were a goodly number of scoffers. Since the appalling events of September 11 in New York and Australia's subsequent enticement into the dual adventures of Afghanistan and Iraq, the mocking has ceased. In this matter, of one thing I can be sure: murder will out.

As a consequence, those who've dared pervert the course of justice to such an extent, certainly should be brought to account, tried for their part in the crime, and if and when found guilty, prosecuted to the full letter of the law.

In the early stages of this project, I was impartial as to the exact role Martin Bryant played out in the whole incident. However after deep and long consideration of all the evidence that I have been able to scrutinize I can confidently state Martin Bryant did not, in fact could not, have murdered David Martin at Seascope. I can state confidently Martin Bryant was not the gunman who shot and killed 20 persons inside the Broad Arrow Café at Port Arthur on the afternoon of April 28, 1996. If not Bryant, then who was the perpetrator?

I can also state confidently that I have been able to demonstrate in the forgoing, that a person other than "Jamie" - a.k.a. Martin Bryant - discharged a firearm inside the Seascope Cottage on the evening of Sunday, 28 April 1996: that is "objective fact" of a conspiracy.

I have also been able to clearly demonstrate that the two primary firearms alleged to have been the weapons used to murder thirty-four people at Port Arthur were not made inoperable in the manner or accidental event the Forensic Firearm Examiner and the Crown would have us all believe occurred.

While Martin Bryant was most definitely implicated in the Seascope Siege segment of the crime, the exact extent of that implication has never been properly examined nor tested before a jury of his peers. But I can also state confidently, that the DPP for reasons kept utterly concealed from the public, ignored at least the sworn statements of two eyewitnesses that put Martin Bryant at least 64km away from Seascope Cottage at the time the Crown alleged that he murdered Mr and Mrs Martin.

I have played my small part in informing the public, it is now up to others to demand the matter be brought before an open Coroner's Inquiry and/or retrial by jury, to expose the deception and get to the bottom of the matter.

However, quite categorically, I'm caused to reflect deeply after careful study over 9 years and the reading of millions of words on the subject to conclude Martin Bryant does most definitely deserve a fair trial by his peers at very least. Martin Bryant did not receive anything remotely resembling such, on 19 November, 1996 before Mr Justice Cox, now Tasmania's Governor.

Those who died at Seascope and Port Arthur are deserving of the obligatory Coronial Inquest they have been denied. The statute law required it, the then Attorney General was obligated to insist upon it happening; the people asked and pleaded for it to occur and they have been denied. Even John Howard himself interfered in this State matter at the time by making public comment claiming it would have a deleterious effect upon the survivors and loved ones of the deceased. What treachery!

During the State's gala event on Thursday October 5th 2004 - the Launceston Show - Tasmania Police fielded a promotion booth. The State was then without a Governor as the former UN weapons inspector Richard Butler had been forced to resign in a storm of controversy after kicking and screaming all the way to a pay-out deal. The temporary Lt. Gov., Justice William Cox (who sat on the bench throughout that "justice debacle" they called a sentencing hearing for Martin Bryant) was apparently unavailable, for '*second in line to the vice-regal throne, Justice Peter Underwood*,' was filling in. It appears the Justices in Tasmania just don't get it! For seated among the official party, Underwood was reported as wearing a "cute little sticker" which declared "COPS ARE COOL"! It is very apparent the problems I speak of in Tasmania are systemic.

Can the people determine as to whether or not these systemic problems are terminal? In the re-shuffle among high state-offices, Peter Underwood stepped up to Tasmania's Chief Justice of course. The article went on to mention, although Police Comm. McCreadie was with the official party, he hadn't reciprocated by wearing a sticker declaring, "Judges are cool". ⁴

But on the one hand why did ALL these experts, make so many bumbles, yet be so coincidentally fortuitous with regard to their preparedness on the other hand? The experts being from across the spectrum: hierarchy of the State Police, SAC-PAV, psychiatrists, forensic crime scene examiners, doctors, photographers, ballisticians, politicians, lawyers "gun control" advocates and even the media, not to mention those who boast their titles as "professional grief counsellors" — what ever the title infers — they *all* erred. I certainly cannot hold that all these people are incompetent fools and bunglers, far from it. For like most psychopolitical subterfuges of this age, they have almost fooled a nation - for a time.

Only more diligent investigation and open, public inquiry will provide truthful answers in the long run. Some of those who take for granted that precious freedom — free speech — like newspaper editors for instance, still today cannot resist some scoffing, and dismissive quips toward any who dare question the authorities on this event. Although now at last their demeanour has changed for the better I must say.

Why, in the case of my local newspaper *The Daily Advertiser*, Editor Paul McLoughlin even authored a two part article titled, "**Everyone loves a good ol' conspiracy theory**" and Port Arthur was listed at number one in the first part of that article. He put forward 8 points to support his hypothesis, and 5 of those points are fact. But as you've no doubt already realised even although he has access to our work his true position is just "THEORY" confirmed by his choice of title. Is he not still scoffing at least or even shooting the messenger? ⁵

By the sheer weight of knowledge from out of statements from the witnesses to the Port Arthur incident, one is persuaded to conclude that the whole of the people of Australia are burdened with a great raft of treachery, enforced by assented, unconstitutional legislation, which is not "law", for it denies the people of their heritage and their birthright.

Such pre-emptive legislation could I believe be successfully argued before an *impartial Court* (should that now ever be possible), and judged as '*legislative action beyond the powers of the State and Federal Parliaments and the Government*'. These matters are I believe to the Ministers of the Federal and State Parliaments *ultra vires*.

Simply, our basic Rights I speak of were unquestionably reaffirmed in the Magna Carta in 1215, which is statute law in Australia. An original copy of the Great Charter is even preserved to this very day, kept contemptuously behind glass, in the Federal Parliament and despised I contend by Canberra's successive Ministries who refer to the Ministers as "My Government": Humbug!

Are you aware that this covenant was drawn-up between the people and the monarch a great many years before any politician was legislating enactments in any Parliament of the Realm? This is also the fountain head of America's Bill of Rights, and their embattled 2nd Amendment. Why do we allow this deplorable situation to persist?

Therefore why shouldn't we maintain a patient confidence that ultimate justice - for the whole of the people, and for those who were sacrificed and maimed, on the *new world order's* "gun control" altar at Port Arthur, is achievable in the future? While the present circumstances remain, all Australians - who are in reality victims of Port Arthur - should I believe have the chance to consider: why not let us all enjoy that experience of one of life's finest privileges, that of being an advocate for those whose remains lie cold in the ground, or who rot in a gaol called Risdon and are unable to defend themselves. It remains for each of us to do at least this.

End

End Notes

¹ http://www.portarthur.org.au/pashow.php?ACTION=Public&menu_code=400.300

² Mike Bingham, *Suddenly One Sunday*, Pub Harper Collins, p.90; EMA Port Arthur Papers, p.3

³ "Biography of Damian Bugg", *Government Lawyer*, No32 Dec 2004, p.2.

⁴ Ellen Winnett, "Cop That", *The Insider*, *The Mercury*, 9oct04

⁵ Paul McLoughlin, "Everyone loves a good ol' conspiracy theory," *The Weekend Advertiser*, 1apr06, p.23

John Avery allegedly made up to 17 visits to Martin Bryant in his cell at Risdon Prison. The following transcript are claimed to be from just three (3) of those interviews between Martin Bryant and his lawyers in Risdon Prison Hospital. This transcript is a copy of its original typed form as was published on the web-site of *The Bulletin* magazine – April 4, 2006 in association with the article "Making of a Monster" by Julie-Anne Davies, as published in *The Bulletin* dated 4, April 2006. NOTE: Footnotes & text bracketed [thus] has been added by this editor, Stewart Beattie.

This first transcript is of the second Interview at Risdon, taking place on Thursday, October 3, 1996

Present: Martin BRYANT, John AVERY and James HANNON.

MB: As long as you're not working for the Police. I turned around and said to David [David Gunson, QC, Bryant's first lawyer, who withdrew for ethical reasons - *Bulletin*] one day "Are you working for the Police, David" and he said "No, no, I'm working for you Martin".

JWA: Well there is no way we're working for the Police, I can tell you that, right.

Okay, let's just talk about what I am here for, right. I have reviewed your case since we spoke last Tuesday [1st Sept] and I now know as much as I need to know about it. Obviously, I haven't been through acres of material and this sort of thing. I have gone through the statements that I think are appropriate and I now know the weight of evidence against you, right.

MB: Yep

JWA: Now having done all that, I have formed the view that I am prepared to act for you subject to a few limits, or a few conditions, right. Now I want to go through those and see whether you're content on that, right.

First thing is that I think if you want me to act we've got to be frank with each other. I won't bullshit you but equally there are no games that I want you to play, right. Understand that?

MB: Yes

JWA: I will want to get from you, not today but in the next day or so, full instructions, right.

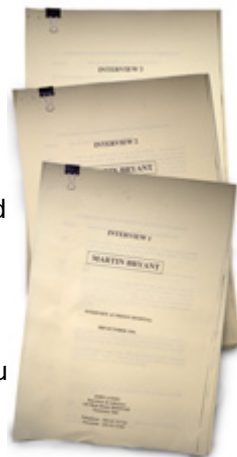
MB: Yes

JWA: On the whole thing. And finally, I don't want you to have any false expectations and I won't give you any, right.

MB: Okay, yeah

JWA: Now within those broad parameters, do you want me to act for you?

MB: Yep, yeah, yeah



* This document tells us *an earlier interview* (interview one (1), which had been conducted in Risdon Prison between Avery and Martin Bryant on **Tuesday 1st Oct.** David Gunson remained MB's solicitor up until Mon 30th September, the date of MB's Committal Hearing, when the accused pleaded "Not guilty". SB

JWA: You're happy about that, that we talk frankly with each other. I'll do what I can for you but you've got to be frank with me, right.

MB: Okay, will there still be a case. I mean will there still be a trial?

JWA: Well, we'll talk about a trial or what we're going to do in a moment, right. Now for the next thing is do you understand legally why Mr. Gunson can't act for you anymore?

MB: I think because there's no defence (sic)

JWA: Well, it's not really that. Let me just explain something to you in simple terms, right. If someone is charged with assaulting someone. Let's use a simple example. There's a fight in a pub and someone punches another person and he is charged with assault of that person. If that person goes to a Lawyer and says yes, I punched him but I'm going to go to Court and say I didn't do it, it puts the Lawyer in a position of conflict because he can't allow his client to go to Court and lie

MB: Oh yes

JWA: Right, now David Gunson I gather has found himself in an ethical problem because of what you have told him and what you want to do now, right.

Now I am telling you that because I am not going to ask you today what your instructions are. We'll go through that as length if not over the weekend then early next week and I'll spend a couple of hours. We'll then decide where we go but I just want you to be aware of why if sometimes Lawyers get in an ethical problem that is how it happens.

Generally it's because the client tell them something and then wants to do something different, right. So that's just explaining that to you.

Now, having said that, if you want me to act I will do so and I will appear in Court tomorrow and tell the Court that I am now acting for you and we will proceed down that path.

MB: Oh good

JWA: Now are there any parts of the evidence or anything like that that you haven't seen or you want to see again. Let me just give you examples. There's a video interview when you were interviewed in July that seemed to go all afternoon, remember that, it went forever.

MB: Oh yes. I was hoping my Lawyer was going to be there. The Police said that he was informed and there wasn't any reason for him to be there.[†]

JWA: Now, have you seen that interview?

MB: No, I haven't.

[†] **MB** makes reference here to the illegally obtained PROI: this can be likened to the case of **The Crown v Thomas** recently in Melbourne Supreme Court, where evidence in the form of statements obtained illegally by two AFP officers while Jack Thomas was detained by Pakistani police in a Karachi prison cell. The AFP officers had warned him, **"Under Australian law you are entitled to consult with a legal practitioner or a lawyer."** Thomas replied, "I'm no lawyer – I've got no bloody idea what I should do ... I'm dumb, I'm totally in the wilderness here." But the evidence was used & he was sentenced using that illegally obtained evidence to 5 years goal on 31 March 2006.

JWA: Have you read the transcript of it?

MB: I have read the transcript, yes.

JWA: Right, well I think I should at some stage show you that interview, right, or parts of it. I am not going to spend 3 hours, it would just be like watching t.v. for 3 hours, but some parts of it I think you should see, right.

MB: I think I know the part ... the part where I pointed to myself

JWA: The part when you pointed to yourself and said "Me" right.

MB: That's not going to help me.

JWA: Not going to help me - it is going to put you right under. But all I'm saying is if you want to, I can arrange in due course for you to see that.

MB: No, I don't really want to.

JWA: You don't want to see it, okay. Are there any witness statements you haven't seen that you would like to see?

MB: I've got them all

JWA: You've got them all. Have you read them?

MB: Yes.

JWA: Right, have you heard the negotiating tapes when you were on the phone?

MB: Yes. I couldn't recall that that was my voice.[‡]

JWA: Well if you like I can bring them over sometime and play them on this recorder, right, and you can say yes that's me or no, it's not, right. Because there is a lot of information on those and a lot of indication that you wanted to go in a helicopter for a ride, all that sort of stuff, but if you want to we can play them for you. I don't want you saying Oh, I'm not sure about that.

MB: Okay

JWA: Now the other thing is, has David Gunson discussed in detail what the Psychiatric reports reveal?

MB: Not really. All I've heard from David, he said that everything seems to be alright, everything seems to be alright in there.

JWA: Alright, well that is something else we will need to discuss in detail. In broad terms they say there is nothing wrong with you, you're not mad!

MB: No.

JWA: Well you know that anyway, don't you?

[‡] MB exhibits an excellent memory for dates, people's names etc., but here he doesn't recognise his own voice while doing the most exciting thing he's ever done in his life?

MB: Yeah

JWA: So okay, is there anything else that you want to see or read or look at that you think might be evidence against you?

MB: Not really, I can't recall. I don't really know.

JWA: Alright, okay. Let me just ask you something. One of the things that came out when I was reading the psychiatric material is what you used to do at school and what you liked doing. I think your best subject seemed to be art.

MB: Art, yes.

JWA: Do you want to do some? Do you want to do some about this? Do you want to do some drawings? How long since you've done any?

MB: It's been ages since I was at school. I haven't done any since I was at school.

JWA: Well I might like you to do some, right.

MB: What, today, or

JWA: No, no not today but if I bring some paper over, what do you prefer, crayons or something like that?

MB: Yeah, that would be fine, yep

JWA: We can start, if nothing else, to piece this together even through some illustrations or something like that, right. I collect art so I could like you to sort of start

MB: Oh good

JWA: Okay, so do you think you might be interested in that if I get you some?

MB: Yeah, that would be fine

JWA: Paper and crayon and you can start piecing all this together through your hands, right.

MB: Yep

JWA: Okay, alright. We'll look

MB: Have you been in touch with Perpetual Trustees?

JWA: Yes, they've squared things off. They are content for me to act.

MB: Oh good.

JWA: So there is no problem with that. I have said to them that I will. Well, I've said that I will form a view on your case in the next couple of days and I will report to them and then see where the whole thing is going. I mean let's turn to your case. It's pretty obvious that it all points to you being guilty, doesn't it?

MB: Yes

JWA: I mean let's be frank, we can't invent stories that you weren't there or anything like that. If you follow the evidence through and you have read those statements, they have you at Seascapes, they have you, it would appear, killing the Martins, leaving and going down to Port Arthur etc etc. Now all that seems to have come out, doesn't it. I can't magically say none of that happened. I can't magically find a defence that you were in Hong Kong or somewhere else.

MB: Mm, that's right.

JWA: But today isn't the purpose of going through that. When I next come back I will have this going and you and I will talk the day right through

MB: Yes.

JWA: And I repeat we're going to look each other in the eye and I don't want any stories or bullshit, right, because the time for that is over. We've got to look at where you're heading with this and I want to put on the best front I can for you bit [but?] I'm not going to bullshit and say magically you're going to be out of here in 6 months or whatever because you know that's not going to happen, I know that's not going to happen

MB: Will it be a long long time for someone what's done

JWA: You're not going to ever leave here mate I don't think

MB: Mm

JWA: You know that, don't you eh. I mean I would be kidding you if I said you were going to get out of here in 5 years or 10 years or whatever. You're going to have to start putting your mind as to what you're going to do here for the rest of your life. Whether it's basket making...

MB: There's a lot of activities here

JWA: Or sewing up the Policemen's trousers or whatever, I don't know. That's something you've got to wrestle with right. I mean you've got a mind you can start thinking of what you're going to do.

MB: Art classes or whatever

JWA: That's right, but **all I want to confirm with you today is do you want me to act?**

MB: **Yes** §

JWA: You're going to be frank and not bullshit me?

MB: That's true

JWA: And we'll talk next week about whether you're going to go trial or whether you're going to plead guilty.

MB: Yep

§ **Here MB is asked by John Avery, "do you want me to act [as your legal counsel]? Martin clearly answers in the affirmative, "Yes." End of story. From this point Martin Bryant's conversations with his lawyers are under privilege, so why has this transcript been released, and who released it? Mr Avery or the prison authorities?**

JWA: We don't have to do that today. I'm not interested in that at the moment and I am not here to make you plead guilty, right.

MB: Uh uh

JWA: But I'm not here also to say we're going to run a long trial just for the sake of a long trial, it doesn't do you any good and it doesn't do the broader community any good right. You've got to come out of this now with some respectability, right.

MB: Yep.

JWA: I'm probably the only friend you've got in the world so we've got to try and help each other.

MB: Mm. I know David wasn't really my friend.

JWA: Well I'm here to help you right. You haven't got anyone else that wants to.

MB: Is it true what David said that not many Lawyers will represent me?

JWA: Well I dunno, I don't know about that but

MB: A lot of them are helping the injured with their claims

JWA: Well lets face it. I mean a lot are. There's been a lot of injured people and they have to get Lawyers to get compensation for the trauma they have been through. I mean I will be frank with you. I have already copped some flack for suggesting I will act for you because a lot of people out there see you as someone who shouldn't have anyone acting for you.

MB: Hm. That's right.

JWA: But I repeat, I will do what I can to assist you but you've got to help me. Now are we clear on that? Can we strike a deal on that basis?

MB: Yes.

JWA: Alright. What do you want me to get for you apart from the art paper and some crayons. Anything else you want that might help us?

MB: I just want to hear all the evidence and what other people have got to say about me.

JWA: Oh we'll talk that through. You've got the statements and we'll go through that and...

MB: No, I mean in Court

JWA: Well, we'll talk about that later and but I repeat if your defence is going to be that you weren't there, then we are not going to run a trial on that if the overwhelming weight of evidence

MB: I did go surfing that day, I did mention to David.

JWA: Yeah, yeah

JH: Where was that, down at Nubeena?

MB: Roaring Beach. Have you done any surfing?

JH: Yeah

MB: It's good

JH: Yeah

JWA: He looks like a surfer doesn't he?

MB: (laughter) Yeah

JH: I was thinking you probably wouldn't mind a Tracks magazine or something, a surfer magazine. I don't reckon you've seen much of that at all.

MB: (laughter) No

JWA: Have you had any magazines or anything you're allowed to look at

MB: Oh, I've had a few gun magazines

JWA: Gun magazines!

MB: Although that's one thing I should stay away from

JWA: Yeah. What are you doing with your time? How do you occupy yourself?

MB: Sleeping most of the time

JWA: Sleeping!

MB: Having a shower each day and sleeping and reading up all about what the witnesses say.

JWA: Right, right. There is a fair bit to go through isn't there?

MB: All the Police, ah, they're not Police, someone got into the house and took some photographs that I had on my kitchen table.

JWA: Right

MB: Got hold of some coloured photos of myself

JWA: Oh right, what, this was after the event?

MB: I think it was that night. Sunday night the 28th.** A reporter just broke in and what, what they'll do!

** Here MB has told his newly engaged lawyer John Avery that his property has been stolen due to an illegal entry to his Clare St home. Det Insp Warren lead this raid, accompanied by Dr Ian Sale followed by journalists – but Avery deliberately ignores the ramifications of such criminal acts and immediately changes the subject.

JWA: Well, you're a big story, mate, you're really important now.

MB: Yeah, mm.

JWA: I mean, Ivan Milat and these fellows are chicken feed.

MB: Yes, they're tame aren't they compared to what I've alleged to have ...

JWA: Well, alleged or what, the reality is ... Is there anything you want us to get you, any magazines you want?

MB: I can't think of any ... magazines

JWA: Music, Have you got music facilities?

MB: Not really. I'm in my cell 24 hours.

JWA: Well you don't sleep 24 hours a day. What do you do for the rest of the time when you're not sleeping?

MB: Just going through the reports for an hour or so then just going back and laying down again and just dreaming of the outside world.

JWA: What do you miss most of all?

MB: I miss my girlfriend and my Mum.

JWA: Has your Mum been to see you much

MB: Yeah, she comes in about every 3 weeks. Apart from that there's no-one. It will be good when I'm allowed to mix with the other prisoners but that will be a long time probably.

JWA: The problem is your safety, isn't it.

MB: Hm.

JWA: See the other prisoners might want to

MB: Get to me

JWA: Slit your throat

MB: (laughter) Yes

JWA: You're a wanted man, see

MB: Hm, Hm

JWA: We'll have to arrange for you to have a haircut won't we? ^{††}

^{††} Please note it is John Avery who makes the suggestion that MB should change his appearance by cutting off his distinctive long blonde hair.

MB: Yes but I can't have a hair cut until after the Court case

JWA: Who said that?

MB: I mentioned that to one of the officers

JWA: Oh, did you

MB: He said to me the other day you can't till after the Court case. I'll have to try and brush my hair a bit and keep it tidy.

JWA: Alright

MB: Do you both work together?

JH: (indecipherable)

You look like you have a few dreadlocks!

MB: Yeah, getting a few dreadlocks.

JWA: Alright, well let's leave it at that today. You want me to act. I'll act for you right. I'll be back in a couple of days and we'll have a couple of hours going through what happened, what you did, why you did it. Right and then we'll talk about trials or what.

MB: Will that actually be a statement?

JWA: Well it will just be your instructions to me, right. I'm your Lawyer. I can't pass it on to anyone. I won't be saying what you said. It's what you instruct me. Right. Lawyer's discussions with clients are privileged right. They can't go somewhere else and tell someone.

MB: I don't know if I can recall (indecipherable) ... or recall being down there. I can't recall a lot of what occurred but we can talk about that.

JWA: Well we'll see where we go alright but I mean the reality is you've certainly made lots of admissions to lots of people that it was you, "me".

MB: Yeah, on the video

JWA: Yeah

MB: That was when they left the room and came back. I must have said something like that, but I don't recall, honestly I don't, but I don't recall pointing at myself

JWA: Well, you did. I've looked at the video.

MB: Well that's strong evidence, that's more or less....

JWA: Admitting it. That is a total confession, that's what that's called.

MB: Will that go to trial?

JWA: Well that will go to the Court if it goes to trial

MB: Hm

JWA: If you have a trial, that's the first bit of evidence they will put up and they will play that video and say here he is pointing to himself and saying "its me".

MB: And then it would be over, would it, the trial?

JWA: Well it could be. I mean that's the best bit of evidence they've got isn't it, Martin Bryant pointing to himself and saying I'm the mass murderer. They don't need much more do they.

MB: No.

JWA: Anyway, we don't have to talk that through today. The purpose of today I repeat is to see whether you're content with me as a Lawyer. To deal with it and that we are going to be frank with each other and not set any unreal expectations. I'm not going to come in here and say you're going to be out next year. You won't be having any rabbit stews with Mum, I can tell you that.

MB: No fear. If a person murders one person, I think they get about 21 years.

JWA: Right, well you're charged with murdering 35 - what's that give you ... 700 years. If we cut that in half what's that - 350. If we cut that in half, it's 100. So you're not going to get out are you. You are going to have to get very friendly with these Warders because they are going to retire before you are even an old man.

MB: At least they are being kept in a job, that's one thing.

JWA: They're being kept in a job, yeah (laughter) Yeah they are. Alright, well look I'll get you some crayons, some big sheets of paper, if only to sort of help you bring it all out. It might just give you something to start bringing out to assist you and it will help me understand you.

MB: Because Mr. B, do you know Mr. B?

JWA: I know Mr. B, yes and Mr. D.

MB: Well, they are trying to brain wash me to not having a trial

JWA: Well, I am not going to try and brain wash you on anything. If you want to have a trial we'll have a trial. All I am saying, we have to look at what a trial is going to be about and we've got to look at the inevitability at a trial that you will be found guilty.

MB: Would I be found guilty if I wasn't on that video screen?

JWA: I would have thought there was enough evidence to convict you without that. Heaps and heaps of people saying you're it, you were there, they've even got a photograph of you off the video walking round with a gun at Port Arthur shooting everyone. So you're pretty distinctive.

MB: Yes

JWA: Apart from this fellow who looks a bit like you, long blonde hair^{††}

MB: A person should have a balaclava on.

JWA: You should have had a balaclava on, yeah, yeah

MB: It wouldn't have probably made much difference

JWA: Well only just to say he's the fellow with the balaclava. So I think it's pretty inevitable that you will be found guilty whether by pleading guilty or having a trial but by pleading guilty I suppose you are going to save a lot of people a lot of heartache and a lot of trauma, make your family feel you've done the right thing, make the community at least think you're not a monster

MB: A monster! They probably think I am now, I don't know

JWA: I'm sure they do. I ... you're sort of

MB: An evil monster

JWA: An evil monster. You're sort of like Hannibal Lecter^{§§} expect you don't eat people.

MB: We know what happened to him

JWA: Ah, sorry I missed that

MB: We know what happened to him, he was an old man when he did the crime

JWA: See somewhere in the papers I don't know whether it was when the police spoke with you, you spoke of Ivan Milat, we'll he's only chicken feed compared to this isn't he?

MB: Yeah, but he went round stabbing ... (indecipherable)

JWA: Yes, but it wasn't 35

MB: Is this the biggest case you've ever done with murders?

JWA: Well I've never acted for anyone who has murdered 35 people before, no I don't think any Lawyer in the world has.

MB: What, 2, or 3?

JWA: I've had people who have murdered a couple, yes.

MB: What happened to them, how long did they get?

JWA: They got life

^{††} Here John Avery acknowledges the existence of at least some eyewitness statements of the gunman only 'looking a bit like' MB. That is interesting...

^{§§} It can be easily seen that those in direct contact with MB have been in varying degrees demonising the accused. Even JWA is as guilty of this as any. No doubt Dr Ian Sale wasn't attempting to convert MB to thinking himself a saint...

MB: And what does that mean, that is a set time?

JWA: Well that equates in Australia and Tasmania to about 12 or 14 years, that's just for one.

MB: Well we'll just have to see how things can work out

JWA: We'll see how it works out. We're not going to worry out whether you get 300 years or 100 years but I suggest if you get 50 or 60 years, at 29 you're going to be old and grey aren't you

MB: But it will be good when I can mix with other prisoners. It will be better than being in the cells.

JWA: The problem with that is that the other prisoners would probably want to do you in at the moment

MB: Cut my throat

JWA: Yeah, so that's going to be a long way off, if it ever happens.

So you've got to be realistic about that too, that's why you've got to start thinking of occupying yourself gainfully or usefully rather than just sleeping and breathing.

MB: I will spend along time in the Hospital - it's hard to see where they will put me.

JWA: They might have to keep you here for the rest of your days, keep as you've said these fellows in a job looking after you.

Do you exercise much, have you got an exercise yard?

MB: No, they haven't put me out in the exercise yard.

JWA: Well, have you asked to go out there and have a run around?

MB: Yeah

JWA: But you haven't done much of that. You haven't at all or not very often - in the exercise yard you've got?

MB: Just once a week when someone ... in the cell

JWA: Okay, well we've had enough banter. Let's get together in the next couple of days when we'll talk more about what happened because really we haven't talked about that today, and today wasn't for that purpose and I repeat to see whether you're comfortable with me acting and I am comfortable with you and I think we'll shake on it. I'll shake your hand and I say I'll do my best for you and you'll say that you're not going to bullshit me and we'll work it through together

MB: Yeah ... that sounds cool

JWA: Are you happy with that?

MB: Yeah

JWA: Alright. Okay. We'll I'll have to come round. I'll see next time if we can overcome these (*referring to handcuffs*). I think that's unnecessary.

3rd Interview

Interview between Martin Bryant and his lawyers at Risdon Prison
Hospital, October 11, 1996. ***

The transcript is a copy of its original typed form.

Present: Martin BRYANT and James HANNON

(Martin proceeding to show John some of his drawings of the events of the shootings)

MB: I did do some drawings. Are they large enough do you think?

JWA: Well let's have a look. Right, so what's this one?

MB: There's the ... at Dunalley

JWA: Right.

MB: And that's where I did my target shooting usually between Murdunna and Eaglehawk Neck

JWA: Right, right.

MB: I found that important. Well, this is more important isn't it, where the Martins, where the Seascope Guest House is

JWA: Right, so this is the Seascope Guest House here

MB: Yep, that's the top, **that's where Pears was, there**†††

JWA: Right

MB: The Police allege that I was shooting out at them, I can't recall

JWA: Doing that!

*** **11 October is a Friday.**

MB: No, no not at all

JWA: Right, okay, the Fox and Hounds

MB: The Fox and Hounds, that's the car that was parked near the main house, the Seascapes Guest House and there's the two smaller houses on the property

JWA: Right, so this is just an exploded version of this, is it?

MB: Yep, and that's the Martins. **That's where I shot them, on the bed.** ⁺⁺⁺

JWA: Right, right, okay, well that's fine, and this is the...

MB: Are they big enough?

JWA: Yep, yep, no they're fine

MB: And another thing, I don't know how...the recording was last time but I said something about a bus, I remember shooting people around the bus but I don't recall going on the bus

JWA: You don't recall going on the bus? Alright so, okay...

MB: And I recall um shooting people in the cafeteria but I don't recall injuring anyone at all

JWA: Right, alright.

MB: I recall them dying

JWA: Alright, okay, well that's fine. Well, I'll take those with me. Just to bring you up to date mate, I'm going to Melbourne to have a talk with Paul Mullen, remember Professor Mullen

MB: Oh yeah, you haven't been yet?

JWA: No

MB: I thought you were going on Wednesday

JWA: No, I'm going next **Wednesday** ^{\$\$\$}

MB: Oh yeah, next Wednesday

+++ Here JWA has 'extracted an admission' from MB of yet another version of the murder of Glen Pears. The PROI, illegally obtained from MB on 4 July 1996, shows no admission as to him killing Glen Pears in the house, how could MB's memory be shown to improve upon his contemporaneous accounts? After providing an unreliable account of igniting the BMW fire, he is forced to agree with his interrogators that Glen Pears was burnt to death in the boot of the BMW 'I s'pose' says MB. If Avery and the DPP are in agreement on the Court documents account, then it is tantamount to admitting an SOG officer who we know ignited the BMW caused the death of Glen Pears! So now we are being teased by the inference that MB has suddenly had an inspiration enabling him to draw a picture of the death scene in the house! Considerable psychiatric assisted memory recall I would suggest is manifest here!

\$\$\$ The Wednesday after October 11, is Wednesday 16th October; Avery goes to Melbourne for talks with Forensic psychiatrist, Dr Paul Mullen & John Joblin & he would have us believe he has still not been retained by MB?

JWA: To see him and Ian Joblin

MB: Yeah, he's a lovely person

JWA: You got on alright with him?

MB: Yeah

JWA: I think they may want to see you again, so I'll have a talk to the Trustees about that

MB: Oh good

JWA: You're happy to see them again?

MB: Oh yes

JWA: And basically tell them what you've told me

MB: Yep

JWA: Alright, well we'll see if we can sort that out. You asked me about Julian

MB: Knight, yes

JWA: I understand he pleaded guilty to those charges, right

MB: Hm

JWA: What else to bring you up to date. I'm going to see the Director of Public Prosecutions **next Thursday** to discuss matters with him, so I'll come and see you next Thursday after I've done ... and after I've been to the Crown, alright! ****

MB: Yeah, oh good.

JWA: So that will just bring things up to date

MB: That's Damien Bugg isn't it?

JWA: Yes, the Director of Public Prosecutions is Damien Bugg

MB: Yeah, yeah. I saw Damien Bugg on the day I went to Court.

JWA: Right, yeah, so that's really about where we're at at the moment

MB: Right

JWA: I did try and contact your Mum but I just got an answering machine

MB: Yeah, she's got an answering machine

JWA: So, I've left a message for her to give me a hoy sometime, if she wants to, or whether she will

**** "Next Thursday" = Thursday 17 October 1996

MB: She put an answering machine on since the incident

JWA: Right

MB: So ... the reporters

JWA: Right, she was getting hassled was she

MB: (indecipherable)

JWA: Not any more

MB: So you talked to them

JWA: I spoke to them and there hasn't been a problem since

MB: Are they down there now?

JWA: No

MB: I think they were there last week for a few days

JWA: They were I think the second time I saw you, or the first time, but no, they're not anymore, so there's no...

MB: Oh, I suppose they'll show in Court, show the guns and things like that

JWA: Well, I mean obviously that's part of the evidence you know, they they will have to go through. What ... what's your current feeling as to how you want to plead? Have you given any further thought to that in recent times?

MB: I don't really know. Can I still plead not guilty?

JWA: Well, you can, but I mean given what you've told me, the reality is ...

MB: On some charges I can plead guilty to and some not, am I allowed to do that?

JWA: Well you can plead to some and not guilty to others. What sort of ones do you think that you might want to plead not guilty to?

MB: To the ones, to the injured

JWA: The injured people

MB: 'Cos they're the ones ...(indecipherable)

JWA: Right, right.

MB: I don't recall. All I can recall is people sitting down in the cafeteria

JWA: Just keep your voice up mate

MB: I don't recall anyone running out

JWA: Right

MB: Just the people that I've shot, sitting down †††

JWA: Right

MB: And they all just died

JWA: Right, right

MB: I don't recall anyone ...

JWA: So what you're saying, you accept that you killed people but you don't think you injured, or you don't remember injuring people?

MB: I don't remember injuring

JWA: Other than the ones that you killed

MB: That's right.

JWA: Yeah. Alright, well we don't have to worry about that at the moment.

MB: Yep

JWA: As I say, it's just a matter of just taking it step by step

MB: Hm

JWA: The other thing I just wanted to ask you, I think I did talk to you last time about this. How long do you think looking back in your mind now, you'd been planning this?

MB: Oh, about 1-2 years

JWA: 1-2 years. Had you ever sort of had a dummy run before or almost got to doing it before?

MB: No never

JWA: No

MB: Its only been past ... or since after Christmas this year

JWA: Right, that you seriously thought about it or seriously started thinking about it?

MB: Yeah

†††† Here a problem of considerable proportion arises: MB has admitted to shooting just the people who 'were sitting down' in the Broad arrow Café dining room! 13 of those when shot to death in the café were in the words of Sgt Gerard Dutton, 'lying on the floor in the defensive position', only 3 were sitting, while others were on their feet! This account from the accused is worthless being totally unreliable if used in court! It proves nothing, except that the accused could not present a convincing account of his movements at any of the crime scenes.

JWA: What did you think you were going to get out of it. I mean you must have known you were going to get caught.

MB: Oh, just going out and killing people

JWA: Yeah, but I mean when you thought you wanted to do that did you also think well I know I'll get caught or did you think you'd get killed or what did you think?

MB: I thought I'd either get caught or get killed and I thought killing the Martins

JWA: Just a bit louder

MB: I thought that if I killed the Martins I would go to jail for life, right.

JWA: Yeah

MB: And I thought well if I kill a lot of people it really won't make much of a difference

JWA: In other words if you kill 10, its not much difference as far as the time in jail to killing one person

MB: That's right

JWA: Hm

What was the motivating thing though to kill anyone. Just looking back, I mean was it for pleasure

MB: I just wanted to kill the Martins because I didn't like them ... When I was a child they gave me a bad time

JWA: Yeah

So it was the Martins that you really wanted to get!

MB: Yes

JWA: The others....

MB: I hated them

JWA: Right, you hated them. Was there anyone else you hated?

MB: No, no-one. No-one's been bad to me, just ... mainly Mrs Martin that I wanted to kill but I thought I'd kill Mr. Martin while I was there

JWA: But you were conscious were you, when you were thinking of that and planning to do that, that you'd get caught? Or did you ever seriously think you'd get away with it?

MB: I thought they'd shoot me or I'd get caught and go to jail, either one

JWA: Yeah, so...

MB: At the time it wasn't in my mind

JWA: Right, What are you going to do for the rest of your life here?

MB: I don't really know. Just live day by day. I don't know.

JWA: How are you occupying yourself at the moment?

MB: Drawings, sleeping

JWA: Right

MB: That's about it

JWA: Right, now you've done some drawings for me, did you enjoy doing that?

MB: Yeah, they're good, yeah

JWA: So do you want me to get you some more, have you got plenty of ...

MB: I've got plenty of paper

JWA: Well, alright, why don't you keep doing some. Even if it's only just therapy for you and you know do some bigger scale ones if you want to

MB: Right, of this?

JWA: Yeah, or anything

MB: Are they big enough?

JWA: Yeah, that's fine but if you want to do bigger ones, why don't you just do some of what you ... of anything

MB: Yeah, do you ever do any scuba diving?

JWA: I don't. I've got a few friends who do. I've got a watch, its a diver's watch

MB: That's an underwater one, I can tell

JWA: Yeah, but no I don't. That's obviously something that's been pretty important to you

MB: Yeah, I used to do a lot of scuba diving

JWA: Remember when we spoke last time I asked you what you felt like when you were killing those people. Remember you said that it was...

MB: Exciting

JWA: Exciting, and ...

MB: Thrilling

JWA: And you likened it to driving your boat fast, and

MB: Scuba diving

JWA: Was that how it was?

MB: Yes, it was, truly exciting, really exciting

JWA: Yeah

MB: The most exciting thing I've ever done in my life which was something different ⁺⁺⁺

JWA: Yeah

MB: Just shooting the people.

JWA: And did it really just get out of hand. I mean, you obviously didn't plan to shoot 30 people. When you decided you were going to shoot the Martins, how many people did you think after that or was there no thought process, just ...

MB: Um, no thought ... I don't think it was a thought, no thought process. I just thought I'd go out and kill a lot of people

JWA: Did you physically know by the time you were back at Seascapes how many people had been killed?

MB: Quite a few, but

JWA: Yeah

MB: I thought I'd killed a dozen or so

JWA: So you thought you'd killed a dozen or so, yeah

MB: I didn't think I'd killed 20

JWA: You didn't

MB: No

JWA: No, no. Do you want to tell me anything at the moment. I mean today's just an easy day. I didn't want to have to burden you with

MB: No ...you'll get on well with Professor Mullen

JWA: Right. How did you find the other fellow, Lucas? ^{\$\$\$}

MB: The one from Adelaide?

JWA: Yes

MB: Are you going over there?

JWA: No, I'm not going to see him, no

⁺⁺⁺ This statement corroborates the conclusions of Sgt Terry McCarthy the police negotiator who concludes on the video for Nine's ACA, words to the effect, 'it was as if Jamie was acting out a role'.

^{\$\$\$} So Mr Lucas is from Adelaide & is a "criminologist": but where does he fit in?

MB: He's not worth seeing, he's got a(indecipherable)

JWA: Has he

MB: I didn't think he was much at all. I didn't like him.

JWA: Right.

MB: He was a criminologist, I think

JWA: Was he

MB: I think that's what you call him. I don't think he was a Psychiatrist, just a ...

JWA: No

MB: But Mr Joblin, he's great, so's Professor Mullen

JWA: Right

MB: Great people to talk to

JWA: And you'd be happy to see them again

MB: Oh yes, anytime. Hm. But I don't think much of Dr. Sale either

JWA: Right

MB: Have you met Dr Sale?

JWA: Yes I know him, little fellow isn't he

MB: Yeah, he works for the Prosecution. I don't think he's got his own private...

JWA: Oh, he's in private practice but he does a lot of work for the Crown, so ... but anyway Ian Joblin and Paul Mullen, you're happy about them

MB: Yep, oh yeah. He came to see me twice actually, Dr. Sale *****

JWA: Right

MB: He mentioned to me that I pointed to myself in that video interview

JWA: Right

MB: He has this...(indecipherable) and I said what, did I do that, did I point to myself...(indecipherable) that was a ball's up wasn't it - what I had done then

JWA: Yeah, can't be helped now, that's water under the bridge

MB: Yeah, right, yeah

***** MB tells us Dr Ian Sale had by 11 Oct., earlier visited MB in Risdon twice, but for what purpose and when? After all Sale was working for the prosecution – not the defence.

JWA: Well what we'll work along is this. We'll work along the basis that you're probably going to have to plead guilty to the people you've killed, right. We'll look at the other aspect later.

MB: What, to all them

JWA: Well, I mean realistically I think, but

MB: Hm

JWA: So we haven't got to make that decision today

MB: Hm

JWA: Because I think you know as well as I do that I think you're going to be convicted of that, don't you

MB: (laughter) - yeah that's right

JWA: And there's no sort of sense us thinking we can pull rabbits out of the hat

MB: Will you actually, um, then make a statement in writing to that, or what happens?

JWA: Well, I mean it depends on which way we end up going right. If you were to plead guilty right, what happens there is the Crown still have to put a lot of evidence before the Court to tell the Court what happened. I mean we all know what happened, the world knows, but the Court has to be formally told that and what we would have to do then, you and I, is work out what I'd say on your behalf

MB: Yep

JWA: Now you could tell the world through me whatever you want to about it or you could say like some people in this situation "I'm not going to say anything"

MB: What happens there?

JWA: Well I mean, the penalty is going to be very obvious

MB: It'll take longer

JWA: Whatever we say right or don't say but all I'm saying you might want the world to know what motivated you to do this or you may not. You may say well I want everyone to know. That's something you've got to think on - whether you want me to tell all the world what you've told me. You may say no John that's between you and me and you might say...

MB: But they'll have to get witnesses to any injured ... some of the injured victims

JWA: Yeah, I mean certainly if it gets to that they will have to call some witnesses. In fact, I'm going to talk to the Crown on Thursday as to that right

MB: And people on the bus 'cos I didn't go on the bus. I don't recall going on the bus and the bloke that lived that was shot through the neck -yeah I don't believe any of that, that that actually occurred

JWA: But how would it, I mean if it didn't occur clearly they must have got injured by someone mustn't they

MB: They must have

JWA: And there wasn't anyone but Martin Bryant walking around was there

MB: No

JWA: So, you know, you're the fellow in the long coat

MB: I'm not sorry now that I didn't kill people

JWA: I know you're not sorry, I'm not going to ask you if you're sorry 'cos I know you're not - are you?

MB: No. I'm in here and they're looking after me well and, ... they're ear-wigging now

JWA: That can't be helped

MB: That's right

JWA: Look the last thing I'm ever going to say to you is are you sorry 'cos I know you're not, are you?

MB: No

JWA: You're not going to con me and say you're sorry for what you did, are you

MB: No, I'm not

JWA: In fact, I suspect you're pleased

MB: Um, I'm excited, yeah

JWA: Does it still give you some excitement as to what you did?

MB: Yeah, I don't know. I might come out in Court and tell everyone what happened. I don't know. I might be the best thing to do, mightn't it?

JWA: We'll worry about that later right. That's something you and I have to work through, right. As to whether you say it or I say it on your behalf

MB: Exactly, it might upset the people more if I say it

JWA: Well it might. I mean it might be more diplomatic for me to tell the world what you want to say rather than see you smiling and grinning and you know ...

MB: Yeah, I might let them know (laughter)

JWA: You might have someone jump over that glass cage to get you

MB: (laughter) I don't think so, no. One bloke came up ... I suppose you heard about one bloke stood up and said I'm a coward

JWA: That was Mr. Pears' brother wasn't it?

MB: Who

JWA: Pears' brother

MB: Was he one of the ...

JWA: He was the one who sang out at you

MB: Mr. Pears' brother - oh, it was his brother was it?

JWA: Yes. You know Pears was the last guy you shot

MB: Yes, was it him?

JWA: Yes, it was his brother

MB: Oh, I thought it might have been Mr. ? He was the first in the Broad Arrow and he gave a ...(indecipherable)

JWA: About what time, just changing the subject, about what time would it have been when Mr Pears was shot. Would it have been after midnight. He was the last one you shot, wasn't it?

MB: It would have been about 6 o'clock that morning. ††††

JWA: Just before you set fire to it right

MB: Yes

JWA: Right, so he was up all night with you

MB: He was up all night

JWA: What did you talk about. Did you talk to him much?

MB: Just ... I don't think he mentioned that he had any brothers or sisters, I don't think

JWA: Did you tell him you were going to shoot him?

MB: No I didn't say anything. I don't even know where I shot him now

JWA: Right

MB: 'Cos there was a lot of ammunition

JWA: Alright, anything else you want to tell me today?

MB: No, I can't think of anything else. What's the weather like outside?

††††† No shots are documented as having come from the Cottage at about 0600 hrs on 29th April 1996 though... More psychiatric assisted memory recall (invention) perhaps?

JWA: Pissing with rain

MB: Oh gosh! Have you still got your Mercedes?

JWA: Yes

MB: Yeah, its a white one isn't it?

JWA: How did you know I had that?

MB: Oh, you used to drive around - I used to see you driving around in it

JWA: A little white sports one

MB: Yeah, and your wife had the station ... van didn't she?

JWA: Oh yes, that's years ago

MB: I think it's a Holden Station Wagon

JWA: Yeah, yeah. She remembers you up at Peter and Michael's shop

MB: Yeah

JWA: The Greeks on the corner, there

MB: Peter always used to have children. They used to become ... his wife always used to have children, always look down and say

JWA: All girls

MB: All girls

JWA: That's right yes. Yeah, they've just come back from a holiday. They went to Queensland.

MB: Oh, right.

JWA: I'll give him your regards

MB: Oh good. Okay then

JWA: Okay, well let's leave it at that. You keep on with the drawings. Anything you want to do, right!

MB: Okay

JWA: Because I'm sure that well even if its only for therapy, they're useful. I'll find it useful

MB: I know

JWA: And I'll be back here next Thursday afternoon

MB: Good

JWA: And I'll see Professor Mullen and Ian Joblin and I'll have a talk to you then, about them, and also about witnesses and this sort of thing

MB: Alright

JWA: Okay, keep your chin up mate, I'll see you then, alright.

INTERVIEW CONCLUDED

Editor's note: After reading this reproduced transcript and the accompanying article as published by The Bulletin in their 4 April 2006 edition, the reader surely can grasp why John Avery was 'jumped on' from a great height by the law fraternity of Tasmania. I can but conclude other powerful figures escaping the limelight of *the Avery affair* and who were pulling the strings, as you can surely appreciate those with the most to lose in sorry affair would certainly be hell-bent on gagging this source. Though in my humble opinion, John Avery is now in a worse position than ever – he's broken their code of silence still has the documentation, the audio tapes and whose discounted existence may be due solely to the mercy by some not so faceless nervous people...not a comfortable situation I would opinion. SB



EDUCATION DEPARTMENT
ADMISSION FORM

Name: - Surname: BRYANT
 Christian Names: MARTIN
 Date: 7-5-67 Position in Family (e.g. 1st, 2nd, etc.): FIRST
 Number of Children in Family: TWO
 Address of Residence: 65 AUGUSTA RD NEWTOWN Telephone: 28270
 Distance of Home from School: ONE MILE

High School Admission form 1980

Remedial class
 Response to remediation: Mrs [redacted] considered he had improved in 1974.
 What do you consider to be his problem? Basic fairly low intelligence. Poor social adjustment. Father has high ambitions for him, mother finds a consistent calm approach very difficult.
 What is your present recommendation re:
 (a) A future placement If his real problems can be understood and solved so that we know how to
 (b) Remediation Deal with him we are willing that he return to Class II in Term III.

Information from Diagnostic Assessment Centre 1975

Other Behaviour: hyperactive (I used to think Martin was hyperactive, but now I'm not so sure.)
Listening: no tolerance when others speaking.
 Relationship with other Children: Has no special friends, joins in group games. Can just tolerate him.
In class Martin bothers children trying to work, calls out, trips, hits when they go past him. He leaves his seat and goes over to them.

Information from Diagnostic Assessment Centre 1977

- d) He is not interested in participating in class activities, excursions. He prefers to slide on floors, chase other children and often ruins an otherwise excellent outing.
- e) The most disturbing and worrying aspect of Martin's behaviour is his obvious violent nature. He kicks and torments [redacted] in particular, often reducing him to tears. He often hurls objects around the room which continuously necessitates his expulsion from the room which only puts him further behind in his work.
- f) It is regrettable that Martin has to be continually set out of the room. However experience has told me that this procedure is the most satisfactory method when one has to

Teacher's report August 1977

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

1 of 8

<i>TIMES</i>	<i>SOURCE</i>	<i>PLACE</i>	<i>BRIEF ACCOUNT DETAILS</i>
7/04/1996	Informant	Hobart	Martin placed last order for Evinrude parts - then shortly sold the boat, motor & trailer for \$4,000 to a well known Hobart entity.
13/04/1996	Corrob. by witnesses	Wrest Point Casino	Martin Bryant allegedly purchased for cash, a Colt AR15 .223Rem Carbine
24/04/1996	Newspaper	Stuart Woods Hobart	Wood alleges Martin called in asked availability & price of Colt AR15 Carbine: diversion?
1345 hrs app	Donald Gunn	Seascope, Oakwood	Donald & Stephanie Gunn check-in: "We were booked to stay the night."
1515 hrs app	" "	Seascope, Oakwood	Left Seascope to "do some sightseeing" of Port Arthur
1630 hrs	" "	Seascope, Oakwood	The Gunns return to Seascope: 2 more "guests" checked in; "Julie & Virginia" (Lynn & Jean?)
1825 hrs	" "	Seascope, Oakwood	Gunns go to Kelley's Restaurant & return to Seascope 2130 hrs.
2130 hrs app	" "	Seascope, Oakwood	Gunns return; "After a while...Julie & Virginia" (Lynn & Jean?) return from Ghost Tour of PA.
28/04/1996			
0800 hrs	Petra Willmott	30 Clare St. New Town	"I left Martin's house at 8.00 am ...28th April", alone signed statement.
0947 hrs	p.59 Court Doc	30 Clare St. New Town	Bugg & McCreadie claim police found alarm engaged at 0947. Police broke-in; no alarm triggered.
1030 hrs	Angelo Kessarios	Midway Pt News Agency	Bryant buys \$1.50 gas cigarette lighter, pays with \$1.80 left on counter & leaves quickly.
0945-1000 hrs	Spiros Diamantis	Sorell Supermarket	He bought \$1.40 bottle of tomato sauce; paid in 5 & 10 cent coins.
11-1200 hrs	Gary King (dec)	Shell S/S Forsett	Gary King made coffee for Bryant & he drinks it before leaving the forecourt, pays with coins.
1130 hrs	unnamed female	Eaglehawk Neck	Bugg: "a number of others sightings...in the Eaglehawk Neck area..."; Mike Bingham, Staff.
1030-1045 hrs	Chris Hammond	Taranna Convict Bakery	Hammond puts \$15 worth of petrol into the Volvo's tank, BUT no petrol cans were filled here.
1045 hrs	Lynn & Andrew Simmons	"Benbullen" Oakwood	Interviewed later: definitely two shots heard at this time - see next entry from signed Statement.
1100 hrs	Andrew Simmons	"Benbullen" Oakwood	Clearly heard 2 shots of low volume from the direction of Seascope Cottage, opposite.
1115-1120 hrs	D & S Gunn	Seascope, Oakwood	Donald Gun stated that he & Stephanie departed Seascope at about this time.
1203 hrs	Jai Nichols	The Fox & Hounds	Jai is hitching a ride to Hobart, Bryant drives past him - south.
1230 hrs	Maureen Mason	Seascope, Oakwood	Masons call at Seascope; 'squarish' car parked near door; ID Martin Bryant, spoke to him: !CLONE!
1145-1240 hrs	DPP's case	Seascope, Oakwood	D Bugg QC: "Martin Bryant shot and killed Mr & Mrs Martin [inside Seascope]". @ p.64.

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

2 of 8

1145 hrs	Michael Copping	Seascape, Oakwood	Saw yellow Volvo sedan backed up to door area of Seascape (the "CLONE" Volvo).
1239 hrs	Jai Nichols	Close to Seascape	Bryant overtakes Jai, & he sees Volvo enter Seascape driveway.
1240 hrs	Michael Copping	200m S of General store	Gunman driving S towards PA Tollbooth in Bryant's Yellow Volvo.
1240 hrs	Steven Howard	PA Tollbooth	Corroborated by Aileen Kingston. The gunman entered the Port Arthur Historic Site.
1305 hrs	Roger Larnier	Palmer's Lookout Rd	Talked with Martin for 20 minute or so, drove off. Heard 1st shots from Broad Arrow Café.
1310-1315 hrs	James Dutton (tourist?)	PA Tollbooth	James & Joanne Dutton observe yellow Volvo in tollbooth traffic queue (???)
1315 hrs	Mike Bingham (Journo)	"Suddenly One Sunday"	Writes Martin talked to Roger Larnier for 'about 10 minutes', then drove off north toward PA
1323 hrs	Const Whittle/Hyland	The Coal Mines	logged call; radio VKT Hobart informed, 'drug stash' of heroine is only soap powder.
1323 hrs	Ashley Law	Information Centre	First gunshots discharged inside the Broad Arrow Café.
1325 hrs	X Ian Kingston	Tarleton St & Jetty Rd	Driver of yellow Volvo directed to park 'back up Jetty Rd', ignored instruct.
1328 hrs	Const Justin Noble (BCI)	Oval	Heard the first shots from the Broad Arrow Café
1330 hrs	X DPP Bugg QC	Broad Arrow Café	Gunman entered the Broad Arrow Café & stood at servery for food.
1332 hrs	Wendy Scurr	Information Centre	Makes initial "000" call to Hobart Police HQ.
1332 hrs	X Sgt Andrew Fogarty	Bellerive Pol Station	SOG 'team leader'; claims departed for Port Arthur (reality is he's already at Seascape).
1346 hrs	K. Fox & G Alexander	PA Tollbooth	First Ambulance from Nubeena arrives at Historic Site (<i>The Mercury</i>).
1335 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	Const Pat Allen & Perry Caulfield depart Traffic Office Hobart.
1335 hrs	Estimated: Paul Cooper	"Clougha" Historic Site	Paul finds "Clone" Volvo secreted on street (south) of Clougha, speaks to 2 females (Lynn & Jean?)
1336 hrs	X Richard McCreadie	(Tas Police) Hobart	EMA Report: claimed first "000" call informing of shootings at the Broad Arrow logged.
1338 hrs	Peter Morgan	TAS - ambulance	received information of a shooting incident at Port Arthur: Ambulance service notified, and tasked: 2 Nubeena, 1 Dunalley + Paramedic Giffard Taranna
1339 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	
1342 hrs	Jim Laycock	Port Arthur - Kodak shop	Jim Laycock makes his 1st "000" call to Hobart Police - shootings at Tollbooth, 120m south.
1345 hrs	SA Police newsletter	Hobart	Inspector Barry Bennett notified & dispatched for Tarana with two CIB officers.
1347 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	Eastern Dist CIB tasked.
1351 hrs	EMA report	Pol HQ Hobart	Asst Comm., Lippo Prins informed of the shootings.

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

3 of 8

1352 hrs	Jim Laycock	Port Arthur - Kodak shop	Makes 2nd "000" call to Hobart Police informed them of murder of Zoe Hall (white Corolla).
1353 hrs	estimated	Nubeena	Const. Whittle & Hyland arrive at Nubeena Police Station.
1355 hrs	Estimated: Ashley Law	Church Ruin - Hist.Site	Told Vicky McLaughlan to "stop the driver"... "Clone Volvo" driver told to get out; Jean (?).
1355 hrs	estimated	Port Arthur - Kodak shop	Const Chris Iles arrives Laycock enters Patrol Car, driven across Hwy; dec is checked.
1358 hrs	estimated	Port Arthur General Store	Laycock ordered out of Patrol Car, Chris Iles roars off at high speed - north and disappears.
1359 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	FIRST HELICOPTER tasked for Port Arthur Historic Site, 14 minute flight time.
App 1400 hrs	estimated	Cnr Champ & Church (Site)	Two women are ordered by PAHSMA Staff to leave their ("Clone") yellow Volvo; it later vanished.
1400 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	Peter Hazelwood SAC PAV Premiers Dept calls Geoff Easton, Mng Police Public Affairs.
1400 hrs	estimated	Arthur Hwy - Oakwood	Arthur Hwy ambush shooting has now ceased & gunman retreated with BMW into Seascap.
1402 hrs	estimated-unnamed wit	Seascap, Oakwood	Runs down driveway to assist at burning BMW. Stopped by 2 police; "get out! You're not needed."
1403 hrs	estimated	Nubeena	Const Garry Whittle departs for Port Arthur.
1411 hrs	estimated	Port Arthur Tollbooth	Const Garry Whittle arrives Port Arthur Tollbooth.
1411 hrs	EMA report		Tas Pol Marine Div. Van Diemen & Vigilant tasked at "full speed"; they never arrived at PA.
1412 hrs	Richard McCreadie		EMA report, McCreadie claims first police arrived Seascap (YES, Dyson inside cottage).
1413 hrs	EMA report	Hobart Pol HQ	Major Crime Squad tasked.
1415- hrs	Police statements	Oakwood, Arthur Hwy	Sergt Andrew Fogarty falsely claims to have just arrived at Const Paul Hyland's road block.
1415 hrs	estimated	Taranna Devils Park	Tas Pol Bob Fielding takes over Bob Hamilton's animal park & est, Police Forward Command Post.
1405 hrs	estimated	Nubeena	Const Hyland departs via Premaydena towards Taranna.
1409 hrs	estimated	near Taranna	Hyland received TX; people shot and injured sheltering at Fox & Hounds - ordered to proceed.
1422 hrs	estimated	Fox & Hounds - P. A.	Const Hyland arrives F & H; assists only "P9", Simon Williams (Canadian Embassy official).
1425 hrs	Police statements	Oakwood, Arthur Hwy	Const Perry Caulfield alights from vehicle at the Seascap entrance on Arthur Hwy.
1430 hrs	EMA report p.31	Hobart	1st Squirrel departs for PA with 2 paramedics aboard.
1447 hrs	EMA report	Port Arthur/Pol HQ	Fire brigade tasked BEFORE BMW fire - did this call-out come from Sergt Fogarty at Seascap?
1447 hrs	estimated	Fox & Hounds - P. A.	Departs north up Arthur Hwy towards Oakwood, joined by Const Garry Whittle.

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

4 of 8

1447 hrs	EMA report	Hobart Pol HQ	Barry Bennet Eastern Dist Superintendent's CIB task force is activated.
1425 hrs	EMA report	Hobart Pol HQ	Negotiator team is tasked - but stays in Hobart.
1456 hrs	EMA Luppó Pins	Hobart	First Helicopter arrives at PAHS Oval. evacuated Carolyn Loughton (58 minutes after tasked!)
1458 hrs	Debrief statement	Const Garry Whittle	Const Hyland states the BMW (bogged), "...on the grass lawn...facing east. This vehicle was on fire."
1458 hrs	Police statements	Seascope, Oakwood	Sergt Andrew Fogarty materialises out of know where at Const Paul Hyland's road block!
1500 hrs	Barry Bennett	Taranna PFCP	"Some young Const had started to set up PFCP in Taranna Devil Prk"
1507 hrs	EMA report - Prins	P.A. Oval	Second Squirrel helicopter arrives to evacuate wounded.
1510 + hrs	Tollbooth Log	Port Arthur	Mystery (Commonwealth registered) black van arrives & parks outside Broad Arrow Café.
1520 hrs	Julie Butler	Bingara, Nth NSW	NSW Police at Bingara Police Station told of James Pollard's death (at PA Tollbooth).
1530 hrs	Sergt Terry McCarthy	MIR Hobart Pol HQ	First land-line phone contact by Police with "Jamie" inside Seascope.
1540 hrs	EMA report - Prins	P.A. Oval	Third Squirrel helicopter arrives on oval to evacuate wounded.
1550 hrs	Tollbooth Log	Historic Site	First PAHSMA vehicle returns from managements staff retreat weekend Swansea.
1557 hrs	EMA report	Hobart Pol HQ	First Tas Pol SOG's tasked to Taranna PFCP by <i>Jet Ranger</i> helicopter.
1600 hrs	Julie Butler	Bingara, Nth NSW	Informed by NSW Police from Bingara of James Pollard's death. (40 min drive).
"	Barry Bennett	Taranna PFCP	Begins FIRST Media Conference. NOTE: at conclusion PETER HAZLEWOOD arrives.
1604 hrs	" "	" "	Second PAHSMA vehicle returns from managements staff retreat weekend at Swansea.
1604 hrs	documented	Hobart	Second SOG contingent departs by road in charge; Snr Sergt J. S. Morrison.
1616 hrs	EMA report - Prins	P.A. Oval	Fourth & last Squirrel helicopter arrives on P. A. Oval to evacuate wounded.
1626 hrs	Tollbooth Log	Historic Site	First lone Policeman, Detective Peter Hessman is delivered to the Broad Arrow Café.
1630 hrs	" "	" "	Police vehicle logged departing Historic Site Tollbooth.
1700 hrs	SES personnel	Seascope, Oakwood	Sally Martin is pursued by black haired male, Police: "permission to shoot the gunman"; told, "do not shoot, this has to happen...'
1700 hrs	CEO Craig Coombs		Report to Historic Site: "He's out". Thought the gunman had escaped Seascope containment.
1715 hrs	Internet print-out	Nubeena	<u>Sunset!</u> As per the Australian Surveying & Land Information Group.
1719 hrs	EMA report	Canberra ACT	National Crisis Centre contacted by Comm. of Tasmania Police.
1730 hrs	CEO Craig Coombs	Historic Site	Promise of SOG Police "imminent" arrival to Port Arthur Oval; it DID NOT HAPPEN.

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

5 of 8

1730 hrs	Police statements	Oakwood, Arthur Hwy	Const Pat Allen tells us of "movement on the roof" of one of the outbuildings.
1730 hrs	EMA - Craig Coombs	Broad Arrow Café/Oval	2 Policewomen Ali Denns & Rhani Ahmed arrive - unarmed ; tasked to tollbooth
1740 hrs	Tollbooth Log	Historic Site	Mystery black van departs Broad Arrow Café exits Tollbooth 2 vehicles after 1740hrs. Keith Moulton: no one allowed to proceed: "gunman still at large"; eventually arrived at hostel
1800 hrs	Sun/Telegraph, 2apr06	Nubeena-PA road-block	
1830 hrs	Staff statements	Historic Site	3 GUNSHOTS DISCHARGED near "CLOUGHA" TERRORISES 100's of PEOPLE LOCKED-IN COTTAGES.
1830 hrs (est)	Tas Pol Tape	Channel 9	A gunshot on audio tape proving conclusively other person/s present inside Seascope.
1900 hrs	Michael Cordwell	Hobart, Pol HQ	Martin's uncle phones Pol HQ asks if his nephew is involved with the Port Arthur siege.
1930 hrs	Wendy Scurr & staff	Historic Site	FIRST contingent SOG ARRIVE & escort staff from cottages to P.A. Motel & Back Packers hostel.
1930 hrs	Ian Matterson	Tarana, Devils Park	EMA report; The Coroner tells us he received the "all clear" for Historic Site at 1930 hrs.
2000 hrs	Carleen Bryant	Hobart	Carleen was escorted from her home to Hobart Pol HQ; she was not asked to identify son's voice.
2215 hrs	EMA report		ASIO dispatched "technical support" - but from where - Canberra? The " <i>Echidna</i> " is tasked.
2230 hrs	Staff leave	Youth Hostel	Staff refuse to stay any longer at de-briefing and depart - Lee-Anne Goodwin
"	Police statements	Seascope, Oakwood	Police confirm "movement of occupants " (plural) inside Seascope.
"	Dr Ian Sale	30 Clare St. New Town	Police force an entry & find nothing but ammo wrappers; journalists steal photographs. the property of Martin Bryant, see Avery transcripts of taped interview with Martin 3 Oct `96
2230 hrs	Police statements	Tarana PFCP	SOG Officers issued with photographs of the "SUSPECT" - BUT FROM WHAT SOURCE?
2345 hrs	Carleen Bryant	Hobart Pol HQ	interrogation conducted at Pol HQ.
2100+ hrs	"Jamie"	Seascope, Oakwood	Jamie Tells Pol negotiator, Sergt Terry McCarthy re. the firearms; "...they'll all be destroyed."
2400+ hrs	EMA report	Tarana	Victoria Police's SOG arrive - flown over Bass Strait, from Melbourne and sworn-in as Constables.
Monday 29 April			
29/05/1996	Court Doc. p.189	Clare St New Town	Police raid Clare St residence for second time
0500 hrs	EMA report	Hobart	Coroner Matterson departed Hobart for Port Arthur Historic Site.
0747 hrs	Police statements	Seascope, Oakwood	First smoke, Seascope Cottage reported as 'on fire'
0752 hrs:		Hobart	McCreadie interviewed by Steve Lieberman

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

6 of 8

0810 (est)		Hobart	McCreadie & Easton on route to airport
0824 hrs	Police statements	Seascape, Oakwood	Martin Bryant emerges dressed all in BLACK, staggers, comes up naked.
0830 hrs	EMA report		McCreadie & Easton aboard helicopter, enroute to Taranna PFCP
"	Matterson	from unnamed Port Arthur	Coroner Matterson speaks with "senior police" (Prinns, Johnston or McCreadie?)
0835 hrs	Police statements	Seascape, Oakwood	SUSPECT Martin Bryant arrested naked and seriously burnt, handcuffed & into ambulance to RHH
0840 hrs	Police statements	Seascape, Oakwood	Const Paul Hawkins arrests Martin Bryant: Coroner Ian Matterson control now secondary. McCreadie is already there by 0845 hrs - air lifted by helicopter into PFCP at the Devils Park.
0845 hrs	EMA report	Tarana	
0930 hrs	McCreadie	Taranna PFCP	McCreadie videod, informs media crowd of bus-trip to the crime scenes; Buses there!!
1120 hrs	Matterson EMA	Tollbooth & Jetty Rd	Walter Mikac, Pam Ireland, Kieth Moulton & Kaye Fox, breach police lines inspect bodies
1130 hrs	John Hamilton	Seascape, Oakwood	Media Bus arrives on Arthur Hwy at Seascape entrance - they alight and take photographs.
1135 hrs	EMA report	Seascape, Oakwood	Coroner Ian Matterson requested by officers to attend Seascape.
1140 hrs (est)	EMA report and others	Tollbooth?Jetty Rd	Pam Ireland, Walter Mikac, Keith Moulton & Kaye Fox went to the bodies of Mrs Mikac & girls
1230 hrs	Pol Training Video	Seascape, Oakwood	"global media" entourage is "bussed" to Seascape.
1300 hrs	John Hamilton	Port Arthur - Gen Store	Media at Port Arthur & then walk to Port Arthur Tollbooth and Jetty Rd only: not to BAC
1400 hrs	Photograph evidence	Seascape, Oakwood	The FN FAL rifle is still evident lying in roof gutter of out-building's porch.
1435 hrs	EMA report	Seascape, Oakwood	Coroner Ian Matterson requested to attend Seascape & views "a body [that] has been found."
1700 hrs	EMA report	Seascape, Oakwood	Coroner Ian Matterson departs the area to return to Hobart.
Tues 30th April			
0400 hrs	The Mercury	Hobart	Published broad sheet-sized digitally altered photo; "THIS IS THE MAN ... Martin Bryant 28".
1105 hrs	various	RHH Hobart	Bedside hearing RHH; Martin Bryant formally charged with murder of Kate Scott 21 yrs, of WA
1450 hrs	EMA report	Seascape, Oakwood	Coroner Ian Matterson arr. Seascape; "advised the third body had been located.." (Not viewed)
(Note, Coroner only <u>advised</u> remains [of Glen Pears] had been located in house. (OR, in BMW?).			
AFTERMATH	ACTION	PLACE	BRIEF ACCOUNT DETAILS

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

7 of 8

1-May-96			
Wed 01/05/96	The Mercury - article	Chris McPherson; Pres	President PANPA addressed 700 delegates from 17 countries of the 'Pacific Rim' in attendance.
1-May-96	Bedside Remand Hearing	RHH	Magistrate Peter Dixon presided: MB forced to lie on his burns; psychiatrist Ian Sale present
1-May-96	Memorial Service	St David's Hobart	Trading suspended on the Stock Market & Chain Stores observe a minute's silence
3-May-96	Anonymous "bomb threat"	Royal Hobart Hospital	RHH staff and nurses evacuated; a search revealed it as a hoax.
"		Hobart	PANPA conference concluded.
"	Court Doc.p.89/20	Clare Street	Police make 3rd raid on Bryant's premises; hall-way cache of arms and ammo found.
4-May-05	"gun-control" rally	Hobart	A reported 2,500 people attend. Roland Browne: "We're at the beginning of the journey..."
"	Article - The Australian	Hobart	David Gunson briefed to defend Bryant & voices concern: No video camera was recovered.
5-May-96	"gun-control" rally	Sydney, New South Wales	NCGC's Rebecca Peters headed the rally of a reported 2,000 in Hyde Park.
5-May-96	In May Gunson engaged	Joblin.	MB transported to Risdon Prison hospital: psychologist Ian Joblin spends 4 days with Bryant.
6-May-96	The Mercury - article	Hobart	PANPA Exec.Dir. Frank Kelett announced a donation of \$10,000 for the Port Arthur appeal
20-May-96	The Mercury - article	Hobart	Coroner Ian Matterson announced he was to take pre-arranged leave on 6/05/96.
21-May-96	Statement	Pol HQ Hobart	Carleen Bryant is interigated by Sergt Lynnette Faye Jones
22-May-96	Indicted for murder	Risdon Prison, video link	Magistrate Michael Hill presided: 1 count, murder of Kate Scott; MB's defence, Phillip Zeeman
6-Jun-96	Questioning	Hobart Police HQ	Gun dealer Terry Hill attends Police HQ for "discussions"; his barrister John Avery with him
6-Jun-96	Letter to Terry Hill	Moonah, Hobart	Over John Avery's signature: attempted coercion involved Bugg, Avery & Tasmania Police.
14-Jun-96	Re-indicted	Supreme Court Hobart	Justice Underwood: held <i>in absentia</i> , Martin Bryant not involved, remanded to 9 September.
4-Jul-96	Bryant interrogated	Risdon Prison	DI's Warren & Paine, DS Jones & DC Bolt interrogate Bryant without legal counsel or guardian!
5-Jul-96	69 further charges laid	Supreme Court Hobart	These charges were laid also <i>in absentia</i> ; Bryant not in Court. David Gunson appears for Bryant.
30-Sep-96	Replaced 9/09/96 Hrng.	Supreme Court Hobart	All 70 charges read out - Bryant in a clear voice "Not Guilty" to all. Barrister John Avery - observer
"	Gunson stands-aside	Supreme Court Hobart	3/10/96, Avery taped explains to MB why: couldn't allow MB to court & lie and plead "Inocent"
1-Oct-96	The Bulletin 4/4/2006	Risdon	JW Avery admits to his first interview with Martin Bryant - transcript published by The Bulletin

Time-line Of Events Preceding, During & After The Massacre at Port Arthur

8 of 8

2-Oct-96	The Mercury - article	Hobart	Lt Col. David Gunson "stands aside"; John Avery "tipped" to become Bryant's legal counsel.
3-Oct-96	Tas Parliament	Hobart	Unprecedented legislative action to 'freeze & seize' Bryant's A\$1.5m assists proceeds.
"	The Bulletin	Risdon	Martin tells Avery "No, they haven't put me out in the exercise yard [to date]": for 5 months or about 150 days!
"	The Bulletin 4/4/06	Risdon	JW Avery is taped interviewing Martin Bryant - transcript published by The Bulletin
3-Oct-96	The Mercury - article	Hobart	The Mercury of 4/10/96 announced barrister John Avery is now Martin Bryant's legal counsel
11-Oct-96	The Bulletin	Risdon	Avery: 3rd interview with Martin - taped.
app 14-Oct-96	Retaliation ?	Hobart	Police target an innocent Terry Hill; his gundealer's licence is revoked.
16-Oct-96	Avery travel	to Melbourne	To meet with forensic psychiatrist Prof Paul Mullen & Ian Joblin who'd both already met MB.
17-Oct-96	Avery to meet DPP	Hobart	October 11, John Avery tells MB he is to meet DPP, Damian Bugg, then to Risdon to MB
31-Oct-96	Correspondence	Hobart	Barrister John Avery still engaged with police regarding matters pertaining to Terry Hill.
1-Jul-96	Civil court action	Hobart	Public funded civil action Quinn v Terry Hill launched; Quinn's solicitor Rowland Browne, NCGC
3-May-99	The Bulletin	Garry Linnell	John Avery: 'It took 14 to 15 visits to bring MB around...to plead guilty.'
			Justice William Cox, then a Lieutenant-Colonel in the Army Reserve; later Governor of Tasmania